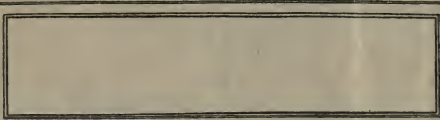


EX LIBRIS











Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation







# CORSO DI STUDIO ITALIANO,

OR A

COURSE OF STUDY FOR THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE, prepared by Dr. BACHI, Instructor in Harvard University; and for sale by C. C. LITTLE & Co., Washington Street, Boston; and at the UNIVERSITY BOOKSTORE, Cambridge.



A GRAMMAR OF THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE; a New Edition revised and improved, with the addition of Practical Exercises and numerous Illustrations, drawn from the Italian Classic Writers. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART II.

RACCOLTA DI FAVOLE MORALI, or a Collection of Italian Fables in Prose and Verse, with Interlinear Translations. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART III.

SCelta DI PROSE ITALIANE, or Extracts from the Works of the best Italian Prose Writers, both Ancient and Modern. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART IV.

TEATRO SCELTO ITALIANO, or a Selection of Italian Dramas, from the Works of Goldoni, Nota, Giraud, Alfieri, Monti, and Manzoni, with Notes. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART V.

I POETI ITALIANI MAGGIORI, or Extracts from Tasso, Ariosto, Poliziano, and Petrarca, and the Inferno of Dante, with Analytical and Historical Notes. 2 vols. 12mo. (The first volume is in Press.)

## PART VI.

CONVERSAZIONE ITALIANA, or a Collection of Phrases and Familiar Dialogues in Italian and English. 1 vol. 12mo.

## PART VII.

A KEY to the EXERCISES contained in the Italian Grammar. 1 vol. 12mo. (In Press.)

---

At the Bookstore of C. C. LITTLE & Co. may be had also the following Works of the same Author :

## I.

RUDIMENTS OF THE ITALIAN LANGUAGE, or Easy Lessons in Spelling and Reading, with an Abridgment of the Grammar. Adapted to the Capacity of Children. 1 vol. 16mo.

## II.

MRS. BARBAULD'S HYMNS FOR CHILDREN, in Italian ; being a Sequel to the "Easy Lessons in Reading," in the abovementioned Rudiments. 1 vol. 16mo.

## III.

A COMPARATIVE VIEW OF THE ITALIAN AND SPANISH LANGUAGES, or an Easy Method of Learning the Spanish Tongue for those who are already acquainted with the Italian. 1 vol. 12mo.

## IV.

A COMPARATIVE VIEW OF THE SPANISH AND PORTUGUESE LANGUAGES, or an Easy Method of learning the Portuguese Tongue for those who are already acquainted with the Spanish. 1 vol. 12mo.

---



CORSO DI STUDIO ITALIANO.

---

PART I.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

QUALITY OF THE PAPER

CAMBRIDGE:

FOLSOM, WELLS, AND THURSTON,

PRINTERS TO THE UNIVERSITY.

REPRODUCED FROM THE ORIGINAL

Italian

A  
GRAMMAR.

OF THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE

BY

*Brown*

PIETRO BACHI,

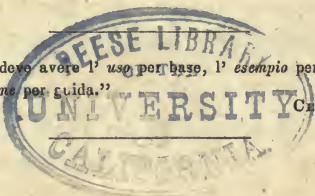
INSTRUCTOR IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

---

A NEW EDITION REVISED AND IMPROVED,  
WITH THE ADDITION OF  
PRACTICAL EXERCISES AND NUMEROUS ILLUSTRATIONS,  
DRAWN FROM THE ITALIAN CLASSICS.

“Una lingua deve avere l'uso per base, l'esempio per consiglio,  
e la ragione per guida.”

CESAROTTI.



BOSTON:

CHARLES C. LITTLE AND JAMES BROWN.

LONDON:

RICHARD JAMES KENNETT.

---

M DCCC XXXVIII.

779  
B:23

RAMMAGE

1833

ITALIAN VALLATI

PIETRO BACHI

PIETRO BACHI

Entered according to act of Congress, in the year 1833, by

PIETRO BACHI,

in the Clerk's office of the District Court, for the District of Massachusetts.

24915



PC1109

B22

1838

MAIN

“DE *exteris hominibus* jam nunc dicam, quorum demerendi, si tibi id cordi est, persanè ampla in præsens oblata est occasio. Ut enim *apud eos* ingenio quis forte floridior, aut moribus amœnis et elegantibus, *linguam Etruscam* in deliciis habet præcipuis, *quin et in solidâ etiam parte eruditionis esse sibi ponendam ducit*, præsertim si Græca aut Latina vel nullo, vel modico, tinctu imbiberit. Ego certè istis utrisque linguis, non extremis tantummodo labris madidus, sed, si quis alius, quantum per annos licuit, poculis majoribus prolutus, possum tamen nonnunquam ad illum *Dantem et Petrarcam*, aliosque vestros complurimos, libenter et cupidè comissatum ire. Nec me tam ipsæ Athenæ Atticæ cum illo suo pellucido Ilisso, nec illa vetus Roma suâ Tiberis ripâ retinere valuerunt, *quin sæpe Arnun vestrum et Fæsulanos illos colles invisere amem.*”

MILTON. *Epist. ad Benedictum Buommattei ;  
Florent., Sept. 10., 1638.*

## PREFACE

### TO THE FORMER EDITION.

---

AS A NATURAL consequence of the general advancement of this country in literature, the importance attached to an acquaintance with the Italian Language, as a part of polite education, has considerably increased. Not only does it now enter into the circle of the elegant studies of females, as the handmaid and ally of the ornamental arts, but the spirit of its higher literature begins to be understood by the cultivated of both sexes; and within a short time a place has been conceded to *Dante* and *Tasso* in the same academic course with Homer and Virgil.

But while the other languages of the continent of Europe have possessed the advantage of a variety of good grammars written in English, the Italian Instructor has had the mortification to see in almost universal use the farrago of *Veneróni*,\* to the disparagement of his native tongue and the perplexity of those who would learn it. It is true, that other grammars are extant of various degrees of merit, and those of *Galignáni*, *Santagnéllo*, and *Vergáni* are entitled to much praise; the first two, however, are hardly known here,

---

\* *Veneróni* was a native of *Verdun*, a small town of Burgundy, in France; his real name was *Vignerón*; but, having learnt Italian, and wishing to teach it in Paris, he *Italianized* his name and called himself a *Florentine*. *The Complete Italian Master* by *Signór Veneróni* was written for a few crowns by *Rosélli*, the extraordinary adventurer, who has left us his history in the romance entitled *The Unfortunate Neapolitan*.

and the last, which is perhaps the best of them all, has been confined principally to New-York; where indeed the want of a suitable grammar has been far less felt than in other places, from the singular good fortune of that city in enjoying the living instruction of the venerable *Da Pónte*, whose own writings, in prose as well as in verse, form an integral and permanent part of the noble literature, which he has done so much to propagate in America.

The field, therefore, was open for attempting to treat in English the *Grammar of the Italian Language* in a manner better suited to the wants of the public; and the author, in entering it, has flattered himself that he should render an acceptable service, if, after a thorough study of Italian writers on their own tongue, and a diligent examination of the labors of his predecessors both in Great Britain France, and Germany, he should be able to produce a more complete, and methodical, and, at the same time, strictly practical treatise, than now exists in English, however far he might fall short of that perfection of which he has the idea.

In the *Introduction* are given very summarily the principles of general grammar, and the terms are defined in which those principles are afterwards applied to the Italian tongue.

The Part devoted to *Pronunciation* affords, it is believed, more full information on the subject than can elsewhere be found; and, as the words are carefully represented by English combinations of letters of equivalent sound,\* students who can-

---

\* The vowel *a* is represented by the combination of letters *ah*, pronounced without aspiration, as in the words *sirrah*, *hallelujah*, &c. : *e*, by *ay*, as in *day*, except when it occurs before certain consonants with which in English it has what is called the short sound, nearly resembling the sound in Italian, as in the syllables *em*, *el*, &c. ; before *r*, however, *e* is sounded long, like *ay* : *i*, by *ee*, as in *sleep* : *u*, by *oo*, as in *ooze*. In the combinations *k,y* — *g,y* — *l,y* — *n,y*, a comma is inserted to prevent the letter before it from coalescing with the *y*, which is to be pronounced with the following vowel as if it began the syllable.

not avail themselves of oral instruction, may yet make such an approximation to a just pronunciation, as to perceive and enjoy in a good degree the rhythm and harmony of the classic authors, and, with few errors to unlearn, be prepared to take advantage of future opportunities of improving their pronunciation by intercourse with accomplished speakers of the language.

In treating of the different Parts of Speech, in the division called *Analogy*, while the author has wished that nothing should be wanting to the completeness of this part of his treatise, he has striven so to methodize the various particulars that they should lie ready for use. The verbs, especially, are given with unexampled fulness; and to both the regular and irregular verbs are annexed the *poetical forms*, which constitute no small difficulty for learners, even in reading the older prose writers. This is an advantage not afforded to the same extent in any preceding grammar.

As to the *Syntax*, a few scattered observations only are to be found in the best grammars. These are here digested under their proper heads, increased by various new ones, and all of them supported by citations from those Classics from whose authority no appeal can be allowed, though colloquial usage may in a few instances be at variance with them.

The *Orthography* contains the result of what has been written by Italian authors on the subject, and such rules as have been deduced from the usage of the best writers.

Throughout the Grammar, it should be observed, the principal rules are placed under their appropriate heads, in large type; exceptions to general rules and subordinate observations are printed in smaller type. Every Italian word of more than one syllable is carefully accented, that the mere perusal of the Grammar may operate as a perpetual lesson in pronunciation, preparing the pupil to read currently the first author put into his hands, and sparing the instructor the

trouble of much inculcation. For an analogous reason, every Italian word and sentence is accompanied by a literal English version, which is often indispensable to the beginner, and can rarely be unuseful.

The author is well aware of the amount of indulgence which his English style will require on the part of his readers, whose very pursuit of a foreign literature implies a degree of cultivation in their own, which must make them impatient of the constraint and want of idiomatic propriety they will here meet with. Grammatical propriety, however, and perspicuity were the highest qualities to which he could at present pretend, in a language whose idioms are so remote from his own; and, if he has been in any good degree successful in attaining these, he relies on the candor of ingenuous scholars to attribute his defects to the difficulty of the case, and not suppose that he undervalues or is insensible to the charms of a good style; which would indeed be inexcusable in one whose ambition it is to spread a knowledge of the most graceful of modern dialects:

“*Illam, quidquid agit, quoquò vestigia movit,  
Componit furtim subsequiturque Decor.*”

TIBULL. *l. 4. c. 2.*

## PREFACE TO THE PRESENT EDITION.

---

THE flattering reception, which the former edition of this Grammar has met with, both in this country and abroad, and the wide circulation, which in a few years it has obtained in the different quarters of this Union, have made it the duty of the author to redouble his efforts to approach nearer to the end which he originally proposed to himself.

A long experience in teaching, the useful suggestions made to him by friends who have been using his book both in private and public instruction, together with an incessant study of his native tongue in the works of the classic writers, have enabled him to make such improvements, as to render the work more deserving of the public favor.

But the light, which the writings of *Mónti*, *Compagnóni*, *Románi*, *Ambrosóli*, *Lucchesíni*, and others, have shed on Philology, in Italy, has given origin, within the last few years, to so many valuable treatises on Grammar, that, to derive advantage from their works, and to suit this book to the present times, it was necessary to remodel the former plan, and introduce such changes, as appeared to be required by the philosophy of the language, and the progress of grammatical science.

To obtain this object, the Grammar has been newly written, the arrangement altered, the method simplified, and the style generally improved. Several remarks, which had been found useless, have been omitted, and many important rules, which had been omitted, have been introduced. The *verbs* have been better displayed; and the *Syntax* has been increased

by several important chapters, such as those on the *Regimen of Words*, the *Agreement of Participles*, &c.

Sensible of the truth of the principle, that a grammarian ought not to limit himself to a mere exposition of principles, but should deduce them from sound reason and verify them by the authority of the classic writers, — (“Grammaticorum sine ratione testimoniisque auctoritas nulla est.” — SANCT. *Minerv. l. 1. c. 2.*) — the author has, in this new edition, endeavoured first to write and explain his rules, and then to add, by way of illustration, the classical authorities, which have furnished him the *Examples* corroborating the principles he has laid down.

Convinced, too, of the advantage which the student naturally derives from the practical application of abstract principles, he has introduced, in each chapter of the Grammar, one or more *Exercises*, as the subject or the importance of the rules seemed to require.

The *Examples*, as well as the *Exercises*, have been chiefly drawn from the writers of the fourteenth century, such as *Dante*, *Petrarca*, *Boccaccio*, *Villani*, &c. ; in many instances from those of the sixteenth, as *Machiavelli*, *Guicciardini*, *Ariosto*, *Tasso*, &c. ; and, when these have failed to supply apposite illustrations, from the best poets and prose writers of the eighteenth century, and from those among the moderns who have distinguished themselves for purity of diction and elegance of style, as *Alfieri*, *Foscolo*, *Botta*, *Manzoni*, &c.

To prevent any interruption in the regular progress of the different parts of the book, and to reduce the principles to a more compact form, it was at first thought advisable to throw into an *Appendix*, at the end of the volume, certain lists of words and supplementary remarks, which formerly occupied a place in the *Analogy* ; but the size, which the work had already attained,

determined the author to reserve it to be published in a separate form, particularly as its omission at present affects in no manner the completeness of the Grammar, however useful such an appendage might be.

Some improvements have also been made in the typographical execution of the work. The most important parts of the rules have been printed in *italics*. In the examples, which immediately follow, the words which directly illustrate the rules are printed in SMALL CAPITALS; and the whole of these examples, which always recur in the succeeding citations from the classics, are there printed in SMALL CAPITALS, to engage the attention of the learner to their connexion with the longer passages, from which they were at first detached.

Should the volume appear to any one larger than is necessary for common use, he should observe, that, of the whole number of pages, 351 only are occupied by the *rules of the language* and their *immediate illustrations*, and that the remainder of the book is filled by *Exercises* (which are commonly printed in a separate volume), and by a collection of *eighteen hundred* citations from the classics, which exhibit all the principal phenomena of the language, in a form which gives the student ready access to a high authority for, and a happy exemplification of, every principle, thus making him familiar beforehand with the idioms and constructions, which would be the chief impediments in his reading the most difficult authors.

As to the mode of using this Grammar, the author would recommend the following plan. Let the principles first be properly explained and exemplified by the instructor, and let them be properly learned and recited by the student. This done, let the instructor point out the application of them in the citations from the classics which follow the rules of each chapter, and let the student account for them (and for as many others as he may have



already learned), by parsing the words which form the subjects of the rules with which he is already acquainted; and, when he has become familiar with them, let him be directed to write out the Exercises. This method, if strictly adhered to, cannot fail to prove highly useful to the learner, and satisfactory to the teacher.

Desirous that his book should not fall short of that perfection, which grammatical science seems lately to have reached in Italy, the author has spared neither expense nor diligence in procuring all the best treatises on the Italian language, which have hitherto been published in Europe. Some of these have been of great assistance to him in his labors, and in many instances he has not hesitated to adopt from them many excellent hints and valuable remarks. Still he trusts, that the manner in which he has combined his scattered materials into a body of principles, all illustrated by a variety of unquestionable classical authorities, will secure to his work the character of originality, so far as this can belong to any grammar of a language long since settled in its usages and idioms:

“Etiam si omnia a veteribus inventa sunt, hoc tamen erit semper novum, usus et dispositio inventorum ab aliis.”

SENEC. *Epist.* 64.

Cambridge, September, 1838.

## A LIST OF WORKS

EXAMINED WITH REFERENCE TO THE COMPILATION OF THIS  
GRAMMAR.

- ALBÉRTI** (*di Villanuova, Francésco d'*), Dizionário Universále Crítico Enciclopédico délla Língua Italiána. Lúcca, 1805. 6 vol. 4to.
- Alberti** (*de Villeneuve, François d'*), Grand Dictionnaire François-Italien, et Italien-François. Bassano, 1831. 2 vol. 4to.
- Algarótti** (*Francésco*), Léttere Filológiche, raccólte da Bartolomméo Gamba. Venézia, 1826. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Alunno** (*Francésco*), Le Ricchétze délla Língua sópra il Decameróne. Venézia, 1557. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ambrosóli** (*Francésco*), Manuále délla Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Barberi** (*J. Ph.*), Grammaire des Grammaires Italiennes, ou Cours Complet de Langue Italienne. Paris, 1819. 2 vol. 8vo.
- , Petit Trésor de la Langue Française et de la Langue Italienne. Paris, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Baretti** (*Joseph*), A Dictionary of the English and Italian Languages. London, 1835. 2 vols. 8vo.
- Bártoli** (*Daniéle*), Trattáto dell' Ortografia Italiána. Miláno, 1830. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bazzarini** (*António*), Ortografia Enciclopédica Universále. Venézia, 1824. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Bémbo** (*Piétro*), Próse, nelle quáli si ragióna délla Volgár Língua, cólle Giúnte di Lodovico Castelvétro. Miláno, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bergantini** (*Giován-Piétro*), Vóci Italiáne d' Autóri Approvati dálla Crúsca, nel Vocabolário di éssa non registráte. Venézia, 1745. 1 vol. 4to.
- Biagioli** (*G.*), Grammaire Italienne Élémentaire et Raisonnée. Paris, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Borélli** (*Pasquále*), Princípj dell' Árte Etimológica. Nápoli, 1830. 1 vol. 4to.
- Brosse** (*Charles de*), Traité de la Formation Mécanique des Langues. Paris, 1801. 2 vol. 12mo.

- Brúni (Donato António)*, Osservazioni sopra la Língua Toscana. Nápoli, 1759. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Bullet (J. B.)* Memoires sur la Langue Celtique. Besançon, 1760. 3 vol. fol.
- Buommattéi (Benedetto)*, Délla Língua Toscana, Líbri Dúe, colle nóte di Anton-Maria Salvini. Miláno, 1807. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Caléffi (Giuséppe)* Grammatica délla Língua Italiána, compiláta sulle migliori modérne Grammatiche. Firénze, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Cardinali (Francésco)*, Dizionario portatile délla Língua Italiána. Bológna, 1828. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Cardúcci (Facóndo)*, Eleménti della Lettúra, ed Ortografia Italiána. Siéna, 1828. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Césari (António)*, Dissertazione sopra lo Státo délla Língua Italiána. Veróna, 1810. 1 vol. 4to.
- Cesarótti (Melchiór)*, Saggi sulla Filosofia délle Língue, e del Gústo. Miláno, 1821. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Cinónio [alias Mambélli (Marc-António)]*, Osservazioni délla Língua Italiána, illustráte ed accresciúte da Luígi Lambétti. Miláno, 1811. 4 vol. 8vo.
- Cittadini (Célso)*, Le Origini délla Toscana Favélla. Siéna, 1628. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Compagnóni (Giuséppe)*, Teórica dé' Vérbi Italiáni, regolári, anómali, difettívi, e mal-nóti; compiláta sulle Ópere del Cinónio, del Pistolési, del Mastrofini, e d' áltri piú illústri Grammatici. Livórno, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Corticélli (Salvadóre)*, Régole ed Osservazioni délla Língua Toscana. Bassáno, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Coureil (Gio. de)*, Nuóva Grammatica délla Língua Italiána per gl' Italiáni. Livórno, 1816. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Dalmístro*, Osservazioni intórno álla Língua Italiána. Venézia, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Da-Pónte (Lorénzo)*, Eleménti délla Língua Italiána. Nuova-Yórk, 1831. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Dell' Árte délla Paróla*, consideráta né' varj Módi délla sua Espressione. Miláno, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Del-Múro (Vincénzo)*, Grammatica Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána. Nápoli, 1804. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Destutt-de-Tracy (António Luígi Cléménte)*, Grammatica Generale, colle Annotazioni di Giuséppe Compagnóni. Miláno, 1817. 2 vol. 8vo.

- Dizionario della Lingua Italiana.* Padova, 1827. 7 vol. 4to.
- Dólce (Lodovico)*, Osservazioni sulla Lingua Italiana. Venezia, 1562. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Elementi della Lingua Italiana ad Uso delle Scuole.* Venezia, 1810. 1 vol. 8vo.
- della Grammatica, e della Ortografia Italiana, ricavati dal Pallavicino, Bartoli, Rogacci, Buomattéi. Napoli, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Facciolati (Jacopo)*, Ortografia Moderna Italiana. Napoli, 1831. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ferrarii (Octavii)*, Origines Linguæ Italicæ. Patavii, 1676. 1 vol. fol.
- Fornasari*, Theoretisch praktische Anleitung zur Erlernung der Italienischen Sprache, in einer neuen, und fasslicheren Darstellung. Wien, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Franscini (Stéfano)*, Grammatica Inferiore della Lingua Italiana. Milano, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Galgnani (J. A.)*, Grammar and Exercises, in Twenty-four Lectures on the Italian Language, enlarged and improved by Antonio Montucci. London, 1823. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Giambullari (Pier-Francesco)*, Lezioni, aggiuntovi l' Origine della Lingua Fiorentina, altrimenti il Géllo. Milano, 1827. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Giannelli (Leonardo)*, Règole Grammaticali per chi vuol parlare, e scrivere correttamente Toscano. Lucca, 1820. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Gigli (Girólamo)*, Lezioni di Lingua Toscana. Venezia, 1722. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Gióia (Melchiór)*, Ideologia. Milano, 1822. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Gório (A. F.)*, Storia Antiquaria Etrusca. Firenze, 1749. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Gran Dizionario della Lingua Italiana.* Bologna, 1828. 7 vol. 4to.
- Grassi (Giuséppe)*, Saggio intorno ai Sinonimi della Lingua Italiana. Firenze, 1832. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Jagemann (Chr. Jos.)*, Neues Deutsh-Italianishes Hand-Wortter-Buch. Leipzig, 1799. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Jaklitsch (Giuséppe)*, Principj Elementari della Lingua Italiana. Milano, 1829. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Lémmi (Giov. Spirito)*, Elementi ragionati della Lingua Toscana. Livorno, 1808. 1 vol. 8vo.

- Lucchesini (Césare)*, Dell' Illustrazione délle Língue Antiche e Modérne, e principalménte dell' Italiána. Lúcca, —. 2 vol. 8vo.
- Máier (Andréa)*, Délla Língua Comúne d' Itália. Venézia, 1822. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Mánni (Doménico María)*, Lezioni di Língua Toscana. Miláno, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Martignóni (Girólamo)*, Nuóvo Método per la Língua Italiána la piú Scélta, estensívo a tütte le Língue. Miláno, 1743. 2 vol. 4to.
- Mastrofíni (Márco)*, Teoría e Prospétto, ossia Dizionario Crítico dé' Vérbi Italiáni coniugáti, specialménte dégli anómali, e mal-nóti. Róma, 1814. 2 vol. 4to.
- Mastróti (Francésco)*, Corso di Língua Italiána. Nápoli, 1833. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Mazzinghi*, Ortografia Italiána. Nápoli, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Meidinger*, Praktische Italienische Grammatik, wodurch man diese Sprache auf eine ganz neue, und sehr leichte Art in kurzer Zeit gründlich erlernen kann. Leipzig, 1821. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Menágio (Egídio)*, Oríginí délla Língua Italiána. Parigi, 1669. 1 vol. fol.
- Menzini (Benedétto)*, Délla Costruzione Irregoláre délla Língua Toscana. Veróna, 1744. 1 vol. 4to.
- Mómo (Giovánni)*, Sintássi, Frási, e Vóci per perferzionársi nélla Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1809. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Mónti (Vincénzo)*, Propósta di alcúne Correzióni ed Aggiunte al Vocabolário délla Crúsca. Miláno, 1826. 7 vol. 8vo.
- Múcci (Doménico)*, Nuóva Grammatica Italiána, formáta su i Principj di Grammatica Generále. Nápoli, 1832. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Muratóri (Ludovico António)*, Dissertazioni sópra le Antichità Italiáne. Miláno, 1751. 3 vol. 4to.
- Napióne (Francésco Galeáni)*, Dell' Úso e dé' Prégi délla Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1830. 2 vol. 12mo.
- Nési (Lorénzo)*, Dizionario Ortológico Prático délla Língua Italiána. Pavía, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Nuóva Ortografia Italiána*, con l'Aggiúnta di várie Vóci Dúbbie. Pádova, 1825. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Onoráti (Niccolò)*, Dizionario di Vóci Dúbbie Italiáne. Nápoli, 1783. 1 vol. 4to.
- Ortografia délla Língua Italiána*. Miláno, 1829. 1 vol. 18mo.

- Panizzi (Antonio)*, An Elementary Italian Grammar. London, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Paréti (Marc-Antonio)*, Annotazioni al Dizionario Italiano, che si stampa in Bologna. Modena, 1826. 3 vol. 8vo.
- Peretti (Vincent)*, Grammaire Italienne composée d'après les meilleurs Auteurs et Grammairiens d'Italie. Paris, 1815. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pergamini (Giàcomo)*, Trattato della Lingua Italiana. Venezia, 1613. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pezzana (Angelo)*, Osservazioni concernenti alla Lingua Italiana, ed ai suoi Vocabolàrj. Parma, 1823. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Pistolési (Giam-Battista)*, Prospetto de' Verbi Italiani regolari e irregolari. Pisa, 1813. 1 vol. 4to.
- Pónza (Michéle)*, L' Annotatore de'gli Errori di Lingua. Torino, 1829. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Grammatica della Lingua Italiana. Torino, 1834. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Puóti (Basilio)*, Règole Elementari della Lingua Italiana. Napoli, 1836. 2 vol. 12mo.
- Rábbi (Carlo Costánzo)*, Sinónimi ed Aggiunti Italiani. Venezia. 1817. 1 vol. 4to.
- Románi (Giovànni)*, Teórica della Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1825. 2 vol. 8vo.
- , Teórica de' Sinónimi Italiani. Miláno, 1825. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Dizionario Generale de' Sinónimi Italiani. Miláno, 1826. 3 vol. 8vo.
- , Osservazioni sopra Várie Vóci del Vocabolario della Crusca. Miláno, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Opúscoli Scélti sulla Lingua Italiana. Miláno, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Rosásco (Girólamo)*, Della Lingua Toscana, Diàloghi Sétte. Miláno, 1824. 2 vol. 12mo.
- Róster (Giàcomo)*, Osservazioni Grammaticali intórno alla Lingua Italiana. Firénze, 1826. 1 vol. 8vo.
- , Eleménti Grammaticali Ragionati di Lingua Italiana. Firénze, 1827. 1 vol. 8vo.
- Salviáti (Leonárdo)*, Avvertiménti della Lingua sopra il Decameróne. Miláno, 1810. 3 vol. 8vo.
- Santagnello (M.)*, A Complete Grammar of the Italian Language. London, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.

*Scelta di Vóci* délla Língua Italiána, con Régole ed Osservazioni. Miláno, 1828. 1 vol. 12mo.

*Soave* (*Francésco*), Grammática Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána, cólle Aggiunte di António Bianchini. Bréscia, 1829. 1 vol. 12mo.

*Soldáti* (*Mattéo*), Súllo Státo presénte délla Língua Italiána. (Átti dell' Acád. Itál., vol. I.)

*Sorési* (*Pier-Doménico*), Erudiménti délla Língua Italiána. Miláno, 1831. 1 vol. 12mo.

*Spadafóra* (*Plácido*), Prosodía Italiána, cólle Giúnta di tre brévi Trattáti; l' úno délla *Z*, e súa varietà; e l' áltro dell' *E* e *O*; il térzo délla buóna e réa Pronúnzia. Venézia, 1820. 2 vol. 8vo.

*Tommaséo* (*Niccolò*), Nuóvo Dizionário dé' Sinónimi délla Língua Italiána. Firénze, 1830. 1 vol. 8vo.

*Tosélli* (*Ottávio*), Origine délla Língua Italiána. Bológna, 1831. 3 vol. 8vo.

*Vánzon* (*Cárlo António*), Grammática Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1834. 1 vol. 8vo.

—, Dizionário Universále délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1827. 3 vol. 8vo.

*Várchi* (*Benedétto*), L' Ercoláno, o Ragionaménto sülle Língue, ed in particoláre délla Toscana e Fiorentína. Miláno, 1803. 1 vol. 8vo.

*Vergani* (*M. A.*), A New and Complete Italian Grammar. Leghorn, 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.

*Vocabolário* dégli Accadémici délla Crúsca. Venézia, 1763. 7 vol. 4to.

—, cólle Aggiunte di António Césari. Veróna, 7 vol. 4to.

— *Universále* délla Língua Italiána. Nápoli, 1829—  
[I prími] 5 vol. 4to., [che conténgono le léttere *A—RU*.  
(Ópera in córso.)]

*Zanobétti* (*Giovánni*), Nuóvo Dizionário Portátile délla Língua Italiána. Livórno, 1827. 1 vol. 16mo.

*Zotti* (*Romualdo*), Grammaire Italienne, et Thèmes sur la Langue Italienne. Paris, 1823. 2 vol. 12mo.

## A TABLE

OF THE ABBREVIATIONS OF THE NAMES OF AUTHORS AND OF  
THE WORKS QUOTED IN THIS GRAMMAR.

AGN. PAND. o.	<i>Pandolfini</i> ( <i>Ágnolo</i> ), 'Trattáto del Góverno délla Famíglia,' página o.
Alam. Colt. o. o.	<i>Alamánni</i> ( <i>Luígi</i> ), 'La <i>Coltivazióne</i> ,' líbro o. pág. o.
Alberg. Nov.	<i>Albergáti-Capacélli</i> ( <i>Francésco</i> ), ' <i>Novéllé</i> .'
Albert.	} <i>Albertáno</i> , Giúdice da Bréscia, Volgarizzaménto dé' 'Tre Trattáti,' <i>capitolo</i> o.
Abertan. c. o.	
——. o. o.	——, ——, Trattáto o. cap. o.
Alf. Fil. o. o.	} <i>Alféri</i> ( <i>Vittório</i> ), 'Tragédie,' <i>Filippo</i> , átto o. scéna o.
—— Filip. o. o.	
—— Antig. o. o.	——, <i>Antígone</i> , átto o. scéna o.
—— Saul. o. o.	——, <i>Saúl</i> , átto o. scéna o.
Alg. lett.	<i>Algarótti</i> ( <i>Francésco</i> ), ' <i>Léttere</i> .'
Alleg.	} <i>Allégri</i> ( <i>Alessándro</i> ), ' <i>Léttere e Ríme</i> ,' pág. o.
Allegr. o.	
Ambr. Cof. o. o.	<i>Ámbra</i> ( <i>Francésco d'</i> ), ' <i>La Cofanária</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o.
Am. Ant.	} ' <i>Ammaestraménti dégli Antíchi</i> ,' raccólti e volgarizzáti da Fra Bartolomméo da San Concórdio, <i>distribuzióne</i> o. <i>rubrica</i> o. <i>ammaestraménto</i> o.
Amm. Ant. d. o. r. o.	
—— — o. o. o.	
Amor.	<i>Amorélli</i> ( <i>Cárlo</i> ), ' <i>Viággio ái Tre Lágli; Maggióre, di Lucáno, e di Cómo</i> .'
Ann. Car.	Védi <i>Car.</i> , <i>Caro</i> .
Ann. Vang.	' <i>Annotazióni sópra gli Evangélj</i> .' ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocaboláριο délla Crúsca.</i> )
Ariost.	} <i>Arióstlo</i> ( <i>Ludovíco</i> ), ' <i>Orlándo Furióso</i> ,' cánto o. stánza o.
—— Fur. o. o.	
B.	Védi <i>Bocc</i> .
Barb. Gr. Gr.	<i>Barberi</i> ( <i>J-Ph.</i> ), ' <i>Grammaires des Grammaires Italiennes</i> .'
Bellinc.	<i>Bellincióni</i> ( <i>Bernárdo</i> ), ' <i>Ríme</i> .'
Bemb.	} <i>Bémbo</i> ( <i>Piétro</i> ), ' <i>Stória di Venézia</i> ,' líb. o. pág. o.
—— Stor. o. o.	
—— Lett. o. o. o.	
Ben. Varch.	Védi <i>Varch</i> .



Bent.	}	<i>Bentivóglío</i> (Cardinal Guído), 'Léttere,'
— lett. o.		léttera o.
Benv. Cell. Oref. o.	}	<i>Cellini</i> (Benvenuto), 'Trattáti (dúe) dell' Oreficería, e délla Scultúra,' pág. o.
Ber. Tass. lett.		<i>Táso</i> (Bernárdo), 'Léttere.'
Bern. Or. o. o.	}	<i>Bérni</i> (Francésco), 'Orlándo Innamoráto,' canto o. stánza o.
— Rim. o. o.		—, 'Rime Burlésche,' vol. o. pág. o.
B.	}	
Bocc.		<i>Boccáccio</i> (Giovánni), 'Decameróne,' <i>Introduzióne</i> .
— Intr.		
— Introd.		
— Proem.		—, 'Decam.' <i>Proémio</i> .
— g. o. Proem.		—, — <i>giornáta</i> o. <i>Proémio</i> .
— g. o. n. o.		—, — <i>giornáta</i> o. <i>novélla</i> o.
— g. o. canz.		—, — <i>giornáta</i> o. <i>canzóna</i> .
— Concl.		—, — <i>Conclusióne</i> .
— Corb.		Védi — <i>Lab., Luber.</i> o.
— Amet. o.		—, 'Améto,' pág. o.
— Fiam.		}
— Fiamm. o. o.		
— Filoc. o.	}	—, 'Filácolo' e 'Filócopo,' lib. o.
— Lab.		
— Laber. o.	}	—, 'Laberinto d' Amóre,' ossia 'il Corbáccio,' núm. o.
— Tes. o. o.		
— Testam.	}	—, 'Teséide,' canto o. stánza o.
— Vis. o.		
— Vis. Amor.	}	—, 'Amorósa Visióne,' canto o.
— Com. Dant.		
— Vit. Dant. o.		—, 'Coménto sópra i prími Diciassétte Cánti dell' Inférno di Dánte.'
Boccal.		—, 'Vita di Dánte Alighiéri,' pág. o.
Boez. Varch. o. o.		<i>Boccalíni</i> (Traiáno), 'Ragguágli di Parnáso.'
Borgh. Rip. o.		Védi <i>Varch</i> .
— Tosc. o.		<i>Borghini</i> (Raffaéllo), 'Il Ripóso,' núm. o.
— Arm. Fam. o.		—, (Vincénzo), 'Délla Toscana, e délle súsé Città,' discórso, pág. o.
Bott. Stor. Am. l. o.		—, 'Dell' Arme délle Famíglie Fiorentíne,' discórso, pág. o.
Brun.	}	<i>Bótta</i> (Cárló), 'Stória délla Guérra délla Independénza dégli Státi Uniti di Améri-ca,' lib. o.
Brunet. Tes. o. o.		<i>Brunétto</i> Latíni, 'Il Tesóro' volgarizzáto da Bóno Giambóni, lib. o, cap. o.
— Pataff. o.		—, 'Il Patáffio,' cap. o. ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i> )

Buom.	}	<i>Buommattéi</i> (Benedétto), ‘ <i>Délla Língua</i>
— Ling. Tosc. o.		<i>Toscána</i> , Líbri Dúe,’ líb. o. trattáto o. cap. o.
Buon.	}	<i>Buonarróti</i> (Michel-Ángelo, il vécchio),
Buonar. Rim. o.		‘ <i>Rime</i> ,’ pág. o.
— Fier. Introd.	}	— (Michel-Ángelo, il giòvane), ‘ <i>La</i>
		<i>Fiera</i> ,’ comédia in cínque giornáte, <i>Introduzióne</i> .
— — — o. o. o.	}	— — — giornáta o. átto o. scéna o.
Burchiell. p. o. s. o.		<i>Burchiéllo</i> , ‘ <i>Sonétti</i> ,’ <i>párte</i> o. <i>sonétto</i> o.
But. Com. Dant.		<i>Búti</i> (Francésco di Bártolo da), ‘ <i>Coménto</i> ,
— Inf. Purg. Par. o.		ovvéro Lettúra sópra il Pcéma di <i>Dánte</i> .’
Cant. Carn. o.		<i>Cánti Carnascialéschi</i> , pág. o. ( <i>Téstó a</i>
		<i>pénna</i> , <i>ciláto nel Vocabolário</i> .)
Car.	}	<i>Cáro</i> (Anníbal), ‘ <i>Léttere Familiári</i> ,’ <i>párte</i>
Caro. lett. o. o.		o. pág. o.
— Matt. s. o.		—, ‘ <i>Mattaccini</i> ,’ <i>sonétto</i> o.
Casa Galat. o.		<i>Cása</i> (Monsignór Giovánni délla), ‘ <i>Il</i>
		<i>Galatéo</i> ,’ pág. o.
— lett. o.		—, ‘ <i>Léttere</i> ,’ <i>léttera</i> o.
Castigl. Cort. l. o. o.		<i>Castiglióne</i> (Baldassáre), ‘ <i>Il Cortiáno</i> ,’
		<i>lib. o. pág. o.</i>
Cavalc.	}	<i>Caválca</i> (Fra Doménico), Volgarizzaménto
— Att. Apost. o.		dégli ‘ <i>Atti dégli Apóstoli</i> ,’ pág. o.
— Espos. Simb.	}	—, ‘ <i>Esposizióne del Símbolo</i> dégli
o. o.		Apóstoli,’ líb. o. pág. o.
— Frutt. Ling.		—, ‘ <i>Trattáto dé’ Frútti délla Língua</i> .’
— Med. cuor.		—, ‘ <i>Medicína del Cuóre</i> .’
— Pungil. o.		—, ‘ <i>Pungilingua</i> ,’ cap. o.
— Specch. Cr.		‘ <i>Spécchio délla Cróce</i> .’
— Stolt. o.		—, <i>Trattáto délle ‘Trénta Stoltizie</i>
		dell’ Uómo,’ pág. o.
Cavalcánti.		‘ <i>Esposizione delle sue Canzoni</i> .’
Cecch. Dot. o. o.		<i>Cécchi</i> (Giovan-María), ‘ <i>La Dóte</i> ,’ comédia,
		átto o. scéna o.
— Esalt. cr.		—, ‘ <i>L’ Esaltazióne délla Cróce</i> ,’ comé-
		dia, átto o. scéna o.
— Inc. o. o.		—, ‘ <i>Gl’ Incantésimi</i> ,’ comédia, átto o.
		scéna o.
— Spir. o. o.		—, ‘ <i>Lo Spirito</i> ,’ comédia, átto o. scé-
		na o.
Cesar.		<i>Cesarótti</i> (Melchiór), <i>Traduzióne</i> dell’ ‘ <i>Il-</i>
		<i>lade d’ Oméro</i> .’
Cinon. t. o.		<i>Cinónio</i> , ‘ <i>Osservazióni délla Língua Itali-</i>
		<i>ána</i> ,’ <i>tómo</i> o.

Class.	Esémpio tiráto da Autóre <i>Clássico</i> , del quále non si rimémбра il nóme. Occórre raríssime vólte.	
Cort. Osserv.	<i>Corticélli</i> (Salvadóre), 'Régole ed Osservazioni della Língua Toscana.'	
Cr.	} <i>Crescénzi</i> (Piétro dé'), 'Trattáto dell' Agricoltúra, lib. o. cap. o. núm. o.	
Cresc. o. o. o.		
Cron. Mor.	' <i>Crónica</i> di Giovánni <i>Morélli</i> .'	
Crus.	} 'Vocaboláριο dégli Accadémici délla <i>Crúscá</i> .'	
Crúscá.		
Dant. Inf. o.	} <i>Dánte Alighiéri</i> , 'Divína Commédia,' <i>Inférno</i> , cánto o.	
— Pur. & Purg. o.		—, 'Comm.' <i>Purgatório</i> , cánto o.
— Par. & Parad. o.		—, —, <i>Paradiso</i> , cánto o.
— Conv.		—, 'Convívio.'
— Rim.		—, 'Rime.'
Dav.	} <i>Davanzáti</i> (Bernárido), 'Ópere.'	
Davan.		
— Scism. p. o.	—, 'Scisma d' Inghiltéra,' pág. o.	
— Colt.	—, 'Coltivazione Toscana.'	
— Tac. ann. l. o. o.	—, Volgarizzaménto dégli ' <i>Annáli di Cornélio Tácito</i> ,' lib. o. pág. o.	
— St.	} —, Volgarizzaménto délle ' <i>Stórie di Tácito</i> ,' lib. o. pág. o.	
— Stor.		
— Tac. Stor. o. o.)		
— Tac. Germ. o.	—, Volgarizzaménto délla ' <i>Germánia di Tácito</i> ,' pág. o.	
— Vit. Agr. o.	—, Volgarizzaménto della ' <i>Vita di Giúlio Agricola</i> di Tácito,' pág. o.	
— Tac. Perd. Eloq. o.	—, Volgarizzaménto del ' <i>Diálogo délle Cagióni délla Perdúta Eloquénza</i> di Tácito,' pág. o.	
— Tac. Post. o.	—, ' <i>Postille</i> ai primí séi líbri délla sua traduzióné dégli <i>Annáli di Tácito</i> ,' pág. o.	
Declam. Quintil. C.	Volgarizzaménto délle ' <i>Declamazioni di Quintiliáno</i> , tésto a pénná di Mattéo <i>Caccini</i> . (Citáto nel Vocaboláριο.)	
Demetr. Segn. o.	Volgarizzaménto délla 'Locuzióné di <i>Demétrio Faléreo</i> ' di Piéro <i>Ségni</i> , pág. o.	
Den.	} <i>Denina</i> (Cárló), ' <i>Rivoluzioni d' Itália</i> ,' lib. o. cap. o.	
— Riv. Ital. l. o.		
— c. o.	} —, 'Discórso Sópra le Vicénde délla <i>Letteratúra</i> .'	
— Letter.		
— Lett.	} —, ' <i>Sággio</i> sópra la <i>Letteratúra Italiána</i> .'	
— Sag. Letter.		

Dep. Decam. o.	{ 'Annotazioni e Discorsi sopra alcuni luoghi del <i>Decamerone</i> di Giovanni Boccaccio, fatti da' <i>Deputati</i> ' [eletti dal Gran-Duca Cosimo I. l' anno 1565, per la correzione di quell' opera], pag. o.
Dial. S. Greg. m.	Volgarizzamento de' ' <i>Dialoghi di San Gregorio Magno.</i> '
Din. Comp. o. o.	<i>Compagni (Dino)</i> , 'Storia, ovvero Cronaca Fiorentina, lib. o. pag. o.
Dittam.	{ 'Il <i>Dittamondo</i> ' di Fazio degli Uberti, lib.
— o. o.	
Eriz. Giorn.	<i>Erizzo</i> (Sebastiano), ' <i>Le Sei Giornate.</i> '
Fav. Esop. o.	Volgarizzamento delle ' <i>Favole d' Esopo</i> ,' pag. o. ( <i>Testo a penna, citato nel Vocabolario.</i> )
Fior. Vt. c. o.	' <i>Fiore di Virtù</i> ,' cap. o.
Fir.	{ <i>Firenzuola</i> (Agnolo), Traduzione dell' ' <i>Asino d' Oro d' Apuleio</i> ,' pag. o.
Firenz. Asin.	
— As. d' Or. o.	——, ' <i>Dialogo delle Bellezze delle Donne</i> ,' pag. o.
— dial. bell. donn. o.	
— disc. an. o.	——, ' <i>Discorso degli Animali</i> ,' pag. o.
— Luc. o. o.	——, ' <i>I Lucidi</i> ,' comedia, atto o. scena o.
— nov. o.	——, ' <i>Novelle</i> ,' novella o.
— Trin. o. o.	——, ' <i>Trinuzia</i> ,' comedia, atto o. scena o.
Fosc.	<i>Foscolo</i> (Ugo), 'Esame Critico de' Commentatori di Dante.'
Fr. Giord.	{ <i>Fra Giordano</i> da Ripalta, ' <i>Prediche</i> ,'
Fra Giord. o.	
— S. Pred. o.	——, testo (a penna) <i>Salviati</i> , <i>predica</i> o. ( <i>Citato nel Vocabolario.</i> )
Fr. Guitt.	{ <i>Fra Guittone</i> d' Arezzo, ' <i>Lettere</i> ,' lette-
Fra Guitt. lett. o.	
Franc. Barb. o. o.	<i>Barberino</i> (Francesco), 'Documenti d' Amore,' poesia, pag. o. verso o.
Fr. Sacch.	{ Vedi <i>Sacch.</i>
Fran. Sacch.	
Franc. Sacch.	{ <i>Frasi</i> (Paolo), ' <i>Elogio di Galileo Galilei.</i> '
Fris. Elog. Galil.	
Gal.	{ <i>Galileo Galilei</i> , ' <i>Saggiatore</i> ,' pag. o.
Gall. o.	
— Mach. Sol. o.	——, ' <i>Istoria e Dimostrazioni intorno alle Macchie Solari</i> , e loro accidenti,' pag. o.
Gang.	{ <i>Ganganelli</i> (Giovan-Vincenzo Antonio [Papa Clemente XIV.]), ' <i>Lettere.</i> '
— lett.	

Gell.	}	<i>Gélli</i> (Giovam-Battísta), 'La <i>Circe</i> ,' diálogo
— Circ. o. o.		o. pág. o.
Giamb. l. o.	}	<i>Giambullári</i> (Pier-Francésco), 'Stória d' Európa,' lib. o.
Gian. Stor. Civ.		<i>Giannóne</i> (Piétro), 'Stória Civile del Régno di Nápoli,' lib. o. cap. o.
Nap. l. o. c. o.	}	Védi <i>Ser Giov. Pecor.</i>
Gio. Fior. Pecor. g. o. n. o.		
Gio. & Giov. Vill. l. o. c. o. o.	}	<i>Villáni</i> (Giovánni), 'Stória,' lib. o. cap. o. núm. o.
Giral. lett.		<i>Giráldi</i> (Giráldo), 'Léttere.'
Gold.	}	<i>Goldóni</i> (Cárlo), 'L' <i>Avventuriére</i> Onoráto,' comédia.
— Avvent.		— 'Il <i>Véro Amíco</i> ,' comédia.
— Ver. Am.	}	Volgarizzaménto dé' 'Grádi di San Girólamo,' cap. o. pag. o.
Gr.		
— S. Gir. o. o.	}	Védi <i>Barb. Gr. Gr.</i>
Gram. Gram.		
Guar. Past. Fid. o. o.	}	<i>Guarini</i> (Giovam-Battísta), 'Pastór Fído,' átto o. scéna o.
Guicc.		
— Stor. o. o.	}	<i>Guicciardini</i> (Francésco), 'Stória d' <i>Itália</i> ,' lib. o. pág. o.
— Stor. Ital.		
Guid.	}	<i>Guido</i> Giúdice dalle Colónne di Messína, Volgarizzaménto délla 'Stória délla Guér-ra Troiána' pág. o. ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocaboláριο.</i> )
— o.		
Incer. c. o.	}	'Ríme Antíche d' <i>Incérti Autóri</i> ,' canzóne o.
Lab. o.		Védi <i>Bocc. Lab., Laber.</i>
Lasc. Sibill. o. o.	}	Grazzini (Anton-Francésco) détto il <i>Lásca</i> , 'La <i>Sibilla</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o.
— Spir. o. o.		—, 'La <i>Spiritáta</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o.
Lib. Cur. Malatt.	}	Volgarizzaménto del 'Libro, ossía Trattáto délla <i>Cúra</i> di tütte le <i>Malattío</i> .' ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocaboláριο.</i> )
Libr. Adorn. Donn.		'Libro dégli <i>Adornaménti délle Dónne</i> .' ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocaboláριο.</i> )
Lipp. M. o. o.	}	<i>Lippi</i> (Lorénzo), 'Il <i>Malmantile</i> Racquistáto,' cánto o. stánza o.
— Malm. o. o.		
Liv. dec. o.	}	Volgarizzaménto délle 'Déche (Príma e Tërza) di <i>Títo Lívio</i> ,' déca o. ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocaboláριο.</i> )
Lod. Mar. Rim. o.		<i>Martélli</i> (Lodovico), 'Ríme,' pág. o.
Lod. Nov.	}	<i>Lódoli</i> (Francesco), 'Novélle.'
Lor. Med. c. o.		<i>Médici</i> (Lorénzo dé'), 'Canzóni a Báлло, canzóne o.

— Nenc. o.	—, ‘ <i>La Nencia,</i> ’ stánza o.	
— Arid. Prolog.	—, ( <i>Lorenzino dé</i> ), ‘ <i>Aridósio,</i> ’ comédia, <i>Prólogo.</i>	
— — o. o.	—, ‘ <i>Aridósio,</i> ’ átto o. scéna o.	
Mach.	} <i>Machiavélli</i> (Niccolò), ‘ <i>Istórie Fiorentine,</i> ’	
— Stor. Fior. l. o.		<i>lib. o.</i>
— Com.	—, ‘ <i>Comédie.</i> ’	
— lett.	—, ‘ <i>Léttere.</i> ’	
— Mandrag.	—, ‘ <i>La Mandrágora,</i> ’ comédia.	
— Princ.	—, ‘ <i>Il Príncipe.</i> ’	
Maestruzz. o. o.	Volgarizzaménto délla ‘ <i>Sómma Pisanélla,</i> ’ détta il <i>Maestruzzo,</i> ’ <i>lib. o. cap. o.</i> ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i> )	
Maff. Mer. o. o.	<i>Mafféi</i> (Scipióne), ‘ <i>Mérope,</i> ’ tragédia, átto o. scéna o.	
Manz. Prom. Spos. c. o.	<i>Manzóni</i> (Alessandro), ‘ <i>I Proméssi Spósi,</i> ’ <i>cap. o.</i>	
Matt. Fran.	} <i>Franzési</i> ( <i>Mattéo</i> ), ‘ <i>Rime Burlésche,</i> ’ vol. o.	
— Franz. Rim. o. o.		<i>pág. o.</i>
Matt. Vill. o. o.	<i>Villáni</i> ( <i>Mattéo</i> ), ‘ <i>Stória,</i> ’ <i>lib. o. cap. o.</i>	
Mes. Bin. Rim. l. o.	<i>Messér Bino</i> , ‘ <i>Rime Burlésche,</i> ’ <i>lib. o.</i>	
— Cin. o.	— <i>Cino</i> da Pistóia, ‘ <i>Rime.</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i>	
Metast. Artas. o. o.	<i>Metastásio</i> (Piétro), ‘ <i>Artasérse,</i> ’ drámma, átto o. scéna o.	
— lett.	—, ‘ <i>Léttere.</i> ’	
Miliz. Art. Dis.	<i>Milizia</i> (Francésco), ‘ <i>Dizionário délle Belle Arti del Diségno.</i> ’	
Mor. S. Greg. & Gregor. o. o.	} <i>Vedi Zan. da Strat.</i>	
Nov. Ant. o.		‘ <i>Il Novellíno, ossia Cénto Novéllé Antiche,</i> ’ <i>novélla o.</i>
Ovid. Pist.	Volgarizzaménto délle ‘ <i>Pistole d’ Ovidio.</i> ’ ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocabolário.</i> )	
Pall.	<i>Pallavicino</i> , ‘ <i>Concílio di Trénto.</i> ’	
Pass.	} <i>Passavánti</i> (Fra Jácopo), ‘ <i>Spécchio di Vera Peniténza,</i> ’ <i>pág. o.</i>	
Passav. o.		
— Ver. Pen.		
— Spec. Ver. Pen.		
Past. Fid. o. o.	<i>Védi Guar. Past. Fid. o. o.</i>	
Pataff. o.	<i>Védi Brun.; Brunet. Pataff.</i>	
Pecor. g. o. n. o.	— <i>Gio. Fior. Pecor.</i>	
Petr. <sup>3</sup>	} <i>Petrárca</i> (Francésco), ‘ <i>Ríme.</i> ’	
— s. o.		—, ‘ <i>Ríme,</i> ’ <i>sonétto. o.</i>
— c. o.		—, —, <i>canzóné o.</i>
— lett.		—, ‘ <i>Léttere Familiári.</i> ’

— Tr.	}	—, 'Trionfi.'
— Tri.		
— Trionf.		
— — Am.	}	—, 'Trionfo d' Amore.'
— — Amor.		
— — Fam.		
— — Mort.	}	—, — 'della Fama.'
— — Tem.		
— — Temp.		
— — — c. o.		—, — —, cap. o.
— Uom. ill. o.		—, 'Vite degli Uomini Illústri,' volgarizzate, pag. o.
Pign. Fav.		<i>Pignotti</i> (Lorénzo), 'Favole.'
Poliz. St. o. o.		<i>Poliziano</i> , (Ágnolo), 'Stánze per la Giostra di Giuliano,' canto o. stánza o.
Pros. Fior. o.		' <i>Prose Fiorentine</i> ,' pag. o.
Red. annot. Ditir.		<i>Rédi</i> (Francésco), ' <i>Annotazioni</i> al suo <i>Ditirámbo</i> .'
— cons. o. o.		— 'Consulti Médici, vol. o. pag. o.
— Ditir. o.		—, 'Bácco in Toscana,' <i>ditirámbo</i> , pag. o.
— Ins. o.		—, 'Esperiénze intórno álla generazióne degl' <i>Insétti</i> ,' pag. o.
— lett. o. o.		—, ' <i>Léttere Familiári</i> ,' vol. o. pag. o.
— Vip. o. o.		—, 'Osservazióni intórno álle <i>Vipere</i> ,' <i>léttere</i> , vol. o. pag. o.
Ricett. Fior. o.		' <i>Ricettario Fiorentino</i> ,' pag. o.
Rim. Ant. p. o.		' <i>Rime Antiche</i> , ossia Raccólta di Sonétti, Canzóni, ed áltre Rime di divérsi antíchi poéti Toscáni,' pag. o.
Rosásco.		<i>Rosásco</i> (Girólamo), ' <i>Délla Língua Toscana</i> , Diáloghi Sétte.'
Sacch. n. o.		<i>Sacchétti</i> (Fráncó), ' <i>Novélla</i> ,' novélla o.
— rim. o.		—, ' <i>Rime</i> ,' pag. o.
— Op. div. o.		—, ' <i>O'pere Diverse</i> ,' pag. o.
Sag. Nat. esp. o.		' <i>Saggi di Naturali Esperiénze</i> ,' fatte nell' Accadémia del Címénto, descritti da Lorénzo Magalótti, pag. o.
Salv. Avvert. vol.	}	<i>Salviati</i> (Leonárdo), ' <i>Avvertiméti</i> délla Língua sópra il Decameróne,' vol. o. lib. o. cap. o.
o. l. o.		
— o. o. o.		
— Granch. o. o.		—, ' <i>Il Gránchio</i> ,' comédia, átto o. scéna o.
— Spin. o. o.		—, ' <i>La Spina</i> ,' comédia, atto o. scéna o.
Salvin. Pros. Tosc. o.		<i>Salvini</i> (Anton-María), ' <i>Prose Toscane</i> ,' pag. o.

Scal. S. Agost.	Volgarizzaménto délla ‘ <i>Scála del Paradíso,</i> ’ attribuíta a <i>Sant’ Agostino.</i> ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocaboláριο.</i> )
Segn. Crist. instr. } o. o. }	<i>Ségneri</i> (Páolo), ‘ <i>Il Cristiáno Instructo</i> nélla sua Lége,’ pártè o. ragionaménto o.
— Mann. Marz. o.	—, ‘ <i>Mánna</i> dell’ ánima,’ mése di <i>Márzo.</i> giòrno o.
— — Nov. o.	—, —, mése di <i>Novembre.</i> giòrno o.
Sen. } — Pist. o. }	Volgarizzaménto délle ‘ <i>Pistole di Séneca,</i> ’ pistola o.
Ser Giov. Fior. } Pecor. }	<i>Ser Giovanni Fiorentino,</i> ‘ <i>Il Pecoróne,</i> ’ giornáta o. novélla o.
— Gio. Fior. Pe- } cor. g. o. n. o. }	
Soav. Nov.	<i>Soave</i> (Francésco) ‘ <i>Novélla Moráli.</i> ’
Sod. Colt. o.	<i>Soderini</i> (Giovan-Vittório), ‘ <i>La Coltivazione</i> délle Viti,’ pág. o.
St. Agost. Citt. Dio. } o. o. }	Volgarizzaménto délla ‘ <i>Città di Dio</i> ’ di <i>Sant’ Agostino,</i> lib. o. cap. o. ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocaboláριο.</i> )
Stor. Pistol. p. o.	‘ <i>Stórie Pistolési,</i> ’ ovvéro délle cose avvenúte in Toscana dal 1300 al 1348,’ pág. o.
Stor. Semif. o.	Volgarizzaménto della ‘ <i>Stória di Semifonte,</i> ’ pág. o.
Tass. Am. o. o. } — Amint. o. o. }	<i>Tasso</i> (Torquáto), ‘ <i>Aminta,</i> ’ Fávola Boscheréccia,’ átto o scéna o.
— Ger. o. o.	—, ‘ <i>Gerusalémme Liberáta,</i> ’ cánto o. stánza o.
Teor. Verb. Ital. } part. o. §. o. }	‘ <i>Teórica dé’ Verbi Italiáni,</i> ’ di Giuseppe Compagnóni, pártè o. parágráfo o.
Tolom. } — lett. }	<i>Tolomméi</i> (Cláudio), ‘ <i>Léttere.</i> ’
Tratt. segr. cos. } donn. }	‘ <i>Trattáto délle Segréte cose délle Donne.</i> ’ ( <i>Tésto a penna, citáto nel Vocaboláριο.</i> )
Vanz.	<i>Vanzon</i> (Cárlo António), ‘ <i>Grammática Ragionáta délla Língua Italiána.</i> ’
Varch. } — Boez. o. o. }	<i>Varchi</i> (Benedétto), Traduzióne délla ‘ <i>Consolazióne Filosófica di Boézio,</i> ’ lib. o. prósa & ríma o.
— Ercol. o.	—, ‘ <i>Ercoláno,</i> ’ ossía Ragionaménto sùlle Língue,’ pág. o.
— Rim. o.	— ‘ <i>Ríme,</i> ’ pág. o.
— Sen. ben. o. o.	Traduzióne dé’ líbri dé’ ‘ <i>Benefizj di Séneca,</i> ’ lib. o. cap. o.
Vas.	<i>Vasári</i> (Giórgio), ‘ <i>Trattáto délla Pittúra.</i> ’
Vill.	Védi <i>Gio. &amp; Giov. Vill.</i>





The first thing that I observed  
 when I stepped out of the  
 door of the house, was  
 a cold and disagreeable  
 wind, which I felt  
 to be the effect of  
 the season. The  
 ground was covered  
 with snow, and  
 the trees were  
 bare and without  
 leaves. The  
 sky was a  
 uniform grey,  
 and the sun  
 did not appear.  
 I was dressed  
 in a heavy  
 coat, and  
 a thick  
 hat, and  
 I felt  
 that I was  
 well provided  
 for the  
 winter.

The weather  
 continued  
 the same  
 for several  
 days. I  
 did not  
 go out  
 much, and  
 I was  
 very  
 comfortable  
 in my  
 house.  
 One day  
 the wind  
 changed,  
 and  
 it was  
 a  
 soft  
 breeze,  
 and  
 the  
 sun  
 appeared  
 for  
 a  
 few  
 minutes.  
 I  
 went  
 out  
 for  
 a  
 short  
 time,  
 and  
 I  
 found  
 that  
 the  
 snow  
 was  
 melting  
 in  
 some  
 places.  
 I  
 was  
 very  
 glad  
 to  
 see  
 the  
 sun,  
 and  
 I  
 felt  
 that  
 the  
 winter  
 was  
 nearly  
 over.  
 I  
 went  
 out  
 more  
 often,  
 and  
 I  
 found  
 that  
 the  
 snow  
 was  
 melting  
 in  
 many  
 places.  
 I  
 was  
 very  
 glad  
 to  
 see  
 the  
 sun,  
 and  
 I  
 felt  
 that  
 the  
 winter  
 was  
 nearly  
 over.  
 I  
 went  
 out  
 more  
 often,  
 and  
 I  
 found  
 that  
 the  
 snow  
 was  
 melting  
 in  
 many  
 places.  
 I  
 was  
 very  
 glad  
 to  
 see  
 the  
 sun,  
 and  
 I  
 felt  
 that  
 the  
 winter  
 was  
 nearly  
 over.  
 I  
 went  
 out  
 more  
 often,  
 and  
 I  
 found  
 that  
 the  
 snow  
 was  
 melting  
 in  
 many  
 places.  
 I  
 was  
 very  
 glad  
 to  
 see  
 the  
 sun,  
 and  
 I  
 felt  
 that  
 the  
 winter  
 was  
 nearly  
 over.

# ITALIAN GRAMMAR.



## INTRODUCTION.

GRAMMAR is the art of *speaking* and *writing* correctly.

SPEAKING and WRITING are the expression of our thoughts by *words*.

WORDS may be considered as *articulate sounds*, or as *signs of our thoughts*.

WORDS considered as ARTICULATE SOUNDS, are formed of *syllables*, and syllables of *letters*.

SYLLABLES consist of one or more letters pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, and constituting a word, or part of a word.

WORDS that consist of one syllable, are called *monosyllables*; those that consist of two syllables, are called *dissyllables*; and those that consist of more syllables, are called *polysyllables*.

LETTERS are certain figures or characters, which represent *sounds* and *articulations*.

SOUNDS are simple emissions of the voice; and ARTICULATIONS are the modifications which sounds receive by the movements of the organs of speech. The letters which represent the sounds, as, *a, e, i, &c.*, are called *vowels*; and those which represent the articulations, as, *b, c, d, &c.*, are called *consonants*, because they can only be *sounded with* a vowel.

The union of two vowels, pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, is called a *diphthong*; and that of three vowels pronounced in like manner, is called a *triphthong*.

WORDS considered as SIGNS OF OUR THOUGHTS, are divided into several classes, which constitute the different PARTS OF SPEECH. These in Italian are nine; viz. the *article, noun, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection*.

Of these nine Parts of Speech, the *article, noun, pronoun, verb, and participle*, are VARIABLE, that is, change their termination; the rest are INVARIABLE.

The **ARTICLE** is a word placed before a noun to denote the extent of its signification; as, *il, lo, la*, 'the':—*IL libro*, 'the book'; *LO sprone*, 'the spur'; *LA casa*, 'the house'.

The **NOUN** is either *substantive*, or *adjective*.

A **SUBSTANTIVE** noun is a word, which serves to denote a person or thing; as, *Piètro*, 'Peter'; *sòle*, 'sun'; *virtù*, 'virtue'.

Substantive nouns are either *proper* or *common*.

A *proper* noun is one, which is individually applicable to a person or thing; as, *Césare*, 'Cæsar'; *Róma*, 'Rome'.

A *common* noun is one, which may be applied to all persons or things of the same kind; as, *uómo*, 'man'; *città*, 'city'.

Some common nouns are also called *collective*, from their presenting to the mind the idea of a collection of persons or things; as, *gènte*, 'people'; *esército*, 'army'.

An **ADJECTIVE** noun is a word added to a substantive to express its quality; as, *dòtto*, 'learned'; *bèlla*, 'beautiful':—*un uómo dòtto*, 'a learned man'; *una bèlla città*, 'a beautiful city'.

Adjectives may express the quality of an object, either *absolutely*, that is, without any relation to other objects, or *relatively* to other objects; which produces different degrees of qualification: these have been reduced to the following three, viz. the *positive*, *comparative*, and *superlative*.

The *positive* is the adjective itself, expressing the quality of an object, without any relation of comparison; as *ricco*, 'rich'; *póvero*, 'poor'.

The *comparative* is the adjective expressing a relation of *superiority*, *inferiority*, or *equality*, between two or more objects in comparison; as, *più, méno, or sì ricco*, 'more, less, or so rich'; *più, méno, or sì póvero*, 'more, less, or so poor':—*Piètro è più, or méno ricco di Tommáso*, 'Peter is more, or less rich than Thomas'; *Tommáso è più, or méno póvero di Páolo*, 'Thomas is more, or less poor than Paul'; *Piètro e Tommáso sónò sì ricchi, or sì póveri cóme Páolo*, 'Peter and Thomas are so rich, or so poor as Paul'.

The *Superlative* is the adjective expressing the quality of the object in the highest degree of superiority, or the lowest degree of inferiority.

There are two kinds of superlative, the *relative*, and the *absolute*.

The *relative* superlative expresses the superiority or inferiority of an object, with relation to others; as, *il più, or il méno ricco*, 'the most, or the least rich'; *il più, or il méno póvero*, 'the most, or the least poor':—*Tommáso è IL PIÙ, or IL MÉNO RICCO*,—*Páolo è IL PIÙ, or IL MÉNO PÓVERO, di tutti*; 'Thomas is the most, or the least rich,—Paul is the most, or the least poor, of all'.

The *absolute* superlative shows that the object spoken of possesses a quality in the superlative degree, but without reference to any other; as, *ricchissimo*, 'very rich'; *poverissimo*, 'very poor'.

A great number of Italian nouns are susceptible of a change of termination, which, modifying the primitive idea expressed by them, augments or diminishes their signification; as, *uómo*, 'man'; *OMÓNE*, 'large man': *ruscélló*, 'brook'; *RUSCELLÉTTO*, 'small brook'. The nouns thus altered, are called **AUGMENTATIVES** and **DIMINUTIVES**.

With nouns are usually classed the **NUMERALS**, which are either *cardinal*, or *ordinal*.

*Cardinal numbers* are those, which determine a collection of objects, with regard to their number or quantity; as, *úno*, 'one'; *diéci*, 'ten'.

*Ordinal numbers* determine objects with regard to their order or arrangement; as, *primo*, 'first'; *décimo*, 'tenth'.

Italian nouns are varied by *gender* and *number*.

*Gender* is a division of nouns according to sex. Nouns denoting males are *masculine*; nouns denoting females are *feminine*. This division, which properly regards only nouns having sex, is in Italian extended also to all other nouns, though they have no sex; so that every noun is either of the *masculine* or *feminine* gender. But there are certain nouns which belong to both genders, and these are said to be of the *common* gender.

*Number* is the designation of one or more objects. There are two numbers, viz. the *singular* and *plural*. The *singular* designates one single person or thing; the *plural*, more than one person or thing.

The various relations of nouns, which in Latin are denoted by different terminations, or *cases*, are expressed in Italian by certain *prepositions* placed before them; and for the *nominative* and *accusative* of the Latin, have been substituted the terms *subjective*, and *objective*; and for the *genitive*, *dative*, and *ablative*,—the terms *relation of possession*, *of attribution*, and *of derivation*.

A **PRONOUN** is a word used instead of a noun, already expressed, to prevent its frequent repetition; and like the noun is either *substantive* or *adjective*.

*Substantive pronouns* are either *personal*, *conjunctive*, *relative*, or *interrogative*; and *adjective pronouns* are either *possessive*, *demonstrative*, or *indefinite*.

The *personal* pronouns are those, which mark the *persons*.

The *persons* are three, viz. the *first*, *second*, and *third*. The *first* is the person speaking; as, *io*, 'I'; *noi*, 'we':—the *second* is the person spoken to; as, *tu*, 'thou'; *voi*, 'you':—and the *third* is the person spoken of; as, *egli*, 'he'; *ella*, 'she'; *eglino*, *èlleno*, 'they'.

The *conjunctive* pronouns are those, which are always joined to a verb. They are derived from the personal pronouns, and are divided into *conjunctive*, properly speaking; as, *mi*, 'me', or 'to me'; *ti*, 'thee', or 'to thee'; *si*, 'one's self', or 'to ones' self':—*MI duòle*, 'it grieves me'; *TI parla*, 'he speaks to thee'; *SI loda*, 'he praises himself':—and *relative conjunctive* pronouns; as, *ne*, 'of it, of him, of her', or 'of them';—*NE vorréi vedér la fine*, 'I should like to see the end of it'.

The *relative* pronouns are those, which refer to a person or thing, that has been before spoken of; as, *chi*, 'who' or 'he that'; *che*, *il quále*, 'who', or 'which that':—*CHI si umilia si esalta*, 'who', or 'he that humbles himself exalts himself': *l' uòmo, CHE or il QUÁLE scrìve*, 'the man, who or that writes'; *il libro, CHE or il QUÁLE io léggo*, 'the book, which or that I read'.

The person or thing, which relative pronouns refer to, is called the *antecedent*.

The *interrogative* pronouns are those, which are used to interrogate, or ask a question; as, *chi?* 'who?' *che?* 'what?' *quále?* 'which?'—*CHI è?* 'who is it?' *CHE fàte?* 'what are you doing?' *QUÁLE voléte?* 'which will you have?'

The *possessive* pronouns are those, which mark the possession of a person or a thing; as, *mio*, 'my', or 'mine'; *tuo*, 'thy', or 'thine'; *suo*, 'his, her, hers', or 'its':—*MIO fratèllo*, 'my brother'; *il TUO cappèllo*, 'thy hat'; *quèsto è SÙO*, 'this is his, hers', or 'its'.

The *demonstrative* pronouns are those, which point out the particular person or thing of which we speak; as, *quèsto*, 'this'; *quèllo*, 'that'; *cotèsto*, 'that near you':—*QUÈSTO giòvine*, 'this youth'; *QUÈLLO spécchio*, 'that looking-glass'; *COTÈSTO libro*, 'that book near you'.

The *indefinite* pronouns are those, which express a person or thing in a general and unlimited sense; as, *alcúno*, 'some one'; *ogni*, 'every'; *niènte*, 'nothing'.

Italian pronouns, like the nouns, are varied by gender and number.

A **VERB** is a word, which by itself implies affirmation; as, *èssere*, 'to be':—*ÈSSERE amabile*, 'to be amiable': and necessarily supposes a *subject* and a *quality*, to which it affirms that the subject is, or is not attributed; as, *la virtù è amabile*,

'virtue is amiable'; *la PIGRÍZIA non è LODÉVOLE*, 'slothfulness is not laudable'.

There is but one verb, strictly speaking; *essere*, 'to be'; because this alone expresses affirmation. But there are other words, which in themselves contain both the verb *essere*, and the *quality*, which it affirms to belong to the *subject* of which we speak; as, *amàre (essere amànte)*, 'to love (to be a lover of)'; *sprezzàre (essere sprezzànte)*, 'to despise (to be a despiser of)';—*égli AMA (égli È AMÁNTE)*, 'he loves (he is a lover of)'; *élla SPREZZA (élla È SPREZZÁNTE)*, 'she despises (she is a despiser of)'; and to these has also been given the name of *verbs*, and they are used to express the quality of the subject, or the action it performs or it undergoes.

Verbs are commonly divided into *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, *pronominal*, and *unipersonal*.

*Active* verbs are those, that express an action, which falls or may immediately fall upon an *object*; as, *amàre*, 'to love':—*amàre LA VIRTÙ*, 'to love virtue'.

The object upon which the action of the verb falls, is called the *regimen* or *complement* of this verb. Besides this first complement, which is called *direct*, many active verbs may have a second complement, which is called *indirect*; as, *scrivere*, 'to write':—*scrivere ÚNA LÉTTERA*, 'to write a letter':—*scrivere úna lèttèra AD UN AMÍCO*, 'to write a letter to a friend.' This last, however, properly speaking, is rather a *complement* of the *preposition*, which always precedes it.

*Passive* verbs are those, that express an action which falls upon the *subject*; as *essere amàto*, 'to be loved':—*LA VIRTÙ è amàta*, 'virtue is loved'.

*Neuter* verbs are those, that express a state of being, or an action which does not fall directly upon an object; as, *dormire*, 'to sleep'; *nuocere*, 'to be noxious'.

*Pronominal* verbs are those, that are varied with two pronouns of the same person; as, *vènder-si*, 'to sell' or 'to be sold':—*QUÉSTO LIBRO SI vénde cáro*, 'this book sells', or 'is sold dear'.

To pronominal, properly, belong *reflective* and *reciprocal* verbs.

*Reflective* verbs are those, that express either the action of a subject which acts upon itself; as, *disfènder-si*, 'to defend ones' self':—*fo MI disfèndo*, 'I defend myself'; or an action of the subject, which terminates finally in itself; as, *fàr-si un dovère* 'to make to ones' self a duty':—*ÉGLI SI fa un dovère*, 'he makes to himself a duty'.

*Reciprocal* verbs are those, that express the action of several subjects, who act respectively the one upon the other; as, *aiutàr-si*; 'to assist each other'; *NÓI CI aiutàmo*, 'we assist each other'.

*Unipersonal*, or, as they are usually called, *impersonal* verbs, are those, that are used only in the third person singular of each tense; as, *accadere*, 'to happen':—*accáde*, 'it happens'; *accádde*, 'it happened'; *accaderà*, 'it will happen'.

There are moreover two verbs, which generally assist to vary other verbs, and which, consequently, are called *auxiliary verbs*: these are, *avere*, 'to have'; and *essere*, 'to be':—*AVÈRE letto*, 'to have read'; *ÈSSERE partito*, 'to (be) have departed'.

Italian verbs are varied by *mood*, *tense*, *number*, and *person*.

*Mood* is a particular form of the verb, which shows the manner in which the action, or the state of being, is represented.

There are five moods, viz. the *infinitive*, *indicative*, *conjunctive*, *conditional*, and *imperative*.

The *infinitive*, represents the action in an indefinite manner, and without distinction of person or number; as, *scrivere*, 'to write'.

The *indicative* represents the action absolutely, and without dependence on any other word; as, *io scrivo*, 'I write'.

The *conjunctive* represents the action as depending upon another verb with which it is connected by a conjunction; as, *bisogna, che io scriva*, 'it is necessary, that I write'.

The *conditional* represents the action with dependence upon a condition; as, *io scriverei, se potessi*, 'I should write, if I could'.

The *imperative* represents the action in commanding, exhorting, or intreating; as, *scrivi*, 'write thou'; *scrivete*, 'write ye'; *scriviamo*, 'let us write'.

Each of these moods, except the imperative, has different tenses.

*Tense* is a distinction of time, which shows when the action is done. Time, strictly speaking, is either *present*, *past*, or *future*.

The *present* denotes the action doing by a subject at the very time in which we are speaking; as, *io canto*, 'I sing'.

The *past* or *preterite* denotes the action done by a subject before the time in which we are speaking; as, *io cantái*, 'I sang'.

The *future* denotes the action to be done by a subject after the time in which we are speaking; as, *io canterò*, 'I will sing'.

The preterite is divided into *imperfect* and *perfect*.

The *imperfect* expresses an action done in a time past, but present in respect to another action done in a time also past; as, *io cantáva, quando voi entráste*, 'I was singing, when you came in'.

The *perfect* expresses an action done in a time completely



past, and without reference to any other action; as *io cantái un' ária*, 'I sang an air'.

Tenses are either *simple* or *compound*.

*Simple tenses* are those, which are formed without the assistance of either the auxiliary verbs *avére*, 'to have', or *éssere*, 'to be'; as, *parlo*, 'I speak'; *vénni*, 'I came'; *loderò*, 'I will praise'.

*Compound tenses* are those, which are formed of the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb *avére*, 'to have', or *éssere*, 'to be', and the participle of the verb varied; as, *ho parláto*, 'I have spoken'; *sóno venúto*, 'I (am) have come'; *avrò lodáto*, or *sarò lodáto*, 'I will have praised,' or 'will be praised'.

Each tense contains two numbers; the *singular* and *plural*.

The number is *singular*, when one single subject causes the action of the verb; as, *io mangio*, 'I eat';—and it is *plural*, when more subjects contribute to the same action; as, *noi mangiámo*, 'we eat'.

Each number has three *persons*, which are denoted by the personal pronouns, *io*, 'I'; *tu*, 'thou'; *égli*, 'he', or *élla*, 'she'; in the singular;—and *noi*, 'we'; *vói*, 'you'; *églino*, or *élleno*, 'they'; in the plural; as, *io védo*, 'I see'; *tu védi*, 'thou seest'; *égli* or *élla véde*, 'he or she sees':—*noi vediámo*, 'we see'; *vói vedéte*, 'you see'; *églino* or *élleno védono*, 'they see'.

The assemblage of several verbs, forming all their moods, tenses, numbers, and persons, according to the same rule, is called a *conjugation*.

Such verbs as conform to the rule of any conjugation, are called *regular*; and such as differ in any respect, are called *irregular*.

Verbs which are not used in certain tenses, numbers, or persons, are called *defective*.

The **PARTICIPLE** is a word which *partakes* at the same time of the nature of the verb and of the adjective; as, *amánte*, 'loving'; *amáto*, 'loved.' It partakes of the nature of the verb, because it has its signification, and has reference to time; as, *amánte (che áma) Dio*, 'loving (who loves) God'; *amáto (che è amáto) da Dio*, 'loved (who is loved) by God'; and it partakes of the nature of the adjective, because, like an adjective, it qualifies a noun; as, *uómo onoráto*, 'honored man'; *virtù prováta*, 'tried virtue'.

Participles are divided into *present* and *past*.

The *present* participle expresses the action of the subject, or the quality of a noun, at the moment in which we speak; as, *amánte*, 'loving':—*dónna amánte*, 'a loving woman'.

The *past* participle expresses the action or quality as per-

fected or past; as, *temúto*, 'feared':—*castigo TEMÚTO*, 'feared punishment'.

With the participle is usually classed the GERUND, which, like the participle, is an inflexion of the verb, but has nothing in common with the adjective.

Italian participles are varied by gender and number.

AN ADVERB is a word, which serves to modify a verb, an adjective, or another adverb, expressing the manner, or circumstances of its signification; as, *più*, 'more'; *mólto*, 'very'; *distintamente*, 'distinctly':—*égli párla DISTINTAMENTE*, 'he speaks distinctly'; *siéte MÓLTO sávio*, 'you are very wise'; *PIÙ sinceramente*, 'more sincerely'.

Adverbs are divided into those of *quality*, *order*, *time*, *place*, *quantity*, *comparison*, &c.

Adverbs of *quality* are those, which express the manner in which things are done; as, *saviamente*, 'wisely'; *elegantemente*, 'elegantly'; *inconsideratamente*, 'inconsiderately':—*égli pénsa SAVIAMENTE*, 'he thinks wisely'; *élla scríve ELEGANTEMENTE*, 'she writes elegantly'; *hángo agíto INCONSIDERATAMENTE*, 'they have acted inconsiderately'.

Adverbs of *order* serve to express the arrangement of things in regard to one another; as, *prima*, 'first'; *póí*, 'then'; *da principio*, 'before'; *in séguito*, 'afterward':—*PRÍMA andrémo in Fráncia*, 'we will go first to France'; *póí in Itália*, 'then to Italy'; *DA PRINCÍPIO si déve evítare il mále*, 'we must before avoid evil'; *IN SÉGUITO si déve far del béne*, 'afterward we must do good'.

Adverbs of *time* are those, which express some relation of time; as, *iéri*, 'yesterday'; *óggi*, 'to-day'; *dománi*, 'to-morrow':—*lo vidí IÉRI*, 'I saw him yesterday'; *viéni ÓGGI*, 'come to-day'; *partirò DOMÁNI*, 'I shall depart to-morrow'.

Adverbs of *place* serve to denote the situation or the distance of an object; as, *quí*, 'here'; *là*, 'there'; *vicíno*, 'near'; *lontáno*, 'far':—*son QUI*, 'I am here'; *guardáte LÀ*, 'look there'; *sta quí VICÍNO*, 'he lives near here'; *è tróppo LONTÁNO*, 'it is too far'.

Adverbs of *quantity* are those, which modify an object in relation to quantity; as, *póco*, 'little'; *assái*, 'much'; *abbastánza*, 'enough':—*párla ASSÁI*, 'he speaks much'; *riflétte PÓCO*, 'he reflects little'; *ne ha ABBASTÁNZA*, 'he has enough of it'.

Adverbs of *comparison* serve to denote the different degrees of quality of the objects compared; as, *più*, 'more'; *méno*, 'less'; *cosí—cóme*, 'so—as':—*l' onóre vále PIÙ délle ricchézze*, 'honor is worth more than riches'; *il súo cuóre non è MÉN bello del viso*,

'her heart is not less beautiful than her face'; *égli non è sì dócile cóme è viváce*, 'he is not so docile as he is lively'.

Adverbs are either *simple* or *compound*. Simple adverbs are those which consist of a simple word; as, *quí*, 'here'; *pói*, 'then'; *béne*, 'well'; and compound adverbs are those, which consist of an adjective and the word *ménte*, 'manner'; as, *dolceménte* (*con dólce ménte*), 'sweetly (in a sweet manner)'. There are besides several expressions, which in several words announce the same idea that might be expressed by one adverb; as, *di buón grádo*, 'willingly'; *quánto prima*, 'very soon'; *all' improvviso*, 'unexpectedly'; and these are called **ADVERBIAL PHRASES**.

A **PREPOSITION** is a word, which is placed before a noun, a pronoun, or a verb, to show its relation to some other word; as, *in*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *sénza*, 'without':—*non è in cása*, 'he is not (in the house) at home'; *verrò con voi*, 'I will come with you'; *sénza andar più alle lúnghe*, 'without going any further'.

Prepositions have several denominations, viz. of *place*, *order*, *time*, *union*, *opposition*, &c. according to the several relations they express.

The word which follows the preposition is called its *regimen* or *complement*.

A **CONJUNCTION** is a word, which serves to join words and sentences together; as, *e*, 'and'; *nè*, 'nor, neither'; *ma*, 'but'; *nondiméno*, 'nevertheless':—*bélla e buóna*, 'handsome and good'; *NÈ mangia NÈ béve*, 'he neither eats nor drinks'; *égli è póvero ma onoráto*, 'he is poor but honored'; *élla è móltto giòvane, e nondiméno è móltto sávia*, 'she is yet very young, and nevertheless she is very wise'.

Besides the general use of connecting words and sentences together, conjunctions sometimes express the particular point of view in which the mind considers the words and sentences so connected; hence the division of conjunctions into *explicative*, *adversative*, *alternative*, *conclusive*, &c.

AN **INTERJECTION** is a word, which is used to express an emotion or affection of the mind; as, *ah!* 'ah!' *oh!* 'oh!' *aimè!* 'alas!'

The affections of the mind may be of *joy*, *grief*, *indignation*, *contempt*, &c. which give to the interjections different denominations.

Of the foregoing Parts of Speech, some are occasionally employed, when they are not absolutely necessary to grammatical construction, but serve, nevertheless, to give strength and energy to the discourse; as, *già, mica, pure, mái*:—*GIÀ Dio non vógliá*, 'may God forbid'; *non son mica fávole*, 'they are not

fables'; *la cosa andò pur così*, 'the affairs went off so'; *MÁ: sí, che io le conósko*, 'yes, that I know them'. These words, when so used, are called **EXPLETIVES**.

**WORDS** form the whole subject of Grammar. They may be either expressed by the *voice*, or represented in *writing* by characters.

The collection of letters of which the words of a language are formed, is called the **ALPHABET**.

That part of Grammar, which teaches how to express the sounds of words, is called **PRONUNCIATION**.

That part which treats of the different sorts of words and their various modifications, is called **ANALOGY**.

That part of Grammar, which treats of the connexion and right order of words among themselves, is called **SYNTAX**.

That part, which teaches how to write words correctly, is called **ORTHOGRAPHY**.



# ITALIAN ALPHABET.



THE *Italian Alphabet* contains *twenty-two letters*, which the modern Romans, following the Latin, name and pronounce as follows :

(Figure)	(Name)	(Pron.)
A	a	ah
B	b	bay
C	c	chay
D	d	day
E	e	ay
F	f	ayf'
G	g	jay
H	h	acca
I	i	ee
J	j	yay
L	l	ayl'

(Figure)	(Name)	(Pron.)
M	m	em
N	n	en
O	o	o
P	p	pe
Q	q	qu
R	r	er
S	s	es
T	t	te
U	u	u
V	v	ve
Z	z	zeta

The Florentines, on the authority of the "Fathers of the Language,"\* name and pronounce them as follows :

(Figure)	(Name)	(Pron.)
A	a	ah
B	b	bee
C	c	chee
D	d	dee
E	e	ay
F	f	effe
G	g	jee
H	h	acca
I	i	i córto
J	j	i lúngo
L	l	éllé

(Figure)	(Name)	(Pron.)
M	m	émme
N	n	énne
O	o	o
P	p	pi
Q	q	qu
R	r	erre
S	s	ésse
T	t	ti
U	u	u
V	v	vi
Z	z	zeta

\* E di questi cotáli sóno mólti idióti, che non suprébbono l'ABBICCI. (Dant. Conv.)

Egli il crederébbe allóra, che guardádo vói, égli crederébbe, che vói sapéste l'ABBICCI. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 5.)

E fe' edificáre tante badie, quánté léttere ha nell' ABBICCI. (Giov. Vill. l. 1. c. 13.)

And of such ones, there are many so ignorant, that do not know even the ah-bee-chee'.

He might think so, if looking at you at the same time, he should think that you had learned your a-b-c.

And caused so many convents to be built as there are letters in the a-b-c.

Of these twenty-two letters, *A, E, I, O, U*, are *vowels*; *B, C, D, F, G, L, M, N, P, Q, R, S, T, V, Z*, are *consonants*; *J* is considered as a *vowel*; and *H* is a *simple sign*, having *no sound*.

The Latin letters *K k, X x, Y y*, have no place in the Italian Alphabet.

Instead of *k*, either *c* or *ch* is used; as,

*Senza fallo á' caléndi sará capitáno Buffalmácco.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) Without fail by the kalends Buffalmacco will be captain.

*Dicéva un chírie ed un Sánctus.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.) He said a Kyrie and a Sanctus.

*X* is sometimes translated into *s* or *ss*, and sometimes into *cc*; as,

*Acciocchè io prima éstemplo déa a tútti vói.* (Bocc. Intr.) So that I might first set the example to all of you.

*Un giòvane lor nipóte, che avéa nóme Alessándro, mandárono.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) They sent a young man, nephew of theirs, called Alexander.

*Sópra gli álli palági, e sópra l' eccélsa tórrì la láscia.* (Bocc. g. 4. Proem.) It [the wind] leaves it [the dust] upon the high palaces and the lofty towers.

The word 'Xerxes' is written with an *s*, — *Sérse*; but the word 'Xanthus' is written with an *x*, — *Xánto*, 'the Scamander'; to distinguish it from *Sánto*, 'Saint.'

For *Y* has been substituted *i*; as,

*Véggio lunge dá' lághi Avérni, e Slígi.* (Petr. s. 265.) I see far from the Avernian and Stygian lakes.

The English and German *W w*, in translating proper names, is commonly changed into *u* when it is a vowel, and into *v* or *g* when a consonant; as, *Néuton*, 'Newton': *Vallenstéin*, 'Wallenstein'; *Gálles*, 'Wales.'

PART I.

ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.



CHAPTER I.

SOUNDS OF THE VOWELS.

**A** is sounded like *a* in the English word *father* ; as,

	(Pronounce)	
ÁRA,	ah'-rah,	altar ;
ÁlMA,	ahl'-mah,	soul.

**E** has two sounds, one *open*, the other *close* :

*E open* is sounded like *ai* in the English word *fair* ; as,

tÉma,	tai'-mah,	theme ;
vÉna,	vai'-nah,	oats.

*E close* is sounded like *ai* in the English word *pain* ; as,

lÉga,	lai'-gah,	alliance ;
mÉla,	mai'-lah,	apple.

**I** is sounded like *ee* in English ; or like *i* in the English word *machine* ; as,

inno,	een'-no,	hymn ;
lite,	lee'-tay,	strife.

**O** has two sounds, one *open*, the other *close* :

*O open* is sounded like *o* in the English word *cord* ; as,

bótta,	bot'-tah,	blow ;
rósa,	ro'-sah,	rose.

*O close* is sounded like *o* in the English word *bone* ; as,

<i>folla,</i>	<i>fol'-lah,</i>	crowd ;
<i>óra,</i>	<i>o'-rah,</i>	hour.

*U* is sounded like *oo* in the English word *ooze* ; as,

<i>úso,</i>	<i>oo'-so,</i>	use ;
<i>tútto,</i>	<i>toot'-to,</i>	all.

When these vowels are at the end of words marked with an accent, they have a quick and sharp sound, which very seldom occurs in the English language ; as,

<i>bontà,</i>	<i>bon-tah',</i>	goodness ;
<i>affè,</i>	<i>ahf-fay',</i>	in truth ;
<i>balì,</i>	<i>bah-lee',</i>	bailiff ;
<i>falò,</i>	<i>fah-lo',</i>	bonfire ;
<i>tribù,</i>	<i>tree-boo',</i>	tribe.

[For Rules how to Determine when the vowels *E, O,* are Pronounced *open,* or *close,* see APPENDIX, A.]

---

## CHAPTER II.

### PRONUNCIATION OF THE CONSONANTS.

ITALIAN consonants, except *C, G, R, S, Z,* are pronounced as in English.

*C* followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *ch* in the English words *cherry, chilly* ; as,

<i>céna,</i>	<i>chay'-nah,</i>	supper ;
<i>cíbo,</i>	<i>chee'-bo,</i>	food.

*G* followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *j* in English ; or like *g* in the English words *gem, ginger* ; as,

<i>gélo,</i>	<i>'jay'-lo</i>	frost ;
<i>gíro</i>	<i>jee'-ro,</i>	turn.

*R* in the beginning of words, or in the middle



when it begins a syllable, is pronounced like *r* in the English words *ruin*, *marine* ; as,

<i>rúpe,</i>	<i>roo'-pay,</i>	rock ;
<i>máre,</i>	<i>mah'-ray,</i>	sea :

But at the end of words, or when it ends a syllable, or when preceded by another consonant, or when doubled, it has a rolling sound to which there is nothing similar in the English language, and which can be acquired only by oral instruction ; as,

<i>per,</i>	<i>payr',</i>	for ;
<i>ésto,</i>	<i>ayr'-to,</i>	steep ;
<i>átro,</i>	<i>ah'-tro,</i>	black ;
<i>órrido,</i>	<i>or'-ree-do,</i>	horrid.

**S** in the beginning of words, or when preceded or followed by another consonant, or when doubled, is pronounced *sharp*, like *s* in the English words *saint*, *pulse*, *discount*, *assembly* ; as,

<i>sásto,</i>	<i>sahn'-to,</i>	saint ;
<i>gélsta,</i>	<i>jayl'-sah,</i>	mulberry ;
<i>ésca,</i>	<i>ay'-skah,</i>	bait ;
<i>léssso,</i>	<i>lays'-so,</i>	boiled.

Between two vowels, and in the last syllable of all substantive and adjective nouns that end in *ése*, *úso*, *úsa*, it is pronounced *flat*, or *soft* like *z* ; or like *s* in the English word *rose* ; as,

<i>viso,</i>	<i>vee'-zo,</i>	visage ;
<i>palése,</i>	<i>pah-lay'-zay,</i>	manifest ;
<i>abúso,</i>	<i>ah-boo'-zo,</i>	abuse ;
<i>confúsa,</i>	<i>con-foo'-zah,</i>	confounded.

In the last syllable of all adjective nouns ending in *óso*, *ósa*, it is pronounced *sharp* ; as,

<i>virtuóso,</i>	<i>veer-too,o'-so,</i>	virtuous ;
<i>maestósa,</i>	<i>mah,ay-sto'-sah,</i>	majestic.

**Z** cannot be submitted to certain rules. It can only be said, that, in the beginning of words, or when single, it is pronounced *flat*, or *soft* like *ds* in the English word *Windsor* ; as,

<i>zodiaco,</i>	<i>dso-dee',ah-ko,</i>	zodiac ;
<i>zanzára,</i>	<i>dsahn-dsah'-rah,</i>	gnat.

When preceded by a consonant, or when followed by two vowels, or when doubled, it is pronounced *sharp*, like *ts* in the English word *benefits*; as,

<i>cálza,</i>	<i>kahl'-tsah,</i>	stocking;
<i>grázia,</i>	<i>grah'-tsee,ah,</i>	grace;
<i>bellézza,</i>	<i>bayl-lay'-tsah,</i>	beauty.

In the last syllable of words ending in *ánza*, *énza*, *ónza*, it is pronounced something like *z* in the English word *razor*; as,

<i>dánza,</i>	<i>dahn'-zah,</i>	dance;
<i>cleménza,</i>	<i>klay-mayn'-zah,</i>	clemency;
<i>lónza,</i>	<i>lon'-zah,</i>	panther.

[For a list of Words varying from the general Rules, respecting the Pronunciation of *Z*, see APPENDIX, B.]

## CHAPTER III.

### OF *J* AND *H*.

*J* is considered as a vowel in Italian. It is used instead of *ii*, at the end of words, in the plural of some nouns; \* and it is sounded like *ee* in the English word *fee*, each *e* being distinctly pronounced; as,

<i>témpj,</i>	} for {	<i>témpj,</i>	<i>taym'-pe,e,</i>	temples;
<i>stúdj,</i>		<i>stúdj,</i>	<i>stoo'-de,e,</i>	studies.

*H* has no sound. It is only used to denote the hard sound of the consonants *c*, *g*, before the vowels *e*, *i*; as, in

<i>chérico,</i>	<i>kay'-ree-ko,</i>	clerk;
<i>chitárra,</i>	<i>kee-tahr'-rah,</i>	guitar;
<i>ghézzo,</i>	<i>ghay'-tso,</i>	Moor;
<i>ghíro,</i>	<i>gee'-ro,</i>	dormouse:

\* We very often in books meet with words in which *j* is used instead of *i*, either at the beginning or in the middle of words; as in *jéri* instead of *íeri*, 'yesterday'; *jurídico* instead of *iurídico*, 'lawful'; *nója* instead of *nóia*, 'vexation'; *librájo* instead of *libráio*, 'bookseller'; but this use is disapproved by correct writers.

To prolong the sound of the vowels *a, e, i, o, u*,  
in the interjections,

аН!	āh!	ah!
деН!	dāy!	alas!
иН!	ēē!	ih!
роН!	pō!	pooh!
уН!	ōō!	uh!

To distinguish the words,\*

I have,	Ho,	o,	} from {	o,	o,	or;
thou hast,	Hái,	ah',ee,		ái,	ah',ee,	to the;
he has,	Ha,	ah,		a,	ah,	to;
they have,	Hánno,	ahn'-no,		ánno,	ahn'-no,	year.

And in each case it is a sign, a mark of distinction rather than a letter.

## CHAPTER IV.

### DOUBLE CONSONANTS.

*Cc* followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *tch* in the English word *match*; as,

accénto,	aht-chayn'-to,	accent;
accidio,	aht-chee'-dee,o,	slaughter.

*Gg* [followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *dg* in the English word *lodge*; as,

oggéttó,	od-jayt'-to,	object;
oggidh,	od-jee-dee',	now-a-days.

*Ch* followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *k* in the English words, *kept, keep*; as,

chéto,	kay'-to,	quiet;
chíno,	kee'-no,	inclined.

\* Some use the *grave accent* instead of *h* to distinguish these words, writing *ó*, 'I have'; *ái*, 'thou hast'; *á*, 'he has'; *ánno*, 'they have'; in the same way that we distinguish the words *é*, 'it is'; *là*, 'there'; *né*, 'neither'; from *e*, 'and'; *la*, 'the'; *ne*, 'of it'; &c.; which mode seems to be preferable, as it simplifies the orthography of the words, and dispenses with a useless letter.

Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, it is pronounced like *ki* in the English word *kind*; as,

CHIÁVE,	k,yah'-vay,	key ;
CHIÉSA,	k,yayf'-sah,	church ;
CHIÓMA,	k,yo'-mah,	head of hair ;
CHIÚSA,	k,yoo'-sah,	hedge.

*Gh* followed by the vowels *e, i*, is pronounced like *g* in the English words *get, giddy*; as,

GHEMBO,	gaym'-bo,	crooked ;
GHIRO,	gee'-ro,	dormouse.

Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, it is pronounced like *gui* in the English word *guide*; as,

GHIÁNDA,	g,yahn'-dah,	acorn ;
GHIÉRA,	g,yayf'-rah,	quiver ;
GHIÓTTO,	g,yot'-to,	glutton ;
teGGHIÚZZA,	tayg-g,yoot'-sah,	baking-pan.

*Gl* followed by the vowel *i*, and in all words in which *i* is followed by another vowel, is pronounced like *ll* in the English word *brilliant*; as,

GLI,	l,yee',	the ;
ÉGLI,	ayf'-l,yee,	he ;
VÓGLIA,	vo'-l,yah,	desire ;
CÍGLIO,	chee'-l,yo,	eye-brow:

But in all words in which *gli* is followed by a consonant, it is pronounced like *gl* in the English word *glimmer*; as,

NEGLIGÉnte,	nay-gee-jayn'-tay,	negligent ;
ANGLICÁno,	ahn-gee-kah'-no,	Anglican.

It has the same sound in the words,

ÁngLI,	ahn'-gee,	Englishmen ;
ÁngLIa,	ahn'-gee,ah,	England.

*Gn* followed by the vowels *a, e, i, o, u*, is pronounced something like *ni* in the English word *minion*; as,

MAGÁGNA,	mah-gah'-n,yah,	blemish ;
AGNÉllo,	ah-n,yayf'-lo,	lamb ;

<i>incógnito,</i>	<i>een-kó'-n,yee-to,</i>	unknown;
<i>bisógnó,</i>	<i>bee-so'-n,yo,</i>	need;
<i>ignúdo,</i>	<i>ee-n,yoo'-do,</i>	naked.

*Sc* followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *sh* in the English word *shell, ship*; as,

<i>scéna,</i>	<i>shay'-nah,</i>	scene;
<i>scímia,</i>	<i>shee'-mee,ah,</i>	ape.

*Sch* followed by the vowels *e, i,* is pronounced like *sk* in the English words *sketch, skill*; as,

<i>schérno,</i>	<i>skayr'-no,</i>	mockery;
<i>schífo,</i>	<i>skee'-fo,</i>	skiff.

Followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu,* it is pronounced like *sk* in the English word *sky*; as,

<i>schíavo,</i>	<i>sk,yah'-vo,</i>	slave;
<i>schíena,</i>	<i>sk,yay'-nah,</i>	the back;
<i>schióppo,</i>	<i>sk,yop'-po,</i>	musket;
<i>schíuma,</i>	<i>sk,yoo'-mah,</i>	froth.

## CHAPTER V.

## OF SYLLABLES.

*CIA', ció, ciú,* are pronounced like *cha, cho, choo,* in the English words *charm, chop, choose*; as,

<i>ciálda,</i>	<i>chah'-da,</i>	wafer;
<i>ciómpo,</i>	<i>chom'-po,</i>	clown;
<i>ciúrma,</i>	<i>choor'-mah,</i>	crew.

*Giá, gió, giú,* are pronounced like *ja, jo, ju,* in the English words *jar, jove, jury*; as,

<i>giálo,</i>	<i>jah'-lo,</i>	yellow;
<i>giórno,</i>	<i>jor'-no,</i>	day;
<i>giústo,</i>	<i>ju'-sto,</i>	just.

*Sciá, sció, sciú,* are pronounced like *sha, sho, shoo,* in the English words *shall, shop, shoot*; as,

<i>sciáme,</i>	<i>shah'-may,</i>	swarm;
<i>sciólto,</i>	<i>shol'-to,</i>	loose;
<i>sciugáto,</i>	<i>shoo-gah'-to,</i>	wiped.

*Guá, gué, guí,* are pronounced like *gua, gue, gui,* in the English words *language, languet, languid*; as,

GUÁncia,	gwahn'-chah,	cheek,
GUÉrra,	gwayr'-rah,	war;
GUÍda,	gwee'-dah,	guide.

*Quá, qué, quí, quó,* are pronounced like *qua, que, qui, quo,* in the English words *quality, question, quibble, quote*; as,

QUÁnto,	kwahn'-to,	how-much;
QUÉsto,	kway'-sto,	this;
QUÍnto,	kween'-to,	fifth;
QUOTIDIÁno,	kwo-tee-dee,ah'-no,	daily.

## CHAPTER VI.

### DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS.

ITALIAN diphthongs are so pronounced as to give to each vowel its proper sound. They are generally divided into two classes, the *long* and the *short*.

Long diphthongs are those, in which each vowel is as distinctly pronounced as if they formed each a separate syllable; as,

áe	Áere,	ah',ay-ray,	air;
ái	mÁI,	mah',ee,	never;
áo	pÁolo,	pah',o-lo,	a paul;
áu	Áura,	ah',oo-rah,	breeze;
ea	bórea,	bo'-ray,ah,	the north-wind;
ee	VEEMénza,	vay,ay-mayn'-zah,	vehemence;
éi	léI,	lay',ee,	her;
éo	Éolo,	ay',o-lo,	Æolus;
éu	fÉudo,	fay',oo-do,	feud;
ói	vóI,	vo',ee,	you;
oó	oóorte,	ko,or'-tay,	cohort;
úi	colúI,	ko-loo',ee,	that-one.

Short diphthongs are so pronounced, that, of the two vowels, one is so faintly heard as to seem blended with the other; as,

<i>ia</i>	<i>fiáto,</i>	<i>fee,ah'-to,</i>	breath;
<i>ie</i>	<i>ciélo,</i>	<i>chee,ay'-lo,</i>	heaven;
<i>io</i>	<i>pióva,</i>	<i>pee,o'-vah,</i>	rain;
<i>iu</i>	<i>piúma,</i>	<i>pee,oo'-mah,</i>	feather;
<i>ua</i>	<i>quáto,</i>	<i>kwahn'to,</i>	how-much;
<i>ue</i>	<i>guéffa,</i>	<i>gwayf'-fah,</i>	cage;
<i>ui</i>	<i>quínto,</i>	<i>kween'-to,</i>	fifth;
<i>uo</i>	<i>túono,</i>	<i>too,o'-no,</i>	thunder.

Triphthongs are generally classed with the short diphthongs, and are pronounced,

<i>aió</i>	<i>gáio,</i>	<i>gah',yo,</i>	gay;
<i>iei</i>	<i>miéi.</i>	<i>mee,ay',ee,</i>	mine;
<i>uoi</i>	<i>buói,</i>	<i>boo,o',ee,</i>	oxen;
<i>uáio</i>	<i>guáio,</i>	<i>gwah',yo,</i>	wailing;
<i>uóio</i>	<i>cuóio,</i>	<i>kwo',yo,</i>	leather;
<i>uói</i>	<i>lacciuói,</i>	<i>laht-choo,o',ee,</i>	snares.

## CHAPTER VII.

### GENERAL RULES ON THE ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.

ITALIAN words are pronounced exactly as they are written, there being no silent letter except *h*.

Every vowel always preserves its proper sound, independently of the consonants which accompany it.\*

\* There is, perhaps, no greater difficulty for foreigners in pronouncing Italian, than that of the vowels *E*, *O*, whose sound, either *open* or *close*, often determines the signification of words; as in *méle*, *pésca*, *téma*; *cóllo*, *fóro*, *vóto*, which pronounced with *E* and *O* *open*, mean, 'honey', 'a peach', 'theme'; 'neck', 'the bar', 'void': and pronounced with *E* and *O* *close*, signify, 'apples', 'fishing', 'fear'; 'with the', 'a hole', 'vow'.

[For a list of Words of Similar Orthography, but of Different Signification, distinguished by the Different Sound of *E*, *O*, see APPENDIX, A. (2)]

When consonants are doubled, each of them is separately pronounced ;\* as,

<i>fratéLLO,</i>	<i>frah-tayl'-lo,</i>	brother ;
<i>ADDÓBBO,</i>	<i>ahd-dob'-bo,</i>	ornament ;
<i>ERRÓRE,</i>	<i>ayr-ro'-ray,</i>	error ;
<i>ATTREZZI,</i>	<i>aht-trayt'-see,</i>	utensils.

If a word ends with a consonant, and the following word begins with a vowel, the consonant of the former, in the pronunciation, is joined to the vowel or first syllable of the latter ; as,

<i>per Amóre,</i>	<i>pe-R A-móre,</i>	<i>pay-rah-mo'-ray,</i>
	for love sake ;	
<i>quáL Angóscia,</i>	<i>qua-L AN-góscia</i>	<i>kwah-lahn-go'-shah,</i>
	what anguish ;	
<i>grand' invito,</i>	<i>gran-D IN-vito,</i>	<i>grahn-deen-vee'-to,</i>
	great invitation.	

When *gli* precedes a word beginning with a vowel, the vowel or first syllable of the latter is joined to *gli*, so as to form a single syllable ; as,

<i>GLI onóri,</i>	<i>GLI o-nóri,</i>	<i>lyo-no'-ree,</i>	the honors ;
<i>béGLI ócchi,</i>	<i>be-GLI óc-chi,</i>	<i>bay-l,yok'-kee,</i>	beautiful eyes.

In all Italian words of more than one syllable, there is always one, upon which the voice, in pronouncing the word, is heard stronger than upon the others. This, which is generally effected by raising the voice upon that syllable and letting it fall upon the rest, is commonly called the *tonic accent* of the word. The syllable upon which the tonic accent falls, is pronounced longer than the other syllables ; each of which is not to

\* The importance of the observance of this rule will at once be perceived by the learner, when, in advancing in the study of the language, he observes a great number of words written with a double consonant, whose signification would be entirely altered by pronouncing them with a single consonant ; as in *cárrro*, *fiócco*, *préssso*, *róssa*, *sérrra*, *sónno*, 'car', 'tassel', 'near', 'red', 'saw', 'sleep' : which pronounced with a single consonant, *cáro*, *fióco*, *préso*, *rósa*, *séra*, *sóno*, signify 'dear', 'hoarse', 'taken', 'rose', 'evening', 'I am'.

[For a list of Words, whose Signification is determined by the Pronunciation of double Consonants, see APPENDIX, C.]



occupy more than half the time employed in pronouncing the accented syllable ; as,

ónda,  
uccÉLlo,  
Ébano,  
amISTÀ,

ŌN-dāh,  
ōōt-chāyl-lō,  
āy-bāh-nō,  
āh-měě-stāh,

wave ;  
bird ;  
ebony ;  
amity.

---

### EXERCISE ON THE PRONUNCIATION.

*Cédro*, citron ; *cénere*, ashes ; *célebre*, celebrated ; *cicatrice*, scar ; *cicaláta*, chit-chat ; *cipólla*, onion ; *ciáncia*, story ; *ciarláre*, to prate ; *ciálda*, wafer ; *ciélo*, heaven ; *ciéco*, blind ; *cioccoláte*, chocolate ; *ciócco*, stump ; *ciò*, this ; *fanciúlló*, child ; *ciúrma*, crew ; *ciúffo*, a tuft of hair ; *génte*, people ; *génere*, gender ; *giro*, turn ; *gigánte*, giant ; *ginóccchio*, knee ; *giardino*, garden ; *giammái*, never ; *giállo*, yellow ; *giórno*, day ; *giógo*, yoke ; *giocóndo*, merry ; *gióvane*, youth ; *giúugno*, June ; *giulio*, gay ; *giúdice*, judge ; *giudicáre*, to judge ; *ráme*, copper ; *rovina*, ruin ; *orróre*, horror ; *parláre*, to speak ; *férro*, iron ; *órlo*, border ; *mercè*, reward ; *bárdó*, bard ; *arrovelláre*, to be angry ; *irretire*, to ensnare ; *crudéle*, cruel ; *fórza*, force ; *território*, territory ; *tartáreo*, tartarean ; *salúte*, health ; *sérvo*, servant ; *sórté*, fate ; *sire*, sire ; *sópra*, above ; *così*, so ; *singoláre*, singular ; *sóle*, sun ; *su*, upon ; *superáre*, to surmount ; *palése*, manifest ; *cortése*, courteous ; *spéso*, expended ; *réso*, rendered ; *rósa*, rose ; *spósa*, spouse ; *risa*, laughter ; *músa*, muse ; *virtuóso*, virtuous ; *confúso*, confounded ; *zólla*, clod ; *zio*, uncle ; *zúppa*, soup ; *zerbino*, a spark ; *zimárra*, night-gown ; *pózzo*, a well ; *carézze*, caresses ; *carrózza*, couch ; *tázza*, cup ; *ammazzáre*, to kill ; *pizzico*, pinch ; *órzo*, barley ; *zizzánia*, tare ; *rézzo*, shade ; *vizio*, vice ; *zótico*, rude ; *lettizia*, joy ; *nazióne*, nation ; *témpj*, temples ; *stúdj*, studies ; *esémpj*, examples ; *vizj*, vices ; *eccidj*, slaughters ; *augúrj*, auguries ; *ho*, I have ; *háí*, thou hast ; *ha*, he has ; *hánnó*, they have ; *ah!* ah! *deh!* alas! *ih!* ih! *poh!* pooh! *uh!* uh! *acciáio*, steel ; *accénto*, accent ; *accidióso*, sluggish ; *láccio*, noose ; *fúccia*, face ; *lacciuólo*, snare ; *oggétto*, object ; *soggiórno*, abode ;

*pioggia*, rain; *raggio*, ray; *aggiunta*, addition; *oggi*, to-day; *chéto*, quiet; *chino*, inclined; *cherubino*, cherubim; *chimico*, chymist; *chérmes*, cochineal; *chiméra*, chimera; *chicchessia*, whosoever; *chiàve*, key; *chióstro*, cloister; *chiúsa*, hedge; *chiámàre*, to call; *chiésa*, church; *chiódo*, nail; *chiérico*, clerk; *ghémbo*, crooked; *ghermire*, to gripe; *ghiro*, dormouse; *ghiribizzo*, whim; *gheróne*, gore, *ghirlánda*, garland; *ghiàia*, gravel; *ghiaccio*, ice; *lusinghière*, flattering; *preghiéra*, prayer; *ghióttö*, greedy; *tegghiúzza*, baking-pan; *figli*, children; *fógli*, leaves; *pigliàre*, to take; *famiglia*, family; *móglie*, wife; *orgóglie*, pride; *imbróglie*, embarrassment; *fogliúto*, leafy; *figliuólo*, son; *negligénza*, negligence; *neglétto*, neglected; *ángli*, Englishmen; *ánglia*, England; *anglicáno*, Anglican; *campàgna*, the country; *magnámino*, magnanimous; *ingegnère*, engineer; *spignere*, to push; *magnífico*, magnificent; *signóre*, sir; *légno*, wood; *ignúdo*, naked; *scésa*, descent; *scemàre*, to diminish; *scéttro*, scepter; *scimia*, ape; *scisma*, schism; *sciagúra*, misfortune; *sciáme*, swarm; *sciancáto*, hipped; *sciénza*, science; *cosciénza*, conscience; *sciócco*, foolish; *sciórre*, to loose; *sciugatóio*, towel; *sciugàre*, to wipe; *schíavo*, slave; *schiantàre*, to tear; *schiéna*, the back; *schíétto*, candid; *schióppo*, musket; *schíuma*, froth; *guadagnàre*, to gain; *guérra*, war; *guardàre*, to look; *guertre*, to heat; *guércio*, squint-eyed; *guida*, guide; *guidàre*, to guide; *quáttro*, four; *qualità*, quality; *quádro*, picture; *quále*, which; *quésto*, this; *quércia*, oak; *quíete*, quiet; *quíndici*, fifteen; *quívi*, there; *quotidiáno*, daily.

PART II.

ITALIAN ANALOGY.



PARTS OF SPEECH.

(Variable)

(Invariable)

L' ARTICOLO, <i>the Article</i> ;	L' AVVÉRBO, <i>the Adverb</i> ;
IL NÓME, <i>the Noun</i> ;	LA PREPOSIZIONE, <i>the Preposi-</i> [ <i>tion</i> ;
IL PRONÓME, <i>the Pronoun</i> ;	LA CONGIUNZIONE, <i>the Conjun-</i> [ <i>tion</i> ;
IL VÉRBO, <i>the Verb</i> ;	L' INTERIEZIONE, <i>the Interjec-</i> [ <i>tion</i> .
IL PARTICÍPIO, <i>the Participle</i> :	

CHAPTER I.

ARTICLES.

THERE are three articles in Italian ; *il, lo, la*, ' the ' , in the singular ; *i or li,\* gli, le*, ' the ' , in the plural number.

*Il, lo*, and *i or li, gli*, are used with masculine, *la* and *le*, with feminine nouns.

*Il*, and *i or li*, are put before masculine nouns beginning with a *consonant*, except *z*, or *s followed by another consonant* ; as,

IL Fratello, <i>the brother</i> ;	I figliuoli, <i>the children</i> ;
IL marito, <i>the husband</i> ;	LI padri, <i>the fathers</i> .

---

\* We meet with *li* frequently in the Classics, especially in poetry ; but modern writers generally use *i* in preference to it.

*Lo* and *gli*, are put before masculine nouns beginning with *z*, *s* followed by another consonant, or a vowel ; \* as,

LO <i>zio</i> ,	the uncle ;	GLI <i>zéfiri</i> ,	the zephyrs
LO <i>strépito</i> ,	the noise ;	GLI <i>spróni</i> ,	the spurs ;
LO <i>innocénte</i> ,	the innocent man ;	GLI <i>occhi</i> ,	the eyes.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The noun *Dio*, 'God', before its plural, *Déi*, 'Gods', takes the article *gli* ; as,

GLI *Déi*, the Gods.

After the preposition *per*, 'for, by, or through', whether the nouns begins with *z*, *s*, or any other consonant, the article *lo* is more properly used ; as,

*per* LO *amóre*, for the love ;      *per* LO *bráccio*, by the arm.

In the plural, however, if the noun begins with any consonant but *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, we may use indifferently, either *gli* or *li* ; as,

*per* GLI *bósci*, through the woods ;  
*per* LI *régni*, through the regions.

*La* and *le*, are put before all feminine nouns beginning either with a consonant, or a vowel ; as,

LA <i>reína</i> ,	the queen ;	LE <i>cortesie</i> ,	the courtesies ;
LA <i>sorélla</i> ,	the sister ;	LE <i>mádri</i> ,	the mothers ;
LA <i>nobiltà</i> ,	the nobleness ;	LE <i>ánime</i> ,	the souls.

The articles *lo*, *la*, before a noun beginning with a vowel ; and *gli*, *le*, before a noun beginning with *i*, *e* ;

\* Poets very often use *lo* before nouns beginning with other consonants than *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant ; and *il* before nouns beginning with those consonants ; as,

Lo *giórno se n'andáva e l'áer brúno* ;  
(Dant. Inf. 2.)

The day was closing, and the dusky air ;

*Seguíelo apprésso il spléndido, e on-  
rándo—Priciválle* ; (Bocc. Vis. 1.)

Next followed the splendid and honorable Pricivalle ;

GLI *rámi schiánta, abátte, e pórtá  
fuóri* ; (Dant. Inf. 9.)

Tears off the boughs, beats down, and hurls away ;

but in prose this usage is, by all good writers, carefully avoided.

generally drop *o*, *a*, *i*, *e*, and take an apostrophe instead of them;\* as,

L' Uómo,	} the man ;	GL' inférmi,	} the infirm ;
(for LO Uómo),		(for GLI inférmi),	
L' Ánima,	} the soul ;	L' Érbe,	} the herbs.
(for LA Ánima),		(for LE Érbe),	

Sometimes the article *il* drops the *i* after a word ending with a vowel, and takes an apostrophe instead of it ; as,

E' L viso,	} and the coun-	uscio 'L cólpo,	} the blow
(for E IL viso),		tenance ;	

## EXAMPLES.

L' un fratéllò L' áltro abban-  
donáva, e LA sorélla IL fra-  
téllò, e spésse vólte LA dónna  
IL sùo maríto. (Bocc. Intr.)

E che maggiór còsa è, LI PÁ-  
DRI e LE MÀDRI, I FIGLIUÓLI di  
visítare e di servíre schivávano.  
(Bocc. Intr.)

LA REÍNA non si sapéva sazi-  
áre d'udíre LA NOBILTÀ e LE  
CÓRTESÍE del giòvane re. (Nov.  
ant. 35.)

Non istétte guári a levársi IL  
re, il quále LO STRÉPITO déi ca-  
ricánti e délle béstie avéva desto.  
(Bocc. g. 7. Proem.)

Avévan LO INNOCÉNTE per fál-  
sa suspizióne accusáto. (Bocc.  
g. 3. n. 7.)

E con amór si lágna—Ch' ha  
sì cáldi GLI SPRON, sè dúro IL  
fréno. (Petr. s. 140.)

Lucévan GLI ÓCCHI suói piú  
che LA stéllu. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Al tèmpe DÉGLI DÉI fálsci e  
bugiárdi. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

One brother abandoned the  
other, and the sister the broth-  
er, and oftentimes the wife her  
husband.

And what is more, the fath-  
ers and the mothers shunned  
to visit and serve their chil-  
dren.

The queen could not be sat-  
isfied with hearing of the no-  
bleness and the courtesies of  
the young king.

The king was not long in get-  
ting up, whom the noise of the  
beasts and of those who loaded  
them had already awakened.

They had accused the in-  
nocent man on a false suspi-  
cion.

And complains of love, that  
has so sharp spurs, and so hard  
a bit.

Her eyes shone more than  
the star.

In the time of fabled and  
false deities.

\* *Le* drops the *e* sometimes, and takes an apostrophe instead of it, chiefly in poetry, even before words beginning with any other vowel ; as,

Ei son fra L'anime piú nerc. (D. Inf. 6.)  
Cánto L'armi pietóse. (Tass. Ger. 1.)

They are amidst blacker souls.  
I sing the pious arms.

*Sémpre tenéndo* PER LO BRÁCCIO LO inférmo. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

PER LO SÚO AMÓRE adúnque a nòi ti piéga. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

*Lásciane andáre* PER LI tuó' sétte RÉGNI. (Dant. Purg. 1.)

L' ÁNIMA túa è da viltáte offésa,—LA quál mólte fiáte L' UÓMO ingómbra,—Sicchè d' onráta imprésa lo rivólve. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

*I pensier son saétte* E' L vísio un sóle—E' L desír fóco. (Petr.)

*Zéfiro tórna,* E' L bel témpo riména,—E i fióri, e L' ÉRBE, súa dólce famágliá. (Petr. s. 269.)

*DÁGLI ócchi vóstri* USCÍO 'L CÓLPO mortále. (Petr.)

*Del bel paése là dóve* 'L sí suóna. (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Holding always the sick man by the arm.

Then for her love condescend to our desires.

Let us pass through thy seven regions.

Thy soul is by vile fear assailed, which oft,—So overcast a man, that he recoils—From noble undertaking.

The thoughts are arrows, and the countenance a sun,—and the desire fire.

Zephyr returns, bringing back flowers, and herbs, his sweet family.

From your eyes the mortal blow issued.

Of that fair land where sí is spoken.

When the articles *il, lo, la*; *i* or *li, gli, le*, are immediately preceded by the prepositions *di*, 'of'; *a*, 'to'; *da*, 'from or by'; *in* or *ne*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *per*, 'for, by, or through'; *su*, 'upon'; *fra* or *tra*, 'amongst'; in order to avoid the harshness of sound produced by two monosyllables coming together, they are united to them, so as to form a single word; as,

*a i*, ÁI, to the; *da gli*, DÁGLI, from or by the;  
*su la*, SÚLLA, upon the; *tra le*, TRÁLLE, amongst the.

*Union of the Prepositions* DI, A, DA, IN or NE, CON, PER, SU, FRA or TRA, *with the Article*

IL, the;

<i>di il</i> ,	DEL,	of the;
<i>a il</i> ,	AL,	to the;
<i>da il</i> ,	DAL,	from or by the;
<i>in</i> or <i>ne il</i> ,	NEL,	in the;
<i>con il</i> ,	COL,	with the;
<i>per il</i> ,	PEL,	for, by or through the;

*su il,*  
*fra il,*  
*tra il,*

SUL,  
FRAL, }  
TRAL, }

upon the;  
amongst the.

## I OR LI, the,

*di i or di li,*  
*a i or a li,*  
*da i or da li,*  
*in or ne i, or in or ne li,*  
*con i or con li,*  
*per i or per li,*  
*su i or su li,*  
*fra i or fra li,*  
*tra i or tra li,*

DÉI OR DÉLLI,\*  
ÁI OR ÁLLI,  
DÁI OR DÁLLI,  
NÉI OR NÉLLI,  
CÓI OR CÓLLI,  
PÉI OR PÉLLI,  
SÚI OR SÚLLI,  
FRÁI OR FRÁLLI, }  
TRÁI OR TRÁLLI, }

of the;  
to the;  
from or by the;  
in the;  
with the;  
for, by or thro.' the;  
upon the;  
amongst the.

## LO, the;

*di lo,*  
*a lo,*  
*da lo,*  
*in or ne lo,*  
*con lo,*  
*per lo,*  
*su lo,*  
*fra lo,*  
*tra lo,*

DÉLLO,\*  
ÁLLO,  
DÁLLO,  
NÉLLO,  
CÓLLO,  
PÉLLO,  
SÚLLO,  
FRÁLLO, }  
TRÁLLO, }

of the;  
to the;  
from or by the;  
in the;  
with the;  
for, by or thro.' the;  
upon the;  
amongst thee.

## GLI, the;

*di gli,*  
*a gli,*  
*da gli,*  
*in or ne gli,*  
*con gli,*  
*per gli,*  
*su gli,*  
*fra gli,*  
*tra gli,*

DÉGLI,\*  
ÁGLI,  
DÁGLI,  
NÉGLI,  
CÓGLI,  
PÉGLI,  
SÚGLI,  
FRÁGLI, }  
TRÁGLI, }

of the;  
to the;  
from or by the;  
in the;  
with the;  
for, by or thro.' the;  
upon the;  
amongst the.

\* Poets very often use them separate; as,

*Nè mai nascóse il ciél si fólta néb-  
bia,—Che, sopraggiúnta dal furór dé'  
vénti,—Non fuggisse DA I PÓGGI, e DA  
LE VÁLLI. (Petr. c. 14.)*

*DA L' ERBA, e DA LI FIOR DENTRO A  
quél sÉNO—Pósti, ciascún sarta di colór  
vinto. (Dant. Purg. 7)*

*'Al Pádre, al Figlio, A LO Spirito  
Sánto—Cominciò 'glória' tutto 'l Pa-  
radiso. (Dant. Par. 27.)*

Norever did the sky conceal so thick  
a cloud, that, overtaken by the fury  
of the wind, it would not flee from the  
hills, and the valleys;

By the herbs and flowers, placed  
in that recess, in color all would be  
surpassed;

'Glory to the Father, to the Son,—  
And to the Holy Spirit,' rang aloud—  
Throughout all Paradise.

## LA, the ;

<i>di la,</i>	DÉLLA,	of the ;
<i>a la,</i>	ÁLLA,	to the ;
<i>da la,</i>	DÁLLA,	from <i>or</i> by the ;
<i>in or ne la,</i>	NÉLLA,	in the ;
<i>con la,</i>	CÓLLA,	with the ;
<i>per la,</i>	PÉLLA,	for, by <i>or</i> through the ;
<i>su la,</i>	SÚLLA,	upon the ;
<i>fra la,</i>	FRÁLLA,	} amongst the.
<i>tra la,</i>	TRÁLLA,	

## LE, the ;

<i>di le,</i>	DÉLLE,	of the ;
<i>a le,</i>	ÁLLE,	to the ;
<i>da le,</i>	DÁLLE,	from <i>or</i> by the ;
<i>in or ne le,</i>	NÉLLE,	in the ;
<i>con le,</i>	CÓLLE,	with the ;
<i>per le,</i>	PÉLLE,	for, by, <i>or</i> through the ;
<i>su le,</i>	SÚLLE,	upon the ;
<i>fra le,</i>	FRÁLLE,	} amongst the.
<i>tra le,</i>	TRÁLLE,	

*Déi, ái, dái, néi, cói, péi, súi, fráí* or *trái*, followed by a noun beginning with a consonant, drop the *i*, and take an apostrophe instead of it ; as,

DÉ' <i>Práti</i> ,	of the meadows ;	Á' <i>cánti</i> ,	to singing ;
DÁ' <i>Parénti</i> ,	by the relations ;	NÉ' <i>giardini</i> ,	in the gardens ;
có' <i>Rággi</i> ,	with the rays ;	PÉ' <i>Mónti</i> ,	through the moun- [tains ;
sú' <i>Líbrì</i> ,	upon the books ;	TRÁ' <i>Fióri</i> ,	amongst the flow- [ers.

*Pel, péllo, pélla*, and *pélli, pégli, pélle*, in elegant style are better written *per lo*, *per la*, and *per li, per gli, per le* ; as,

PER LO <i>Dúca</i> ,	by my guide ;	PER LA <i>pietà</i> ,	through pity ;
PER GLI <i>óccchi</i> ,	through the [eyes ;	PER LE <i>fróndi</i> ,	on account of [the leaves.



And scrupulous writers before nouns beginning with *z* or *s* followed by another consonant, use *cóllo*, *trállo*, *cóllo*, *trállo*, and *cógli*, *trágli*, *cólle*, *trálle*, and *súgli*, always separated;\* as,

CON LO splendoré, with the  
[splendor ;

SU LO smálto, upon the  
[enamel ;

TRA LE stéllé, among the  
[stars ;

CON LA zázzerá, with the  
[head of hair ;

CON GLI sciócchi, with the  
[ignorant ;

SU GLI scúdi, upon the  
[shield.

## EXAMPLES.

*Cóme NÉ' Lúcidí seréni sóno  
le stéllé ornáménto DEL ciélo, e  
NÉLLA primavéra i fióri DÉ'  
PRÁTI, e DÉ' cóllo i rivestiti ar-  
buscélli ; così DÉ' Laudévoli co-  
stúmi, e DÉ' ragionaménti bélli  
sóno i leggiádri mótti. (Bocc.  
g. 6. n. 1.)*

*E divenúti piú liéti; su si le-  
várono, ed Á' suóni, ed Á' CÁNTI  
ed Á' Bálli da cápo si diérono.  
(Bocc. g. 3. Proem.)*

*Oh, sventuráta! che si dirà  
DÁ' tuói fratélli, DÁ' PARÉNTI,  
DÁ' vicíni, quándo si saprà, che  
tu sùì quì trováta? (Bocc. g. 8.  
n. 7.)*

*Quándo NÉ' GIARDÍNI entráte,  
distésa la dilicáta máno, cogliéte  
le róse, e lasciáte le spíne stáre.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)*

*Ombrósc sélve, óve percóte il  
sóle,—Che vi fa có' suói RÁGGI  
álte e supérbe. (Petr. s. 129.)*

As in the bright clear sky,  
the stars are the ornament of  
the heavens, and in the spring  
the flowers are of the meadows,  
and the verdant shrubs of the  
hills, so witty sayings are the or-  
naments of praiseworthy man-  
ners and fine conversations.

And having become more  
gay, they arose and gave them-  
selves once more to playing,  
singing, and dancing.

Oh, unfortunate woman! what  
will be said by thy brothers, by  
thy relations, by thy neighbors,  
when it shall be known, that  
thou hast been found here?

When you enter into the  
gardens, extending your deli-  
cate hand, you cull the roses,  
and leave the thorns.

Shady woods, where strikes  
the sun, which renders you  
with its rays so lofty and noble.

\* And in poetry even before nouns beginning with any other letter; as,

*Ecco la fiéra CON LA coda agúzza.  
(Dant. Inf. 17.)*

Behold the beast with sharpened  
tail ;

*Vidi Solón—CON GLI áltri séi di cui  
Grécia si vánta. (Petr. Tr. Fam.)*

I saw Solon with the other six of  
whom Greece boasts.

*E quindi passai in terra  
d'Abruzzi, dove gli uomini e le  
femmine vanno in zoccoli su pé'  
MONTI. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)*

*Lascio lo fèle, e vo pé' dolci  
pómi—Promessi a me PER LO  
veráce DÚCA. (Dant. Inf. 16.)*

*Così avestù ripósti—Dé' béi  
vestigì spàrsi,—Ancór TRÁ' FIÓ-  
RI e l'ériba. (Petr. c. 26.)*

*PER GLI ÓCCHI mi passò den-  
tro la mēte. (Rim. ant. p. 49.)*

*Era 'l giòrno ch' al Sol si sco-  
loráro—PER LA PIETÀ del sùo  
Fattóre i rái. (Petr. s. 3.)*

*Giúnc nel bósc PER LE FRÓN-  
DI ombróso. (Bocc. Tes. 5. 33.)*

*CON LO SPLENDÓR che súa bel-  
lézza addúce. (Incer. c. 4.)*

*Non errár CON GLI SCIÓCCHI.  
(Petr. c. 47.)*

And then I passed to the land  
of Abruzzi, where men and wo-  
men go in wooden shoes up  
over the mountains.

I leave the gall, in quest of  
the sweet fruit, which has been  
promised to me by my faithful  
guide.

Thus would that thou, (O  
heart,) hadst still preserved  
some of the beautiful footsteps,  
here and there, amongst the  
flowers and the grass.

It passed through my eyes  
to my mind.

It was the day when the rays  
of the sun grew pale, through  
pity for his Maker.

He arrived in the wood, shady  
on account of its leaves.

With the splendor which  
brings her beauty.

Do not wonder in error with  
the ignorant.

The English indefinite article *a, an*, is expressed in Italian by the indefinite pronouns *un, úno, úna*, according to the rules already given with regard to the articles *il, lo, la*, 'the'; as,

UN *mercatánte*, a merchant;    ÚNO *spirágljo*, a breathing-hole;  
ÚNA *fiámma*, a flame;        ÚNA *zéba*, a goat.

*Uno*, like *lo*, before a noun beginning with a vowel, drops the *o*, but takes no apostrophe instead of it; *úna* drops the *a* and takes an apostrophe; as,

UN *uómo*, a man;                    UN' *ómbra*, a shade;  
UN *amóre*, a love;                UN' *óra*, an hour.

When a noun is taken in a partitive sense, the English adjectives *some* and *any* are expressed by the

words *del, dello, della*, in the singular; and *déi, dégli, delle*, or *alcúni, alcúne*, in the plural; as,

DEL PÁNE,	some bread;	DELL' ÓLIO,	some oil;
ALCÚNE CÓSE,	some things;	ALCÚNI UÓMINI,	some men;
DÉGLI STROMÉNTI,	some instru-	DÉLLE ARÁNCÉ,	some oranges.
	[ments;		

## EXAMPLES.

*In Parigi fu UN gran MÉR-  
CÁTANTE.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

There was in Paris a great merchant.

*Éra Arriguccio UN Fiéro UÓ-  
MO, e UN FÓRTE.* (Bocc. g. 7.  
n. 6.)

Arriguccio was a haughty and strong man.

*Nella quál gróttá dáva alquán-  
to lúme ÚNO SPIRÁGLIO fáttö nel  
mónte.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

In which grotto came some light through a breathing-hole, opened in the mountain.

*UN volére, UN AMÓRE ci ha  
sémpré tenúti legáti e congíunti,  
ed UN medésimo giòrno ci diède  
al móndo; piácciavi, poichè UN'  
ÓRA ci tóglic, che simileménte  
ÚNA medésima FIÁMMA ci con-  
súmi.* (Bocc. Filoc.)

One will, one love, has always kept us bound and united, and the same day gave us to the world; may it please you, then, since the same hour takes us from it, that one same flame should consume us.

*Gli diédi DEL PÁNE e DEL cá-  
cio.* (Firenz.)

I gave him some bread and some cheese.

*Úno dé' famigliári di Mes-  
sér Néri accése il fuóco, e pó-  
sta la padélla sópra il treppiè,  
e DELL' ÓLIO méssovi, cominciò  
ad aspettáre, che le giòvani gli  
gittássero DEL PÉSCÉ.* (Bocc. g.  
10. n. 6.)

One of the domestics of Messer Neri kindled the fire, and having put the frying-pan upon a trevet, and having put some oil in it, he began to wait that the young women should throw into it some fish.

*Di niúna cósá servieno, che di  
pórgere ALCÚNE CÓSE dagl' in-  
fèrmi addomandáte.* (B. Intr.)

They rendered no service, but to reach some things called for by the sick.

## EXERCISE I.

[Let the learner here put the right Article according to the gender marked, against the Italian nouns, and the number of the same, as indicated by the English words.]

The sacred Tiber, the Egyptian obelisks, the temples  
*sácro Tevere, m., Egiziáni obelíschi, m., témpj, m.*

still dark with the vapor of the sacrifices, the Flavian  
*ancóra fóschi vapóre, m. sacrificj, m., Flávio<sup>2</sup>*

Amphitheatre which lies like a mangled giant, the  
*anfiteátro<sup>1</sup>, m.\* il quále giáce cóme sbranáto<sup>2</sup> gigánte, m.,*

columns which describe the customs of the soldiery,  
*colónne, f. che descrivono costumánze, f. milizia, f.,*

the triumphal arches, the space of the Forum, the  
*trionfáli<sup>2</sup> árchí, m., spázio, m. Fóro, m.,*

mausoleums, the majestic ruins of the circuses and of the  
*mausoléi, m., maestóse<sup>2</sup> ruíne, f. círchi, m. e*

baths, and all the remains of the Roman splendor,  
*térme, f., e tútti avánzi, m. Romána<sup>2</sup> splendidézza, f.,*

fill the mind | with † | delightful wonder.  
*émpiono ánimo, m. | di | soáve maraviglia.*

Nero to appease them, ordered that the fasces of the  
*Neróne per appaciár li, † bandì che fásci, m.*

emperor | should be borne | with the laurel. The  
*imperatóre, m. | si portássero | allóro, m.*

senators complained | against | the insolence of the  
*senatóri, m. si dolévano | di | insolénza, f.*

plebeians, and the plebeians | against | the avarice of the  
*plebéi, m., e plebéi, m. | di | avarizia, f.*

magistrates and of the great.  
*magistráti, m. e grándi, m.*

\* In this and the following Exercises, the numbers affixed to the Italian words are intended to denote the order in which they are to be placed; as, 'Flávio<sup>2</sup> anfiteátro<sup>1</sup>',—*anfiteátro Flávio*.

† When an English word or phrase cannot be rendered literally, but by an equivalent Italian word or phrase, they are both included between brackets [ ]; as, 'with' *con*; *di*, 'of'.

‡ The sign  $\cup$ , is used to denote, that the words under which it is found, are to be joined in one; as, *per appaciár li, —per appaciárlí*.

He proposed that (*the*) honors | should be rendered | to Galba,  
 —\* *Propòse che* <sup>2</sup> *onòri*,<sup>3</sup>m. | *si rendéssero*<sup>1</sup> | a *Galba*,  
 and that the memory of Piso also | should be celebrated. |  
*e che* <sup>3</sup> *memòria*,<sup>4</sup>f. *dì*<sup>5</sup> *Pisòne*<sup>6</sup> *anche*<sup>2</sup> | *si celebrásse*<sup>1</sup>. |

He departed | to | carry | to | the temple of (*the*)  
 — *Partì* | *per* | *portàre* | *in* | *témpio*,m.

Concord the standards of the empire. (*The*) princes  
*Concòrdia*,f. *inségne*,f. *impéro*,m. *príncipi*,m.

do more | with their | reputation and | with their |  
*fánno più* | *con la* | *reputaziòne e* | *con il* |  
 advice, than | with their | hand and | with their | arms.  
*consiglio, che* | *con la* | *máno e* | *con le* | *àrmi*.

Not pardoning, as in (*the*) other armies, the first fault,  
*Non perdonádo, cóme in* *àltri esérciti*,m., *príma fálda*,f.,  
 nor the second, but | he who | left the standard  
*nè seconda*,f., *ma* | *chi* | *lasciáva* *inségnu*,f.

was immediately beheaded. It appeared to him that he heard  
*éra subitáménte decapitato*. — *paree*<sup>2</sup> *Gli*<sup>1</sup> *sentire*<sup>6</sup>

| about | (*the*) mid-night people descend in the house.  
*in su*<sup>3</sup> | <sup>4</sup> *mezzanòtte*,<sup>5</sup>f. *persòne*<sup>10</sup> *scéndere*<sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> *càsa*,<sup>9</sup>f.

Having entered into the tower, she began to weep. For  
 — *Entráta* *tórre*,f., — *cominciò a piàngere*. *Per*

the pain he felt, he began to roar, so that he seem-  
*dolór*,m. — *sentíto*, — *cominciò a muggiár*, *che* — *pareva*

ed a lion. Fleeing through the woods.  
*leóne*,m. *Fuggéndo per* *bósci*,m.

He was seen by a companion | of his. | Having  
 — *Fu vedúto da* *compágnò*,<sup>2</sup>m. | *súo*.<sup>1</sup> | —

caused him to come | to | a gossip | of hers. | He gave  
*Fátto lo venire* | *da* | *comàre*,<sup>2</sup>f. | *súa*.<sup>1</sup> | — *diedé*<sup>2</sup>

to him a purse with some florins | in it. |  
*gli*<sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> *bórsa*,<sup>4</sup>f. *con*<sup>5</sup> <sup>7</sup> *fioríni*,<sup>8</sup>m. | *déntro*<sup>6</sup>. |

Having found in the garden some capons, some wine, and  
 — *Trováti* *órto*,m. *cappóni*,m., *víno*,m., — *e*

some eggs, he supped | entirely at his ease. |  
*uova*,f., — *cenò* | *a súo bell' ágio*. |

\* Such words, as, though necessary in English, are not to be expressed in Italian, are in this part marked with a dash; and such words as are necessary in Italian, but are not expressed in English, are in this language introduced, in italics, and included between parenthesis; as, 'He proposed that (*the*) honors should be rendered', — *Propòse che si rendéssero gli onòri*.

## CHAPTER II.

## SUBSTANTIVE NOUNS.

ALL Italian substantives end with one of the vowels *o, a, e, i, u*.\* It is these vowels that show their *gender* and *number*.

## GENDER.

Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender ; as,

<i>libro,</i>	book ;	<i>spécchio,</i>	mirror ;
<i>oriuolo,</i>	watch ;	<i>scrittóio,</i>	scrutoire.

## EXCEPTIONS.

Proper names of women ; as,

<i>Sáffo,</i> Sappho ;	<i>E'ro,</i> Hero ;	<i>Calisto,</i> Calisto ;
<i>Eráto,</i> Erato ;	<i>Atrópo,</i> Atropos ;	<i>Alétto,</i> Alecto ;

Some contracted nouns, generally used in poetry ; as,

<i>immágo,</i> (for } image ;	<i>testúdo,</i> (for } tortoise ;	<i>Cartágo,</i> (for } Car-
<i>immáagine)</i> }	<i>testúdíne)</i> }	<i>CartáGINE)</i> } thage ;

And the nouns,

<i>máno,</i> hand ;	<i>éco,</i> echo.
---------------------	-------------------

are feminine.

Some nouns of animate beings ending in *o*, in the feminine change *o* into *a* ; as,

<i>colómbó,</i>	pigeon ;	<i>colómbA,</i>	hen-dove ;
<i>caválla,</i>	horse ;	<i>cavállA,</i>	mare ;
<i>gátto,</i>	cat ;	<i>gátta,</i>	she-cat.

\* *Lápis*, 'pencil', and some very few foreign nouns, as, *ribes*, 'currants', *chér-mes*, 'cochineal', &c., are the only exceptions to this rule. But, then, we meet in Italian with many nouns, which, in composition, are made to end with a consonant ; and this on principles, which will be explained in *Part IV*, when treating of ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY.

Nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender ; as,

<i>cása</i> , house ;	<i>stráda</i> , street ;
<i>pórtá</i> , door ;	<i>chiésa</i> , church.

## EXCEPTIONS.

Proper names of men ; as,

<i>Enéa</i> , Æneas ;	<i>Andréa</i> , Andrew ;	<i>Tobía</i> , Toby ;
<i>A'ttíla</i> , Attila ;	<i>Battísta</i> , Baptist ;	<i>Lúca</i> , Luke ;

Nouns of professions exercised by men ; as,

<i>artista</i> , artist ;	<i>scriba</i> , scrivener ;	<i>alchimista</i> , alchymist ;
<i>legísta</i> , lawyer ;	<i>poéta</i> , poet ;	<i>ebanístia</i> , cabinet-maker :

Nouns of dignity ; as,

<i>pápa</i> , pope ;	<i>dúca</i> , duke ;	<i>gerárca</i> , high-priest ;
<i>patriárca</i> , patriarch ;	<i>monárca</i> , monarch ;	<i>demárca</i> , demarch :

Nouns derived from the Greek, ending in *ma*, *mma* ; as,

<i>clíma</i> , climate ;	<i>diadéma</i> , diadem ;	<i>poéma</i> , poem ;
<i>prísma</i> , prism ;	<i>enímma</i> , enigma ;	<i>prográmma</i> , programma :

Nouns formed of a verb and a noun ; as,

<i>pascibiétola</i> , logger- [head ;	<i>santinfizza</i> , hypocrite ;	<i>guardaróba</i> , the mas- [ter of the wardrobe ;
--	----------------------------------	--

And the following,

<i>sofà</i> , sofa ;	<i>sórra</i> , ——— ;	<i>scilóma</i> , long discourse ;
<i>scípa</i> , sot ;	<i>cánapa</i> , hemp ;	<i>baccalà</i> , cod-fish :

are masculine.

The nouns,

<i>idióta</i> , idiot ;	<i>eremita</i> , hermit ;	<i>anacoréta</i> , anchorite ;
<i>ipócrita</i> , hypocrite ;	<i>apóstata</i> , apostate ;	<i>patrióttá</i> , patriot ;
<i>deícida</i> , deicide ;	<i>parricída</i> , parricide ;	<i>regicída</i> , regicide ;
<i>fraticída</i> , fratricide ;	<i>omicída</i> , homicide ;	<i>matricída</i> , matricide ;
<i>antagonísta</i> , antagonist ;	<i>regalísta</i> , royalist ;	<i>monopolísta</i> , monopo- [list ;
<i>Deísta</i> , Deist ;	<i>atetsta</i> , atheist ;	<i>Calvinísta</i> , Calvinist ;
		[&c.

are of the common gender.

Some names of animate beings ending in *a*, in the masculine change *a* into *o*; as,

<i>cérva</i> , doe;	<i>cérvo</i> , stag;
<i>lúpa</i> , she-wolf;	<i>lúpo</i> , wolf;
<i>órsa</i> , she-bear;	<i>órso</i> , bear.

The nouns, *téma*, *pianéta*, *drámma*, *podestà*, in the signification of 'theme', 'planet', 'drama', 'civil magistrate', are masculine; and in the signification of 'fear', 'cope', 'drachm', 'power', are feminine.

EXAMPLES.

*Galeotto fu IL LÍBRO e chi lo scrisse.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

The book and he who wrote it were [to us] Galeotto.

*O'ra che débbo dire di quèlli che éscono DÁLLO SCRITTÓIO fra la génte cólla penna nell' orécchio.* (Cása Galat. 86.)

Now what must I say of those, who come out of their study among the people with a pen over the ear.

*Gli abitatóri di quèsto castéllò con ARMÁTA MÁNO pervénnero al lido.* (Guid. 60.)

The inhabitants of this castle with arms in their hands reached the shore.

*Tále che di lontáno—Nèlle valli ÉCO TRÍSTA risuonáva.* (Bocc. Tes. 11, 30.)

Such that at a distance sounded in the valleys like a sad echo.

*Véro dirò forse, e parrà menzogna—Ch' i sentì trármi délla PRÓPRIA IMÁGO* (Petr. c. 4, 8.)

Perhaps I shall tell the truth and it will appear false, that I felt myself drawn away from my own body.

*Siccóme quándo IL COLÓMBO si pónz—Préssò al compágno.* (Dant. Par. 25.)

As when the dove alights by his mate.

*Niuna glória a un' áquila è l'avér vinto ÚNA COLÓMBA.* (Bocc. g. n.)

No glory comes to an eagle from having conquered a dove

*In CÁSA TÚA séi orgoglióso e incomportábile; a cásè altrúì, úmile e diméssò.* (Varch. Sen. ben. 3. 28.)

In thy house thou art proud and insupportable; and at the houses of others, humble and submissive.

*Mise dissenzióne NÉLLA CHIÉSA, tenéndo sétta cóntro al Pápa con cérti cardináli ed áltri chiérici.* (Giov. Vill. l. 4, 21, 1.)

He put dissension in the church, plotting against the Pope with certain cardinals and other priests.



*Fu il maggiore, e 'l più sávio LEGÍSTA, che fósse fino al suo témpo.* (Giov. Vill. 8. 65, 2.)

*Il mio signóre nella liberalità a QUÉL gran MONÁRCA non céde.* (Red. Vip. 1. 7.)

*E cosí figurádo 'l Paradiso,—Convien saltár LO SAGRÁTO POÉMA,—Cóme chi truóva suo cammín rectiso.* (Dant. Par. 23.)

*Ribáldo, SANTINFÍZZA, gabba-déi,—Che a quel d'áltri pon cin-que e cavi séi.* (Lipp. M. 7. 68.)

*Or finisci óra QUÉSTO TÚO SCI-LÓMA; che tu avévi cominciáto di colúti là.* (Salv. Spin. 1. 3.)

*Paróle, le quáli lo Spirito Sánto sópra la lingua dell' UÓMO IDIÓTA ponéva.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)

*Ed úNA LÚPA, che di tútte bráme—Sembráva cárca.* (Dant. Inf. 1.)

*Ed écco, vicíno a léi, uscir d' úna mácchia fólta UN LÚPO grán-de e terríbile.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)

*Perocchè sí mi cáccia IL LÚN-GO TÉMA.* (Dant. Inf. 4.)

*Da QUÉSTA TÉMA acciocchè tu ti sólve.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

*LO BEL PIANÉTA, che ad amár confórta—Facéva tútto ríder l' Oriénte.* (Dant. Purg. 1.)

*Ancóra, láscio úNA PIANÉTA dí zendádo vermíglío.* (Bocc. Testam.)

*DRÁMMA è un componiménto poético rappresentáto.* (Crú-sca.)

*Senz' éssa non fermái péso di DRÁMMA.* (Dant. Purg. 21.)

*Quándo verrá lor NIMÍCA PO-DÉSTA.* (Dant. Inf. 6.)

He was the greatest and the wisest lawyer, that had been seen until his time.

My master in liberality does not yield to that monarch.

And with such figuring of Paradise,—The sacred strain must leap, like one that meets—A sudden interruption to his road.

Ribald, hypocrite, mocker of God, who add five to that of others, and take out six.

Now finish that long discourse that thou hadst begun about that man.

Words, which the Holy Ghost put into the mouth of the ignorant man.

And a she-wolf who seemed to be laden with wants of every kind.

When lo! near her, came out from a thick hedge a large and terrible wolf.

For my wide theme so urges me on.

That thou mayest be relieved from this fear.

The beautiful planet that invites to love, made all the orient laugh.

I bequeath, moreover, a cope of crimson silk stuff.

The drama is a poetical composition to be represented.

Without which, I did not rest a moment.

When shall come the Power adverse to them.

*Cóme piú tósto potè, n'andò a colú, che in luógo DEL PODESTÀ v'era.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

As soon as he could, he went to him who filled the place of Podestà.

Nouns ending in *e* are some of them masculine, and some feminine ; as,

*cárme*, m., poem ;

*cólle*, m., hill ;

*fióre*, m., flower ;

*fálce*, f., reaping hook ;

*siépe*, f., hedge ;

*néve*, f., snow.

Those ending in *ge, le, me, re, se, nte*, are generally masculine ; as,

*rége*, king ;

*fiúme*, river ;

*arnése*, utensil ;

*viále*, path ;

*cuóre*, heart ;

*mónte*, mountain.

#### EXCEPTIONS.

The nouns,

*légge*, law,

*índole*, disposition ;

*bíle*, bile ;

*árme*, arm ;

*scúre*, hatchet ;

*tórré*, tower ;

*frásc*, phrase ;

*mènte*, mind ;

*corrènte*, current ;

*falángo*, phalanx ;

*próte*, offspring ;

*válle*, valley ;

*fáme*, hunger ;

*pólvére*, dust ;

*fèbbre*, fever ;

*buióse*, dungeons ;

*lènte*, lens ;

*sorgènte*, source ;

*laríngo*, larynx ;

*pèlle*, skin ;

*ipérbole*, hyperbole ;

*spéme*, hope ;

*vépre*, brier ;

*mádre*, mother ;

*gènte*, people ;

*patènte*, patent ;

*scmènte*, seed ;

are feminine.

Those ending in *be, ce, pe, te, ve, ie, ine, onè*, are, generally, feminine ; as,

*plébe*, common people ;

*siépe*, hedge ;

*chiáve*, key ;

*immáagine*, image ;

*ragiòne*, reason ;

*cicatrice*, scar ;

*árte*, art ;

*série*, series ;

*incúidine*, anvil ;

*naziòne*, nation.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The nouns,

<i>álce</i> , elk ;	<i>pésce</i> , fish ;	<i>mántice</i> , bellows ;
<i>códice</i> , code ;	<i>cálice</i> , chalice ;	<i>vórtice</i> , vortex ;
<i>pépe</i> , pepper ;	<i>presépe</i> , stable ;	<i>récipe</i> , recipe ;
<i>váte</i> , bard ;	<i>látte</i> , milk ;	<i>límite</i> , limit ;
<i>bréve</i> , a brief ;	<i>concláve</i> , conclave ;	<i>architráve</i> , architrave ;
<i>críne</i> , hair ;	<i>cárdine</i> , hinge ;	<i>confíne</i> , confine ;
<i>disórdine</i> , disorder ;	<i>glútine</i> , glue ;	<i>pétine</i> , comb ;
<i>bastóne</i> , stick ;	<i>mattóne</i> , brick ;	<i>paragóne</i> , comparison ;

are masculine.

The nouns,

<i>áere</i> , air ;	<i>cárcere</i> ,* prison ;	<i>cénere</i> ,* ashes ;
<i>árbore</i> , tree ;	<i>fólgore</i> , thunderbolt ;	<i>frónte</i> ,† forehead ;
<i>fónte</i> , fountain ;	<i>fúne</i> ,† rope ;	<i>tráve</i> , beam ;
<i>grégge</i> ,* flock ;	<i>consórt</i> , consort ;	<i>eréde</i> , heir ;
	<i>parénte</i> , parent ;	

are of the common gender.

Names of animate beings, ending in *e*, are generally of the common gender ; as,

<i>lépre</i> , hare ;	<i>sérpe</i> , snake.
-----------------------	-----------------------

The noun *dimáne*, when it means 'to-morrow', is masculine ; but when it signifies 'the beginning of the day', is feminine.

The noun *márgine*, when it means 'scar', is feminine ; but when it means 'margin,' 'extremity', is of the common gender.

The nouns *fánte*, and *fine*, when they mean 'foot-soldier'; and 'aim' or 'design', are masculine : but when they mean 'servant'; and 'end' or 'termination', are of the common gender.

The nouns *óste*, and *órdine*, when they mean 'host', an 'inn-keeper'; and 'order', a 'command', are masculine : but when they mean 'host,' an 'army'; and 'order', 'arrangement', or a 'religious order', they are of the common gender.

\* *Cárcere*, *cénere*, and *grégge*, in the plural number, *cárceri*, 'prisons', *céneri*, 'ashes'; and *gréggi*, 'flocks', are feminine only.

† *Frónte* and *fúne*, in prose, are feminine only.

## EXAMPLES.

*Ennio di quel cantò RÚVIDO  
CÁRME. (Petr. s. 153.)*

Ennius sang of him a rude  
song.

*Quèsta éra móltò béne affóssa-  
ta, e con BUÓNA SIÉPE. (Sacch.  
n. 91.)*

This was well fertifed by a  
ditch, and by a good hedge.

*Vidi gènte àlla ríva d'UN gran  
FIÚME. (Dant. Inf. 3.)*

I beheld a throng upon the  
shore of a great stream.

*Un rívo d'ácqua chiuríssima,  
il quále d'úna montagnétta di-  
scendéra in ÚNA VÁLLE OMBRÓ-  
SA. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)*

A stream of very clear water,  
which descended from a little  
hill into a shady valley.

*Serráta la cèlla CÓLIA CHIÁVE,  
dirittamènte sen andò àlla cáme-  
ra dèllo Abáte. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 4.)*

Having locked the cell with  
the key, he went directly to the  
chamber of the Abbot.

*Vénne dal ciéto úna colómba  
biánca cìme néve, e, mèsso il béc-  
co NEL CÁLICE, tútto 'l sángue  
si bévre. (Pass. 136.)*

There descended from Hea-  
ven a dove as white as snow,  
and, having put its beak into the  
chalice, it drank all the blood.

*Ed évvi, óltre a quèsto, l'ÁERE  
assái piú FRÉSCO. (Bocc. Intr.)*

And there, besides this, the  
air is a great deal more fresh.

*Ma poicchè l'ÁERE a divent  
BUÓNA incominciò. (Bocc. Amet.)*

But when the air began to  
be good.

*Ed entráta nel CHIÁRO FÓNTE  
tútta si míse nèlle ácque. (Bocc.  
Amet.)*

And having entered into the  
clear fountain, she plunged  
herself into the water.

*Dintórno ÁLLA FÓNTE si póse-  
ro a sedére. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)*

They sat around the fountain.

*Non crèdo UN SÉRPE, che ha 'l  
cor cotánto acérbo. (Dittam. 2.  
12.)*

I do not believe a serpent,  
who has a heart so cruel.

*Te non colómba, ma VELENÓSA  
SÉRPE conoscèndo, con tútta la  
fórza di perseguire intèndo.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

Knowing thee to be not a  
dove, but a venomous serpent,  
I intend to persecute thee with  
all my power.

*Lo stólto sèmpre procrástina  
di far béne, dicèndo: 'Dimán  
farò béne'; e sèmpre l'UN DI-  
MÁNE dimánda l'ÁLTRO DIMÁNE.  
(Albertan. c. 64.)*

The fool always delays to  
do good, saying: 'To-morrow  
I will do good.' And one to-  
morrow ever requires another.

*Quando fui desto innanzi LA DIMANE, — Pianger sentii fra 'l sonno i miei figliuoli.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

*Si ricordò lei dovere avere una MARGINE, a guisa d'una crocetta, sopra l'orecchia sinistra.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

*Lo fondo suo, ed ambo le pendici — Fátte éron pietra, e i MARGINI d'allato.* (Dant. Inf. 14.)

*Posciachè ella si fu condotta ALLA MARGINE dell'alta ripa, nuotando scampammo.* (Firenz. Asin.)

*Mandando cinquecento FANTI Ghibellini del contado di Firenze.* (Giov. Vill. l. 7. c. 109.)

*Doloroso più che altro — Sé' fatto FANTE.* (Bocc. Tes. 4. 23.)

*Avèva Giacomino in casa una FANTE attempata.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

*Un uomo a LIETO FINE pervenuto.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

*Questa fu LA FINE dell'imperatore Arrigo.* (Giov. Vill. l. 7. c. 22.)

*Volendo IL SUO OSTE ésser pagato, primieramente GLI diede l'una.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

*Così avvenne nel nostro bene avventurato OSTE.* (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 53.)

*Congregò una BELLA, e grande, e poderosa OSTE.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

*Dal Signor Annibale Rucellai, potrà ella intendere l'ordine delle cose.* (Casa, lett. 8.)

*Se con sana mente sarà riguardato l'ordine delle cose.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)

When I awoke before the morning, I heard my sons sob in their slumber.

He recollected that she ought to have a scar, like a cross, above the left ear.

Its bed and sloping sides, and both the margins, were petrified.

After that she came to the margin of the high bank, we escaped by swimming.

Sending five hundred Ghibelline foot-soldiers from the territory of Florence.

Wretched more than any other, thou art made a servant.

Giacomino had in his house an elderly servant maid.

A man who had come to a happy end.

This was the end of the Emperor Henry.

His host desiring to be paid, he first gave him that one.

Thus he fell in with our fortunate army.

He collected a fine, large and powerful army.

From Mr Annibal Rucellai, you may hear the order which I have given to him.

If we should consider with sound mind the order of things.

PRESA L' ORDINE tra lóro, il  
trattáto fu riveláto al Dúca.  
(Stor. Pistol. p. 171.)

Having made the arrange-  
ment among themselves, they  
revealed the subject to the  
duke.

Io ho avúta sémpré speciál  
dizozióne AL VÓSTRO ÓRDINE.  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

I have always had a special  
devotion to your order.

Al témpo del détto Pápa Inno-  
cénzo si cominciò LA SÁNTA ÓR-  
DINE dé' Fráti Minóri. (Giov.  
Vill. l. 1. c. 24.)

In the times of the said Pope  
Innocent, was instituted the or-  
der of the Minor Friars.

Nouns ending in *i* are some of them masculine, and  
some feminine; as,

*eclissi*, m., eclipse;  
*brindisi*, m., toast;

*crisi*, f., crisis;  
*tési*, f., thesis.

Nouns of dignity, as,

*balì*, bailiff; *pári*, peer;

*guardasigilli*, keeper  
[of the seal:]

The noun *di*, 'day', and its compounds; as,

*buondì*, good day; *mezzodì*, noon; *oggi*, now-a-days:

Nouns formed of a verb and a noun in the plural; as,

*lavacéci*, dunce; *graffiasánti*, hypocrite; *guardaportóni*, porter;  
*leccapiátti*, glutton; *cacciadiávoli*, exorcist; *cavadéti*, tooth draw-  
[er:]

And the following,

*alcalì*, alkali; *ambássi*, ambs-aces; *zánni*, merry-andrew;  
*abbiccì*, alphabet; *barbagiánni*, owl; *soprattiéni*, delay;  
*cremisì*, crimson; *diési*, diesis [in music]; *appigiónasi*, notice of  
[a house to let:]  
are masculine.

The noun *Génesi*, 'Genesis', is of the common gender.

Nouns ending in *u* are some of them masculine, and some feminine; as,

<i>méu</i> , m.	dill;	<i>grù</i> , f.	crane;
<i>ragù</i> , m.	ragout;	<i>tribù</i> , f.	tribe;
<i>soprappiù</i> , m.	overplus;	<i>gioventù</i> , f.	youth.

## EXAMPLES.

*Significava gran sècco nella vègnente stàte, e poi nella opposizione di QUELLO ECCLÍSSI gran sopèrchio d' acque.* (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 2.)

*Quèl, che i mèdici nòstri chiàman CRÍSI.* (Bern. Rim. l. 16.)

*Cingonlo intórno i suói FAMÓSI PÁRI.* (Ariost. Fur. 38. 79.)

*Il mèdico si fèce lóro incóntro dicéndo, che Iddio dèsse-lóro IL BUONDÌ.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

*IL maggiór CACCIADIÁVOLI non è in Toscana.* (Lor. Med. Arid. 2. 5.)

*Ma táli cose hánno più DEL ZÁNNI, e son disonéste.* (Demetr. Seng. 67.)

*Comincerémo dal princípia DEL GÉNESI.* (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 2.)

*Lasciásse lóro un per cénto di quánto hánno, e guadagnás-sonsi quell' úno col sudóre del nóto, cóme cománda LA GÉNESI.* (Dav. Scism. p. 38.)

*IL MÉU è CÁLDO ed è érba, il cui sème è détto con simigliánte nóme.* (Cr. 6. 78. 1.)

*Io ho giudicáto, che ègli sia oramáti béne con quáliche fréno ritenére i cálido impeti DÉLLA SÚA GIOVENTÙ.* (Firenz. Asin. 178.)

It announced a great drought in the following summer, and afterward at the opposition of that eclipse, a great abundance of water.

That, which our physicians call crisis.

His famous peers surround him.

The physician went to meet them, wishing God would give them a good day.

A greater exorcist is not to be found in Tuscany.

But such things more become a merry-andrew, and are indecent.

We will commence from the beginning of Genesis.

That he should leave them one per centum of what they have, and that they should earn that one by the sweat of their brow, as is commanded in Genesis.

The dill is warm, and it is an herb whose seed is called by the same name.

I have thought, that it is now proper to moderate, with some restraint, the warm impulses of his youth.

Adjectives, verbs, adverbs, prepositions, when used substantively, are of the masculine gender ; as,

<i>bello</i> , beautiful ;	<i>seguitare</i> , to continue ;
<i>dove</i> , where ;	<i>quando</i> , when ;
<i>cóme</i> , how ;	<i>perchè</i> , why ;
<i>sì</i> , yes ;	<i>no</i> , no.

The names of the days of the week, except *Doménica*, 'Sunday' ; and those of the months, are masculine ; as,

<i>Mercoledì</i> , Wednesday ;	<i>Sábato</i> , Saturday ;
<i>Aprile</i> , April ;	<i>Agósto</i> , August.

Names of trees are masculine ; as,

<i>ólmo</i> , elm-tree ;	<i>mirto</i> , myrtle-tree ;
<i>nóce</i> , walnut-tree ;	<i>limóne</i> , lemon-tree.

## EXCEPTIONS.

*Quércia*, oak-tree ; *vite*, vine ; *ginéstra*, broom ;  
are feminine.

Names of fruits are feminine\* ; as,

<i>péra</i> , pear ;	<i>aráncia</i> , orange ;
<i>susína</i> , plum ;	<i>ciriégia</i> , cherry.

## EXCEPTIONS.

*Pómo*, apple ; *fico*, fig ; *dáttero*, date ;  
*cédro*, citron ; *píno*, pine ; *limóne*, lemon.  
are masculine.

Some masculine nouns, when used to denote a feminine object, take a different termination ; as,

<i>amíco</i> , friend, m. ;	<i>amíca</i> , friend, f. ;
<i>cugíno</i> , cousin, m. ;	<i>cugína</i> , cousin, f. ;
<i>genitóre</i> , father ;	<i>genitrice</i> , mother ;
<i>autóre</i> , author ;	<i>autrice</i> , authoress ;
<i>poéta</i> , poet ;	<i>poetessa</i> , poetess ;
<i>sacerdóte</i> , priest ;	<i>sacerdotessa</i> , priestess ;
<i>dúca</i> , duke ;	<i>duchéssa</i> , duchess ;
<i>príncipe</i> , prince ;	<i>principéssa</i> , princess ;
<i>re</i> , king ;	<i>regína</i> , queen.

\* These are generally formed from the names of trees, changing *o* into *a* ; as, *mándorlo*, 'almond-tree' ; *mándorla*, 'an almond' ; *gélso*, 'mulberry-tree' ; *gélso*, 'a mulberry.'



Some names of animate beings denote the feminine by a different word ; as,

*uómo*, man ;  
*tóro*, bull ;  
*pórcó*, pig ;

*dónna*, woman ;  
*vácça*, cow ;  
*tróia*, sow ;

Some in the feminine take a different termination ; as,

*cáne*, dog ;  
*leóne*, lion ;

*cáгна*, bitch ;  
*leonéssa*, lioness ;

And others are either masculine or feminine, and designate both genders ; as,

*córvo*, m., crow ;

*pantéra*, f., panther.

## EXAMPLES.

*Le dónne, quándo arrivano a quaránta ánni pèrdono IL BÉLLO délla gioventúdice.* (Libr. Adorn. Donn.)

When women arrive at forty years they lose the beauty of youth.

*La regína a Filomèna voltáta, le impóse IL SEGUITÁRE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

The queen turning to Filomena, ordered her to continue.

*IL DÓVE io ho già pensáto.* (Bocc. g. 2.)

I have already thought of the where.

*Saréi conténto di sapére IL QUÁNDO.* (Petr. s. 306.)

I should be happy to know the when.

*DEL CÓME non ti cáglia IL PERCHÈ ti dirò.* (Bocc. Filoc.)

Do not trouble yourself about the how, I will tell you the why.

*Son cèrta DEL sí.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

I am certain of the affirmative.

*Ciascúno rispóse DEL NO.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Every one answered in the negative.

*Ancóra IL MERCOLEDÌ, e 'l Venèrdì, e IL SÁBATO.* (Maestruzz. 1. 33.)

Even Wednesday, and Friday, and Saturday.

*L'AMORÓ SOMÍRTO—Crésce piú volontier nel césपो intéro.* (Alam. Colt. 1. 16.)

The amorous myrtle grows better in the whole bush.

*LA VÍTE áppo noi è assái conoscúta.* (Cr. 4. I. 1.)

The vine among us is very well known.

*Ti sérbo gélse, mándorle,  
e susíne.* (Bocc. Amet. 15.)

*I son quel délle frútte del mul  
órto—Che què riprèndo D'ATTERO  
per FÍCO.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

*E di quèsto consìglío fu au-  
trice úna ch'èbbe nóme Polisso.*  
(But. Com. Dant.)

*DÓNNA è nóme genérico della  
FÉMMINA della spèzie umána.*  
(Crúscā.)

*Mi sovviène d'avér fátto man-  
giáre al LEÓNÈ della cárne d'ú-  
na LEONÉSSA.* (Red. Ins. 71.)

*Infra mólte biánche colómbe  
aggiúgne piú di bellézza UN NÉ-  
RO CÓRVO, che un cándido cigno.*  
(Bocc. g. 9 n. 10.)

I keep for thee mulberries, al-  
monds, and plums.

He—am I, who fruit from  
evil garden brought;—And here  
my fig is with a date repaid.

And the author of this coun-  
sel was one who was named  
Polisso.

Woman is the generic name  
of the female of the human  
species.

I recollect to have made the  
lion eat of the flesh of the li-  
oness.

Amongst many white doves  
a black crow adds more beauty  
than a white swan.

#### NUMBER, OR FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Masculine nouns, ending in *o*, *a*, *e*, form the plural by  
changing *o*, *a*, *e*, into *i*; as,

<i>libro</i> ,	book;	<i>libri</i> ,	books;
<i>cavállo</i> ,	horse;	<i>cavállì</i> ,	horses;
<i>poéta</i> ,	poet;	<i>poéti</i> ,	poets;
<i>clíma</i> ,	climate;	<i>clími</i> ,	climates;
<i>fióre</i> ,	flower;	<i>fióri</i> ,	flowers;
<i>lépre</i> ,	hare;	<i>lépri</i> ,	hares.

Feminine nouns, ending in *o*, *e*, form the plural by  
changing *o*, *e*, into *i*; as,

<i>máno</i> ,	hand;	<i>máni</i> ,	hands;
<i>árite</i> ,	art;	<i>ártì</i> ,	arts;
<i>fónte</i> ,	fountain;	<i>fóntì</i> ,	fountains.

Feminine nouns ending in *a*, form the plural by chang-  
ing *a* into *e*; as,

<i>cása</i> ,	house;	<i>cáse</i> ,	houses;
<i>ménsa</i> ,	table;	<i>ménse</i> ,	tables;

Nouns ending in *i*, *u*, or in *ie*, or with an *accented vowel*, do not change their termination in the plural; as,

<i>éstasi</i> , extacy;	<i>éstasi</i> , extacies;
<i>gru</i> , crane;	<i>gru</i> , cranes;
<i>spécie</i> , sort;	<i>spécie</i> , sorts;
<i>re</i> ,* king;	<i>re</i> , kings;
<i>città</i> ,* city;	<i>città</i> , cities;
<i>virtù</i> ,* virtue;	<i>virtù</i> , virtues.

The following nouns in the plural have an irregular formation :

<i>Dio</i> , God;	<i>Déi</i> , Gods;
<i>uómo</i> , man;	<i>uómini</i> , men;
<i>búe</i> , ox;	<i>búoi</i> , oxen.

## E X A M P L E S .

ALCÚNI CAVÁLLI *si dipùtano a vetùra, àltri a càrro.* (Cf. 6. 9.)

Some horses are destined for burden, others to the carriage.

*E' divisa la tèrra in sÉTTE CLÍMI.* (But. Com. Dant.)

The earth is divided into seven climates.

*Ed io 'l provái sul primo aprir DÉ' FIÓRI.* (Petr. c. 38.)

And I experienced it at the first blooming of the flowers.

*CÓLLE mìe MÁNI avréi già pósto in tèrra—Quèste mèmbra noióse.* (Petr. s. 29.)

I should have already with my own hands laid in the ground these wearisome limbs,

*Qualcúna d' èste nótti—Chiúda omái quèste DÚE FÓNTI di piánto.* (Petr. c. 46.)

Let one of these nights close these two fountains of tears.

*E di quéllo un mézzo bicchiér per uómo dèsse ÁLLE prime MÉNSE.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.)

And of that [wine] he should give half a tumbler to each man at the first course.

*E quèsto è èssere in ÉSTASI.* (But. Com. Dant.)

And this is to be in extacy.

*LE GRU hánno un lóro re, e tútte lo sérvono.* (Fior. Vt. c. 19.)

The cranes have a king, and all serve him.

*Dé' quáli animáli sóno quási infínite* LE SPÉCIE. (Gell. Circ. 2. 29.)

Of which animals, the species are almost infinite.

\* Such nouns are generally contracted; as *re* from *rége*, *città* from *cittàde*, *virtù* from *virtùde*; and when they are used entire, that is, without the suppression of any syllable *rége*, *cittàde*, *virtùde*, they change their termination, and make in the plural *régi*, 'kings'; *cittádi*, 'cities'; *virtúdi*, 'virtues' according to the general rule.

LE CITTÀ son *nemiche*, amici  
i bóschi—A' miei *pensieri*. (Petr.  
c. 37.)

Cities are unfriendly, the  
woods are friendly to my  
thoughts.

Tutti i RÉGI del móndo sóno  
méno a vóstro *spóso*. (Fr. Guitt.  
lett. 10.)

All the kings in the world  
are inferior to your husband.

Tósto GLI DÉI d' abisso in  
várie tórme—Concórron d'ógni  
intórno all' álte pórté. (Tass.  
Ger. 3. 5.)

Soon the gods of the Abyss  
in different bands, rush from  
all sides to the lofty gates.

Veggéndo MÓLTI UÓMINI nél-  
la córté del pádre usáre. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 1.)

Seeing many men frequent  
the court of her father.

Perchè *addivénne*, che i BUÓI,  
gli ásiní, le pécore, per li cámpi  
se n'andávano. (Bocc. *Introđ.*)

Wherefore it happened, that  
the oxen, the asses, the goats,  
went astray through the fields.

Many nouns in *o* in the plural end in *i*, and more  
elegantly in *a*; as,

<i>anéllo</i> , ring;	{ <i>anélli</i> , } rings;
	{ or <i>anélla</i> , }
<i>lábbro</i> , lip;	{ <i>lábbri</i> , } lips;
	{ or <i>lábbra</i> , }
<i>pugno</i> , fist;	{ <i>pùgni</i> , } fists:
	{ or <i>pugna</i> , }

Some have only the termination in *a* in the plural; as,

<i>miglio</i> , mile;	<i>miglia</i> , miles;
<i>stáio</i> , bushel;	<i>stáia</i> , bushels;
<i>uovo</i> , egg;	<i>uova</i> , eggs.

[For a list of Words in *o*, making the plural in *i* or *a*, see APPENDIX, D.]

*Riso*, 'laughter'; *membro*, 'limb', or 'member of the human body', form their plural in *i* and *a*; *risi*, *risa*, 'laughter'; *membri*, *membra*, 'limbs': but *riso*, 'rice'; *membro*, 'member of a corporation or political body', form their plural in *i* only; *risi*, 'rice'; *membri*, 'members'.

*Gésto*, 'exploit'; *frutto*, 'the fruit of a tree'; *légno*, 'fire-wood', form their plural in *i* and *a*; *géstí*, *géstá*, 'exploits'; *frútti*, *frúttá*, 'fruits'; *légni*, *légna*, 'wood': but *géstó*, 'gesture'; *frúttó*, 'production of the earth', or 'income'; *légno*, 'the hard substance of a tree', 'a ship', or 'a coach', form their plural in *i* only; *géstí*, 'gestures'; *frútti*, 'produce' or 'income'; *légni*, 'billets of wood', 'ships', or 'coaches'.

*O'sso*, 'bone', has a treble termination in the plural, making *óssi, ósse, óssa*, 'bones'.

When these nouns take the termination in *a* in the plural, they become feminine, and receive the article *le* before them; as, *le anélla*, 'the rings'; *le míglia*, 'the miles'; *le frúttà*, 'the fruits'; *le ósse* or *le óssa*, 'the bones.'

Finally there are, in Italian, as well as in all other languages, some nouns which have only the singular number; as, all *proper names*,\* *names of metals*, and the words *próle*, 'generation'; *progénie*, 'progeny'; *stírpe*, 'race'; *máne*, 'morning'; *miéle*, 'honey,' &c.; and others which have only the plural; as, *lári*, 'household gods'; *annáli*, 'annals'; *calzóni*, 'breeches'; *vánni*, 'wings'; *fórbici*, 'scissors'; *nózze*, 'nuptials'; *eséquie*, 'exequies'; *rénì*, 'the reins'; *mólle* or *mólì*, 'tongs'; *spézie* or *spézzj*, 'spices'; *fróge*, 'the skin over the nostrils of a horse'; &c.

## EXAMPLES.

*Fáttoši prestàre a Madónna  
Giacomína un DÉ' suói ANÉLLI,  
quívi per súa móglie sposò la  
Caterína.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

Having asked Madonna Giacomina to lend him one of her rings, there took Catharine to wife.

*La lúnga guérta—Che DEL-  
L'ANÉLLA fé' sí álte spóglic.*  
(Dant. Inf. 28.)

That long war, in which was made the rich booty of the rings.

*E'lla féce portàre i dúe cap-  
póni lèssi, e MÓLTE UÓVA  
frésche.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

She caused to be brought the two boiled capons, and many fresh eggs.

*Lasciàrono andár Calandríno  
con LE maggiór RÍSA del móndo.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

They let Calandrino go with the greatest laughter in the world.

*Lo spírto DÁLLE bélle MÉM-  
BRA sciólto.* (Petr. s. 259.)

The spirit freed from the beautiful limbs.

*Tánto piú celebrò Tibérìo  
SÚE GÉSTA in senáto.* (Dav.  
Tac. ann. 1. 2.)

Tiberius celebrated so much the more his exploits in the senate.

*Vivéano quási cóme béstie di  
FRÚTTA, e di ghiánde.* (Giov.  
Vill. 1. 1. c. 23.)

They lived like beasts on fruit and mast.

\* When *proper names of persons*, however, are taken as common, they are used also in the plural; as, *i Chiabréra, i Filicáia, i Rédi, i Menzini, i Guidi, i Frugóni, e tanti álti sublími e pregiatíssimi ingégni*, 'the Chiabreras, the Filicaias, the Redis, the Menzinis, the Guidis, the Frugonis, and so many other sublime and most worthy geniuses.'

*Il fuoco cresce per LE LEGNA, e quante più ce ne metti maggiore si fa.* (Fr. Giord. 146.)

Fire is increased by wood, and the more you put on, the larger it becomes.

*Fu non solamente ucciso, ma fino ALL' OSSA divorato.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

He was not only killed, but devoured even to the bones.

*LA STIRPE non fa le singolari persone nobili, ma le singolari persone fanno nobile LA STIRPE.* (Dant. Conv.)

Family does not make extraordinary persons noble, but extraordinary persons render their family noble.

*Crìsto volle per sua presenza onorar LE NOZZE di Cana Galilea, e quivi fare il primo miracolo.* (Cavalc. Espos. simb. 1.)

Christ wished to honor with his presence the nuptials of Cana of Galilee, and there to work the first miracle.

Independently of the change of termination, there are in Italian many nouns, which in the plural undergo a certain change of orthography.

Thus all nouns ending in *ca*, *ga*, in order to preserve in the plural before the vowels *i*, *e*, the same sound which *c*, *g*, have in the singular before the vowel *a*, take an *h*, in the plural after the consonant *c*, *g*; as,

<i>monarca</i> , monarch;	<i>monarchi</i> , monarchs;
<i>collega</i> , colleague;	<i>collegni</i> , colleagues;
<i>monaca</i> , nun;	<i>monache</i> , nuns;
<i>verga</i> , rod;	<i>verghe</i> , rods.

Nouns ending in *co*, *go*, consisting of two syllables, also take an *h* in the plural after *c*, *g*; as,

<i>giuoco</i> , sport;	<i>giuochi</i> , sports;
<i>luogo</i> , place;	<i>luoghi</i> , places.

#### EXCEPTIONS.

*Gréco*, 'Greek'; *pôrco*, 'hog'; in the plural make, *Gréci*, 'Greeks'; *pôrci*, 'hogs.' *Mágo*, 'magician', in the plural makes either *mágni*, or *mági*, 'magicians'.

Nouns in *co*, *go*, of more than two syllables, if *co*, *go*, are preceded by a consonant, take an *h* in the plural; and if they are preceded by a vowel they are written without *h*; as,

<i>bifólco</i> , laborer;	<i>bifólchi</i> , laborers;
<i>albérco</i> , inn;	<i>albérghi</i> , inns;
<i>médico</i> , physician;	<i>médici</i> , physicians;
<i>teólogo</i> , theologian;	<i>teólogi</i> , theologians.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The following nouns,

<i>cárico</i> , charge;	<i>óbligó</i> , obligation;
<i>fóndaco</i> , warehouse;	<i>ripiégo</i> , expedient;
<i>párroco</i> , parson;	<i>catálogo</i> , catalogue;
<i>stómaco</i> , stomach;	<i>impiégo</i> , employment;
<i>mánico</i> , handle;	<i>gastígo</i> , punishment;
<i>tráfíco</i> , trading;	<i>intrígo</i> , intrigue;

in the plural make,

<i>cáricchi</i> , charges;	<i>óbligghi</i> , obligations;
<i>fóndacchi</i> , warehouses;	<i>ripiéghi</i> , expedients;
<i>párrocchi</i> , parsons;	<i>catálogghi</i> , catalogues;
<i>stómacchi</i> , stomachs;	<i>impiéghi</i> , employments;
<i>mánicchi</i> , handles;	<i>gastíghi</i> , punishments;
<i>tráfíchi</i> , tradings;	<i>intríghi</i> , intrigues.

Several other nouns in *co*, *go*, are indifferently written with or without the *h*; as,

<i>mendíco</i> , beggar;	{	<i>mendíchi</i> ,	} beggars;
		or <i>mendíci</i> ,	
<i>equivóco</i> , equivoque;	{	<i>equivóchi</i> ,	} equivoques;
		or <i>equivóci</i> ,	
<i>diálogo</i> , dialogue;	{	<i>diálogghi</i> ,	} dialogues;
		or <i>diálogi</i> ,	
<i>apólogo</i> , apologue;	{	<i>apólogghi</i> ,	} apologues.
		or <i>apólogi</i> ,	

[ For a list of Nouns ending in *co*, *go*, and making the plural in *ci*, *gi*, or *chi*, *ghi*, see APPENDIX D. (2.) ]

Nouns ending in *cia*, *gia*, and *ccia*, *ggia*, *unaccented*, form their plural by changing *a* into *e*, and suppressing the *i*; as,

<i>láncia</i> , lance;	<i>lánce</i> , lances;
<i>-frángia</i> , fringe;	<i>fránge</i> , fringes;
<i>fréccia</i> , arrow;	<i>frécce</i> , arrows;
<i>piággia</i> , strand;	<i>piágge</i> , strands.

Nouns ending in *cio*, *gio*, and *ccio*, *ggio*, *unaccented*, form their plural by changing *o* into *i*, and suppressing the *i* that they have in the singular; or what is the same, by suppressing only the *o*; as,

<i>báccio</i> , kiss;	<i>báci</i> , kisses;
<i>frégio</i> , honor;	<i>frégi</i> , honors;
<i>láccio</i> , snare;	<i>lácci</i> , snares;
<i>rággio</i> , ray;	<i>rággi</i> , rays.

But if *cia*, *gia*, and *ccia*, *ggia*, or *cio*, *gio* and *ccio*, *ggio* are *accented*, the *i* is never suppressed; as,

<i>elegía</i> , elegy;	<i>elegie</i> , elegies;
<i>farmacía</i> , pharmacy;	<i>farmacie</i> , pharmacies;
<i>leggío</i> , reading-desk;	<i>leggíi</i> , reading-desks.

Nouns ending in *chio*, *ghio*, *glio*, form the plural by suppressing the *o*; as,

<i>ócchio</i> , eye;	<i>ócchi</i> , eyes;
<i>múgghio</i> , bellowing;	<i>múgghi</i> , bellowings;
<i>scóglio</i> , rock;	<i>scógli</i> , rocks.

Nouns ending in *áio*,\* *óio*, also form their plural by suppressing the *o*; as,

<i>fornáio</i> , baker;	<i>fornái</i> , bakers;
<i>filatóio</i> , spinning-wheel;	<i>filatói</i> , spinning-wheels.

All other nouns ending in *io*, if *io* is *unaccented*,

\* Most nouns in *áio* end also in *áro*; as, *libráio* or *libraro*, *foráio* or *fornaro*; when they take this last termination, in the plural they make *librári*, 'booksellers'; *fornári*, 'bakers'; according to the general rule.



form their plural by changing *io* into *j*; but if *io* is *accented*, they form it by changing the *o* of *io* into *i*; as,

*stúdio*, study;  
*benefizíio*,\* benefit;  
*rio*, rivulet;  
*desíio*, desire;

*stúds*, studies,  
*benefizs*, benefits;  
*rii*, rivulets;  
*desií*, desires.

The noun *mógliè*, 'wife', forms the plural by suppressing the *e*; *móglí*, 'wives'.

## E X A M P L E S .

*La contéssa Matélda fondò un nobile monastério di MÓNACHE.* (Giov. Vill. l. 4. c. 20.)

The countess Matilda founded a noble convent of nuns.

*Il dì che costéi nacque éran le stéllè—In LUÓGHI álti ed eiétti.* (Petr. c. 44.)

On the day when this lady was born, the stars were in high and chosen places.

*Tra brútti PÓRCI piú dégni di gálle,—Che d' áltro cibo fáto in umán úso.* (Dant. Purg. 14.)

'Midst brute swine—Worthier of acorns than of other food—Created for man's use.

*I sávj si partírono, e tornársi á lóro ALBÉRGI.* (Nov. ant. 6.)

The sages went away, and returned to their dwellings.

*Si suól ricórrere né' máli pericolósi á MÉDICI eccelléti.* (Casa. lett. 49.)

In dangerous diseases we are accustomed to have recourse to excellent physicians.

*Ponéndo lóro grandíssimi CÁRICHI di monéte.* (Stor. Pist. 170.)

Laying upon them very great imposts of money.

*Le rispóste vive, le novél'e vi érano, e gli APÓLOGI.* (Pros. Fior. 6.)

There were witty answers, stories, and fables.

*Spárti costóro per la piccola cása, párte n' andò nélla córte, e póste giù lor LÁNCE, avvénne che úno di lóro gittò la sua LÁNCA nel fiéno.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

These having spread themselves through the small house, and having laid down their lances, it happened that one of them threw his lance into the hay.

\* Many nouns in *zio*, end also in *cio* or *gio*; as, *benefizíio* or *beneficío*, *servizíio* or *servicío*; but, however they may end, constantly form the plural in *j*; as, *benefizs* or *benefics*, 'benefits'; *servizs* or *servigs*, 'services'.

Già nella sommità de' più  
alti monti apparivano i raggi  
della surgente luce. (Bocc. g.  
8. proem.)

Le giocònde óde, e le lascive  
ELEGÍE, a tutte le altre studiòse  
arti antipóngono. (Dav. Tac.  
Perd. Eloq.)

Io soléva ésser úno degli ócchi  
del capo vostro. (Pecor. g. 4.  
n. 2.)

Mi paréa per tutto, dóve che  
io mi volgéssi, sentire MÚGGHI,  
úrli, e strída di divèrsi e fero-  
cissimi animáli. (Lab. 29.)

Che giòva dúnque, perchè tut-  
ta spálme—La mia barchétta,  
poichè infra gli scógli—E'  
ritenuta. (Petr. c. 39.)

Dónne, noi siámo giòvani  
FORNÁI,—Dell' arte nóstra buon  
maèstri assái. (Cant. Carn.  
34.)

Il quále, né liberáli stúdi  
ammaestráto, sommaménte i va-  
lorósi uómini onoráva. (Bocc.  
Vit. Dant.)

Apprésso costóro le siróccie  
e le mógli lóro, tutte di brúno  
vestite, vénnero. (Bocc. g. 3.  
n. 7.)

Already on the summit of  
the highest mountains appeared  
the rays of the rising light.

They prefer the merry odes  
and the lascivious elegies to all  
the other studious arts.

I used to be one of the eyes  
of your head.

I seemed to hear, wherever  
I turned, the bellowings, the  
howlings, and the cries of dif-  
ferent and very ferocious ani-  
mals.

What does it avail to spread  
all the sails of my bark, if she  
is impeded among the rocks.

Ladies, we are young bakers  
very well skilled in our art.

Who, being well skilled in  
liberal pursuits, greatly honored  
learned men.

After them came their sisters  
and their wives, all dressed in  
mourning.

#### VARIATION OF NOUNS.

Italian nouns are varied by means of certain preposi-  
tions placed before them; viz. *DI*, 'of', in the genitive,  
or *relation of possession*; *A*, 'to', in the dative, or *rela-  
tion of attribution*; *DA*, 'from or by', in the ablative,  
or *relation of derivation*. The nominative, or *subjective*,  
and the accusative, or *objective*, are distinguished by the  
place they occupy in the sentence.

Proper nouns are generally varied with the *prepositions*  
*only*: common nouns with the *prepositions* and the ar-

ticles *il, lo, la*; *i* or *li, gli, le*, 'the'. When common nouns are used in an indefinite sense, they are varied with the *prepositions* and the pronouns *uno, una*, 'a' or 'an'; *alcuni, alcune*, 'some'.

*Variation of a Proper Noun.*

Subjective (N.)*—	. . . . .	<i>Césare,</i>	<i>Cæsar;</i>
Relation of	{	Possession (G.) —	<i>di Césare,</i> of <i>Cæsar;</i>
		Attribution (D.) —	<i>a Césare,</i> to <i>Cæsar;</i>
		Derivation (Ab.) —	<i>da Césare,</i> from or by <i>Cæsar;</i>
Objective (Ac.)—	. . . . .	<i>Césare,</i>	<i>Cæsar.</i>

Before a noun beginning with a vowel, the preposition *di* drops the *i* and takes an apostrophe in its stead; and the preposition *a* takes a *d* after it; as,

*D' António,* } of Anthony;      *AD António,* } to Anthony.  
 (for *DI António*), }                      (for *A António*), }

*Variation of Common Nouns.*

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Consonant, varied with the article *il*.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>il libro,</i> the book;	<i>i</i> or <i>li libri,</i> the books;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>del libro,</i> of the book;	<i>déi libri,</i> of the books;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>al libro,</i> to the book;	<i>dí libri,</i> to the books;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dal libro,</i> from the	<i>dái libri,</i> from the
	[book;	[books;
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>il libro,</i> the book;	<i>i libri,</i> the books.

\* To facilitate the Variation of these and other nouns, to those who are accustomed to the *Latin Declension*, we have added to each *relation* the Initial of the name of the corresponding *case* in Latin; thus (N.) stands for *nominative*; (G.) for *genitive*; &c.

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Consonant, varied  
with the article *lo*.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>lo spécchio</i> , the mirror ;	<i>gli spécchi</i> , the mirrors ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>dello spécchio</i> , of [the mirror ;	<i>dé gli spécchi</i> , of the [mirrors ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>állo spécchio</i> , to [the mirror ;	<i>á gli spécchi</i> , to the [mirrors ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dállo spécchio</i> , from [the mirror ;	<i>dá gli spécchi</i> , from the [mirrors ;
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>lo spécchio</i> , the mirror ;	<i>gli spécchi</i> , the mirrors.

---

Masculine Noun, beginning with a Vowel.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>l' amico</i> , the friend ;	<i>gli amíci</i> , the friends ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>dell' amico</i> , of the [friend ;	<i>dé gli amíci</i> , of the [friends ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>all' amico</i> , to the [friend ;	<i>á gli amíci</i> , to the [friends ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dall' amico</i> , from [the friend ;	<i>dá gli amíci</i> , from the [friends ;
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>l' amico</i> the friend ;	<i>gli amíci</i> , the friends.

---

Feminine Noun, beginning with a Consonant.

	Singular.	Plural.
Subjective (N.)—	<i>la casa</i> , the house ;	<i>le case</i> , the houses ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>della casa</i> , of the [house ;	<i>délle case</i> , of the houses ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>ál la casa</i> , to the [house ;	<i>álle case</i> , to the houses ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dál la casa</i> , from [the house ;	<i>dálle case</i> , from the [houses ;
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>la casa</i> , the house ;	<i>le case</i> , the houses.

## Feminine Noun, beginning with a Vowel.

	Singular.	Plural.	
Subjective (N.)—	<i>l' ánima</i> , the soul ;	<i>le ánime</i> , the souls ;	
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>dell' ánima</i> , of the [soul ;	} <i>délle ánime</i> , of the souls ;	
	Attr. (D.)— <i>all' ánima</i> , to the [soul ;		} <i>álle ánime</i> , to the souls ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>dall' ánima</i> , from [the soul ;		
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>l' ánima</i> , the soul ;	<i>le ánime</i> , the souls.	

## Variation of Common Nouns used in an Indefinite Sense.

## Masculine Noun.

	Singular.	Plural.	
Subjective (N.)—	<i>un uccéllo</i> , a bird ;	<i>alcúni uccélli</i> , some birds ;	
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>d' un uccéllo</i> , of a [bird ;	} <i>d' alcúni uccélli</i> , of some [birds ;	
	Attr. (D.)— <i>ad un uccéllo</i> , to a [bird ;		} <i>ad alcúni uccélli</i> , to some [birds ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>da un uccéllo</i> , [from a bird ;		
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>un uccéllo</i> , a bird ;	<i>alcúni uccélli</i> , some birds.	

## Feminine Noun.

	Singular.	Plural.	
Subjective (N.)—	<i>úna mēla</i> , an apple ;	<i>alcúne mēle</i> , some apples ;	
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>d' úna mēla</i> , of an [apple ;	} <i>d' alcúne mēle</i> , of some [apples ;	
	Attr. (D.)— <i>ad úna mēla</i> , to [an apple ;		} <i>ad alcúne mēle</i> , to some [apples ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>da úna mēla</i> , [from an apple ;		
Objective (Ac.)—	<i>úna mēla</i> , an apple ;	<i>alcúne mēle</i> , some apples.	

## EXERCISE II.

[The learner will supply the article according to the Gender of the nouns and will form their Plural and vary them, according to the preceding rules.]

The study of (the) belles lettres. The country of the  
*stúdio* *bélla* *léttera.* *paíse*

Amazons. The fable of the frogs. The virtues of the  
*Amázone.* *fávola* *rána.* *virtù*

Romans. The hatred of the enemies. The poets of (the)  
*Románo.* *ódio* *nemico.* *poéta*

Latium.

*Lázio.*

He gave praise to the valiant,\* consolation to the infirm,\*  
 — *Dáva lóde* *valénte,* *confórto* *inférmo,*

example to all.\* He has bought the horse of the prince for  
*esêmpio* *tútto.* — *Ha compráto* *cavállo* *príncipe per*

a small sum of money. (The) fortune is sometimes  
*píccola sómma* *danáro.* *fortúna* *è* *quálche vólta*

unjust towards (some) | unhappy creatures, | who deserve  
*ingiústa vérsó* *alcúni* | *infelíce,* | *che méritano*

a better fate. He proposed the model of the future  
*migliór sóрте.* — *Propóse* *modéllo* *avveníre<sup>2</sup>*

government, avoiding all the things, which | had |  
*govérno<sup>1</sup>,* *scanzándo tútte* *cósa,* *che* | *éranó* |

lately displeased. The prince took the public  
*frescaménte spiaciúte.* *príncipe* *tólse* <sup>4</sup> *públici<sup>6</sup>*

books | from the hands | of the | questors, and  
*libro<sup>5</sup>* | *di* *máno<sup>1</sup>* | *ái<sup>2</sup>* | *questóre<sup>3</sup>,* *e*

| entrusted | them | to the prætors.  
*diéde cúra<sup>2</sup>* | *ne<sup>1</sup>* | *pretóre.*

The cries and (the) howlings of the savages spread (the)  
*strído e* *úrlo* *subvágio* *spárséro*

terror among the Europeans. Thousands of people, who  
*terróre* *Européo.* *Migliáio* *génte,* *che*

were present at the speech of Regulus to the Romans,  
*éranó pres'nti a* *orazióne* *Régolo* *Románo,*

\* To the valiant, to the infirm, to all, here used in the plural number.

wept; and he departed to return to Carthage, as he  
*piànsero; ed ègli partissi per ritornàre Cariàgine, còme —*  
 had promised, amidst the acclamations of the multitude.  
*avèva promèssò, fra acclamazióne moltitudine.*

Thetis, wishing to render Achilles invulnerable, dipped him  
*Tétide, bramàndo di rëndere Achille invulneràbile, immèrse<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup>*  
 in the river Styx, holding him by one | of his | heels.  
*fiume Stige, tenèndo-lo per úno | dèlle | calcagno.*

They conducted him to the spot, and by threats and  
 — *condússero<sup>2</sup> Lo<sup>1</sup> s'ito, e con minàccia e*  
 promises they disposed him to ascend the walls.  
*promèssa — dispòsero<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup> a salire múro.*

He led | into | the field twelve hundreds of buffaloes, nine  
 — *Menò | a | càmpo dódici centinàio di búfala, nòve*  
 hundred cows, many calves, and over a thousand hogs.  
*cènto vácça, assái<sup>2</sup> vitèlla<sup>1</sup>, e óltre a mílle pòrco.*

She had | her | cheeks all burnt by the many tears she  
 — *Avèva | le | guància tütte àrse per mólte lágrima —*  
 had shed. Weeping, she | fell | at | his | feet,  
 — — *Piangéndo, — | si lasciò cadére<sup>2</sup> | a<sup>3</sup> | gli<sup>1</sup> | piéde<sup>4</sup>,*

and humbly asked | his | pardon | for | (the) past  
*ed umilmènte domandò<sup>6</sup> | gli<sup>5</sup> | perdonànza<sup>7</sup> | di<sup>1</sup> | <sup>2</sup> passati<sup>4</sup>*  
 injuries. | There was found | in a city of Lycia, a  
*oltrággio.<sup>3</sup> | Si trovò | in città di Licia,*

book, which had brass leaves, — (the) leaves of brass.  
*libro, che avèa — — fóglio ràme.*

Calandrino waited all the following evening with his  
*Calandrino stétte tütte vegnènte<sup>2</sup> séra<sup>1</sup> con suói*  
 contrivances to catch a bat.  
*artificio per pigliàre vispistréllo.*

## CHAPTER III.

## ADJECTIVE NOUNS — COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

ITALIAN Adjectives end with one of the vowels, *o*, *a*, *e*.

## GENDER.

Adjectives ending in *o*, are masculine, and become feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as,

<i>virtuoso</i> ,	} virtuous;	{ <i>uómo virtuoso</i> , m., virtuous man; <i>fanciúlla virtuosa</i> , f., virtuous [young woman:
<i>virtuosa</i> ,		
<i>sincero</i> ,	} sincere, blameless;	{ <i>amóre sincero</i> , m., sincere love; <i>nátúra sincera</i> , f., blameless na- [ture.
<i>sincera</i> ,		

Adjectives ending in *e*, are of the common gender; as,

<i>cortése</i> , m. & f., courteous;	{	<i>módo cortése</i> , m., courteous [manner;
		<i>ánima cortése</i> , f., courteous [soul:
<i>fedéle</i> , m. & f., faithful;	{	<i>consiglió fedéle</i> , m., faithful [counsel;
		<i>guida fedéle</i> , f., faithful guide.

## FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

Adjectives ending in *o*, *e*, form the plural by changing *o*, *e*, into *i*; as,

<i>améno</i> ,	} delightful;	{ <i>piacére améno</i> , s., delightful pleasure; <i>luóghi améni</i> , p., delightful places:
<i>améni</i> ,		
<i>prudénte</i> ,	} prudent;	{ <i>génte prudénte</i> , s., prudent people; <i>uómini prudénti</i> , p. m., prudent men; <i>vérgini prudénti</i> , p. f., prudent virgins.
<i>prudénti</i> ,		
<i>prudénti</i> ,		



The adjective *bello*, 'handsome', 'beautiful', before nouns beginning with *s* followed by another consonant, *z*, or a vowel, makes *bègli* in the plural; as,

<i>bèGLI spècchi</i> ,	beautiful mirrors;
<i>bèGLI zaffìri</i> ,	beautiful sapphires;
<i>bèGLI ócchi</i> ,	beautiful eyes.

Adjectives ending in *a*, form the plural by changing *a* into *e*; as,

<i>prezióSA</i> ,	} precious;	{ <i>gióIA preziosA</i> , s., precious jewel;
<i>prezióSE</i> ,		

Adjectives ending in *co*, *go*; *ca*, *ga*; *cio*, *gio*; *cia*, *gia*; *chio*, *ghio*, *glio*; and *io*, in the singular, follow, in the plural, the rules already given for the formation of the plural of Substantives.

#### AGREEMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

Italian adjectives agree with their substantives in gender and number; as,

<i>uómo dótto ed ammaestráto</i> ,	a learned and well-instructed man;
<i>buóNA e virtuosA génte</i> ,	good and virtuous people;
<i>valoróSI uóMINI, belle dónNE,</i>	brave men, fair women, pretty
<i>leggiádRI giòvani</i> ,	youths.

#### EXAMPLES.

*Grande intendiménto è quéllo d'un uóMO VIRTUÓSO, cóme fu costúi.* (Fr. Sacch. n. 75.)

Great is the understanding of a virtuous man, as he was.

*La Sibilla è bellíssima FANCIÚLLA, béne alleváta, e VIRTUÓSA.* (Lasc. Sibill. 11.)

The Sibyl is a very beautiful young woman, well bred, and virtuous.

*Sia manifesta la clemenza, e SINCÉRO AMÓRE, che il dëtto re portava al nóstro comúne.* (Giov. Vill. 1. 1. c. 2.)

*Quèsta NATÚRA al sùo fattóre uníta,—Quál fu creáta, fu SINCÉRA e buóna.* (Dant. Par. 7)

*O ÁNIMA CORTÉSE Mantována.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

*In dúbbio státo sù FEDÉL CONSÍGLIO.* (Petr. c. 49.)

*Prése a persuadér Tibério, ch' é vivésse fuòri di Róma, in LUÓGHI AMÉNI.* (Dav. Tac. am. 4. 95.)

*Laónde, secóndo ch' io póssó far conghiettúra, che è quéllo ché i PRUDÉNTI UÓMINI chiámano indovináre, tu móstri d'èssere innamoráta agraménte.* (Firenz. Asin. 150.)

*Vérgine sággia, e del bel número úna—Délle beáte VÉRGINI PRUDÉNTI.* (Petr. c. 49.)

*In, me movéndo dé' BÉGLI ÓCCHI i rái—Cria d' amór pensieri.* (Petr. s. 9.)

*E trovò in quélla cásca mólte PREZIOSE PIÉTRE, e légate, e sciólte.* (Bocc. g. 2 n. 4.)

*Rícchi délle préde dé' Fiorentini.* (Giov. Vill. 1. 9. c. 320.)

*Mólti chérici, eziandio da LÚNGHE párti, cominciarono a veníre al sérvó di Dio.* (Vit. S. Giov. Gualb. 295.)

*D'un medésimo peccáto al móndo LÉRCI.* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

*Quélle árche d'argénto,—Che stimerésti piéne di tesóro,—Spórté son piéne di vesóche BÚGE.* (Tass. Am. 1. 2.)

Let the clemency, and sincere love, which the said king bore to our community, be manifest.

This nature with its Maker thus conjoined,—Created first was blameless, and good.

O courteous Mantuan soul.

In a doubtful condition so faithful counsel.

He undertook to persuade Tiberius, that he should live in some delightful place, out of Rome.

Therefore, as far as I can conjecture, which is what prudentmen call to guess, you appear to be greatly in love.

Wise Virgin, and one of the beautiful number of the blessed prudent virgins.

Turning the beams of her beautiful eyes to me, creates thoughts of love.

And she found in that chest many precious stones, some set, and some not set.

Enriched with the booty of the Florentines.

Many clergymen, even from distant parts, began to come to see the servant of God.

By one same sin polluted in the world.

Those chests of silver, which you would imagine to be filled with treasures, are baskets filled with empty bladders.

*Così per li gran SÀVJ si confessa,—Chè la Fenice muòre, e pòi rinàsce.* (Dant. Inf. 24.)

So mighty sages tell, that the Phoenix dies, and springs forth with renescent.

UÓMO DÓTTO *dèlle scrittùre,*  
ED AMMAESTRÀTO *dèlla féde di*  
*Crìsto.* (Add. Cavalc. Att.  
Apost. 113.)

A man learned in Holy Writ, and well instructed in the Christian faith.

*Mia sorèlla è quèsta—Nàta di*  
BUÓNA E VIRTUÓSA GENTE.  
(Arios. Fur. 18. 82.)

This is my sister, born of good and virtuous people.

QUÁNTI VALÓROSI UÓMINI,  
QUÁNTA BÉLLE DÓNNE, QUÁNTI  
LEGGIÁDRI GIÓVANI, *la sèra ve-*  
*gnènte, nell' àltro móndo cenàro-*  
*no con li lóro passàti!* (Bocc.  
Intr.)

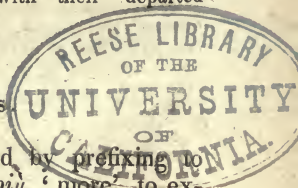
How many brave men, how many fair women, how many pretty youths, the coming evening, supped in the other world with their departed friends!

COMPARATIVES.

Comparatives are generally formed by prefixing to the *adjective* or *positive* the adverb *più*, 'more', to express a relation of *superiority*: *méno*, 'less', to express a relation of *inferiority*: and *si* or *così*; 'so', *tánto*, 'so', 'so much'; *quánto*, 'as', 'as much'; *quánto più*, 'the more'; *quánto méno*, 'the less'; *altrettánto*, 'as', 'as much'; to express a relation of *equality*, between the objects compared; as,

<i>lieto</i> ,	happy;	PIÙ LIÉTO,	more happy;
<i>altéra</i> ,	proud;	MÉNO ALTÉRA,	less proud;
<i>bèlla</i> ,	beautiful;	SI OR COSÌ BÉLLA,	so beautiful;
<i>sáno</i> ,	healthy;	TÁNTO SÁNO,	so healthy;
<i>famóso</i> ,	famous;	QUÁNTO FAMÓSO,	as famous;
<i>altiero</i> ,	proud;	QUÁNTO PIÙ ALTIÉRO,	the more proud;
<i>nocénte</i> ,	guilty;	QUÁNTO MÉNO NOCÉNTE,	the less guilty;
<i>conténti</i> ,	pleased;	{ ALTTRETTÁNTO CON-	} as much pleased.
		TÉNTI,	

*Comparatives of superiority and inferiority* generally require before the second of the objects compared, or, what is the same, the *second term of comparison*, the



preposition *di*, 'than', if it be a *substantive noun* or *pronoun*, or a *numeral adjective*; and the conjunction *che*, 'than', if it be any *other adjective*, a *verb*, or an *adverb*;\* as,

PIÙ <i>lieto</i> DI ME,	more happy than I;
MEN <i>bello</i> DEL VISO,	less beautiful than the face;
PIÙ DI MILLE <i>scogli</i> ,	more than a thousand rocks;
PIÙ <i>forte</i> CHE SÁVIO,	more strong than wise;
<i>non méno odorifere</i> CHE	} not less odoriferous than are the
<i>siénole spézie</i> ,	
PIÙ <i>bella</i> CHE MÁI,	more handsome than ever.

Sometimes these comparatives are formed by the adverbs *méglio*, 'better', and *péggio*, 'worse'; and then they always require *di*, or *che*, before the second term of comparison; according to the general rule;\* as,

MÉGLIO D' ALTRE <i>diecimília dóbbre</i> ,	better than another ten thousand pistoles;
<i>una delle</i> PÉGGIO <i>maritate</i> CHE SÍA,	one of the worst-married that there is.

Very often the second term of comparison is a *verb understood* of a *pronoun and a verb*, and then this second term of comparison always requires *che* before it; as,

<i>scorgévasi</i> PIÙ <i>pómpa</i> CHE [ <i>scorgévasi</i> ] <i>lealtà</i> ,	there was perceived more pomp than sincerity.
PIÙ <i>bélla</i> CHE [è] <i>una lámia</i> ,	more beautiful than a lamia.
<i>scappò</i> PÉGGIO CHE [scappa] <i>un tóro</i> ,	he fled worse (more violently) than a bull;
<i>inténdi</i> MÉGLIO CH' <i>io non</i> RAGIÓNÓ,	thou understandest better than I can speak;

\* This, however, is not without exception, as we not seldom meet, in the Classics, with expressions similar to these:

<i>U'na donna</i> PIÙ <i>bélla</i> <i>assái</i> CHE 'L SÓLE. (Petr. c. 24.)	A woman a great deal more beautiful than the sun.
<i>Reputiámci</i> MÉNO <i>cáre</i> CHE TÚTTE l' <i>altre</i> ? (Bocc. Introd.)	Do we consider ourselves less dear than all the others?
<i>Io so</i> MÉGLIO CHE <i>áltro uómo</i> <i>far</i> <i>ciò che io vóglío</i> . (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)	I know how to do what I wish, better than any other man.

*Comparatives of equality* always require before the second term of comparison another adverb correlative to that by which they are formed. Thus,

<i>si</i> or <i>così</i> ,	so, as ;	} requires	<i>còme</i> ,	as ;
<i>tànto</i> ,	so, so much ;		<i>quànto</i> ,	as ;
<i>quànto</i> ,	as, as much ;		<i>tànto</i> ,	as ;
<i>quànto più</i> ,	the more ;		<i>tànto più</i> ,	or } the more, or
<i>quànto ménò</i> ,	the less ;		<i>tànto ménò</i> ,	} the less ;
<i>altrettànto</i> ,	as, as much ;		<i>tànto ménò</i> ,	or } the less, or
			<i>tànto più</i> ,	} the more ;
			<i>quànto</i> , or <i>còme</i> ,	as :—

<i>sì liéta còme bella</i> ,	as glad as fair ;
<i>TÀNTO sàno QUÀNTO io</i> ,	as healthy or strong as I ;
<i>QUÀNTO [égli] éra famoso</i> ,	as much as he was famous,
<i>TÀNTO [élla] éra bellissima</i> ,	she was beautiful ;
<i>QUÀNTO PIÙ altiéro, TÀNTO</i>	the more proud, the less be-
<i>MÈNO amàto</i> ,	loved ;
<i>QUÀNTO MÈNO nocénte, TÀNTO</i>	the less guilty, the more im-
<i>PIÙ impaziénte</i> ,	patient ;
<i>ALTRETTÀNTO conténti, còme</i>	as pleased as if the Duke
<i>se fòsse venùto il Dúca</i> ,	had come.

Sometimes *còme*, 'as', and *quàle*, 'as', 'like', are used to form these comparatives, and then they require the correlatives *così*, 'thus', and *tàle*, 'such' ; as,

<i>còme il frèddo mi offése, così il</i>	as the cold injured me, thus
<i>càldo mi fa nòia</i> ,	the heat annoys me ;
<i>QUÀLE [còlpo] asino dà in pa-</i>	the ass who kicks against the
<i>réte, TAL [còlpo] ricéve</i> ,	wall, receives such a blow as
	he gives. —

*Tànto*, *quànto*, *altrettànto*, and *quàle*, and their correlatives, sometimes are made to agree with the nouns with which they are used ; as,

<i>tànte vòlte quànte</i> ,	as many times as ;
<i>quànte NE vèggono, tànte NE</i>	as many as they see, so many
<i>desiderano</i> ,	they desire ;
<i>cinquànta Paternòstri, e altret-</i>	fifty Paternosters, and as many
<i>tànte Avemarié</i> ,	Ave-Marias ;
<i>pagàto di tàle monéta, quàli le</i>	paid in such money, as the
<i>derràte érano stàte vendùte</i> ,	provisions had been sold for.

Often the adverbs *così* and *tánto* are suppressed, and the comparative is formed by the use of their correlatives only ; as,

[ <i>così</i> ] <i>bianco</i> CÔME <i>néve</i> ,	white as snow ;
<i>t'attenderò</i> [ <i>tánto</i> ] QUÁNTO <i>vuói,</i>	I will wait for thee as long as thou wishest.

To increase or diminish the force of comparatives, we make use of the adverbs *tróppo*, *mólto* or *assái*, or *via* or *vie*, 'far', 'much,' or 'a great deal', before *più*, and *méno* ; as, *tróppo*, *mólto*, or *assái* *più* — *via* or *vie* *più*, 'much,' or 'a great deal more' ; *tróppo*, *mólto*, or *assái* *méno* — *via* or *vie* *méno*, 'much' or 'a great deal less' ; as,

TRÓPPO PIÙ <i>bélla</i> ,	a great deal more beautiful ;
MÓLTO PIÙ <i>cáre</i> ,	much more dear ;
ASSÁI PIÙ <i>lucénte</i> ,	far more bright ;
VIE PIÙ <i>fórté</i> ,	a great deal more strong ;
MÓLTO MEN <i>fórti</i> ,	much less able.

## EXAMPLES.

*La rividi più bélla e MÉNO*  
ALTÉRA. (Petr. s. 261.)

I saw her again, more beautiful and less proud.

*Nessún rísse giammái PIÙ*  
DI ME LIÉTO. (Petr. c. 7.)

None ever lived more happy than I.

*Deh ! se non hái DEL VÍSO il*  
COR MEN BÉLLO. (Ariost. Fur.  
c. 4.)

Ah ! if thou hast not a heart less beautiful than thy face.

*E sperándo veníre in migliór*  
pórto—Póí mî condússe in PIÙ  
DI MÍLLE SCÓGLI. (Petr. c. 21.)

And hoping to come to a better harbor, he conducted me upon more than a thousand rocks.

*Sappiáte che quélle câmere só-*  
no NON MÉNO ADORÍFERE, CHE  
SIÉNO *i bóssoli delle SPÉZIE*  
*della vóstra bottéga.* (Bocc. g.  
8. n. 9.)

Know that those chambers are not less odoriferous, than are the boxes of drugs in your shop.

*Sarò PIÙ CHE MÁI BÉLLA.*  
(Petr.)

I shall be more beautiful than ever.

*Quéllo, che valse MÉGLIO*  
D' ALTRE DIECIMÍLIA DÓBBRE.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

That, which was more valuable than another ten thousand pistoles.

*Io son pur ÚNA DÉLLE PÉGGIO MARITATE fémine che sta al móndo.* (Firenz. Luc. 4. 1.)

*SCORGÉVASI in quèsto parlàre di Tiberio PIÙ PÓMPA CHE LE-ALTA.* (Dav. Ann. Tac. 1. 1.)

*Èlla è úna giòvane quaggiù che è PIÙ BÉLLA CHE ÚNA LÁ-MIA.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

*PÉGGIO CHE UN TÓRO SCAFFÒ dall' altàre.* (Dav. Storie.)

*Sé' sávio E 'NTÉNDI MÉ' CH' I' NON RAGIÓNO.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

*Vólta ver me sí LIÉTA CÓME BÉLLA.* (Dant. Par. 2.)

*Se'io avéssi COSÌ BÉLLA CÓTTA CÓME ÉLLA.* (Nov. ant. 25.)

*TÁNTO il fáccia Dío SÁNO délle réni QUÁNTO ío.* (Bocc.)

*QUÁNTO trá' cavaliéri ÉRA il Marchése FAMÓSO, TÁNTO la donna tra tutte l' áltre dónne del móndo ÉRA BELLÍSSIMA.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.)

*TÁNTO PIÙ ciéco son ío di te QUÁNTO PIÙ sòno amánte.* (Guar. Past. Fid. 3. 3.)

*Èssa TÁNTO PIÙ IMPAZIEN-TEMENTE sòstenéra quèsta nóia QUÁNTO MÉNO si sentira NOCÉN-TE.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

*Délla venúta dé' cavaliéri, i Fiorentini fúrono ALTRETTÁNTO CONTÉNTI, CÓME SE FÓSSE VENÚ-TO IL DÚCA in persóna.* (Giov. Vill. 1. 10.)

*Demétrio, nóstro amíco, sudl dire, che ALTRETTÁNTO gli è dél- le paróle délla fólle génte, QUÁN- TO dé' suóni che fa il vénto.* (Sen. Pist.)

I am indeed one of the worst-married women in the world.

There was perceived in this speech of Tiberius more pomp than sincerity.

There is a young woman here below more beautiful than a lamia.

He fled from the altar worse (more violently) than a bull.

Thou art wise, and understandest better than I can speak.

Turning to me with aspect as glad as fair.

If I had so beautiful a dress as she.

May God make him as strong in his loins as I am.

As much as the Marquis was famous among the knights, the lady was beautiful among the other ladies.

I am as much more blind than thou as I am more enamoured.

She bore this vexation so much the more impatiently, the less she felt guilty.

The Florentines were as pleased with the arrival of the knights, as if the Duke had come in person.

Demetrius, our friend, used to say, that it happens with the words of foolish persons, as it does with the sounds which the wind makes.

*E CÔME IL trôppo FRÉDDO  
quêsta nôtte MI OFFÉSE, COSÌ IL  
CÁLDO M' incomincia a FAR gran-  
dissima NÓIA.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

*Assái dée bastàre a ciascúno,  
se 'QUÁLE ÁSINO DÀ IN PARÉTE,  
TAL RICÉVE', sènza volére òltre  
ingiuriàre.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

*TÁNTE VÓLTE QUÁNTE òlla  
nèlla memòria mi viène.* (Bocc.  
Filoe.)

*Non sòno i giòvani d' una-  
contènti, ma QUÁNTE NE VÈG-  
GONO, TÁNTE NE DESÍDERANO.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

*La mattina si vuòle andàre àl-  
la chièsa, e quivi dîre CINQUÁN-  
TA PATERNÓSTRI E ALTRET-  
TÁNTE AVEMARÍE.* (Bocc. g.  
3. n. 4.)

*Videsi DI TAL MONÉTA PAGÁ-  
TO, QUÁLI LE DERRÁTE ÉRANO  
STATÉ VENDUTE.* (Bocc. g. 6.  
n. 5.)

*Un vestiménto di lino sottilis-  
simo, e BIÁNCO CÔME NÉVE.*  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

*Io volentièri — T' ATTENDE-  
RÒ QUÁNTO VUÒI.* (Maff. Mer.  
4. 2.)

*TRÓPPO PIÙ BÉLLA gli pàrve,  
che stimáto non avéa.* (Bocc. g.  
7. n. 7.)

*MÓLTO piú bèle e PIÙ CÀRE,  
che noi non siámo.* (Bocc. Intr.)

*Onù' òlla fèssi — LUCÉNTE  
PIÙ ASSÁI di quel ch' ell' éra.*  
(Dant. Par. 5.)

*Vèdi Sansóne—VIE PIÙ FÓR-  
TE CHE SÁVIO.* (Petr. Tr. Amor.)

*Elle sòno MÓLTO MEN FÓRTI  
che gli uómini a sostenére.*  
(Bocc. Introd.)

And as the excessive cold  
last night injured me, thus the  
heat begins now to annoy me  
greatly.

It ought to be quite sufficient  
for any one, that 'the ass who  
kicks against the wall, receives  
such a blow, as he gives,' with-  
out wishing to cause any far-  
ther injury.

As many times as she comes  
into my remembrance.

Young people are not satisfi-  
ed with one; but as many they  
see, so many they desire.

In the morning we must go  
to church, and there say fifty  
Paternosters and as many Ave-  
Marias.

He saw himself paid in such  
money as the provisions had  
been sold for.

A garment of linen very fine,  
and white as snow.

I will wait for thee willingly  
as long as thou wishest.

She appeared to him a great  
deal more beautiful than he  
had imagined.

Much more fair and much  
more dear, than we are.

Whence she became far more  
bright than she had been.

See Sampson a great deal  
more strong than wise.

They are much less able  
than men to bear.



## EXERCISE III.

He has no other—more children than him. I know not, who  
 — *ha*<sup>2</sup> *Non*<sup>1</sup> — *figliuolo* *lúí.* — *so*<sup>2</sup> *Non*<sup>1</sup> *chí*

could recover | my property | more properly than thou.  
*póssa riscuótere* | *il mio* | *convenévole* *te.*

Peter, who had more desire of eating than of sleeping,  
*Piétro, che avéva* *vógliá mangiáre* *dormíre,*

asked whether there was any thing | for | supper. We  
*domandáva* *se* *vi fósse alcuna cosa* | *da* | *céna.*

are less powerful than the Greeks, they have more  
*siámo* *poderóso* *Gréco,* *éssi háanno*

bravery, wealth, and wisdom than we. Who | would fare |  
*prodézza, tesóro, e sapére* *nói.* *Chí* | *starébbe* |

better than I, if that money\* were mine? In this  
*me, se quél denáro fóssero míti?* *quésto*

season the nights are longer than the days. He began  
*stagióne* *nótte sóno lúngo* *dí:* — *Cominciò*

to coast along (the) Barbary, robbing every-one who  
*a costeggiáre* — *Barberia,* *rubándo ciascúno* *che*

| was less powerful | than he. I | do not | say, that it  
*potéva méno* | *lúí.* | *non* | *dico, che éi*

is not a sin, but God pardons | (of) | greater sins to  
*siá<sup>2</sup> non<sup>1</sup>* — *peccáto, ma Iddio perdóna* | (*of*) | (*dé*) *gránde* — *a*

| him who | repents himself. It appeared that she was  
*chi* | *pénte<sup>2</sup> sí.<sup>1</sup>* — *Paréa* *che élla fósse*

whiter than (the) snow. She afflicts more than she con-  
*biáncó* *néve.* — *Affligge* — *con-*

soles (not).  
*sóla<sup>2</sup> non<sup>1</sup>.*

None in this wretched world was so miserable as I  
*Niúno* *quésto sciagurató móndo fu* *mísero* *io*

am. Am I not as beautiful† as (is) the wife of  
 — *sóno<sup>2</sup> io<sup>3</sup> Non<sup>1</sup>* *bélló* *síá* *móglie*

Richard? Who commended him so much as thou?  
*Ricciárdó?* *Chí* *commendò<sup>2</sup>* *il<sup>1</sup>* *tu?*

\* That money, in the plural number.

† Beautiful, in the feminine gender.

The master gave as much faith to the words of Bruno, as  
*maestro diède* *fède* *paróla* *Brúno,*

| was due | to any truth. | I began |  
 | *si sarèbbe convenúta* | *qualúnque verità.* | *cominciái<sup>3</sup>* |  
 to flee as much as I could. I will defend her certainly  
*a<sup>4</sup> fuggíre<sup>5</sup>* — *potéi<sup>2</sup>.* *Io difenderò<sup>3</sup>* *la<sup>2</sup>-per cèrtol*  
 as much as I | shall be able. |  
 — *io* | *potrò.* |

The more the heart is excited, the less can (the)  
*cuórè è commóssò,* *può*  
 man express | his | feeling. The more crazy he is  
*uómo esprimere* | *il súo* | *sentiménto.* *pazzo égli<sup>2</sup> è<sup>1</sup>*  
 than you, the more he is enamoured. As | it came into his  
*vai,* — *è innamoráto.* | *gli venne in*  
 mind, | so he did. I wish to go to hear (the) mass,  
*pensiéro,* | — *fèce.* *Io vóglío andáre* — *méssa,*  
 and recommend myself to God as much as I can.  
*e raccomandádar mi* *Dío* — — *póssò.*

| His | presence | will make it appear to us | much more  
 | *La súa* | *presénza* | *célo farà parére* |  
 joyful. | For | (the) which object (the) fortune was | a great  
*allégré.* | *A* | *quále oggétto* *fortúna fu<sup>2</sup>* |  
 deal more | propitious to him. This family is far greater,  
 | *propizia<sup>4</sup>* *gli.<sup>1</sup>* *Qúesto famíglia è* *gránde,*  
 and a great deal more known. A great deal more pure  
*conosciúta.* *púra*  
 than a white dove.  
*cándido colómba.*

## SUPERLATIVES.

*Relative superlatives* are formed by prefixing the article *il, i* or *li,* 'the', for the masculine, and *la, le,* 'the', for the feminine, to the comparative; as,

*più fórte,* more strong; *IL più fórte,* the most strong;  
*più vezzósi,* more graceful; *I più vezzósi,* the most graceful;  
*méno frésca,* less fresh; *LA méno frésca,* the least fresh;  
*più bélle,* more beautiful; *LE più bélle,* the most beautiful.

When these superlatives are followed by a second term of comparison, and this is a *noun* or a *pronoun*, they require the prepositions *di*, 'of or in'; *fra* or *tra*, 'amongst'; after them; as,

<i>il più forte</i> DI TUTTI <i>gli uomini,</i>	the strongest of all men;
<i>i più vezzosi fanciulli</i> DEL MONDO,	the most graceful children in the world;
<i>il più perfetto</i> TRA TANTI,	the most perfect amongst so many.

If the second term is a *verb*, the superlative requires the conjunction *che*, 'that'; after it; as,

<i>il più felice</i> CHE <i>si trovi sotto le stelle,</i>	the happiest man that can be found under the stars;
<i>il più sábio uomo</i> CHE FOSSE <i>al mondo,</i>	the wisest man ever was in the world.

When the object compared, or the *first term of comparison*, precedes the superlative, the article of this superlative is generally suppressed; as,

<i>il fiore</i> [il] <i>più bello,</i>	the most beautiful flower;
<i>l'età</i> [la] <i>men fresca,</i>	the least fresh age.

*Absolute superlatives* are formed by changing the last vowel of the plural of adjectives, into *issimo* for the masculine, and into *issima* for the feminine; as,

<i>bélli,</i> beautiful;	<i>bellíSSIMO,</i> very beautiful;
<i>ricche,</i> rich;	<i>ricchíSSIMA,</i> very rich;
<i>fedéli,</i> faithful;	{ <i>fedelíSSIMI,</i> } very faithful.
	{ <i>fedelíSSIME,</i> }

A few adjectives take the termination *érrimo*, for the masculine, and *érrima*, for the feminine, in their superlative; as,

<i>célebre,</i> celebrated;	<i>celebéRRIMO,</i> very celebrated;
<i>sálubre,</i> wholesome;	<i>salubéRRIMA,</i> very wholesome;
<i>ácre,</i> severe;	<i>acéRRIMO,</i> very severe.

These superlatives may be also formed by prefixing the adverbs *tróppo*, *mólto*, or *assái*, 'very', to the positive; as,

<i>piéne</i> , full;	TRÓPPO <i>piéne</i> , very full;
<i>ráre</i> , rare;	MÓLTO <i>ráre</i> , very rare;
<i>vicini</i> , near;	ASSÁI <i>vicini</i> , very near:

Or by making use of such expressions as, *sópra ógni áltro*, 'above every other one'; *sénza módo*, 'exceedingly'; *sénza fine*, 'extremely'; *fuór di misúra*, 'beyond measure'; &c.; as,

SÓPRA ÓGNI ÁLTRO <i>felice</i> ,	happy above every other one;
<i>gróssO SÉNZÁ MÓDO</i> ,	exceedingly coarse;
<i>beáta SÉNZÁ FINE</i> ,	extremely blessed;
<i>dolénTE FUÓR DI MISÚRA</i> ,	grieved beyond measure.

Very often we form them by repeating the adjective; as,

<i>vivo</i> , lively;	<i>vivo vivo</i> , very lively;
<i>piccino</i> , small;	<i>piccino piccino</i> , very small;
<i>lénTA</i> , slow;	<i>lénTA LÉNTA</i> , very slow.

To increase the force of superlatives, we use the adverbs, *più*, 'more'; *mólto*, 'much'; *tánto*, 'so much'; before them; and sometimes we raise the repeated adjective to the superlative degree;\* as,

PIÙ <i>nobilíssimo</i> ,	very noble;
MÓLTO <i>bellíssima</i> ,	extremely beautiful;
TÁNTO <i>bellíssima</i> ,	so very beautiful;
<i>grándi GRANDÍSSIMI</i> ,	exceedingly great.

There are a few adjectives, which beside their regular

---

\* This form of expression is found in the earlier classics, though very seldom adopted by modern writers.

Italian form, retain in the comparative and superlative degree the irregular form which they have in Latin; as,

<i>buono</i> ,	{ <i>più buono</i> ,	{ better;	{ <i>bonissimo</i> ,	{ best;
[good;	{ or MIGLIÒRE,		{ or ÓTTIMO,	
<i>cattivo</i> ,	{ <i>più cattivo</i> ,	{ worse;	{ <i>cattivissimo</i> ,	{ worst;
[bad;	{ or PEGGIÒRE,		{ or PÉSSIMO,	
<i>grande</i> ,	{ <i>più grande</i> ,	{ greater;	{ <i>grandissimo</i> ,	{ greatest;
[great;	{ or MAGGIÒRE,*		{ or MÁSSIMO,	
<i>piccolo</i> ,	{ <i>più piccolo</i> ,	{ smaller;	{ <i>piccolissimo</i> ,	{ smallest;
[small;	{ or MINÒRE,*		{ or MÍNIMO,	

to which may be added,

SUPERIÒRE, superior;	{ SUPRÉMO,	{ highest;
	{ or SÓMMO,	
INFERIÒRE, inferior;	INFIMO,	lowest.

EXAMPLES.

*Raccóntano ancóra, che tra loro fu E'rcole, IL PIÙ FÓRTE DI TUTTI GLI UÓMINI.* (Dav. Tac. Germ.)

They relate also, that among them was Hercules, the strongest of all men.

*E'ran i più bélli, e i più VEZ- ZÒSI FANCIÚLLI DEL MÓNDO.* (Bocc. g. 3.)

They were the most beautiful and the most graceful children in the world.

*E di tórtole ho préso úna nidiáta—LE PIÙ BÉLLE del móndo.* (Bocc. Amet. 15.)

And I have taken a nest-full of turtles, the most beautiful in the world.

*TRA TÁNTI, e sì béi vólti IL PIÙ PERFÉTTO.* (Petr. s. 201.)

The most perfect amongst so many, and so beautiful countenances.

\* From these two comparatives are derived the substantives *maggióre* and *minóre*, which, used in the plural, are equivalent—*maggióri*, to 'parents', 'ancestors', 'superiors';—*minóri*, to 'inferiors'; as,

*Disubbidiente á' suói MAGGIÓRI;* (Pass.)

Disobedient to his parents.

*Chi fur li MAGGIÓR tuói?* (Dant. Inf. 10.)

Who were thy ancestors?

*E però non renáe débíta reverénza álli MAGGIÓRI, né débíta mansuetúdi- ne álli MINÓRI.* (Bocc. Com. Dant. Inf. 8.)

Therefore he neither treats with due reverence his superiors, nor with due mildness his inferiors.

*Sarò IL PIÙ FELICE, e contento uomo, CHE SI TRÓVI SOTTO LE STÉLLE.* (Macch. Com.)

*E'gli éra IL PIÙ SÁVIO, ed il piú avvedúto UOMO CHE AL MÓNDO FÓSSE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

*IL FIÓRE PIÙ BÉLLO dell' età nostra.* (Lod. Mart. Rim.)

*Quél fuoco, ch'io pensái, che fosse spénto—Da L'ETÀ MEN FRÉSCA.* (Petr. c. 13.)

*Assái sosténne—Per BELLÍSSIMO amór quèsti al súo témpo.* (Petr. s. 172.)

*Fátta fáre úna RICCHÍSSIMA coróna d'óro e di piétre preziose, per coronársi re di Lombardia.* (Giov. Vill. l. 11. c. 76.)

*Per la lóro singolár pietà vérsò quèsta Sánta Sède, e vérsò tútti noi, suói FEDELÍSSIMI servitóri.* (Casa, lett. 23.)

*Archíta, ingegnér CELEBÉRIMO tra gli antichí.* (Segn. Crist. instr. 3. 2.)

*Il reobárbaro si è lóro medicina SALUBÉRRIMA.* (Tratt. segr. cos. donn.)

*Il Dúca di Gheldéri, ACCÉRIMO nimíco súo.* (Guicc. Stor. 6.)

*Nè dúbito púnto che non sien di quèlli, che diránno le cose détte ésser TRÓPPO PIÉNE di mótti e di ciánce.* (Bocc. Concl.)

*Son MÓLTO RÁRE a cercáre le notizie.* (Borgh. Tosc. 352.)

*E un giòrno, ASSÁI VICÍNI délla cámera, séco medésmi, cominciárono a ragionáre.* (Bocc. n. 1.)

I shall be the most happy and the most contented man, that can be found under the stars.

He was the most wise, and the most wary man ever was in the world.

The most beautiful flower of our age.

That fire, which I thought would be extinguished by maturer age.

This one suffered much in his time for the love of a very beautiful person.

Having caused to be made a very rich crown of gold and of precious stones, in order to crown himself king of Lombardy.

Through their singular piety towards this Holy See, and towards us all, its most faithful servants.

Archytas, a very celebrated architect amongst the ancients.

Rhubard is for them a very wholesome medicine.

The Duke of Ghelderi, his most severe enemy.

Nor doubt I at all, that there are many, who will say, that the things which I have said are very full of words and idle stories.

News is very rare to be found.

And one day, very near that room, they began to talk among themselves.

*Estimáva il prínce sÓPRA  
ÓGNI ÁLTRO FELÍCE.* (Bocc. g.  
2. n. 7.)

*Uómo matériale, e GRÓSSO  
SÉNZA MÓDO.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

*Fámmi, che puói, délla súa  
grázia dégno, SÉNZA FÍNE O  
BEÁTA.* (Petr. c. 49.)

*DOLÉNTÉ FUÓR DI MISÚRA,  
sénza alcún indúgio, ciò. che il  
re domandáva féce.* (Bocc. g.  
2. n. 7.)

*E'bbe un caválla, e dá' suói  
fánti il féce vívo vívo scorticáre.*  
(Nov. ant. 54.)

*Basì, e diventò PICCÍN PICCÍNO.*  
(Buonar. Fier. 2. 4.)

*E'lla sen va notándo LÉNTA  
LÉNTA.* (Dant. Inf. 17.)

*Iddio féce l'uómo PIÙ NOBI-  
LÍSSIMO che gli áltri animáli.*  
(Crusca.)

*Vide l'ómbra súa MÓLTO BEL-  
LÍSSIMA.* (Nov. Ant. 43.)

*Apprésso i quáli Biancafióre  
veníva TÁNTO BELLÍSSIMA, che  
ógni comparazióne ci suría  
scársa.* (Bocc. Filoc. 7.)

*O'nde próva nullo stómaco  
travágli GRÁNDI GRANDÍSSIMI.*  
(Red. cons. 1. 16.)

*Io non potréi trattáre per la  
salúte dé' miéi fratélli con MAG-  
GIÓR affezióne d'ánimo, nè con  
MIGLIÓR módo di quéllo, che ho  
io trattáto.* (Casa. lett. 21.)

*Col PEGGIÓRE spírto di Ro-  
mágnà—Trovái un tal di vói,  
che per su' ópra—In ánima in  
Cocito già si bágnà.* (Dant.  
Inf. 33.)

*O'nde nel cérchio MINÓRE in  
eténo è consúnto.* (Dant. Inf.  
11.)

He thought the prince happy  
above every other one.

An exceedingly coarse and  
uncouth man.

Make me, O you who can,  
extremely blessed lady, worthy  
of his favor.

Grieved beyond measure,  
without any delay, he did that  
which the king wished.

He had a horse, and caused  
it to be flayed all alive by his  
servants.

He came near dying, and  
became very small.

It went on sailing very slow.

God made man much more  
noble than the other animals.

He saw his shadow extreme-  
ly beautiful.

Next whom came Biancafiore  
so very beautiful, that every  
comparison would fail.

Wherefore he experiences  
exceedingly great pains in his  
stomach.

I could not act for the wel-  
fare of my brothers with greater  
interest, nor in a better manner  
than that in which I have  
acted.

In company with the worst  
spirit of Romagna I found such  
an one of you, as, for his do-  
ings, even now in soul is plung-  
ed in Cocytus.

Whence in the smaller circle  
is eternally consumed.

*Il quále dálla pártè SUPERI-  
ÓRE álla INFERIÓRE dà il súo  
dólce, e consonánte suóno.  
(Declam. Quintil. C.)*

*Le vólte piéne d' ÓTTIMI víni.  
(Bocc. g. 3.)*

*Esséndo státo in víta un  
PÉSSIMO uómo. (Bocc. n. 1.)*

*La MÁSSIMA attività dé' rággi  
solári. (Sag. Nat. esp.)*

*Le MÍNIME alterazióni del  
fréddo. (Sag. Nat. esp.)*

Which from the superior to  
the inferior part gives its sweet  
and harmonious sound.

The cellars full of the best  
wines.

Having been in his life a  
very bad man.

The greatest power of the  
solar rays.

The smallest alterations of  
cold.

#### EXERCISE IV.

Let the strongest of all the Romans come forward.  
— <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>  
*tútto Románo Vénega innánzi.*

The rostra were immediately covered with the  
<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup>  
*róstro Fúrono subitaménte copéti dé'*

heads of the most illustrious patricians. He caused, in  
*téschio <sup>2</sup> illústre <sup>3</sup> patrízio. <sup>1</sup> -- Féce,*

a short space of time, to be made one of the most  
— *piccolo spázio témpo | fáre |*

beautiful, and of the largest, and of the richest palaces,  
*béllò gránde rícco palágio,*

which had ever been seen. I esteem him the most  
*fóssero <sup>2</sup> mái <sup>1</sup> státi vedúti. l'ò réputo <sup>2</sup> il <sup>1</sup>*

handsome, the most agreeable, the most graceful, and the  
*béllò, piacévole, leggíadro,*

most wise knight that can be found in the kingdom of  
*sávio cavaliére | trovár si póssa <sup>5</sup> | <sup>1</sup> réame <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup>*

France. He was the most amusing man in the world.  
*Fráncia. <sup>4</sup> — E'ra sollazzévole uómo móndo.*

She is the most happy woman in the world. The  
— *E' <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> felice <sup>4</sup> dóнна <sup>2</sup> móndo.*

planet most remote from the earth. The most furious  
*pianéta - remóto térra. <sup>2</sup> furíoso <sup>3</sup>*



enemies with | their | tall persons, and long spears strike  
*nemíco<sup>1</sup>* | *le lóro* | *álto persóna,* | *lúngo ásta fedtscono*

| from a distance. |  
*da díscósto.* |

Having taken a very large stone, she | let it fall | into  
 — *Présa* | *gránde piétra,* — | *la lasciò cadére* | *in*

the well. The stone in reaching (*in*) the water made a  
*pózzo.* | *piétra* — *giungéndo* — | *acqua féce*

very great noise. They were dressed | in | a garment  
*gránde rumóre.* | — *E'rano vestúti* | *di* | *vestiméto*

of very fine linen. She was a very beautiful woman,  
*sottíle<sup>2</sup> líno.<sup>1</sup>* | — *E'ra* — | *dónna,*

wise, and very virtuous. He is a very austere man. A  
*sávio,* | *onésto.* | *E'gli è* | *ácre<sup>2</sup> uómo.<sup>1</sup>*

very celebrated poet. They would commit themselves  
*célebre poéta.* | *E'lle vorrébbero<sup>2</sup> méttet<sup>4</sup>* | *si<sup>1</sup>*

quite alive | to the flames. | You are exceedingly good.  
*vívvo<sup>3</sup>* | *nel fuóco.* | — *Siéte* | *buóno.*

I will be the best husband in the world. He was  
*I'o sarò* | *maríto* | *móndo.* | *E'gli éra*

the worst man, that | perhaps ever was born. | Be sure,  
*uómo,* | *fórsa mái nascésse.* | *Siáte cértto,*

that I have a greater desire | of it | than you. The  
*che ío ho<sup>2</sup> —* | *<sup>3</sup> vóglia<sup>4</sup>* | *ne<sup>1</sup>* | *vói.* | *<sup>2</sup>*

very great confidence which he has with us | makes him say  
*<sup>3</sup> confidénza<sup>4</sup> che<sup>5</sup> — ha<sup>6</sup> con<sup>7</sup> nói<sup>8</sup>* | *Gliél fa díre<sup>1</sup>*

so. | We have drunk | of the | best wine. He  
 — *Abbiámo bevúto* | *d' un* | *víno.* —

| does not pardon him | the smallest fault. The highest  
*Non gli perdóna* | *cólpa.* | *The highest*

parts were wrapt | in | a dark cloud.  
*parte érano avvólte* | *d'* | *oscúro<sup>2</sup> nébbia.<sup>1</sup>*

## CHAPTER IV.

## AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.

## AUGMENTATIVES.

THERE are three kinds of augmentatives; those that express *bigness* or *grandeur*; those that express *vigor* or *beauty*; and those that express *contempt*.

To express bigness or grandeur, we change the last vowel of nouns, if masculine, into *óne*, *ózzo*, and, if feminine, into *óne*, *ózza*; as,

<i>cappéll</i> o, hat;	<i>cappelló</i> NE, large hat;*
<i>forés</i> A, country girl;	<i>foresó</i> ZZA, fine country girl;
<i>béll</i> o, handsome;	<i>belló</i> NE, large and handsome;
<i>frésca</i> , fresh;	<i>frescó</i> ZZA, fine and fresh.

When a feminine noun takes the termination *óne*, in the augmentative, it becomes masculine; as,

<i>dónna</i> , f., woman;	<i>donnó</i> NE, m., large woman;
<i>campána</i> , f., bell;	<i>campanó</i> NE, m., large bell.

To express vigor or beauty, we use *óto*, *óccio*, for the masculine, and *ótta*, *óccia*, for the feminine; as,

<i>gióvan</i> E, youth;	<i>giovano</i> TTO, handsome and [vigorous youth;
<i>béll</i> A, fair;	<i>belló</i> CCIA, very fair;
<i>gránd</i> E, large;	<i>grandó</i> TTA, handsome and [large;
<i>gróss</i> A, large;	<i>grossó</i> CCIA, very large and firm.

\* It is impossible to give in any other tongue the full and exact meaning of Italian Augmentatives and Diminutives; the translations, therefore, throughout this chapter, must be regarded as attempts at expressing by several words, and as far as the English permits it, the change of signification which, in Italian, is effected by a simple change of termination, forming one of the striking beauties of this language.

To express contempt, we use the terminations *áccio*, *ázzo*, *ástro*, for the masculine, and *áccia*, *ázza*, *ástra*, *ágliá*, for the feminine ; as,

<i>libro</i> , book ;	<i>libráccio</i> , bad book ;
<i>pópolo</i> , people ;	<i>popolázzo</i> , populace ;
<i>gióvane</i> , young man ;	<i>giovánastro</i> , contemptible [young man ;
<i>gènte</i> , folks ;	<i>gentáglia</i> , rabble.

We can join the augmentative termination of bigness to that which expresses contempt, and that of contempt to that of bigness ; and thus form a double augmentative ; as,

<i>ómo</i> , man ;	<i>omáccio</i> , bad man ;	<i>omáccio'ne</i> , a very [bad man ;
<i>ribáldo</i> , ribald ;	<i>ribaldóne</i> , great ribald ;	<i>ribaldóna'ccio</i> , very [great ribald.

And sometimes by repeating the termination of contempt, we form a treble augmentative ; as,

<i>bianco</i> , white ;	<i>biancástro</i> , whitish ;
<i>biancastro'ne</i> , slightly whitish ;	<i>biancastrónaccio</i> , of a [dirty white.

## E X A M P L E S .

*Per in capo Cappelóni  
rándi álla Spagnuóla.* (Lasc.  
ibill. 2. 2.)

Having on their heads very  
large hats after the Spanish  
fashion.

*E'ra úna piacévole, e frésca  
oresózza.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)

She was a pleasant and fresh  
fine country girl.

*Non vidi mái uómini piú  
ellóni.* (Caro. lett. 2. 137.)

I never saw more large,  
handsome men.

*Védi tu, dóнна míá, cóme le  
óstre sóno tútte frescózze ?*  
Agn. Pand. 47.)

Dost thou see, my good  
woman, how ours are all fine  
and fresh ?

*A'lle guagnél, tu séi un bel  
onnóne.* (Bern. rim. 2. 7.)

In truth, you are a fine large  
woman.

*Sonáte* IL CAMPANONE. (Buonar. Fier. 2. 3. 9.)

*Il valoroso, e già bel* GIOVANNOTTO *Alcibiade fu molto famoso.* (Matt. Franz. rim. 169.)

*Oh! come ella è ora, e fresca* BELLÓCCIA. (Las. Spir.)

*Io avéa una conca assai* GRANDÓTTA. (Mes. Bin. rim. 1. 202.)

*Ella è* GROSSÓCCIA, *tarchiata, e giuliva.* (Lor. Med. Nenc.)

*Fec' egli di quelle un famoso* LIBRACCIO. (Allegr. 92.)

*Io non son nato della feccia* del POPOLAZZO. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

*Noi non temiamo d' un* GIOVANASTRO. (Dav. Tac. Ann. 1.)

*Guidava, gli accoltellanti* Giuliano, *le ciurme* Appollinare, *non come capitani, ma licenziosi e pigri, come la lor* GENTAGLIA. (Dav. Tac. Stor. 3.)

*Accadde, che questi* OMACCIONI *furono sconosciuti de' benefici ricevuti da Giove.* (Fir. dial. bell. donn.)

*Quel* RIBALDONACCIO *del fratello ha consumato tanto.* (Cecch. Dot. 1. 2.)

*Essendo questo un certo* BIANCASTRONACCIO *senza troppo barba.* (Fir. nov. 7.)

Ring the large bell.

The valorous and handsome and vigorous youth Alcibiades was very famous.

Oh! how very fresh, and fair she is now.

I had a pan very handsome and large.

She is very large and firm, well-limbed, and gay.

He made of them a famous bad book.

I was not born of the dregs of the populace.

We do not fear a contemptible young man.

Julian led the gladiators, Appollinaris the rowers, not as captains, but as licentious, and slothful men, like their rabble.

It followed, that these very bad men were ungrateful for the benefits received from Jupiter.

That very great ribald of the brother has consumed so much.

This one being a certain man of a dirty white (pale) color and without much beard.

## EXERCISE V.

[This and the following Exercise on Diminutives, are introduced solely for the purpose of habituating the learner to the formation of such words; but as all nouns are not susceptible of the same modification, and as the employment of one termination in preference to the others depends entirely on usage and euphony, nothing but constant reading, and the study of the classics, can teach the proper use of these words.]

He is a coarse and good-for-nothing man. That  
 — *E' grãnde,<sup>2</sup> e<sup>3</sup> da nùlla<sup>4</sup> uómo.<sup>1</sup> Cotèsta*  
 a dirty, ugly servant. The kitchens of (the) great  
*súdicio<sup>2</sup> fãnte.<sup>1</sup> cucína*

Buttons are always filled with cooks. Go home,  
*pióttò sòno sèmpre pièno di cuóco. Andátevène a càsa*  
 Great contemptible fool, you appear to me to be beside  
*scioccone, voi paréte<sup>2</sup> mi<sup>1</sup> uscìto*

(f) yourself. Take that large cup, and wash it well. Thou  
*vói. P. glia quèl tàzza, e làva-lo béne. Tu*  
 a fine large woman. He had in that chamber a  
*dónna. E'gli avéva quèllo càmera*

Large old chest, which had been made since the time of his  
*cassòne, che éra fãtto fin dàllo<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup>*  
 father's grand-father. He bites them all with that ugly  
*ádre<sup>4</sup> ávolo.<sup>1</sup> E'gli mórde<sup>2</sup> le<sup>1</sup> tútte con quèllo*

mouth. This great fool wants to teach me how to know  
*ócca. Quésto pècora mi vuól far conóscerc*  
 (he) things, as if I were born yesterday. Each of  
*còsa, còme se io fóssi nãta ieri. ognúno<sup>2</sup> —*

them had a bad large sword. They opened a large box  
 — *Avéva<sup>1</sup> spáda. — Aprírono càssa*

of their father. I speak only of ungrateful, and very  
*del lóro<sup>2</sup> pádre.<sup>1</sup> I'o párlò sólo ingrãto, e*  
 proud men. Ring the large bell, behold the council of  
*pèrbo —. Sonãte campãna, écco consìglio*

the widows, that enter. People, that are born of the ùregs  
*vedóva, che éntra. Génte, che è nãta féccia*

the rabble. I never saw men so very handsome.  
*pópolo. — Non vídi mái uómo così béllo.*

She would appear to you a fine large woman. They | scat-  
*Ella parrébbe<sup>2</sup> vil bélla fémina.* — |  
 tered themselves | through that rabble.  
*Si spársero | per quéllo ciúrma.*

---

 DIMINUTIVES.

Diminutives may be divided into four classes, viz. those that express *kindness* or *tenderness*; those that express *smallness* or *prettiness*; those that express *compassion*; and those that express *contempt* or *indignation*.

To express kindness or tenderness, we change the last vowel of nouns into *erélllo*, for the masculine, and into *erélla*, for the feminine; as,

<i>vecchio</i> , old man;	<i>vecchierélllo</i> , poor old man;
<i>pázza</i> , fool;	<i>pazzerélla</i> , poor little fool.

To express smallness or prettiness, we use the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *élllo*, *úccio*, *úzzo*, for the masculine, and *ina*, *étta*, *élla*, *úccia*, *úzza*; for the feminine; as,

<i>fanciúlllo</i> , boy;	<i>fanciullino</i> , little boy;
<i>ruscélllo</i> , brook;	<i>ruscellétto</i> , small brook;
<i>finéstra</i> , window;	<i>finestrélla</i> , little window;
<i>bócca</i> , mouth;	<i>boccúccia</i> , pretty little mouth;
<i>úmido</i> , damp;	<i>umidúzzo</i> , slightly damp.

Some feminine nouns take the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *élllo*, in the diminutive, and then they become masculine; as,

<i>cása</i> , f., house;	<i>casíno</i> , m., small house, or [country-house;
<i>capánna</i> , f., cottage;	<i>capannétto</i> , m., little cottage;
<i>pórtta</i> , f., door;	<i>portélllo</i> , m., small door, or [carriage-door.

To express compassion, we use the termination *icciúólo*, for the masculine, and *icciúóla*, for the feminine;



Others have quite an irregular termination ; as,

*mercante*, merchant ; *mercantúolo*, little miserable merchant ;  
*págia*, straw ; *pagliúca*, small piece of straw ;  
*bácio*, kiss ; *baciózso*, cordial smacking kiss ;  
*amáro*, bitter ; *amarógnolo*, bitterish.

[For a List of such Diminutives, see APPENDIX, E.]

We may join two different terminations in the formation of diminutives ; and then we form a double diminutive, which sometimes, besides the idea of kindness or tenderness, expresses also that of prettiness or compliment ; and sometimes serves to diminish the object still more, and to convey also the idea of prettiness ; as,

*cattivo*, miserable man ; *cattivélllo*, a wretched man ;  
*cattivellu'ccio*, wretched little man ;

*libro*, book ; *librétto*, small book ; *librett'no*, pretty little  
 [book.]

Sometimes we make use of the diminutive termination to diminish the augmentative ; and when we wish to express contempt for the object represented by the name already diminished, we augment the diminutive ; as,

*ladro*, robber ; *ladróne*, highwayman ; *ladronce'llo* ;  
 [pilferer ;

*dáma*, lady ; *damúzza*, petty lady ; *damuzzaccia*,  
 [pretended lady.]

Finally, such is the genius of the Italian language in this respect, that we may even modify the verbs and adverbs by one or more syllables added to them ; thus,

From *baciáre*, to kiss ; we make *baciucchiáre*, { to give many  
 little kisses  
 one after  
 another ;

“ *cantáre*, to sing ; “ { *cantere'lláre*, } to hum ;  
 { or *canticchiáre*, }

“ *póco*, little ; “ { *pochino*, } very little ;  
 { or *pocolino*, }

“ *béne*, well ; “ { *benino*, } pretty well ;  
 { *benóne*, } very well.



EXAMPLES.

*Móvesi 'l VECCHIERÉL canúto, e bíanco.* (Petr. s. 14.)

*O PAZZERÉLLA, tu non sai quéllo che si è fáttö.* (Macch.)

*Che ancór m' odiásti esséndo FANCIULLÍNO.* (Bern. Ol. 1. 21.)

*Che non per vísta, ma per suóno è nóto — D' un RUSCELLETTO, che quívi discénde.* (Dant. Inf. 34.)

*Víde entráre un tópo per la FINESTRELLA.* (Nov. ant. 90.)

*Quélla BOCCÚCCIA sánta.* (Bellinc.)

*Dúbito che non sia un póco UMIDÍZZO.* (Crusea.)

*Dal pñmo piáno di QUÉSTO CASÍNO si scénde in áltre stánze sótto térra.* (Borgh. Rip. 132.)

*Che abbíamo nói a fáre, se non a mendálo in QUÉSTO CAPANNÉTTO.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

*Sálse sul fico, e fu giúnto AL PORTÉLLO.* (Lor. Med. c. 119.)

*Un OMICCIUÓLO di píccola condizióne.* (Franc. Sacch. Op. div. 134.)

*Abéte vói mái pósto ménte a quéste DONNICCIUÓLE?* (Agn. Pand 6.)

*E'gli è un cértó OMICCIÁTTO, che non è nessún di vói, che veggéndolo non l'avésse a nóia.* (Lor. Med. Arid. prol.)

*E vi mándano, a lor capriccio, gli OMICCIÁTTOLI non sólaménte, ma i barbassóri.* (Alleg. 181.)

The hoary and white-headed poor old man moves on.

O poor little fool, you don't know what has been done.

For you hated me from the time I was a little boy.

Discovered not by sight, but by the sound of a small brook that descends there.

He saw a mouse enter through the little window.

That divine, pretty little mouth.

I doubt whether it is not somewhat slightly damp.

From the first story of this small house we descend into other rooms under ground.

What else have we to do, but to bring him into this little cottage.

He climbed the fig tree, and reached the small door.

A poor little man of low condition.

Have you ever thought of these wretched little women?

He is a certain despicable puny fellow, that there is none of you, who on seeing him would not dislike him.

And they send to you, according to their whim, despicable ignorant men as well as great and learned.

*VIL FEMINÉLLA* in *Púglia* il *prénde*. (Petr.)

A vile, contemptible little woman, in Apulia captivates him.

*Una GENTÍL piacévol GIOVINÉLLA*. (Mes. Cin.)

A genteel, agreeable little girl.

*Un BUÓN OMICCIUÓLO*. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

A good, poor little man.

*I FIGLIUÓLI ancór TENERÉLLI*. (Fir. Disc. an. 79.)

The young ones [of the dove] yet very young.

*Con úna BOCCÚCCIA PICCOLÍNA*. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

With a pretty little mouth.

*Quéste DONNICCIUÓLE VEDOVÉTTE*. (Agn. Pand. 6.)

These wretched young-widowed women.

*Esséndo già úna PARTICÉLLA délla nótte passáta*. (Bocc. g. 1.)

A small part of the night having already passed.

*Avéndo un LUMICÍNO in máno*. (Matt. Fran. Rim.)

Having a small light in his hand.

*Con quélle sús manéne BIANCOLÍNE*. (Fir. Asin. 41.)

With her small pretty white hands.

*MERCANTUÓLO di quáttro denári*. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Little miserable merchant worth four farthings.

*Tra véccia, e lógllo, e brúcioli, e PAGLIÚCHE*. (Car. Matt. s. 8.)

Between vetch, darnel, shavings, and small pieces of straw.

*Se non m' avéssi dáto tal BACIÓZZO*. (Pataff. 9.)

If thou hadst not given me such a cordial smacking kiss.

*Di sapóre AMARÓGNOLO, móltó ácre, e penetratívo*. (Riccetti. Fior. 19.)

Of a taste bitterish, very acrid, and penetrating.

*Ritornò álla córte piú giállo, e piú CATTIVELLÚCCIO, che mái*. (Franc. Sacch. nov. 74.)

He returned to the court more pale, and wretched than ever.

*Mi hánno portáto quí il LIBRETTINO dégli enímmi del Signór Coltellini*. (Red. lett. 2.)

They have brought me here the pretty little book of enigmas of Mr Coltellini.

*Vi prégo, che, innánzi che colésto LANDRONCÉLLO váda altrove, mi facciáte réndere un mó páio d' úlse*. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.)

I pray you, that, before this pilferer goes elsewhere, you would make him return to me a pair of spatterdashes of mine.

*Esséndomi accattáta un pó' di*  
DAMUZZÁCCIA salvática. (Alleg.  
57.)

Having obtained somewhat  
of the character of an uncouth  
pretended lady.

*Allór la* BACICCUHIÁI. (Pa-  
taff. 9.)

Then I gave her many little  
kisses one after another.

*Accertátevi, che ío ò vi pórtó*  
un BENÓNE grandóne. (Car.  
lett. 1.)

Be assured, that I love you  
hugely.

EXERCISE VII.

The little boy took out all the flowers, that he  
*gióvine trásse tútto fióre, che égli*  
had in the little basket. With a pretty little mouth,  
*avéru canéstro. Con bócca,*  
whose lips looked like two little rubies. | Dost thou  
*le cúi lábbro parévano — dúe rubíni. | tu<sup>2</sup>*  
think | that I will suffer that thou | shouldst pawn my |  
*Crédi<sup>1</sup> | che ío sófferá che tu | m' impégni la |*  
little gown? He conducted me through certain  
*gonnélla? E'gli míse<sup>2</sup> mi<sup>1</sup> per cértá*  
remote narrow lanes. Like the little sheep that  
*fuór di máno,<sup>2</sup> stráda.<sup>1</sup> Cómé pécora, che*  
come out | of the | fold, | first one, | then two, | then  
*éscono | dal | chiúso, | ad úna, | a dúe, | a*  
three, | and the others remain a little timid, lowering  
*tre, | e | áltra stánno tímida, atterán-*  
down | their | eyes and | their | nose. Clothed | in |  
*do | gli | ócchio e | il | múso. Vestito | di |*  
sackcloth, with a miserable little hat. She was  
*súcco, con — vil cappélló. E'lla éra*  
somewhat slightly malicious. I have found him with a  
*alquánto malizióso. I'ó ho<sup>2</sup> trováto<sup>3</sup> lo<sup>1</sup> con*  
little book in his hand. | Do not be sparing with  
*libro — máno. | Non vogliáte éssermi*  
me | of a discreet little smile. The other was a child  
*avára | discrétó ríso. áltro éra fanciúlló*  
very small, who | was | not yet one year old.  
*piccolo, che | avéa<sup>3</sup> | non<sup>2</sup> ancóra<sup>1</sup> un<sup>4</sup> áno<sup>5</sup> —*

Who is this contemptible little man, that has come | to  
*Chi è quèsto* | *uómo, che è<sup>2</sup> venúto<sup>3</sup>* | *a dir*  
insult | us in our house? He had | on | his head  
*villanía<sup>4</sup>* | *ci<sup>1</sup> 5 nóstra<sup>7</sup> cása<sup>6</sup>* ? — *Avéva* | *in* | — *cápo*  
a torn little cap. Little boxes made | of | boards.  
*rótto* | *berétta.* | *cassóne fátti* | *con* | *ásse.*  
Accompany the little master. Thus the blind little  
*Accompagnáte* | *padróne.* | *Così* | *ciéco*  
child flatters (the) lovers. The poor little woman,  
*fanciúllo lusinga* | *amán.te.* | *vécchia,*  
having heard these words, said, Have a very  
— | *udite quèsto paróla,* | *dísse,* | *Abbiáte*  
little (of) patience.  
*tánto* | *pazienza.*

## CHAPTER V.

## NUMERALS.

## CARDINAL NUMBERS.

<i>U'no,</i>	one ;	<i>vent' úno,</i>	} twenty-one ;
<i>due,</i>	two ;	or <i>ventúno,</i>	
<i>tre,</i>	three ;	<i>ventidúe,</i>	twenty-two ;
<i>quáttro,</i>	four ;	<i>ventitrè,</i>	twenty-three ;
<i>cinque,</i>	five ;	<i>ventiquáttro,</i>	twenty-four ;
<i>séi,</i>	six ;	<i>venticinque,</i>	twenty-five ;
<i>sétte,</i>	seven ;	<i>ventiséi,</i>	twenty-six ;
<i>óttó,</i>	eight ;	<i>ventisétté,</i>	twenty-seven ;
<i>nóve,</i>	nine ;	<i>vent' óttó,</i>	} twenty-eight ;
<i>diéci,</i>	ten ;	or <i>ventóttó,</i>	
<i>úndici,</i>	eleven ;	<i>ventinóve,</i>	twenty-nine ;
<i>dódicí,</i>	twelve ;	<i>trénta,</i>	thirty ;
<i>trédici,</i>	thirteen ;	<i>trentúno,</i>	thirty-one ;
<i>quáttórdici,</i>	fourteen ;	.	.
<i>quíndici,</i>	fifteen ;	<i>trentóttó,</i>	thirty-eight ;
<i>sédici,</i>	sixteen ;	.	.
<i>diciassétte,</i>	seventeen ;	<i>quaránta,</i>	forty ;
<i>dicióttó,</i>	eighteen ;	.	.
<i>diciannóve,</i>	nineteen ;	<i>cinquánta,</i>	fifty ;
<i>vénti,</i>	twenty ;		

<i>sessánta,</i>	sixty ;	<i>mille,</i>	thousand ;
<i>settánta,</i>	seventy ;	<i>duemila,</i>	} two thousand ;
		or <i>dumila,</i>	
<i>ottánta,</i>	eighty ;	<i>tremila,</i>	three thousand ;
<i>novánta,</i>	ninety ;	<i>millecénto,</i> or	} eleven hun- [dred ;
		<i>mille e cénto,</i>	
<i>cénto,</i>	hundred ;	<i>diecimila,</i>	ten thousand ;
<i>duecénto,</i>	} two hundred ;	<i>centomila,</i>	hundred thous-
<i>ducénto,</i>			
or <i>dugénto,</i>			
<i>trecénto,</i>	three hundred ;		
<i>quattrocénto,</i>	four hundred ;	<i>milíone,</i>	million.
. . . . .	. . . . .		

The numbers *ventiséi*, *ventisétte*, *quarantaséi*, *ottantasétte*, are sometimes contracted into *venzéi*, 'twenty-six' ; *venzétte*, 'twenty-seven' ; *quaranzéi*, 'forty-six' ; *ottanzétte*, 'eighty-seven'.

*Cénto*, when followed by *quaránta*, *cinquánta*, *sessánta*, *settánta*, loses its last syllable, and makes *cenquaránta*, 'one hundred and forty' ; *cencinquánta*, 'one hundred and fifty' ; *censessánta*, 'one hundred and sixty' ; *censettánta*, 'one hundred and seventy.'

Cardinal numbers, except *úno* and its compounds, are generally of the common gender ; as,

<i>sette ánni,</i> m.,	seven years ;
<i>quíndici stéllé,</i> f.,	fifteen stars.

The Italians make use of these numbers, instead of the ordinal, to indicate the days of the month ; and then they are preceded by the masculine articles *i* or *li* ; or by the words *ái*, *állí*, or *addì* ; as,

LI VENTIQUÁTTRO <i>Giúgno,</i>	the 24th of June ;
ÁI DICÍOTTO <i>di Dicémbre,</i>	on the 18th of December ;
ÁLLI QUATTÓRDICI <i>di Gennáio,</i>	on the 14th of January ;
ADDÌ DÓDICI <i>di Márzo,</i>	on the 12th of March.

EXCEPTION.

The first day of the month is indicated by the ordinal number *primo*, 'first,' preceded in like manner by *il*, *al*, or *addì*.

When they are used to indicate the hours of the day, they are preceded by the feminine article *la, le*; but then the word *óra*, 'hour'; *óre*, 'hours'; is either expressed or understood; as,

LE DÚE <i>óre</i> ,	two o'clock;
LE QUÁTTRO [ <i>óre</i> ],	four o'clock.

*U'no*, and its compounds *ventúno*, *trentúno*, &c., before feminine nouns, like other adjectives, change *o* into *a*; as,

<i>úna</i> LÍBRA,	one pound;
<i>novántina</i> RUÓTA,	ninety-one wheels.

When cardinal numbers are used as substantives, all but *tre* and those ending in *i*, are made to vary in the plural; as,

<i>dúe</i> <i>cinqui</i> ,	two fives;
<i>tre</i> <i>nóvi</i> ,	three nines.

*Mille* and *milióne*, in the plural make *míla* and *milióni*; as,

<i>dicióto</i> MÍLA,	eighteen thousand;
<i>un</i> <i>milióne</i> <i>di</i> MILIÓNI,	a million millions.

## EXAMPLES.

*Vivétte ánni* VENZÉI. (Franc. Sacch. rim. 40.) He lived twenty-six years.

*Ne figliò* VENZÉTTE *délla stéssu colóre*. (Red. Ins. 47.) It [a scorpion] brought forth twenty-seven [scorpions] of the same color.

*Déntro la città di Róma vi sòno* QUARANZÉI *chiése cardina-láne*. (Brun. Tes. 3. 3.) Within the city of Rome there are forty-six cardinal churches.

*Un* *milióne*, *e* OTTANZÉTTE *migliáia*, *e* *cinquecênto* *fiorini* *d'oro*. (Dav. Tac. Post. 429.) One million and eighty-seven thousand and five hundred red gold florins.

*Avéndovi in quel concílio* CENQUARANTÓtto *vêscovi*. (Petr. Uom. ill. 82.) There being in that council one hundred and forty-eight bishops.

*CENCINQUÁNTA* *dé' suoi cava-  
liéri mandò incóntra all' óste dé'  
Fiorentini.* (Giov. Vill. l. 9.)

*Più di CENSETTÁNTA ánni  
cultivárono gli Dèi sènza ídolo.*  
(St. Agost. Citt. Dio. 4. 31.)

*La vógliá e la ragión combat-  
tut' hánnó—sétte, e SETT' ÁNNI.*  
(Petr. s. 80.)

*QUÍNDICI STÉLLE, che in di-  
vérse pláge—Lo ciélo avvóan  
di tánto seréno.* (Dant. Par.  
13.)

*Di Ferrára, LI VENTIGUÁTTRO  
GIÚGNO, Mille seicéto sétte.*  
(Bent. lett. 1.)

*A' I DICÍÓTTO DI DICÉMBRE.*  
(Dav.)

*A' LLI QUATTÓRDICI DI GEN-  
NAIO.* (Macch.)

*Il détto ángo ADDÌ DÓDICI DI  
MÁRZO.* (Giov. Vill.)

*Che óra è?—Sónó LE QUÁT-  
TRO.* (Class.)

*E'ccotí la nótte, écco LE DÚE  
ÓRE, écco le quáttro.* (Firenz.)

*Tóglí ÚNA LÍBRA di castróne.*  
(Burchiell. p. 2. s. 1.)

*Áltre NOVANTÚNA RUÓTA.*  
(Dant. Conv.)

*E diciámo DUE CÍNCUI, due  
stíti, TRE NÓVI, perchè quéstí  
numerali, sémpré che stánnó per  
sustantívi, si declínano.* (Buom.  
Ling. Tosc. 2. 8. 13.)

*E'ran per número DICÍÓTTO  
MÍLA.* (Bemb. Stor. 12. 176.)

*Al pádre Carrára rénda in  
mto nóme UN MILIÓNÉ DI MILIÓN-  
NI di salutí.* (Red. lett. 2.)

He sent one hundred and  
fifty of his horsemen against  
the Florentine host.

They adored their gods, with-  
out idols, for more than one  
hundred and seventy years.

Inclination and reason have  
striven for seven after seven  
years.

Fifteen stars, which in dif-  
ferent spheres enliven the  
skies with so much serenity.

Ferrara, 24th June, 1607.

On the 18th December.

On the 14th January.

On the 12th of March of the  
said year.

What o'clock is it?—It is  
four o'clock.

Behold night, behold two  
o'clock, behold four o'clock.

Take one pound of mutton.

Other ninety-one wheels.

And we say two fives, two  
sevens, three nines, because  
these numerals, when they  
stand as substantives, are de-  
clined.

They were eighteen thous-  
and in number.

Give to father Carrara, in  
my behalf, a million millions  
of salutations.

## ORDINAL NUMBERS.

<i>Primo,</i>	first;	<i>*ventesimoprímo,</i>	} twenty-first;
<i>secóndo,</i>	second;	<i>vige imoprímo</i> or	
<i>térzo,</i>	third;	<i>ventunésimo,</i>	} twenty-second;
<i>quárto,</i>	fourth;	<i>*ventesimosecóndo,</i>	
<i>quínto,</i>	fifth;	<i>vigesimosecóndo,</i> or	}
<i>sésto,</i>	sixth;	<i>ventiduéximo,</i>	
<i>settimo,</i>	seventh;		
<i>ottávo,</i>	eighth;	<i>*trentésimo,</i> or	} thirtieth;
<i>nóno,</i>	ninth;	<i>trigésimo,</i>	
<i>decímo,</i>	tenth;	<i>*trentesimoprímo,</i>	} thirty-first;
<i>decimoprímo,</i>	} eleventh;	<i>trigesimoprímo,</i> or	
<i>*undécimo</i> or			<i>trentunésimo,</i>
<i>undécésimo,</i>	} twelfth;	<i>*quarantésimo,</i> or	} fortieth;
<i>decimosecóndo,</i>			
<i>*duodécimo,</i>	} thirteenth;	<i>*cinqúantésimo,</i>	} fiftieth;
<i>dodécimo,</i> or			
<i>dodicésimo,</i>	} fourteenth;	<i>*sessantésimo,</i> or	} sixtieth;
<i>*decimotérzo,</i>			
<i>terzodécimo,</i> or	} fifteenth;	<i>*settantésimo</i> or	} seventieth;
<i>tredicésimo,</i>			
<i>*decimoquárto,</i>	} sixteenth;	<i>*ottantésimo,</i> or	} eightieth;
<i>quartodécimo,</i> or			
<i>quattordicésimo,</i>	} seventeenth;	<i>*novantésimo,</i> or	} ninetieth;
<i>*decimoquínto,</i>			
<i>quínto decímo,</i> or	} eighteenth;	<i>centésimo,</i>	} hundredth;
<i>quindicésimo,</i>			
<i>*decimosésto,</i>	} nineteenth;	<i>ducentésimo,</i>	} hundredth;
<i>sestodécimo,</i> or			
<i>sedicésimo,</i>	} twentieth;	<i>millésimo,</i>	} thousandth;
<i>*decimoséttimo,</i>			
<i>settimodécimo,</i> or			millionth.
<i>diciassetésimo,</i>			
<i>*decimottávo,</i>			
<i>ottodécimo,</i> or			
<i>diciottésimo,</i>			
<i>*decimonóno,</i>			
<i>nonodécimo,</i> or			
<i>diciannovésimo,</i>			
<i>*ventésimo,</i> or			
<i>vigésimo,</i>			

\* We mark with an asterisk those, amongst the different names of the same numbers, that are most in use.



The ordinal numbers from *primo* to *décimo*, and *ventésimo*, *trentésimo*, &c., before feminine nouns change *o* into *a*; and in the plural change *o* into *i*, for the masculine, and *a* into *e*, for the feminine; as,

<i>la prima</i> DÓNNA,	the first woman;
<i>le térze</i> PERCÓSSE,	the third stripes;
<i>la cinquantésima</i> LÉTTERA,	the fiftieth letter;
<i>i primi</i> * DÌ,	the first days:

And their compounds, *quartodécimo*, *decimoséttimo*, &c., change both the last vowel of the last, and the last vowel of the first of the two component numbers; as,

<i>la quartadécima</i> CONDIZIÓNE,	the fourteenth condition;
<i>la decimaséttima</i> STOLTÍZIA,	the seventeenth folly.

EXAMPLES.

*Délle quáli LA PRÍMA chiamerémo Pampinéa, la scónda Fiamméta, Filoména la térza, &c.* (Bocc. Intród.)

The first of whom we will call Pampinea, the second Fiammetta, the third Filomena, &c.

*Nessúno—Le scónde aspettáva nè LE TÉRZE [percósse.]* (Dant. Inf. 18.)

None waited for the second, nor the third [stripes.]

*Frà Guittóne, nélla LÉTTERA che nel mio códice è la CINQUANTÉSIMA.* (Red. annot. Ditir.)

Fra Guittone, in the letter which in my MS. copy is the fiftieth.

*E né' DÌ PRÍMI déntro al divín séno—Nasccémmo.* (Bocc. Amet. 96.)

And in the first days we were born in the divine bosom.

*LA QUARTADÉCIMA CONDIZIÓNE, che déve avére la confessiÓne, si è acceleráta,* (Passav. 176.)

The fourteenth condition, which the confession ought to have, is that of being early.

*LA DECIMASÉTTIMA STOLTÍZIA, è di quélli che vógliono fuggire.* (Cavalc. Stolt. 228.)

The seventeenth folly, is that of those who desire to flee.

\* *Primi* is sometimes used as a substantive, and then has the signification of 'ancestors', 'parents'; as,

*Fieraménte furo avvérsi — A me e à miéi PRÍMI, e a mia páрте.* (Dant. Inf. 10.)

They were fiercely adverse to me, to my ancestors, and to my party.

COLLECTIVE, DISTRIBUTIVE, AND PROPORTIONAL NUMBERS.

Collective.

<u>Páio</u> ,	a pair ;	<u>quarantina</u> ,	two scores, or
* <u>cinquina</u> ,	the number of five;	<u>cinquantina</u> ,	fifty, or two scores
<u>settina</u> ,	the number of	<u>sessantina</u> ,	three scores, or
	[seven ;	<u>settantina</u> ,	seventy, or three
<u>decina</u> ,	ten, or half a	<u>ottantina</u> ,	four scores, or
	[score ;	<u>novantina</u> ,	ninety, or four
<u>dodicina</u>	} a dozen ;	<u>centinaio</u> ,	a hundred ;
or <u>dozzina</u>		<u>migliaio</u> ,	a thousand ;
<u>ventina</u> ,	a score, or twenty ;		
<u>trentina</u> ,	thirty, or a score		
	[and a half :		

Distributive.

<u>U'na metà</u> ,	one half ;	<u>un sesto</u> ,	one sixth ;
<u>un terzo</u> ,	one third ;	<u>un settimo</u> ,	one seventh ;
<u>un quarto</u> ,	one fourth ;	<u>un ottavo</u> ,	one eighth ;
<u>un quinto</u> ,	one fifth ;	<u>un nono</u> ,	one ninth ; &c.

Proportional.

<u>Doppio</u> ,	double ;	<u>quintuplo</u> ,	quintuple
<u>triplo</u> ,	triple ;	<u>décuplo</u> ,	ten-fold ;
<u>quádruplo</u> ,	quadruple ;	<u>céntuplo</u> ,	a hundred-fold.

Collective, distributive, and proportional numbers follow the rules of other adjectives.

\* *Treina*, *quattrina*, *seina*, *ottina* &c., are sometimes used by the Italians in common language, to express 'the number of three', 'of four', 'of six', 'of eight', &c., but they have never been employed by good writers.

With numeral adjectives are generally classed the following words ; viz,

<i>ámbi,</i>	<i>ambidúe,</i>	<i>ambidúí,</i>	<i>ambidúo,</i>	} both, both of them.
<i>ámbe,</i>	<i>ambedúe,</i>	<i>ambedúí,</i>	<i>ambedúo,</i>	
<i>ámbo,</i>	<i>ambodúe,</i>		<i>ambodúo,</i>	
	<i>amendúe,</i>		<i>amendúo,</i>	
<i>amendúni,</i>				
<i>amendúne,</i>				
<i>entrámbi,</i>				

*A'mbi*, its compounds, and *amendúni*, are used in speaking of masculine objects : *ámbe*, its compounds, and *amendúne*, in speaking of feminine : the others may be used for both genders ; as,

<i>ámbi</i> AMÁNTI,	both lovers ;
<i>ambidúe</i> SÁVJ,	both sages ;
<i>ámbe</i> LE LÚCI,	both eyes ;
<i>ambedúe</i> DÓNNE,	both women ;
<i>ámbo</i> CONVÉRSI,	both turned ;
<i>ámbo</i> LE BRÁCCIA,	both arms ;
<i>amendúo</i> GLI EMISPÉRI,	both hemispheres ;
<i>amendúe</i> LE SPÓNDE,	both shores ;
<i>amendúni</i> PÓRCI,	both hogs ;
<i>amendúne</i> CÓSE,	both things, or both of them ;
SOFRÓNIA ed OLÍNDÓ	Sofronia and Olindo both of
<i>d'una cittáde entrámbi,</i>	the same city.

EXAMPLES.

FILÉNO e TÍRSI ÁMBI novélli AMÁNTI. (Vinc. Mart. rim. 4.) Philenus and Thyrsis both new lovers.

L'ÚNO e L'ÁLTRO SÁVIO dicéa véro, percíò ad ÁMBIDÚE donóe. (Nov. ant. 23.) Both sages told the truth, therefore he gave to both.

E sién nel cuór puníte ÁMBE LE LÚCI—Ch'álla stráda d'amór mi fúron dúci. (Petr. c. 8.) And let the heart bear punishment for both eyes, which led me to the road of love.

Allóra ÁMBEDÚE [dónne] entrárono nëlla fóssa. (Nov. ant. 35.) Then both [women] entered into the ditch.

Al fine ÁMBO CONVÉRSI al giústo séggio. (Petr. c. 48.) Finally both turned to the seat of justice.

Con AMBO LE BRÁCCIA mi  
prése. (Dant. Inf. 19.)

He seized me with both  
arms.

Il confíne—D' AMENDÚO GLI  
EMISPÉRI. (Dant. Inf. 20.)

The confine of both hemi-  
spheres.

Per cúi tremávano AMENDÚE  
LE SPÓNDE. (Dant. Inf. 9.)

On account of which both  
shores trembled.

AMENDÚNI [pórci] MÓRTI  
cáddero in térra. (Bocc. In-  
trođ.)

Both [hogs] fell dead to the  
earth.

Nélla vóstra elezióne sta, di  
torre quál piú vi piáce DÉLLE  
DÚE [cóse], o AMENDÚNE.  
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

It is at your choice, to take  
which of the two [things] you  
like best, or both.

Colti SOFRÓNIA, OLÍNDÓ égli  
s'appélla—D' úna cittáde EN-  
TRÁMBI, e d'úna féde. (Tass.  
Ger. 2. 16.)

She is called Sofronia, he  
Olindo, both of the same city  
and of the same faith.

### EXERCISE VII.

He sent his brother with six cohorts, and five  
— Mandò súo fratéllo *córtte, e*  
hundred horsemen | to | Terra di Lavóro. He made him  
*cavállo* | *in* | — *féce<sup>2</sup> Gli<sup>1</sup>*  
grieve for this sin forty days. He passed | from |  
*piángere* — *quésto peccáto* *dí.* — *Passò* | *di* |  
Tunis | to | Apulia with more than eight hundred Spanish  
*Túnisi* | *in* | *Púglia* *Spagnuolo<sup>2</sup>*  
horsemen. Metellus was already in Lombardy | with |  
*cavaliére.<sup>1</sup>* *Metéllo éra già* *Lombardía* | *cólla* |  
his army of three legions, who was coming | from |  
*súo<sup>2</sup> óste<sup>1</sup>* *legióne, che veníva* | *di* |  
France. Being already about (to) thirty years old.  
*Francia. Esséndo già di préso<sup>2</sup> —<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> ánn<sup>o</sup><sup>5</sup> véccio.<sup>1</sup>*  
I have here two hundred livres, | with | which I intended  
*l'o ho quí* *lira,* | *di* | *cúí to voléva*  
to have bought a farm. And this was four hundred years  
*compráre podére. E ciò fu* *ánn<sup>o</sup>*  
before (that) Rome | was begun. | He was of the age  
*ánxi che Róma<sup>2</sup> | si cominciásse.<sup>1</sup> | — E'ra — età*

of twenty-six or twenty-seven (*years*). One hundred and  
*o* *anno.* — —

seventy archers. He sent one hundred and fifty | of |  
*sagittário.* — *Mandò* — — *de'* |

his soldiers.  
*sùo fãnte.*

They went to Messina the twenty-fourth of December.  
 — *Andárono* *Dicémbre.*

He | was baptized | on the sixteenth, in St. John's. On  
 — | *Battezzóssi* | *San Giovánni.*

the eighteenth of December, having heard of the insurrection  
*Dicémbre,* — *udita* *rivólta*

of the legion, | he went out | (*of*) the palace dressed | in |  
*legióne,* | *s' uscì* | — *palágio vestito* | *di* |

black. The first of the month I will pay you. Come at  
*néro.* *mése* — *pagherò<sup>2</sup> vi.<sup>1</sup>* *Venite a*

(*the*) six o'clock, and we will speak | of it. | He arrived  
 — *e* — *parlerémo<sup>2</sup> ne.<sup>1</sup>* | — *Giúnse*

at Milan at (*the*) one o'clock | in | the night. At (*the*)  
*a Miláno a* — | *di* | *notte.* *A*

twelve o'clock | I went to see | our ambassador.  
 — | *mi portái dal* . | *nóstro ambasciadóre.*

It | was worth | thirty-one livres. Thou didst usurp one  
 — | *Valéva* | *lira.* — *Usurpásti* —

hundred and seventy-five thousand gold florins. | He came  
 — *d' óro<sup>2</sup> fiorinol.* | *Sì*

to an agreement | | on | condition of paying sixty thousand  
*accordò* | | *con* *condizióne* *pagáre*

ducats to the conquerors. Salute him | for me | a thousand  
*ducáto* *vincitóre.* *Salutate* — *lo<sup>2</sup>* | *me* — *1* | —

millions of times.  
*vólta.*

Here begins the eleventh book. He arrived happily  
*Qui comincia* *2 libro.<sup>1</sup>* — *Arrivò felicemente*

to the fortieth year | of | his life. Contradicting (*to*)  
*anno* | *délla* | *sùo* *vita.* *Contradicéndo*

himself in the fourteenth chapter. Boniface the Eighth  
*sè medésimo* *2 capítolo.<sup>1</sup>* *Bonifáziò<sup>3</sup>* — *8*

being Pope in Rome, the Abbé of Cligni came to the  
*Esséndo' pápa<sup>2</sup> <sup>5</sup> Róma,<sup>6</sup> <sup>10</sup> Abbáte<sup>11</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>13</sup> vénne<sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup>*

court. | In | the time of the Emperor Frederic the First.  
*córte.<sup>9</sup> | A | tēmpo Imperatóre Federico —*

The twenty-first stanza.  
*stánza.*

He had tied both | his | feet. | I bit | both | my |  
*— Avéva legáti | i | piéde. | Mi mórsi | le |*

hands through grief. They entered both | into | the garden.  
*máno per dolóre. — Entrárono | in | giardíno.*

I gave it to both.  
*— ho<sup>2</sup> dáto<sup>3</sup> Lo.<sup>1</sup>*

## CHAPTER VI.

### SUBSTANTIVE PRONOUNS.

#### PERSONAL AND CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

THE Italian personal pronouns are the following :

	Singular.		Plural.
1st Person,	<i>io</i> , m. & f.,	I ;	<i>nói</i> , m. & f., we ;
2d Person,	<i>tu</i> , m. & f.,	thou ;	<i>vói</i> , m. & f., you ;
3d Person,	<i>égli</i> ,	he ;	} <i>égli</i> , or <i>églino</i> , or <i>éssi</i> , m., } they.
	or <i>ésso</i> , m.,	he or it ;	
	<i>élla</i> ,	she ;	
	or <i>éssa</i> , f.,	she or it ;	

Singular and Plural.

3d Person, *sè*, m. & f., { one's self, himself, herself,  
 itself, themselves.

Conjunctive pronouns are derived from the personal pronouns, and are divided into *conjunctive*, properly speaking, and *relative* conjunctive pronouns.

Personal pronouns are varied with the *prepositions* only.

## VARIATION OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

## I O.

## SINGULAR.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective		(N.)— <i>io,</i>			I ;
Relat.	{	Poss. (G.)— <i>di me,</i>			of me ;
		Attr. (D.)— <i>a me,</i>	<i>mi,</i>		to me ;
		Der. (Ab.)— <i>da me,</i>			from me ;
Objective		(Ac.)— <i>me,</i>	<i>mi,</i>		me :

## PLURAL.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective		(N.)— <i>nói,</i>			we ;
Relat.	{	Poss. (G.)— <i>di nói,</i>			of us ;
		Attr. (D.)— <i>a nói,</i>	<i>ne or ci,</i>		to us ;
		Der. (Ab.)— <i>da nói,</i>			from us ;
Objective		(Ac.)— <i>nói,</i>	<i>ne or ci,</i>		us.

## TU.

## SINGULAR.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective		(N.)— <i>tu,</i>			thou ;
Relat.	{	Poss. (G.)— <i>di te,</i>			of thee ;
		Attr. (D.)— <i>a te,</i>	<i>ti,</i>		to thee ;
		Der. (Ab.)— <i>da te,</i>			from thee ;
Objective		(Ac.)— <i>te,</i>	<i>ti,</i>		thee :

## PLURAL.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective.		(N.)— <i>vói,</i>			ye or you ;
Relat.	{	Poss. (G.)— <i>di vói,</i>			of you ;
		Attr. (D.)— <i>a vói,</i>	<i>vi,</i>		to you ;
		Der. (Ab.)— <i>da vói,</i>			from you ;
Objective		(Ac.)— <i>vói,</i>	<i>vi,</i>		you.

## ÉGLI.

## SINGULAR.

		Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective		(N.)— <i>égli,</i>			he ;
Relat.	{	Poss. (G.)— <i>di lui,</i>		<i>ne,</i>	of him ;
		Attr. (D.)— <i>a lui,</i>	<i>gli or li,</i>		to him ;
		Der. (Ab.)— <i>da lui,</i>		<i>ne,</i>	from him ;
Objective.		(Ac.)— <i>lui,</i>	<i>il or lo,</i>		him :

## PLURAL.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>égli</i> or <i>églino</i> ,			they ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>dì lóro</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of them ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>a lóro</i> ,	<i>lóro</i> ,		to them ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da lóro</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from them ;
	(Ac.)— <i>lóro</i> .	<i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,		them.

---

## ÉSSO.

## SINGULAR.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>éssó</i> ,			he or it ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssó</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of him or it ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssó</i> ,	<i>gli</i> ,		to him or it ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssó</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from him or it ;
	(Ac.)— <i>éssó</i> ,	<i>lo</i> ,		him or it :

---

## PLURAL.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>éssi</i> ,			they ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssi</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of them ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssi</i> ,			to them ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssi</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from them ;
	(Ac.)— <i>éssi</i> ,	<i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,		them.

---

## ÉLLA.

## SINGULAR.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>élla</i> ,			she ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>dì léi</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of her ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>a léi</i> ,	<i>le</i> ,		to her ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da léi</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from her ;
	(Ac.)— <i>léi</i> ,	<i>la</i> ,		her :

---

## PLURAL.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.	
Subjective	(N.)— <i>élla</i> or <i>élleno</i> ,			they ;
Relat.	{ Poss. (G.)— <i>dì lóro</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	of them ;
	{ Attr. (D.)— <i>a lóro</i> ,	<i>lóro</i> ,		to them ;
Objective	{ Der. (Ab.)— <i>da lóro</i> ,		<i>ne</i> ,	from them ;
	(Ac.)— <i>lóro</i> ,	<i>le</i> ,		them.



## ÉSSA.

## SINGULAR.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.
Subjective	(N.)— <i>éssa,</i>		she or it ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>d' éssa,</i>		ne, of her or it ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>ad éssa,</i>	<i>le,</i>	to her or it ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>da éssa,</i>		ne, from her or it ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>éssa,</i>	<i>la,</i>	her or it :

## PLURAL.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.
Subjective	(N.)— <i>ésse,</i>		they ;
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>d' ésse,</i>		ne, of them ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>ad ésse,</i>		to them ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>da ésse,</i>		ne, from them ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>ésse,</i>	<i>le,</i>	them.

## SÈ.

	Personal.	Conjunc.	Relat.
Subjective	(N.)—	*	
Relat. {	Poss. (G.)— <i>di sè,</i>		of one's self ;
	Attr. (D.)— <i>a sè,</i>	<i>si,</i>	to one's self ;
	Der. (Ab.)— <i>da sè,</i>		from one's self ;
Objective	(Ac.)— <i>sè,</i>	<i>si,</i>	one's self.

*Io, tu, egli, ella ; noi, voi, egli or egliino, elle or elleno,* are applied to animate beings ; *esso, éssa ; éssi, ésse ; sè,* may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

The pronouns *esso, éssa,* are used sometimes to express the *self-same*, the very object of which we speak ; and then they are elegantly supplied by the words *déssu, déssa,* but in the *subjective* only ; as,

<i>in ÉSSA lúce,</i>	in that very light ;
<i>ÉSSO Messér Tedáldo,</i>	the same Messer Tedaldo ;
<i>tu non par DÉSSO,</i>	thou dost not seem thyself ;
<i>el' è ben DÉSSA,</i>	it is she, herself.

\* *Sè* is used to express a relation of identity with the subject, and has no *Subjective*.

In familiar conversation, the Italians very often employ *lui*, and *lei*, as subjectives, instead of *egli* and *ella*; but this usage, though authorized by some writers, ought never to be followed in the written language.

We find also in some classics *egli* and *ella*, used for *lui* and *lei*; and *elle* for *loro*; as, *memoria d' ÉLLA*, 'memory of her'; *e suon di man con ÉLLE*, 'and striking of hands with them': and *ello* for *egli* and for *lui*; *élli* for *églino* and for *loro*; as, *ÉLLO passò per l'isola di Lénno*, 'he passed by the island of Lemnos'; *guardati da ELLO*, 'guard yourself against him'; *ÉLLI stávano pensierósi*, 'they were pensive'; *ch' alcuna glória i réi arrébbber d' ÉLLI*, 'for the guilty souls would derive no glory from them'; this license, nevertheless, must be left entirely to the Poets.

*La* for *ella*, *le* for *élleno*, and *gli* for *egli* and for *églino*; as, *LA mi scúsi*, 'excuse me'; *LE mi dicano*, 'tell me'; *GLI éra quí*, 'he was here'; &c.; are contractions, which, however common they may be in Tuscany, and supported by the authority of several writers, are notwithstanding to be carefully avoided in the written language, especially in an elevated style of composition.

The pronouns *io*, *tu*, *egli*, *ella*, *éssó*, are often used as mere expletives; as,

<i>s' io morissi, io,</i>	if I should die;
<i>tu di' tuc parole, tu,</i>	thou mayest say what thou [pleasest;
<i>ÉGLI è una compassióne a [vederlo,</i>	it excites pity to see him;
<i>ÉLLA non andrà così,</i>	it shall not be so;
<i>andiamo con ÉSSO lui,</i>	let us go with him.

*Io* is sometimes written *i'*; and *egli*, *églino*, are contracted into *éi*, and often written *é'*; as,

<i>i' non so ridire,</i>	I cannot say;
<i>ÉI débbe avér intéso,</i>	he must have heard;
<i>ÉI si gittáro in súlla spiágga,</i>	they leaped upon the shore;
<i>É' pensò,</i>	he thought;
<i>domandò chi É' fóssero,</i>	he asked who they were.

When the pronouns *me*, *te*, *se*, are preceded by the preposition *con*, 'with', we often transpose the preposi-

tion, make an elision of the *n*, and form of them a single word ; as,

<i>con me,</i>	MÉCO,	with me ;
<i>con te,</i>	TÉCO,	with thee ;
<i>con sè,</i>	SÉCO,	with one's self, himself, &c.

We find in the classics *nóscó, vóscó* ; used for *con nói*, 'with us', and *con vói*, 'with you' ; but these expressions have become obsolete.

Italian personal pronouns are very often suppressed, the termination of the verb being sufficient to indicate the person ; as,

<i>andiámo</i> [nói] <i>a Róma,</i>	let us go to Rome ;
[égli] <i>domandò chi fóssero,</i>	he asked who they were.

The English reflective pronouns *myself, thyself, ourselves, &c.*, are expressed in Italian by the *personal pronouns*, and the word *stéssó, m., stéssa, f.*, or *medésimo, m., medésima, f.*, for the singular ; and *stéssi, m., stésse, f.*, or *medésimi, m., medésime, f.*, for the plural ; as,

	Singular.		Plural.	
1st Per.	{ <i>io stéssó,</i> or <i>medésimo, m.</i> <i>io stéssa,</i> or <i>medésima, f.</i> }	myself ;	{ <i>nói stéssi,</i> or <i>medésimi, m.</i> <i>nói stésse,</i> or <i>medésime, f.</i> }	ourselves ;
2d Per.	{ <i>tu stéssó, m.</i> <i>tu stéssa, f.</i> }	thyself ;	{ <i>vói stéssi, m.</i> <i>vói stésse, f.</i> }	yourselves ;
3d Per.	{ <i>égli stéssó,</i> or <i>éssó stéssó, m.</i> <i>élla stéssa,</i> or <i>éssa stéssa, f.</i> }	himself, or itself ; herself, or itself ;	{ <i>églino stéssi,</i> or <i>éssi stéssi, m.</i> <i>élleno stésse,</i> or <i>ésse stésse, f.</i> }	them- selves.
	{ <i>sè stéssó, m.</i> <i>sè stéssa, f.</i> }	{ one's self, himself, herself, or itself ; }	{ <i>sè stéssi, m.</i> <i>sè stésse, f.</i> }	

## EXAMPLES.

*Vid' io IN ÉSSA LÚCE áltre lucérne.* (Dant. Par. 8.)

In that very light I saw other luminaries.

*Quantúnque il maggióre a diciott' ánni non aggiugnésse, quándo ÉSSO MESSÉR TEDÁLDO, ricchíssimo vénne a mórtte.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Although the eldest was not arrived to the age of eighteen, when this same Messer Tedaldo died very rich.

*TU NON mi PAR DÉSSO.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Thou dost not seem to me thyself.

*ELL' È BEN DÉSSA, ancóra è in víta.* (Petr. s. 290.)

It is she herself, she is yet alive.

*Che farébbe égli s'io moríssi, ío?* (Macch. Com.)

What would he do if I should die?

*TU DI' TÚE PARÓLE, TU; ío per me non mi terrò mái sálva, se nói non la incantiámo.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

Thou mayest say what thou pleasest; as for me I shall never consider myself safe, if we do not enchant her.

*E'GLI È ÚNA-COMPASSÍONE A VEDÉRLO.* (Macch. Com.)

It excites pity to see him.

*E'LLA NON ANDRÀ COSÌ, ch' ío non te ne pághi.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

It shall not be so, that I will not pay you for it.

*ANDIÁMO CON ÉSSO LÚI A RÓMA.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Let us go to Rome with him.

*P' NON SO ben RIDÍR com' í' v' entrái.* (Dant. Inf. 1.)

I cannot say how I entered it.

*E'I DÉBBE AVÉRE INTÉSO, che tu ragióni di lúi.* (Gell. Circ. 2. 39.)

He must have heard, that thou speakest of him.

*Ond' ÉI SI GITTÁR tútti IN SÚLLA SPIÁGGIA.* (Dant. Purg. 2.)

Wherefore they leaped all upon the shore.

*Laónde é' gli PENSÒ di volére la seguénste mattína ristoráre.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Therefore he thought to restore them on the following morning.

*Menáti i gentiluómini nel giárdino, corteseménste gli DOMANDÒ, CHI É' FÓSSERO.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Having led the gentlemen in the garden, he courteously asked them, who they were.

*E in ségno di ciò, ne réco*  
 MÉCO *délle sùe cose più càre.*  
 (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

*Mio figlio ov' è, e perchè non*  
 è TÉCO? (Dant. Inf. 10.)

*Quél giòrno ch' io lasciài*  
*gràve, e pensósa—Madónna, e'l*  
*mio cor séco.* (Petr. s. 212.)

*I'o MEDÉSIMO non so quél*  
*ch' ò mi vòglio.* (Petr. s. 103.)

*E tu, TU STÉSSO, talóra a me*  
*usbérgo di mia glória tu sémbrì.*  
 (Alf. Saul. 2. 1.)

*Ma com' è, che sì grán romór*  
*non suóne—Per àltri mèssi, o*  
*per LÉI STÉSSA il sènta?* (Petr.  
 s. 213.)

*Non cóme fiámma\* che per*  
*fórza è spènta,—Ma che per*  
 SÈ MEDÉSMA *si consúme.* (Petr.  
 Tri.)

And as a proof of this, I will  
 take with me those things  
 which are the most dear to her.

Where is my son, and why  
 is he not with thee?

That day when I left my  
 lady serious and pensive, and  
 my heart with her.

I know not myself what I  
 want.

And thou, thyself, sometimes  
 seemest to me the shield of my  
 glory.

But how is it, that so great a  
 rumor does not sound through  
 other messengers, or that she  
 does not hear it herself.

Not like a flame which is  
 extinguished by force, but like  
 one which consumes itself.

## EXERCISE VIII.

I know, better than any other man, how to do  
*so, — àltro uómo, — far*  
 that which I please. God never will have  
*ciò che vòglio. Iddío mái non avrà*  
 mercy | on | me for this sin. Thou wilt ask  
*misericórdia | di | quèsto peccáto. dirái<sup>2</sup>*  
 her whether she wants any thing. You appear  
*lel se vuól nùlla. paréte*  
 to be a man of God, how do you say such  
 — *uómo Dio, cóme — <sup>2</sup> díte<sup>1</sup> cotésto*  
 words? Without expecting any reprehension from  
*paróla? Sènza atténdere — riprènsiòne*  
 you. The magistrate begun to have pity  
*Podestà cominciò ad avér compassiòne<sup>3</sup>*

upon | her. She pleases me so much, that I  
 di<sup>1</sup> | 2. piáce<sup>2</sup> mi<sup>1</sup> tánto, che  
 could not express it. Having taken leave | of | him,  
 potréi<sup>2</sup> non<sup>1</sup> dir lo. — Prése commiato<sup>3</sup> da<sup>1</sup> | 2,  
 he | returned | to his house. They never return  
 séne tornò | — cása. mái non réndono<sup>2</sup>  
 it, and we return it | as soon as | we have  
 la<sup>1</sup>, e rendiámo<sup>2</sup> la<sup>1</sup> | cóme | — abbiámo<sup>2</sup>  
 used it. We are ready | to | do it, since  
 adoperáta<sup>3</sup> la<sup>1</sup>. siámo prèsti | di | fár lo, poichè  
 it pleases you. She would drive me out of the  
 — piáce<sup>2</sup> vil. scaccerbbe<sup>2</sup> mi<sup>1</sup> fuór —  
 house. I have spoken | to him | of you. We  
 cása. ho<sup>2</sup> rñgionáto<sup>3</sup> | gli<sup>1</sup> |  
 make better work. You promised | to me | | to |  
 facciámo lavoroío. promettéste<sup>2</sup> | mi<sup>1</sup> | | di |  
 let me speak | with | your wife. | Be  
 fár mi parláre | con la | róstra<sup>2</sup> donna<sup>1</sup>. | Státe  
 joyful, | you are in your house. | Do not trust |  
 lietaménte, | siéte róstra<sup>2</sup> cása<sup>1</sup>. | Non vi fidáte |  
 | to | them. They\* had all gone to church.  
 di | érano títte andáte chiésa.  
 It is he, himself. She | does not seem | | to |  
 — E! — non sémbra | | di |  
 be herself. Many years (they) have not passed.  
 ésser . . . mólto<sup>3</sup> ánno<sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> sóno<sup>3</sup> non<sup>2</sup> passáti<sup>4</sup>.  
 They went with him. Come with me. I | have  
 — Andáron : Veníte | non  
 nothing | to do with thee. We have seen them  
 ho niénte | a far — abbiámo<sup>2</sup> vedúti<sup>3</sup> Gli<sup>1</sup>  
 ourselves. She herself has brought | them | to me.  
 — 5 ha<sup>3</sup> portáte<sup>4</sup> | le<sup>2</sup> | Me<sup>1</sup>.  
 Thou hast said it thyself. They began to  
 — hdi<sup>2</sup> détto<sup>3</sup> Lo<sup>1</sup> — cominciárono<sup>3</sup> a<sup>4</sup>  
 speak amongst themselves.  
 ragionáre<sup>5</sup> Séco<sup>1</sup> 2.

\* They, in the feminine gender.

*Conjunctive Pronouns.*

	Singular.		Plural.	
1st Per.	<i>mi</i> , m. & f.,	{ to me ; me ; }	<i>ne</i> or <i>ci</i> , m. & f., { to us ; us ; }	
2d Per.	<i>ti</i> , m. & f.,	{ to thee ; thee ; }	<i>vi</i> , m. & f., { to you ; you ; }	
3d Per.	{ <i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,* m., <i>il</i> or <i>lo</i> ,* m., <i>le</i> ,* f., <i>la</i> ,* f.,	{ to him or it ; him or it ; to her or it ; her or it ; }	{ <i>loro</i> , m., <i>gli</i> or <i>li</i> ,* m., <i>loro</i> , f., <i>le</i> ,* f.,	{ to them ; them ; to them ; them. }

Singular and Plural.

3d Per.	{	<i>si</i> , m. & f.,	{ to one's self, to himself, to herself, to itself or to themselves; }	{	<i>si</i> , m. & f.,	{ one's self, himself, herself, itself or themselves ; }
		<i>ne</i> , m. & f.,	{ of him or it, of her or it, of them ; }		<i>ne</i> , m. & f.,	{ from him or it, from her or it, from them. }

*Mi*, *ti*, *ne* or *ci*, *vi*, are applied to animate beings only ; the others may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

Conjunctive pronouns take the place of personal pronouns, when these pronouns are in the *objective* or *relation of attribution*, and are closely connected with a verb ; as,

<i>MI potête tórre</i> [for <i>potête tórre</i> A ME],	you can take away from me ;
<i>non TI pòssono muóvere</i> [for <i>non pòssono muóvere TE</i> ],	they cannot move thee ;
<i>NE sarébbe gran biásimo</i> [for <i>sarébbe A NÓI gran biásimo</i> ],	it would be in us a great fault ;

\* The pronouns *il*, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, appear, in orthography, to be the same words as the articles *il*, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*. The learner, however, will observe, that when the words *il*, *lo*, &c., are followed by a *noun*, a verb in the *infinitive* mood, or any other word used as a *noun*, they are always *articles* ; but when they are followed by a verb in a tense of the *indicative*, the *conjunctive*, or the *conditional* mood, or when they are joined to a verb, they are always *conjunctive* pronouns.

CI <i>ha guidàti</i> [for <i>ha guidàti NÓI</i> ],	it has guided us ;
GLI <i>venne a memòria</i> [for <i>venne a memòria A LÚI</i> ],	there came into his mind ;
LI <i>si éra mostràto</i> [for <i>si éra mostràto A LÚI</i> ],	he had shown himself to him ;
LI <i>condànni</i> [for <i>condànni LÓRO</i> ],	it should condemn them ;
IL <i>chiamò</i> [for <i>chiamò LÚI</i> ],	she called him ;
LO <i>avésse fatto dolénte</i> [for <i>avésse fatto LÚI dolénte</i> ],	it had afflicted him ;
LA <i>mandò</i> [for <i>mandò LÉI</i> ],	he sent her ;
LE <i>potésse tornàre</i> [for <i>potésse tornàre A LÉI</i> ],	it might cause her ;
LE <i>donerò</i> [for <i>donerò LÓRO</i> ],	I will give them ;
<i>éra parùto LÓRO</i> [for <i>éra parùto A LÓRO</i> ],	it had seemed to them ;
SI <i>véde davànti</i> [for <i>véde davànti A SÈ</i> ],	he sees before him ;
SI <i>lasciò cadére</i> [for <i>lasciò cadére SÈ</i> ],	she let herself fall ;
<i>mi piàce di parlàrNE</i> [for <i>piàce a me di parlàre DI ÉSSO</i> ],	it pleases me to speak of it ;
<i>a quàn'i NE giacévano</i> [for <i>a quàn'ti DI LÓRO giacévano</i> ],	from as many of them as were abed.

If the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, li, lo, le, la, si, ne*, are followed by a verb beginning with a *vowel*, they commonly lose the *i* and take an apostrophe in its stead ; as,

M' <i>ha ròtto</i> ,	he has bruised me ;
C' <i>immólle</i> ,	thou suckest us ;
L' <i>offendéva</i> ,	he offended them ;
N' <i>avrémmo</i> ,	we should have from him.

When they are preceded by a verb they are joined to it so as to form one single word ; as,

<i>donáRMI</i> ,	to give me ;
<i>pàrvETI</i> ,	it appeared to thee ;
<i>mandáRLO</i> ,	to send him ;



*bisognándogli,*  
*dicéndoli,*

he being in want ;  
telling him.

In using the pronouns *il, lo, li, gli, la, le*, we follow the rules already given with regard to the articles *il, lo, la*, ' the ' ; as,

IL *consénti,*  
chi LO *scrísse,*  
L' *amerò,*  
GLI *aspettáva,*

thou consentest to it ;  
he who wrote it ;  
I will love him ;  
he expected them.

The pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si, ne*, are often used as mere expletives ; as,

io MI *sóno,*  
se tu TI *háí posto mente,*  
s' *émpre che tu CI viverái,*  
ciò che voi VI *díte,*  
SI *uscì del palágio,*  
che NE *fósse del buón*  
*uómo,*

I am ;  
whether thou hast minded ;  
as long as thou livest ;  
what you say ;  
he went out the palace ;  
what had become of the good  
man.

EXAMPLES.

*Voi MI POTÉTE TÓRRE quánto*  
*téngo, e DONÁRMI, siccóme vóstro*  
*uómo a chi vi piáce. (Bocc. g.*  
*3. n. 9.)*

You can take away from me  
all I have, and give me, like  
one of your men, to whomso-  
ever it pleases you.

*S' égli PÁRVETI il fáullo mio*  
*così gránde, che NON TI PÓSSONO*  
*MUÓVERE a pietáte alcúna le*  
*amáre lágrime, nè gli úmili*  
*priéghi, muóvati alméno quésto*  
*sólo mio átto. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)*

If my fault appeared to thee  
so great, that neither my bitter  
tears, nor my humble prayers,  
can move thee to pity, at  
least let this single act of mine  
move thee.

*Il MANDÁRLO fuóri di cása*  
*nóstra cosí inférmo NE SARÉBBE*  
*GRAN BIÁSIMO. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)*

To send him out of our house,  
so infirm as he is, would be in  
us a great fault.

*Il vóstro sénno, piú che il*  
*nóstro avvediménto, CI HA GUI-*  
*DÁTI. (Bocc. Intr.)*

Your wisdom, more than our  
foresight, has guided us.

*BISOGNÁDOGLI úna buóna*  
*quantità di danári, GLI VÉNNE*  
*A MEMÓRIA un ricco Giudéo.*  
*(Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)*

Being in want of a good sum  
of money, there came into his  
mind a rich Jew.

*Il seguente di apparve per visione Cristo a Ruberto, DICENDO, che in forma di lebbroso LI SI ERA MOSTRATO, volendo provare la sua pietà. (Giov. Vill. l. 4. c. 18.)*

*O LI CONDANNI a sempiterno pianto. (Petr. s. 214.)*

*Assai volte invano IL CHIAMÒ. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 6.)*

*Se d'una cosa sola non LO AVESSE la fortuna FATTO DOLENTE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)*

*Ad una lor possessione LA NE MANDÒ. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 7.)*

*Cominciò a dubitare, non quel suo guardar così fiso movesse la sua rusticità ad alcuna cosa, che vergogna LE POTESSE TORNARE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)*

*S' elle vi piacciono, io LE VI DONERÒ. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)*

*Nè era ancora LOR PARUTO alcuna volta, tanto gaiamente cantar gli usignuoli, quanto quella mattina parèva. (Bocc. g. 7. Proem.)*

*DAVANTI SI VEDE due, che verso lui con una lanterna in mano venieno. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)*

*E'ssa sopra il seno del Conte SI LASCIÒ con la testa CADERE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)*

*E'gli MI PIACE DI PARLARNE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)*

*E'gli, pianamente andando, A QUANTI NE GIACEVANO, a tutti in simil maniera tagliò i capelli. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 2.)*

*M' HA con un bastone tutto ROTTO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)*

The following day, Christ appeared in a vision to Robert, saying to him, that he had shown himself to him in the form of a leper, to try his pity.

Or it should condemn them to eternal woe.

She called him many times in vain.

If fortune had not afflicted him in one thing alone.

He sent her to a farm of theirs.

She began to doubt, lest her looking so fixedly should move his uncouthness to do something, which might cause her shame.

If you like them, I will give them to you.

Nor had it ever seemed to them, that the nightingales had at any time sung so cheerfully, as they appeared to do that morning.

He sees before him two persons, who came towards him with a lantern in their hands.

She let her head fall on the bosom of the Count.

It pleases me to speak of it.

He, walking softly, from as many of them as were abed, cut a tuft of hair in the same manner.

He has bruised me all over with a stick.

*E nell' etérna pói s'è mal*  
C'IMMÓLLE. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

And in the eternal [life]  
thus miserably thou suckest us.

*Dicéndo che quéllo che donéa*  
*diféndérle L'OFFENDÉVA.* (Fav.  
Esop. 67.)

Saying that he who ought to  
have defended them, offended  
them.

*Se égli sapésse lavorár l'órto,*  
*io mi crédo, che nôi N'AVRÉMMO*  
*buón servígio.* (Bocc. g. 3. n.  
1.)

If he knew how to cultivate  
the garden, I believe that we  
should have from him good  
service.

*Nè tu IL CONSÉNTI, Amóro.*  
(Tass. Ger. 2. 15.)

Nor thou dost consent to it,  
O Love.

*Galeótto fu il líbro, e CHI LO*  
*SCRÍSSE.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

The book, and he who wrote  
it, were [to us] Galeotto:

*I'o ho amáto, ed ámo Guiscár-*  
*do, e quánto viverò L'AMERÒ.*  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

I have loved, and love Guis-  
cardo, and will love him as  
long as I live.

*GLI ASPETTÁVA.* (Bocc. g.  
3. n. 7.)

He expected them.

*I'o MI SÓNO un póvero pelle-*  
*gríno.* (Bocc. Filoc. 1. 5.)

I am a poor pilgrim.

*I'o non so, SE TU T'HÁI PÓSTO*  
*MÉNTE, cóme nôi siámo tenúte*  
*strétte.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

I know not, whether thou  
hast minded, how close we are  
kept.

*Con túo dáno ti ricorderái,*  
*SÉMPRE CHE TU CI VIVERÁI, del*  
*nóme mío.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.)

To thy sorrow thou wilt re-  
member my name, as long as  
thou livest.

*Andáte, goccíolóni; vói non*  
*sapéte CIÒ CHE VÓI VI DÍTE.*  
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.)

Go away, fools; you do not  
know what you say.

*DEL PALÁGIO S'USCÌ, e fug-*  
*gíssi a cása.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

He went out the palace,  
and fled to his house.

*La dóna se ne vénne, e DEL*  
*BUÓN UÓMO domandò, CHE NE*  
*FÓSSE.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

The woman came, and asked  
what had become of the good  
man.

When the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *gli*, *ne* or *ci*, *vi*, *si*, are immediately followed by the pronouns *lo*, *la*, *gli*, *li*, *le*, *ne*, they are generally united and form a single word; as,

*mi lo*, MÉLO, him or it to me; *ci li*, CÉLI, them to us;  
*ti la*, TÉLA, her or it to thee; *vi gli*, VÉGLI, them to you.

*Union of the Pronouns MI, TI, GLI, NE OR CÍ, VI, SI,  
with the Pronouns LO, LA, GLI, LI, NE.*

**MI, to me ;**

<i>mi lo,</i>	(inviáte) MÉLO,*	(send) him or it to me ;
<i>mi la,</i>	(mostráte) MÉLA,	(show) her or it to me ;
<i>mi gli, mi li, mi le,</i> }	(prestáte) { MÉGLI, MÉLI, MÉLE, }	(lend) them to me ;
<i>mi ne,</i>	(dáte) MÉNE,	{ (give) to me of it, or to me of them ; some of it, [or some of them.

**TI, to thee ;**

<i>ti lo,</i>	TÉLO* (invío),	(I send) him or it to thee ;
<i>ti la,</i>	TÉLA (móstro),	(I show) her or it to thee ;
<i>ti gli, ti li, ti le,</i> }	TÉGLI } TÉLI } (présto), TÉLE }	(I lend) them to thee ;
<i>ti ne,</i>	TÉNE (do),	{ (I give) to thee of it, or to [thee of them ; &c.

**GLI, to him or her ;**

<i>gli lo,</i>	GLIÉLO (invía),	{ (he sends) him or it to him [or her ;
<i>gli la,</i>	GLIÉLA (móstra),	{ (he shows) him or it to him [or her ;
<i>gli li, gli le,</i> }	GLIÉLI } (présta), GLIÉLE }	{ (he lends) them to him or [her ;
<i>gli ne,</i>	{ GLIÉNE } (dà), —LÉNE }	{ (he gives) to him or her of it, or to him or her of them ; —to her of it, or to her of [them ; &c.

\* Some writers use these pronouns, with exception of *gliélo*, &c., separate ;—  
ME LO SE LO, NE LO or CE LO, &c.

NE or CI, to us ;

<i>ne lo,</i> <i>or ci lo,</i> }	(inviáte)	{ NÉLO or CÉLO, }	(send) him or it to us ;
<i>ne la,</i> <i>or ci la,</i> }	(mostráte)	{ NÉLA, or CÉLA, }	(show) her or it to us ;
<i>ne gli,</i> <i>or ci gli,</i> <i>ne li,</i> <i>or ci li,</i> <i>ne le</i> <i>or ci le,</i> }	(prestáte)	{ NÉGLI, or CÉGLI, NÉLI, or CÉLI, NÉLE, or CÉLE, }	(lend) them to us ;
<i>ci ne,</i>	(dáte) CÉNE,		{ (give) to us of it, or to us [of them ; &c.

VI, to you ;

<i>vi lo,</i>	VÉLO (inviámo),		(we send) him or it to you ;
<i>vi la,</i>	VÉLA (mostriámo),		(we show) her or it to you ;
<i>vi gli,</i> <i>vi li,</i> <i>vi le,</i>	VÉGLI VÉLI VÉLE }	(prestiámo),	(we lend) them to you ;
<i>vi ne,</i>	VÉNE (diámo),		{ (we give) to you of it, or [to you of them ; &c.

SI, to one's self ;

<i>si lo,</i>	SÉLO (inviano),		{ (they send) him or it to [themselves ;
<i>si la,</i>	SÉLA (móstrano),		{ (they show) her or it to [themselves ;
<i>si gli,</i> <i>si li,</i> <i>si le,</i>	SÉGLI SÉLI SÉLE }	(préstano),	{ (they lend) them to them- [selves ;
<i>si ne,</i>	SÉNE (dánno),		{ (they give) to themselves of it, or to themselves of [them ; &c.

*Mélo, télo, gliélo, nélo or célo, vélo, sélo, &c.,* before a verb beginning with a *consonant*, except *z*, and *s* followed by another *consonant*, often drop the *o* :

and before a verb beginning with a *vowel*, drop the *o* and take an apostrophe in its stead ; as,

MEL <i>Disse,</i>	he told it to me ;
TEL <i>Trarrò,</i>	I will draw it for you ;
<i>non</i> GLIÉL' <i>celái,</i>	I did not conceal it from him ;
GLIÉL' <i>apèrsi,</i>	I revealed it to him ;
CEL' <i>avéte fátta,</i>	you have deceived us ;
SEN' <i>Entrò,</i>	she entered.

When the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, gli, le, &c.*, are preceded by the adverb *écco*, 'behold', they form with this a single word ; as,

<i>éccomi,</i>	behold me ;
<i>éccoci,</i>	behold us ;
<i>éccole,</i>	behold them.

When the pronoun *lo* is preceded by the adverb *non*, 'no, not', it is, more elegantly, changed into *il* and joined with the adverb in a single word ; as,

<i>non il,</i>	NOL' <i>véde,</i>	she does not see him ;
<i>non il,</i>	NOL' <i>négo,</i>	I do not deny it.

#### EXAMPLES.

*Tu di' di fármelo vedére né' vívi.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.)

Thou sayest, that thou wilt make me see it amongst the living.

MEL *Dísse il pádre mio, ch'io mi guardássi — Di por già mái nélla Messénia il piéde.* (Maff. Mer. 3. 4.)

My father told me, that I should take care never to set my foot in Messenia.

*Per vedér fáre il tómo a qué' maccheróni, e tórmene úna sa-tólla.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

To see those maccaroni falling down, and give myself a bellyful.

*Sénza alcún maéstro ío TEL TRARRÒ ottimaménte.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

Without any master, I will draw it for you very well.

*Io non méne maravíglío, nè TÉNE so ripigliáre.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I do not wonder at it, nor do I know how to reprove you for it.

*No ch'era d'ubbidir disideroso*  
—NON GLIÉL CELÁI ma tutto  
GLIÉL' APÉRSI. (Dant. Inf.  
10.)

*Gli amici noi abbiamo quáli*  
CÉGLI eleggiámó. (Bocc. g.  
10. n. 8.)

*La donna udendo questo, e*  
*dopo molte riconfermazióni*  
*fátteLENE dal Zéppa, credéndolo,*  
*dísse.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

*Vedendo l'uómo la semplicità*  
*del fanciullo* GLIÉNE vénné  
*pietà.* (Matt. Vill. 10. 30.)

*Vói* CEL' AVÉTE FÁTTA.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

*Quante CÉNE vedéte vói, le*  
*súi bellézze sícn fátte cóme le*  
*míe?* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

*Cóme questo avvenúto mi sía,*  
*brieveménte* VEL farò chiáro.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 4.)

*Mi piáce di fárvENE piú*  
*chiáre con úna piccòla novellétta.*  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

*In prócésso di témpo* SE LE  
*riprése.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 3.)

SEN' ENTRÒ nélla càsa del  
*póver uómo.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

*Lo scoláre, accostátosi all'ú-*  
*scio, dísse:* "E'CCOMI quí, ma-  
*dónna."* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

E'CCOLE, *che élla medésima*  
*piangéndo mel' ha riportáte.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*E'lla o lo sprézza, o* NOL VÉDE,  
*o non s'avvéde.* (Tass. Ger. 2.  
16.)

*No* NOL póssó negár, e NOL  
NÉGO. (Petr. s. 202.)

I, who was desirous of obey-  
ing, did not conceal it, but re-  
vealed to him all.

We have such friends as we  
choose them for us.

The lady hearing this, and  
after many confirmations of it  
made to her by Zeppa, believ-  
ing it, said.

The man seeing the sim-  
plicity of the boy, took pity up-  
on him.

You have deceived us.

How many of them do you  
see, whose beauties are such  
as mine?

How this happened to me,  
I will explain to you briefly.

It pleases me to make you  
more conscious of it, with a  
small tale.

In the progress of time he  
took them back.

She entered in the house of  
the poor man.

The scholar, coming to the  
door, said: "Behold me here,  
madam."

Behold them, which she her-  
self weeping has brought back  
to me.

She either despises him, or  
does not see him, or does not  
understand.

I cannot deny it, and do not  
deny it.

## EXERCISE IX.

But what wishest thou that I should say to her  
*Ma che vuoi che dica<sup>2</sup> I*

for you, if it happens that I should speak  
*da tua parte, se avviene che favelli<sup>2</sup>*

to her? They will rob us, and perhaps will take  
*I ? — ruberanno<sup>2</sup> 1, e<sup>3</sup> forse<sup>4</sup> torranno<sup>6</sup>*

(to us) even our life. I will lodge you  
*5 anche la vita. albergherò<sup>2</sup> 1*

willingly, as I can. The youth told him every  
*volentieri, come potrò. giovanetto disse<sup>2</sup> 1 ogni*

thing. I will pardon him willingly, and pardon  
*cósa. — perdonerò<sup>3</sup> 2 Volentieri<sup>1</sup>, e<sup>4</sup> perdono<sup>7</sup>*

him now. He gave to him his benediction,  
*6 óra<sup>5</sup>. — Diéde, la sua benedizione,*

holding him for a very holy man. How does  
*tenendo, santo uomo. Che*

it appear to thee? Have I well kept my  
*páre<sup>2</sup> 1 ? ho<sup>2</sup> 3 ben<sup>4</sup> serbata<sup>5</sup> la<sup>6</sup>*

promise to you? My brother writes to me, that  
*promessa<sup>7</sup> 1 ? mio<sup>3</sup> fratello<sup>4</sup> Scrive<sup>1</sup> 2, che*

without any fail, I should send to him one thousand  
*sénza alcun fallo, ábbia mandati<sup>2</sup> 1 —*

gold florins; otherwise his head will be cut off  
*d'óro<sup>2</sup> fiorino<sup>1</sup>; se non<sup>3</sup> la<sup>7</sup> testa<sup>8</sup> sarà<sup>5</sup> tagliata<sup>6</sup>*

(to him.) I have not deceived you to deprive  
*4. ho<sup>3</sup> non<sup>1</sup> ingannata<sup>4</sup> 2 per tor*

you of your property. Certainly although thou  
*— il vostro. Certo quantunque*

affirmest it, I do not believe that thou believest  
*afférmi<sup>2</sup> 1, 3 non crédo<sup>4</sup> che<sup>5</sup> 6 créda<sup>8</sup>*

it. Having turned himself to his wife, he  
*7. Volto — la moglie, —*

asked her if she had had them. If thou dost  
*domandò<sup>2</sup> 1 se<sup>3</sup> — avesse<sup>6</sup> avuti<sup>4</sup> 5. Se non*

not do it, thou wilt repent thyself of it so many  
*fai<sup>2</sup> lo<sup>1</sup>, 3 pentrai<sup>6</sup> 4 5 tanta*

times, that thou wilt die of it.  
*volta, che vorrái morire<sup>2</sup> 1.*



He granted it to him freely. I want to go  
 — *concedette*<sup>3</sup>                    <sup>2</sup>                    *Liberamente*<sup>1</sup>. — *Voglio andare*

and tell him, that he should go away. Leave  
 | *a* | *dir*                    <sup>1</sup>, *che* | *séne váda.* | *Lascia*

me, I beg it of thee (thee of it). That which he  
 , *prégo*<sup>2</sup> — — —                    <sup>1</sup> .                    *Quello che*

afterwards said to me, I do not dare to tell it to  
*pô*                    *dísse*<sup>2</sup>                    <sup>1</sup>,                    *non óso dir*

you, if first you do not pardon me. The song  
 , *se prima* — — —                    *non perdonáte*<sup>2</sup>                    <sup>1</sup>.                    <sup>2</sup> *canzóna*<sup>3</sup>

being finished, the master said: "What dost thou think  
 — *Finíta*<sup>1</sup>,                    *maestro dísse* : " *Che* — — —

of it (does it appear to thee of it)?" You did not  
 — — — — — *páre*<sup>2</sup>                    <sup>1</sup> ?"                    *non*

believe it, when I told it to you. Having kept  
*credeváte*<sup>2</sup>                    <sup>1</sup>, *quando*<sup>3</sup>                    *díssi*<sup>4</sup>                    <sup>4</sup> .                    *Avéndo* *serbáti*<sup>2</sup>

them full a year to return them to him, I gave  
*gli*<sup>1</sup>. *ben*<sup>3</sup>                    <sup>4</sup> *ánno*<sup>5</sup> | *per*<sup>6</sup> | *rénder*<sup>7</sup> — — — <sup>9</sup>                    <sup>8</sup>,                    <sup>10</sup> *diédi*<sup>12</sup>

them away for the love of God. Behold me; what  
<sup>11</sup> — — — — — *amór*                    *Dío.*                    ; *che*

do you want of me? Behold one (of them),  
 | *voléte* | *da* | *me?*                    <sup>1</sup> *una*<sup>3</sup>                    <sup>2</sup>

behold another of them.  
<sup>1</sup> *un'altra*<sup>3</sup>                    <sup>2</sup>.

## RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

*Relative Pronouns.*

Singular and Plural.

*Chi*, m. & f. who, he or she that, they that;

<i>che</i> , m. & f. }	} who, which, that;
<i>cui</i> , m. & f. }	

Singular.

*quále*, m. & f. who, which,

Plural.

*quáli*, m. & f.

*Chi* refers to persons only; *che*, *cui*, *quále*, both to persons and things.

*Che* is chiefly used in the *subjective*, and *cui* in all other relations, but the *subjective*; *chi*, *quále*, are used in all their relations; as,

<b>CHI</b> <i>offende, ódia,</i>	he that offends, hates;
<b>A CHI</b> <i>non si mette navi- gándo,</i>	to him who does not set him- self navigating;
<i>quella, CHE</i> <i>io cerco,</i>	she, whom I seek;
<i>gli ócchi DI CHE</i> <i>io parlái,</i>	the eyes of which I spoke;
<b>A CUI</b> <i>si ammógliá,</i>	to which she unites herself;
<b>DACUI</b> <i>fosse l'ingiúria ri- cevúta,</i>	from whom the offence was received;
<b>IL QUÁLE</b> <i>éra piactevole gióvane,</i>	who was an agreeable young man;
<i>presso ÁLLA QUÁLE</i> <i>sta ri- pósto un dilettevole piáno,</i>	near which should be situated a delightful plain;
<i>uno DÉ' QUÁLI</i> <i>éra chiamá- to Panfílo,</i>	one of whom was called Pam- philus;
<i>i nómi DÉLLE QUÁLI</i> <i>rac- conteréi,</i>	whose names I would relate.

*Cui* is generally used instead of *chi*, *che*, *quále*; as,

<i>non guardándo cui</i> [or <b>CHI</b> ] <i>motteggiásse,</i>	not minding whom she jeered;
<i>coléi, cui</i> [or <b>CHE</b> ] <i>égli amá- va,</i>	she, whom he loved;
<i>colúí, cui</i> [or <b>IL QUÁLE</b> ] <i>io uccisi,</i>	he, whom I killed.

*Che* is sometimes used instead of *quále*; as,

<i>un cavalíer, CHE</i> [or <b>IL QUÁ- LE</b> ] <i>Itália onóra,</i>	a knight, whom Italy honors;
<i>la miséria in CHE</i> [or <b>NÉL- LA QUÁLE</b> ] <i>éra venúta,</i>	the misfortune into which she had fallen:

Sometimes it is used with the article *il*, in the signifi-  
cation of *la quál cosa*, 'which thing'; as,

<b>IL CHE</b> [or <b>LA QUÁL CÓSA</b> ] <i>dispiácque loro,</i>	which thing displeased them;
<b>DEL CHE</b> <i>avvedútosí,</i>	which thing he having ob- served.

Sometimes it is used in the signification of *cósa*, 'thing'; *che cósa*, 'what thing'; as,

<i>un bel CHE</i> [or <i>una bella</i> <i>CÓSA</i> ],	a fine thing;
<i>sénzá sapér CHE</i> [or <i>CHE</i> <i>CÓSA</i> ] <i>speráre</i> ,	without knowing what thing to hope:

And sometimes it is equivalent to the English pronoun 'what' only; as,

<i>CHE dolóre io sénto</i> ,	what pain I feel;
<i>CHE ciánce tu dí'</i> ,	what stories thou tellest.

*Che* before a vowel drops the *e*, and takes an apostrophe in its stead; as,

<i>CH' égli è usáto</i> ,	which is wont;
<i>di CH' io parlái</i> ,	of which I spoke.

*Quále* is sometimes used instead of *chi*; as,

<i>fólle è QUÁLE</i> [or <i>CHI</i> ] <i>créde</i> ,	foolish is he who believes;
<i>QUÁLE</i> [or <i>CHI</i> ] <i>più possiéde</i> ,	he who [possesses] has more:

And sometimes it is equivalent to the English pronoun 'what'; as,

<i>QUÁLE fósse la cagíone</i> ,	what the cause was;
<i>QUÁLE fósse l' ánimó di léi</i> ,	what her mind was.

*Quále*, unless followed by *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, in the singular drops the *e*; and in the plural makes *quái*, and *quá'*, as,

<i>QUÁL amore</i> ,	what love;
<i>la QUÁL cósa</i> ,	which thing;
<i>i QUÁI vizj</i> ,	which vices;
<i>álle QUÁ' léttere</i> ,	to which letters.

To avoid the ambiguity, which would arise in Italian, from the inversion of the different words of a sen-

tence, when the pronouns *che*, *quále*, refer to the *object* of the proposition, they are changed for the pronoun *cúi*. Thus the phrase, 'the city which the wood conceals', if 'city' is the *subject* of the proposition, is rendered *la città CHE* or *la QUÁLE il bóscó ascónde*, 'the city which conceals the wood'; but if 'city' is the *object* of the proposition, then it is rendered *la città CÚI il bóscó ascónde*, 'the city which the wood conceals';

as,

<i>L'uómo CHE Dio non téme,</i>	the man who does not fear God;
<i>L'uómo CÚI sónno piglia,</i>	a man who is seized by sleep.

Instead of *di cui*, *del* or *délla quále*, *déi* or *déllé quáli*; *da cui*, *dál quále*; *con cui*, *col quále*; *per cui*, *per lo quále*, &c., we often find used the adverb *ónde*, which then assumes the nature of a relative pronoun; as,

<i>quéi sospiri ÓNDE [or DI CÚI] to nudriva il cuóre,</i>	those sighs with which I nourished my heart;
<i>nélla prigióné ÓNDE [or DÁLLA QUÁLE] è sciólta,</i>	in the prison from which she is released;
<i>ógni láccio ÓNDE [or COL QUÁLE] il mio córe è avvinto,</i>	every tie with which my heart is bound;
<i>quéllo usciúolo ÓNDE [or PER LO QUÁLE] éra entráto,</i>	that little door through which he had entered.

Before a vowel, *onde* drops the *e*, and takes an apostrophe instead of it; as,

<i>OND' io,</i>	of which I;
<i>OND' éra,</i>	through which he [was] had.

*Chi*, *che*, *cúi*, are varied with the *prepositions only*; *quále* is varied both with the *prepositions* and the *article il* or *la*, 'the', according to the gender of the object it refers to.

The prepositions *di*, *a*, are often elegantly suppressed before *cui*; as,

*in casa [di] cui era morto,*

in whose house he had died;

*oñi [a] cui fortuna ha posto  
in mano il freno,*

you, into whose hands fortune  
has put the reins.

## E X A M P L E S.

CHI OFFÉNDE, ÓDIA, e non  
diméntica. (Dav. Vit. Agr.)

He that offends, hates, and  
does not forget.

Quél piacére, CH' ÉGLI È  
USÁTO di dáre A CHI tróppo NON  
SI MÉTTE nē suói pélaghi NA-  
VIGÁNDO. (Bocc. Proem.)

That pleasure, which it is  
wont to give to him who does  
not set himself navigating  
too much through its seas.

QUÉLLA, CH'ÍO CÉRCO e non  
ritróvo in térra. (Petr. s. 34.)

She whom I seek, and do  
not find on earth.

GLI ÓCCHI DI CH'ÍO PARLÁI  
sì caldaménte. (Petr. s. 251.)

The eyes of which I spoke so  
warmly.

Mólti son gli animáli A CUI  
SI AMNÓGLIA. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

Many are the animals to  
which she unites herself.

Nélla ménte ritorndandosi chi  
égli éra, e quál FÓSSE L'INGIÚ-  
RIA RICEVÚTA, e perchè, e DA  
CUI. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Revolving in his mind, who  
he was, and what the offence  
received was, and why, and  
from whom received.

Dionéo, IL QUÁLE, óltre ad  
ogni áltro, ÉRA PIACÉVOL GIÓ-  
VANE. (Bocc. Introd.)

Dionéo, who was agreeable  
beyond every other young  
man.

Una montágná áspra ed érta,  
PRÉSSO ÁLLA QUÁLE UN BEL-  
LÍSSIMO píano e diletévole sia  
ripósto. (Bocc. Introd.)

A mountain rough and steep,  
near which is situated a very  
beautiful and delightful plain.

DÉ' QUÁLI ÚNO ÉRA chia-  
máto PAMFÍLO. (Bocc. Introd.)

One of whom was called  
Pamphilus.

Sétte giòvani dónne, I NÓMI  
DÉLLE QUÁLI ÌO in própria fór-  
ma racconteréi. (Bocc. Introd.)

Seven young women, whose  
names I would relate in their  
true form.

NON GUARDÁNDO CUI MOT-  
TEGGIÁSSE, credéndo vincere fu  
vinta. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 10.)

Not minding whom she  
jeered, believing to conquer  
she was conquered.

COLÉI maritándo, CUI EGLI  
AMÁVA. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)

Marrying her, whom he  
loved.

COLÚI, CÚI ÍO UCCÍSI.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

He, whom I killed.

*Sopra il monte Tarpéo, can-  
zón, vedrái—UN CAVALIÉR, CH'  
ITÁLIA tútta ONÓRA.* (Petr. c.  
6.)

On the Tarpeian mountain,  
O Song, thou wilt see a knight,  
whom all Italy honors.

*Diána, che conoscéra LA MI-  
SÉRIA IN CHE Biancafióre ÉRA  
VENÚTA, temperò le sue ire con  
giústo fréno.* (Bocc. Filoc. l.  
4.)

Diana, who knew the mis-  
fortune into which Biancafiore  
had fallen, moderated her anger  
with a proper restraint.

*Avéran sentíto perchè présa  
la Ninétta fósse; IL CHE fórte  
DISPIÁCQUE LÓRO.* (Bocc. g. 4.  
n. 3.)

They had heard why Ninetta  
had been taken; which thing  
displeased them much.

*DEL CHE AVVEDÚTOSI Mar-  
cello, disse.* (Dav. Stor. l. 4.)

Which thing Marcellus hav-  
ing observed, said.

*Mi paréva UN BEL CHE l'és-  
serne fudra.* (Bern. rim. l. 74.)

It appeared to me a fine thing  
to be out of it.

*La giòvane prése buòno augú-  
rio d' avér quéstò nóme udíto,  
e cominciò a SPERÁR SÉNZA  
SAPÉR CHE.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

The girl took it as a good  
omen, to have heard this name,  
and began to hope, without  
knowing what [thing] to hope.

*Dio il sa, CHE DOLÓRE ÍO  
SÉNTO.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

God knows [it] what pain I  
feel.

*Po non so che Andreuccio, nè  
CHE CIÁNCE son quelle, che TU  
dí.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

I know not what Andreuccio,  
or what stories these are which  
thou tellest.

*FÓLLE È QUÁL CRÉDE, che  
per sudí consiglí muóver péssa  
l'órdine del ciélo.* (Dittam.)

Foolish is he who believes,  
that he can change the decrees  
of heaven by his deliberations.

*QUÁL PIÙ gènte POSSIÉDE—  
Colúi è piú da' sudí nemíci av-  
vólto.* (Petr. c. 29.)

He who has more subjects,  
is surrounded by more enemies.

*Laónde fáttö chiamáre il  
Siniscálco, e domandáto QUÁL  
FÓSSE del romóre LA CAGIÓNE.*  
(Bocc. g. 6. Proem.)

Having, therefore, caused the  
senechal to be called, and hav-  
ing asked what the cause of the  
noise was.

*La dóнна, conoscéndo QUÁL  
FÓSSE L'ÁNIMO DI LÉI, lasciò  
stáre le paróle.* (Bocc. g. 2. n.  
8.)

The woman, knowing what  
her mind was, abandoned the  
conversation.

*QUÁL AMÓRE avrébbe i sospíri  
di Tito fátti a Gisíppo nel cuór  
sentíre, se non costéi?* (Bocc.  
g. 10. n. 8.)

What love could the sighs  
of Titus, have caused Gisippus  
to feel in his heart, if not that of  
her.

LA QUÁL CÓSA *veggéndo Andreuccio*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Which thing Andreuccio seeing.

I QUÁI VÍZJ *procédoro da quésta velenósa radíce*. (Amm. Ant. 317.)

Which vices proceed from this venomous root.

A' LLE QUÁ' LÉTTERE *io mi rimétto*. (Casa. lett. 18.)

To which letters I refer.

Che *atténde ciascún uóm che Dío non téme*. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Which waits for every man who does not fear God.

E *cáddi cóme l' uóm cúí sónno píglia*. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

And I dropped down, like a man who is seized by sleep.

Vói *che ascoltáte in ríme spárse il suóno—Di quéi sospíri ond' ío nudriva il cuóre*. (Petr. s. 1.)

You who hear in scattered rhymes the sound of those sighs with which I nourished my heart.

NÉLLA BÉLLA PRIGÍONE *ond' óra è sciólta—Póco éra státa ancór l' álma gentíle*. (Petr. c. 44.)

The gentle soul had been but a short time in the beautiful prison from which she is now released.

P *ággio in ódio la spéme, e i delíri—Ed ógni láccio ónde' l' mío cór è avvínto*. (Petr. s. 75.)

I hold in hatred the hope, the ravings, and every tie with which my heart is bound.

PER QUÉLLO USCÍUÓLO, *ond' éra énttrato, il míse fuóri*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

She put him out of that little door through which he had entered.

Il *buón uómo, in cása cúí mórtó éra, dísse*. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8.)

The good man, in whose house he had died, said.

VÓI, CÚI FORTÚNA HA PÓSTO *in máno il fréno—Délle béllé contráde*. (Petr. c. 29.)

You, into whose hands fortune has put the reins of the beautiful countries.

## EXERCISE X.

He determined		to find		who had done this.
— Pensò		di volér trováre		avésse <sup>2</sup> fáttö <sup>3</sup> quésto <sup>1</sup> .
This wretched little man who is here,	—	Quésto cattívo	—	I saw there
Quésto	—	cattívo	—	è <sup>2</sup> quí <sup>1</sup> ,
(that		was) sleeping,		5 vídí <sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> 3
si		dormíva,		mentre
		whilst		I was dividing
		méntre		dividéva <sup>3</sup>
				the
				1

things stolen with him whom afterwards I killed. Render  
*furto*<sup>2</sup> *colúì* ——— *uccisi.* *Rèndi*  
me at least the clothes | (of mine) | (the) which I have  
*alméno* *pánno* | *miéi* | *ho*<sup>3</sup>  
left there. (The) Fiamméta, whose hair\* was curly,  
*lasciáti*<sup>1</sup> *vi*<sup>2</sup>. , *capéllò érano créspo,*  
long, and of the color of gold. This is the ring,  
*lúngo, e* — — — *óro.* *Quésto è anello,*  
which she already carried | to | France the first  
*già*<sup>2</sup> *portò*<sup>1</sup> | *in* | *Fránzia* *prímo*  
time that she made that journey | with her |  
*vólta* *che* — *fèce* *quél* *cammíno* | *col* |  
brother. Neither I, nor the one from whom I  
*fratéllò.* ——— , *nè* *colúì*  
received her, | ever knew | whose daughter | she  
*ebbi*<sup>2</sup> *1* | *non sapémmo mái*<sup>3</sup> | *4* *figliuóla*<sup>6</sup> | *si*  
was. | She, who knew well, that which she had  
*fósse.*<sup>5</sup> | , *sapéra bene, ciò* — *avéra*<sup>3</sup>  
to do. Having turned herself to Pamphilus, who  
*a*<sup>1</sup> *fare*<sup>2</sup>. ——— *Rivólta* ——— *Panfílo,*  
sat | at | her right, pleasantly said to him. The  
*sedéva*<sup>4</sup> | *alla*<sup>1</sup> | *sua*<sup>2</sup> *déstra,*<sup>3</sup> *piacevolménte*<sup>5</sup> *disse*<sup>7</sup> *6.* *3*  
first (of whom), to whom the queen gave | such a |  
*prímo*<sup>4</sup> *1* *2* *5* *6* *7* *regína*<sup>9</sup> *impóse*<sup>11</sup> | *tal*<sup>9</sup> |  
charge, was Philostratus, who began in this way.  
*cárico*<sup>10</sup>, *fu* *Filóstrato,* — *cominciò* *quésto maniera.*  
Are you that woman, who must come to speak  
*Siéte* *quéllo* *dónna,* *dovéte*<sup>2</sup> *venire*<sup>3</sup> *a*<sup>4</sup> *parláre*<sup>5</sup>  
to him? The young man is the son of Landolphus  
<sup>1</sup>? *gióvane* *è* — *figliuólo* *Landólfo*  
of Prócida, by (the) whose means thou art a king;  
, *per* *2* *ópera*<sup>1</sup> *sé* — *re*;  
the young woman is the daughter of Marin Búlgaro,  
*gióvane* *è* — *figliuóla* ,  
(the) whose power causes that thou art not now | sent  
*poténza* *fa* *2* *3* *sía*<sup>5</sup> *non*<sup>4</sup> *óggi*<sup>1</sup> | *scac-*  
away | from | I'schia.  
*ci*<sup>6</sup> | *di* |

\* Hair. in the plural number.



The woman, hearing him speak whom she held  
*donna, udendo costui parlare tenéva*

for a dumb man, | was quite amazed. | | She went  
*— — muto —, | tutta stordì. | | sen' uscì<sup>8</sup>*

out | of the church, by that way through which he had  
*9 | chiésa,<sup>10</sup> Per1 quello<sup>2</sup> via<sup>3</sup> 4 5 — erá<sup>8</sup>*

come. Now, | determine | without any other delay,  
*venuto.<sup>7</sup> Or, | ti consiglia | senza áltro indúgio,*

and | take | that man whom you wish most. To  
*e | ti piglia<sup>4</sup> | — — 1 — — vuoi<sup>3</sup> più.<sup>2</sup>*

(the) which, I could not resist, for any thing in  
*, 5 | potrei<sup>7</sup> non<sup>6</sup> resistere,<sup>8</sup> 1 — — cosa<sup>2</sup>*

the world. By the hundred steps by which  
*3 | mondo.<sup>4</sup> Per scaglióne per*

| one ascends | to the Tarpeian rock. | At | (the)  
*| si sale | Tarpeo —. | Di |*

which thing, all the others frightened began to  
*cósa, tutto áltro spaventati cominciárono<sup>3</sup> a<sup>1</sup>*

flee. He saw the lady, who loves my brother.  
*fuggire.<sup>3</sup> vide donna, ama mio fratello.*

Behold the young man, whom his daughter loves.  
*E'cco | giovane, sua<sup>2</sup> figlia<sup>3</sup> ama.<sup>1</sup>*

*Interrogative Pronouns.*

The relative pronouns *chi*, *che*, and *quále* or *quáli*, when used to ask a question, become *interrogative* pronouns.

*Chi* always denotes a person : *che* denotes things, or the quality of persons and things : *quále* or *quáli* denotes both persons and things, or the qualities of persons and things ; as,

CHI *siéte* voi ?

Who are you ?

CHI *è* QUESTI ?

Who is this one ?

CHE [*cósa*] *hai* ?

What ails thee ?

CHE *uómo* *è* ?

What man is he ?

CHE *ORAZIÓNE* ?

What prayer ?

QUÁL DIÁVOLO?

What demon?

QUÁL PAÚRA?

What fear?

QUÁLI LÉGGI?

What conditions?

Although both *che* and *quále* denote things or the qualities of persons and things, it is nevertheless to be observed, that, when we inquire of an object without reference to its intrinsic merit, *quále* is generally used; but if our inquiry refers to the intrinsic merit of the object, we use *che* in preference; as,

QUÁL *fu* la *cagione*?

What was the cause?

QUÁL *dúce* *fia* *dégno*?

What leader would be worthy?

CHE *gênte* è?

What [kind of] people are they?

CHE *peccáti* *háí* *fátto*?What [kind of] sins hast thou com-  
[mitted]?

*Cúí* is often used as an interrogative pronoun, instead of *chi*; as,

Con *cúí* [or con *chi*] *séi*  
*státo*?

With whom hast thou been?

The pronouns *che*, and *quále* or *quáli*, are used also in *exclamations*; as,

CHE *vedúta* *amára*!

What a sad sight!

QUÁL *pólvere*!

What dust!

QUÁI *martiri*!

What torments!

Interrogative pronouns are varied with the *prepositions* only.

## EXAMPLES.

*De' quái nè io, nè 'l duca mío*  
*s'accórse—Se non quándo gri-*  
*dár: "CHI SIÉTE VOI?"* (Dant.  
Inf. 25.)

Of whom neither I nor my  
leader was aware until they  
exclaimed: "Who are you?"

CHI È QUÉSTI *che* *così* *starnu-*  
*tisce?* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

Who is this that sneezes  
thus?

CHE *háí* *tu*, *Bocca*? (Dant.  
Inf. 32.)

What ails thee, Bocca?

CHE UÓMO È *costúí*? (Bocc.  
g. 1. n. 1.)

What man is this?

*E vói CHE ORAZIÓNE usáte di dire, camminándo?* (Bocc.)

And what prayer are you wont to say, when you travel?

QUÁL DIÁVOL *ti tócca?* (Dant.)

What demon touches thee?

QUÁLI LÉGGI? *quáli minacce?* QUÁL PAÚRA? (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

What conditions? what threats? what fear?

*Ma dílemi, QUÁL FU LA CAGIÓNE per la quále vói con lui vi turbáste?* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

But tell me, what was the cause that you were displeased with him?

QUÁL DÚCE FÍA DÉGNO di loro? (Tass. Ger. I. 52.)

What leader will be worthy of them?

CHE GENTE È, *che par nel duól s'è vinta?* (Dant. Inf. 3.)

What people are these, who seem so overcome with woe?

CHE PECCÁTI HÁI tu FÁTTO? (Bocc.)

What sins hast thou committed?

CON CÚI ti CRÉDI tu ÉSSERE státo? (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

With whom dost thou think to have been?

Ah! CHE VEDÚTA AMÁRA e trista! (Tass. Ger. 19. 105.)

Ah! what a bitter and sad sight!

QUÁL per l'ária stésa—PÓLVERE i' véggio! (Tass. Ger. 3. 10.)

What dust do I see spread through the air!

QUÁI MARTÍRI! (Crusca.)

What torments!

*E se non piángi, DI che pián-ger sudli?* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

And if at this, thou dost not weep, at what art thou accostomed to weep!

EXERCISE XI.

Who knocks <i>picchia</i>	below? <i>laggiù?</i>	What fear have you? <i>paúra avéte</i>	Who <i>?</i>
chastised you <i>castigò<sup>2</sup> vi<sup>1</sup></i>	thus? <i>così?</i>	What do we do? <i>—<sup>2</sup> facciámo<sup>1</sup>?</i>	What do <i>—</i>
we wait for? <i>— attendiámo?</i>	What do we dream of? <i>— sogniámo?</i>	What sleep, <i>sónno,</i>	
or what lethargy has <i>o letárgo ha</i>	lulled thus <i>sopíto<sup>2</sup> così<sup>1</sup></i>	thy <i>la túa</i>	virtue? <i>virtù?</i> What
chains, what prison, <i>caténa,</i>	what crosses <i>cárcere,</i>	would be sufficient? <i>cróce</i>	<i>ci basterébbero?</i>



## CHAPTER VII.

## ADJECTIVE PRONOUNS.

## POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

THE Italian possessive pronouns are the following :

Singular.

Plural.

<i>Mio</i> , m.	<i>mía</i> , f.	my or mine,	<i>mieí</i> m.	<i>míe</i> , f.
<i>túo</i> , m.	<i>túa</i> , f.	thy or thine,	<i>tuói,*</i> m.	<i>túe</i> , f.
<i>súo</i> , m.	<i>súa</i> , f.	his, her, hers or its,	<i>suói,*</i> m.	<i>súe</i> , f.
<i>nóstro</i> , m.	<i>nóstra</i> , f.	our or ours,	<i>nóstri</i> , m.	<i>nóstre</i> , f.
<i>vóstro</i> , m.	<i>vóstra</i> , f.	your or yours,	<i>vóstri</i> , m.	<i>vóstre</i> , f.
<i>súo</i> , m.	<i>súa</i> , f. }	their or theirs,	{ <i>suói,*</i> m.	<i>súe</i> , f.
<i>lóro</i> , m. & f.	}		{ <i>lóro</i> , m. & f.	

<i>il mio légno</i> ,	my bark ;
<i>la túa figliolétta</i> ,	thy little daughter ;
<i>i suói avversáry</i> ,	their adversaries ;
<i>le nóstre pómppe</i> ,	our pomps ;
<i>il lóro andáre</i> ,	their deportment ;
<i>le lóro parole</i> ,	their words.

*Mio*, *túo*, *súo*, *nóstro*, *vóstro*, and *lóro*, are sometimes used with the article substantively,—*il mio*, *il túo*, *il súo*, &c.; and then the word *avére*, ‘property’, is understood; and they are equivalent to ‘my property’, ‘thy property’, &c.; as,

<i>mángi DEL SÚO</i> ,	let him eat of his own [proper-
<i>non mangerà DEL NÓSTRO</i> ,	he will not eat of ours. [ty ;]

\* Poets for the sake of Rhyme, often use *núí*, *vúí*, instead of *nói*, ‘we’; *vói*, ‘you’. This license is extended also to *tuói*, *suói*, which in poetry are often changed into *túí*, ‘thy or thine’; *súí*, ‘his, her, hers or its’; their or theirs’; as,

“*Di rádo—Incóntra*,” *mi rispóse*,  
 “*che, ái nú’i—Fáccia ’l cammíno alcún*,  
*per quál io vádo.—Ver’ è, ch’ áltra*  
*fáta quaggiú fu’i,—Congiuráto da*  
*quella Eritón crúda,—Che richiamáva*  
*l’ómbre á’ córpi su’i.”* (Dant. Inf. 9.)

“Seldom happens,” replied he to me, “that any one of us goes through the way, which I am going. But I was there below once before, conjured by that cruel Erichtho, who recalled the shades to their bodies.”

*Tósto ch’ al pié délla súa tómba fu’i*,  
*—Guardómmi un póco, e pói quási*  
*ságnóso—Mi dimandò: “Chi fur’ ù*  
*maggiór tui.”* (Dant. Inf. 10.)

As soon as I reached the foot of his tomb, he looked at me awhile, and then, almost with contempt, he asked me: “Who were thy ancestors.”

*Nói udiremo e parleremo a vu’i.*  
 (Dant. Inf. 5.)

We will hear and speak to you.

*Mièi, tuói, nóstri,* and *lòro*, are also used substantively,—*i mièi, i tuói, i suói, i nóstri, i lòro*; and then the word *parénti*, ‘relations’; *amíci*, ‘friends’; *compágni*, ‘companions’; *familiári*, ‘domestics’; *soldáti*, ‘soldiers’; or *seguáci*, ‘followers’, is understood; and they are equivalent to ‘my relations’, ‘thy friends’, ‘his companions’, ‘our domestics’, ‘your soldiers’, ‘their followers’; as,

*incóntra Á’ MIÉI,*  
*pregáto DÁ’ SUÓI,*

against my relations;  
requested by his friends.

Possessive pronouns are sometimes expressed by the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, gli, le,* &c., and we say ‘*ME’lo préndo in bráccia*, instead of *lo préndo nelle MI’E bráccia*, ‘I take him in my arms’; *LE si gittò ái piédi*, instead of *si gittò ái suói piédi*, ‘he threw himself at her feet’; &c.; as,

*MI si strúgge il cuore,*

my heart melts;

*GLI si gittò al còllo,*

she threw herself on his neck;

*SI lasciò cascár l’uncino,*

he let his hook fall.

To avoid the ambiguity which in many instances would arise, in Italian, from the indiscriminate use of the possessive pronouns *súo, sua, suói, sue*; when these pronouns do not relate to the *subject* of the proposition, they are changed for the personal pronouns *di lui, di lei*, ‘of him,’ ‘of her’. Thus in the phrase ‘John loves Peter and his children,’ if the pronoun *his* relates to *John*, the *subject* of the proposition, it is expressed by *i suói*; as, *Giovánni áma Piétro e i suói figliuóli*, ‘John loves Peter and his [John’s] children’; but if *his* does not relate to *John*, but to *Peter*, the *object* of the proposition, then it is expressed by *i di lui*; as, *Giovánni áma Piétro e i di lui figliuóli*, ‘John loves Peter and his [Peter’s] children’:

*mandò ad uccidere súo*  
*pádre,*

he sent to kill his father [the father of him who sent];

*sua sorélla e i figli di*  
*LEI,*

her sister and her children [the children of her sister].

The pronouns *suo, sua, suoi, sue*, are very often expressed by *lui, di lei*, even in cases when no ambiguity would arise; as,

*la ingratitude di lui*, his ingratitude;  
*alla casa di lei*, to her house.

Possessive pronouns are generally varied with the *positions and articles*.

## E X A M P L E S .

*Diétro al mío LÉGNO, che can-*  
*do várca.* (Dant. Par. 2.) Behind my bark, which singing  
cuts its way.

*Se tu ti conténti di lasciáre ap-*  
*résso di me quésta TÚA FIGLIO-*  
*ÉTTA, io la prenderò volentieri.*  
 Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.) If thou art willing to leave with  
 me this little daughter of thine, I  
 will take her with pleasure.

*A lli tribúni párve luógo e tém-*  
*po d'assáire I SUÓI AVVERSÁRJ.*  
 Liv. dec. 3.) This appeared to the tribunes a  
 proper place and time to assail their  
 adversaries.

*Pássan vóstri triónfi, e VÓSTRE*  
*ÓMPE.* (Petr. cap. 11.) Your triumphs and your pomps  
 pass away.

*Non umán veraménte ma diví-*  
*—LOR ANDÁR éra, e LOR sán-te*  
*ARÓLE.* (Petr. Trionf.) Their deportment and their holy  
 words truly were not human, but  
 divine.

*Or MÁNGI DEL SÚO, s'égli ne ha,*  
*è DEL NÓSTRO NON MANGERÀ*  
*di li.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.) Let him eat of his own property,  
 if he has any, for he will not eat  
 of ours.

*Perchè quel pópolo è sì émpio—*  
*cóntra Á' MIÉI in ciascúna súa*  
*legge.* (Dant. Inf. c. 10.) Why is that people so fell against  
 my kin in all their laws.

*Vássene, pregáto DÁ' SUÓI, a*  
*Chiássi.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.) He goes to Chiassi at the re-  
 quest of his friends.

*Nel pensárló MI SI STRÚGGE IL*  
*CORÉ.* (Maff. Mer. 4. 7.) In thinking of it my heart melts.

*Piangéndo GLI SI GITTÒ AL*  
*COLLO.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.) Weeping, she threw herself on  
 his neck.

*SI LASCIÒ CASCÁR L' UNCÍNO*  
*piédi.* (Dant. Inf. 21.) He let the hook fall at his feet.

*Égli lo MANDÒ AD UCCÍDERE*  
*il PÁDRE.* (Class.) He sent him to kill his father,  
 [the father of him who sent.]

*Mia madre ama egualmente  
sua sorella, e i figli di lei.*  
(Crusca.)

My mother loves equally her  
sister, and her children, [the chil-  
dren of her sister.]

*Avendo riguardo alla ingra-  
titudine di lui verso mia ma-  
dre mostrata.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Considering his ingratitude  
shown towards my mother.

*Cominciò a ripararsi vicino al-  
la casa di lei.* (Bocc. g. 2. n.  
8.)

He began to resort near her  
house.

### EXERCISE XII.

He loved more (the) my life than (the) your  
amò più vita

benevolence. Fearing that he | should be | reprehended,  
*benevolenza. Temendo — — | non fosse | ripreso,*

he kept (the) his love concealed as much as he  
— *teneva*<sup>6</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> *amore*<sup>5</sup> *nascoso*<sup>7</sup> — — <sup>1</sup> —

could. Since thou art my friend, I will show it  
*potèva.*<sup>2</sup> *Perchè* *sèi* *amico,* *insegnerò*<sup>3</sup> *la*<sup>1</sup>

to thee. (The) thy virtue is great, and known  
<sup>2</sup> *virtù è molto, e conosciuto*

| every where. | In coming out (from) the church  
*per tutto.* | — *Uscendo* *chiesa*

he saw this count, and (the) his little children, who  
— *vide questo conte, e figliuolo,*

asked alms. She refused to be familiar with  
*addomandavano*<sup>2</sup> *limosina*<sup>1</sup>. *rifutava* — — — —

him—(the) (his familiarity.) The holy Friar, who had  
— *dimestichezza.* *santo Frate,* *avea*<sup>2</sup>

confessed him, having ascended | (on) | the pulpit,  
*confessato*<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> — *salito* | *in su* | *pergamo*

began to preach wonderful things of him, and  
*cominciò*<sup>3</sup> *a*<sup>20</sup> *predicare*<sup>21</sup> *maravigliosa*<sup>18</sup> *cosa*<sup>19</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *e*<sup>4</sup>

of (the) his life, of (the) his fastings, of (the) his  
<sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *vita*<sup>7</sup>, <sup>8</sup> <sup>9</sup> *digiuno*<sup>10</sup>, <sup>11</sup> <sup>12</sup>

simplicity, and of (the) his innocence. I often observed  
*semplicità*<sup>13</sup>, *e*<sup>14</sup> <sup>15</sup> <sup>16</sup> *innocenza.*<sup>17</sup> *spesso mirava*



how much the sun had run of (the) his luminous  
*quánto* <sup>2</sup> *sóle*<sup>3</sup> *avésse*<sup>1</sup> *trascórso*<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *luminóso*<sup>8</sup>

journey. But what | shall we say | to those who  
*viaggio*.<sup>7</sup> *Ma* | *dirémo nói* | *colóro*

feel so much pity | for | (the) my hunger? The  
*hámmo*<sup>5</sup> *cotánto*<sup>6</sup> *compassióne*<sup>7</sup> | *di*<sup>1</sup> | <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *fáme*<sup>4</sup>?

public places of Rome are full of ancient likenesses  
*público*<sup>2</sup> *luógo*<sup>1</sup> *Róma son piéno* *ántica* *immáginé*

of (the) my ancestors. It is not my intention | to |  
*maggióre.* — *è*<sup>2</sup> *Non*<sup>1</sup> *intenzióne* | *di* |

explain | at | present, that which the laws of (the)  
*spiegáre* | *al* | *présente, quéllo* *légge*

friendship demand. I | did not seek | | to | attach  
*amicízia* *vógliono.* *I* | *non cercáí* | | *di* | *impórre*

any blemish to the honesty, and to the purity of  
*alcúno mácola* *onestà,* *e* *chiarézza*

(the) your blood. Who could reply to (the) your  
*sángue.* *Who* *could* *reply* *to* *(the)* *your*  
*saprébbe rispóndere*

wise words? In (the) happiness they are unhappy,  
*sávio paróla?* *In* *(the)* *félicità* — *sóno mísero,*

in (the) riches poor, and in (the) their adventures  
*ricchézza méndico,* *e* *ventúra*

unfortunate.  
*sciaguráto.*

The lady then said to that one: "Come, and  
*dónna allóra*<sup>4</sup> *dísse*<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *colúí*<sup>3</sup> : " *Viéni,* *e*

ask thy property—(the) (thine). I have not deceived you  
*dománda* — — — — — *ho*<sup>3</sup> *non*<sup>1</sup> *ingannáto*<sup>4</sup> <sup>2</sup>

| to | rob you of your property—(the) (yours). Not only  
*per* | *tór* — — — — — *Non solaménte*

hast thou gambled my property—(the) (mine), but thou hast  
*m'hái* — — — — — *giuocáto* — — — — — *ma* — — — — — *háí*<sup>3</sup>

also prevented (the) my going. He | astonished |  
*sópra*<sup>1</sup> *ciò*<sup>2</sup> *impedito* *andáta.* — | *Féce maravigliáre* |

| his | father, and all (the) his relations, and every  
*il* | *pádre,* *e* *tútti* — — — — — *e* *cias-*

one else who knew him. Minghino with (the) his com-  
*cún* *áltro* *conoscéva*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>.

panions concealed himself in the house of a friend  
*ripóse*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup> in *cása* *amíco*<sup>2</sup>

of his. Cimon, who had already descended with  
<sup>1</sup> *Cimóne*, *éra*<sup>4</sup> *già*<sup>1</sup> *disceso*<sup>5</sup>

(the) his troops, | had determined | | to | flee | into |  
<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *avéa* *préso* *consiglio* | | *di* | *fuggíre* | *in* |

some neighbouring wood.  
*alcúno* *vicíno*<sup>2</sup> *sélva*<sup>1</sup>.

| Feigning | not | to | know him, | she  
*Fátto* *sembiánte* | *non*<sup>2</sup> | *di*<sup>1</sup> | *conóscer* , | *si* *póse* *a*  
sat | at his—(to him at the) feet. I set in  
*sedére*<sup>2</sup> | — — <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> *piéde* . *pósi*<sup>2</sup> —

my—(to me in the) heart | to | give thee that which  
— <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> — *cuóre* | *di* | *dár* *quéllo*

thou wentest seeking, and I have given it to thee.  
*andávi* *cercándo*, *e* — *diédi* <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>.

Perótto recognised him, and weeping threw himself  
*riconóbbe*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, *e* *piangéndo* *gittó*<sup>3</sup> *si*<sup>2</sup>

at his—(to him at the) feet, and embraced him, saying :  
— — <sup>1</sup> <sup>4</sup> *piéde*, — *e* *abbracciò* *llo*, *dicéndo* :

“My father!” Tedáldo speaks with the woman, and  
“*mío*<sup>2</sup> *Pádre* !”<sup>1</sup> *párla* *dónna*, *e*

frees her husband—(the husband of her) from death.  
*libera* — — *maríto* *mórte*.

He sent him to kill his father—(the father of him  
*mandò*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *ad* *uccídere* *pádre* — — — —

who sent). My father loves his brother, and his  
— — *pádre* *áma* *fratéllo*, *e* —

children—(the children of him—his brother).  
— — *fíglío* — —

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Singular.

<i>Quésto</i> , m.	<i>quésta</i> , f.	this ;
<i>quéllo</i> , m.	<i>quélla</i> , f.	that ;
<i>cotésto</i> , m.	<i>cotésta</i> , f.	} that near you ;
or <i>codésto</i> , m.	<i>codésta</i> , f.	
<i>costúi</i> , m.	he, this man ;	<i>costéi</i> , f. she, this woman.
<i>colúi</i> , m.	he, that man ;	<i>coléi</i> , f. she, that woman.
<i>cotestúi</i> , or	{ he, the or that } man near you.	{ <i>cotestéi</i> , or } { she, the or that wo- } { <i>codestéi</i> , f. } man near you.
<i>codestúi</i> , m.		

Plural.

<i>Quésti</i> , m.	<i>quéste</i> , f.	these.
<i>quéllici</i> , m.	<i>quélle</i> , f.	those.
<i>cotésti</i> , m.	<i>cotéste</i> , f.	} those near you.
or <i>codésti</i> , m.	<i>codéste</i> , f.	
<i>costóro</i> , m. & f.		they, these men, these women.
<i>colóro</i> , m. & f.		they, those men, those women.
<i>cotestóro</i> , or		{ they, the or those men near you, } { those women near you.
<i>codestóro</i> , m. & f.		

*Esto*, *ésta*, for *quésto*, *quésta*, 'this,' have become obsolete.

*Quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, may be used in speaking of both persons and things ; *costúi*, *colúi*, and *cotestúi* or *codestúi*, denote persons only.

*Quésto* and *costúi* are employed to point out an object near the person speaking ; *cotésto* or *codésto*, and *cotestúi* or *codestúi*, to point out an object near the person spoken to ; and *quéllo* and *colúi*, to point out an object at a distance from both the person speaking and the person spoken to ; \* as,

\* From the pronouns *quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, some derive the adverbs *quí* or *quá*, *colí* or *colá*, *costí* or *costá*, which are used to designate a place, according to the rule already given for the use of the pronouns ; saying, *quí* or *quá*, 'there,' in pointing out a place near the person speaking ; *costí* or *costá*, 'there near you,' in pointing out a place near the person spoken to ; and *colí* or *colá*, 'there,' in pointing out a place at a distance both from the person speaking and the person spoken to.— (The rule is correct ; but as to the derivation, it appears to us, that the pronoun *quésto* is derived from the adverb *quí* and the pronoun *ésto*, *qu(i)ésto*, and the pronoun *quéllo* from the adverb *quí* and the pronoun *élló*, *qu(i)élló* ; rather than that *quí* is derived from *quésto* or *quéllo*.)

QUÉSTO <i>denáro,</i>	this money ;
QUÉLLA [ <i>dónna,</i> ]	that lady ;
COTÉSTI <i>pánni,</i>	those clothes ;
COSTÉI* <i>è un sóle,</i>	this woman is like a sun.
COLÚI <i>che ne invia,</i>	that man who sends us.
<i>battéte</i> COTESTÓRO,*	beat those [boys].

This rule is equally observed, when the pronouns *quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, point out an abstract substance, or a thing which is in the person speaking, the person spoken to, or the person spoken of ; as,

QUÉSTI <i>sospiri,</i>	these sighs ;
QUÉLLA <i>allegrézza,</i>	that merriment ;
COTÉSTE <i>paróle,</i>	those words.

*Quéllo*, followed by a noun beginning with a *vowel* drops the *o* and takes an apostrophe in its stead ; and followed by a noun beginning with *any consonant* but *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, drops its last syllable. Followed by a noun beginning with a *vowel*, *z*, or *s* followed by another consonant, in the plural it makes *quégli* ; as,

QUÉL <i>possénte è Ércole,</i>	that powerful one is Hercules ;
QUELL' <i>áltro è Demofónte,</i>	the other is Demophoön ;
QUÉGLI <i>ángeli,</i>	those angels ;
QUÉGLI <i>spíriti,</i>	those spirits.

*Quélli*, followed by a word beginning with a consonant, is contracted into *quéi*, and often written *qué'* ; as,

QUÉI <i>dólcí lúmi,</i>	those sweet lights ;
QUÉ' <i>compágni,</i>	those companions.

*Quésta*, followed by the nouns *matína* or *máne*, 'morning' ; *séra*, 'evening' ; *nótte*, 'night' ; often drops the first syllable, and forms with them a single word ; as,

<i>quésta matína,</i>	STAMÁTTINA,	} this morning ;
or <i>quésta máne,</i>	STAMÁNE,	
<i>quésta séra,</i>	STASÉRA,	this evening ;
<i>quésta nótte,</i>	STANÓTTE,	to-night, or last night.

\* Observe, that after the pronouns *costui*, *colui*, *cotestui* or *codestui*, &c. we never use the substantive *uómo*, 'man', or *dónna*, 'woman', in the feminine ; and do not say *costui uómo*, *coléi dónna* ; but simply *costui*, for 'this man' ; *coléi*, for 'that woman' ; &c. : *costui*, *colui*, *cotestui*, &c., containing in themselves both the adjective pronouns *quésto*, *quéllo*, *cotésto*, &c., and the substantive pronoun *lui*, or *léi* in the feminine, &c.—*costui* or *quésto lui*, 'this man' ; *coléi* or *quélle léi*, 'that woman' ; &c.

*Quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*, are often used substantively, and then they are equivalent to *quésta cosa*, 'this thing'; *quéllo cosa*, 'that thing'; &c. as,

*udito QUE'STO* (or *quésta* having heard this (or this thing);  
*cósa*),

*COTE'STO* (or *cotésta cosa*) that (or that thing) ought not to  
*non si vorrébbe fare,* be done.

We say sometimes *in quésto*, *in quésta*, *in quéllo*, *in quélla*, and then the words *istánte*, 'instant'; *moménto stéssó*, 'very moment'; *óra stéssa*, 'very hour'; *occasione stéssa*, 'very occasion'; are understood; and *in quésto*, *in quélla*, are equivalent to 'in this very moment,' 'in that very hour'; &c. as,

*IN QUÉSTO* *soppravnénne la* at this very instant came the  
*fénte,* servant;

*vidi IN QUE'LLA* *úna náve* I saw at that very moment a  
*picciolétta,* rather small bark.

*Quéllo*, in speaking of a city, territory, country, &c., is equivalent to *città*, *território*, *paése*, &c.; as,

*QUÉL di Perúgia,* the territory of Perugia;

*QUÉL di Bérgamo,* the country of Bergamo.

We very often use *quésti*, *quégli*, and *cotésti* or *codésti*, in the singular, in speaking of persons, but in the subjective only; and then *quésti* is equivalent to *quest' uómo*, 'this man'; *quégli*, to *quell' uómo*, 'that man'; *cotésti*, to *cotest' uómo*, 'that man near you'; as,

*QUÉSTI è il mio Signóre,* this is my master;

*QUÉGLI è Cáco,* that is Cacus;

*COTÉSTI, che ancór vive,* that one who is yet alive.

When *quégli* is so used, in the plural, it makes *quéglino* (*quégli uómini*), 'those men.'

*Quégli* followed by a word beginning with a consonant is, like *quelli*, contracted into *quéi*, and often written *qué*'; as,

*QUÉI che fu presénte,* he who was present;

*QUÉ' rispóse,* that one answered.

*Quésto* and *quéllo*, and *quésti* and *quégli*, sometimes serve to denote two objects already spoken of; *quésto* and *questi* being used for the near, and *quéllo* and *quégli* for the distant object; and then they correspond to the English expressions *the latter* and *the former*; as,

QUÉSTI *si credono aver dagli iddii il ministéro* the latter think to derive their ministry from the gods, the  
 QUÉLLI *il segreto,* former, their secret;

QUÉGLI *vuole, che io ti perdóni, e QUÉSTI, che in te in-crudelísca,* the former demands that I should pardon thee, the latter that I should be cruel with thee.

To the above demonstrative pronouns may be added *ciò*, 'this or that'; which is equivalent to *quésto*, *quéllo*, and *cotésto* or *codésto*; in the signification of *quésta*, *quéllo*, or *cotésta* or *codésta cosa*, 'this, that, or that thing near you'; but it never refers to a person; as,

ciò *ch' io ne sento,* that which I think of it;  
*ch' è ciò che tu di?* what is that which thou sayest?  
*ciò udito,* having heard this [thing.]

The Italian expressions, *ciò che*, *quésto che*, *quéllo che*, generally correspond to the English pronoun *what*, used in the signification of 'this which' or 'that which'; as,

ciò CHE *tu hai a fare,* what thou hast to do;  
 QUÉLLO CHE *diceva Adriáno,* what Adrian said.

Demonstrative pronouns are varied with the *prepositions only*.

Sometimes the preposition *di*, 'of,' is suppressed before the pronouns *costúí*, *colúí*, and *cotestúí* or *codestúí*, and the pronouns are put before the noun with which they are connected; as,

*al costúí témpo* (for *al témpo* in the time of this one;  
*DI costúí*),

*për lo COLÚI consìglio (for per lo consìglio DI COLÚI),* by the counsel of that one ;  
*per le COSTÓRO ópere (for per le ópere DI COSTÓRO),* for the deeds of those.

EXAMPLES.

*Signóra, tenéte QUÉSTO DENÁRO.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.) Madam, take this money.

*Le mie nótti fa trístè, e i giòrni oscúri—QUÉLLA, che n'ha portáto i pensíer miéi.* (Petr. s. 250.) That lady who has taken away my thoughts makes my nights sad, and my days gloomy.

*Veggéndovi COTÉSTI PÁNNI, vi ho credúto lúí.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) Seeing you with those clothes, I took you for him.

*Così COSTÉI ch' è tra le dónne UN SÓLE.* (Petr. s. 9.) Thus this woman, who is like a sun amongst the other women.

*La dónna, che COLÚI CHE a te NE INVÍA—Spéssò dal sónno la- grimándo désta.* (Petr. s. 8.) The lady, who often wakens from his sleep, weeping, him who sends us to thee.

*Perchè BATTÉTE vói COTESTÓRO?* (Nov. ant. 45.) Why do you beat those boys ?

*Che fánno méco omái QUÉSTI sospíri,—Che nascéan di dolóre?* (Petr. c. 33.) What do these sighs which sprung from grief do now with me?

*Io giudicheréi ottimaménte fáto, che quélla fésta, QUÉLLA ALLEGRÉZZA, che nói potéssimo, prendéssimo.* (Bocc. Introd.) I should think it very well done that we should take that enjoyment—that merriment, which we could.

*Vói mi paréte úomo di Dío, cóme díte vói COTÉSTE PARÓLE?* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.) You appear to me to be a man of God, how do you say those words?

*Colúí ch' è séco è QUÉL POSSÉNTE e fórte ÉRCOLE, QUELL' ÁLTRO DEMOFÓNTE.* (Petr. Tr. Am.) That one who is with him, is that powerful and strong Hercules, the other is Demophoön.

*QUÉGLI ÁNGELI, e QUÉGLI SPÍRITI.* (Cinon. t. 4.) Those angels and those spirits.

*QUÉI DÓLCI LÚMI—S'acquístan per ventúra, e non per ártè.* (Petr. s. 224.) Those sweet lights are acquired by good luck and not by art.

*E cosí la portò a QUÉ' suói COMPÁGNI.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 2.) And thus he carried her to those companions of his.

*Di quèsto dì STAMATTÌNA sarò  
io tenuto a voi.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Of this of this morning I am indebted to you.

*STAMÁNE éra un fanciúollo, e or  
son vécchio.* (Petr. c. 11.)

This morning I was a boy, and now I am an old man.

*Égli ci è STASÉRA venúto un dé'  
suoi fratélli.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

There came this evening one of her brothers.

*Ubbriáco, fastidióso, tu non c'  
entrerái STANÓTTE.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

Drunkard, troublesome man, thou wilt not enter there to-night.

UDÍTO QUÉSTO. (Petr. Tr. Tem.)

Having heard this.

*Figliuóla mía, COTÉSTO NON  
SI VORRÉBBE FÁRE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

My daughter, that ought not to be done.

*IN QUÉSTO LA FÁNTE di léi  
SOPPRAVVÉNNE.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

At this very instant her servant came in.

*Com' i' VÍDI ÚNA NÁVE PICCIO-  
LÉTTA—Venír per l' ácqua vérsò  
noi IN QUÉLLA.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

As I saw at that very moment coming through the water towards us a rather small bark.

*PASSÁNDO per QUÉLLO DI PE-  
RÚGIA.* (Stor. Pist. 50.)

Passing through the territory of Perugia.

*QUÉSTI È IL MÍO SIGNÓRE,  
quèsti veraménte è Messér Toréllò.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

This is my master, this is truly Master Torello.

*QUÉGLI È CÁCO—Che sótto il  
sáso di mónte Aventino,—Di sán-  
gue féce spésse vólte láco.* (Dant. Inf. 25.)

That is Cacus, who oftentimes shed lakes of blood under the rock of Mount Aventine.

*COTÉSTI, CHE ANCÓR VÍVE, e  
non si nóma,—Guardaré' io per  
vedér, s' il conóscò.* (Dant. Par. 11.)

I should like to look at that one, who is still alive and does not tell who he is, to see whether I know him.

*QUÉGLINO rivoléano i lóro strác-  
ci.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 2.)

Those ones wanted again their rags.

*E dísse cóse—Incredíbili a QUÉI,  
CHE FU PRESENTE.* (Dant. Par. 17.)

And said things incredible to him who was present.

*QUÉ' RISPÓSE: "Io sóno cadú-  
to in úna fósso."* (Nov. ant. 36.)

That one answered: "I have fallen into a ditch."

*Non solaménte il pópòlo, ma i  
nóbili, e i sacerdoti: QUÉSTI SI  
CRÉDONO AVÉR DÁGLI IDDÍI IL  
MINISTÉRO, QUÉLLI IL SEGRÉTO.* (Dav. Germ.)

Not only the people, but the noblemen, and the priests: the latter think to derive their ministry from the gods, the former, their secret.



QUÉGLI VUÓLE, CHE ÍO TI PER-  
DÓNI, E QUÉSTI CHE, *cóntro a mía*  
*nátúra, IN TE INCRUDELÍSCA.*—  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

*A volérvene díre CIÒ CH' ÍO NE*  
*SÉNTO.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

*Va vía, figliuólo, CH' È CIÒ,*  
*CHE TU DI'?* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

*CIÒ UDÍTO si addolorávano gli*  
*aiúti, e fremévano i nóstri.* (Dav.  
Stor. 1. 2.)

*Tu sái ben CIÒ CHE TU HÁI A*  
*FÁRE.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

*L' óste udéndo quéllo che la*  
*dónna dicéva, e QUÉLLO CHE DI-*  
*CÉVA ADRIÁNO; cominciò a cré-*  
*dere, che Pinuccio sognásse.*—  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

AL COSTÚI TÉMPO. (Giov. Vill.)

PER LO COLÚI CONSÍGLIO.  
(Bocc.)

PER LE COSTÓRO ÓPERE. (Bocc.  
g. 5. n. 1.)

The former demands that I  
should pardon thee, and the latter  
that, against my nature, I should  
be cruel with thee.

To tell you that which I think  
of it.

Away with thee, my son, what  
is that which thou sayest?

Having heard this the auxiliary  
troops were grieved, and our own  
were in a rage.

Thou knowest well what thou  
hast to do.

The host hearing what the lady  
said, and what Adrian said, began  
to believe that Pinuccio was  
dreaming.

In the time of this one.

By the counsel of that one.

For the deeds of those.

EXERCISE XIII.

This sin is that which (the) divine justice has  
*peccáto è* *divino giustízia ha<sup>2</sup>*

not wished to leave unpunished. May God grant  
*non<sup>1</sup> volúto lasciáre impuníto.* — *Dío díá<sup>2</sup>*

you that joy, and that good which you desire.  
*<sup>1</sup> allegrézza, e* *béne* *desideráte.*

What is that secret of which you speak? At this  
*è* *secréto* — *parláte?* *A*

none dared | to | answer. That was a trifling  
*niúno ardí* | *di* | *rispóndere.* *fu* — *pícciolo*

thing, and thou didst well to do with it what thou  
*cósa, e — facésti béne a fár ne —*  
 didst (with it). There was in that court this usage.  
*facésti<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>. — Éra córte usánza.*

Passing by the cell of this one, he heard the  
*Passándo davánti célula, — senti*

noise which they—(these ones) made together. He  
*schiamázzo — facévano<sup>2</sup> insiém<sup>1</sup>.*

| did not work | at all, but a thousand times | a |  
*| non lavoráva | púnto, ma — vólta | il |*  
 day, he would run to the window | to | see this  
*dì, — corréva finéstra | per | vedére*

woman. It appeared to him to be safe, and out  
*— párce<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> éssere sicúro, e fuór*  
 of the hands of those who had taken him.  
*máno avévano<sup>3</sup> préso<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>*

Those ones make me enter here | to | deceive  
*fánno<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> entráre<sup>4</sup> ci<sup>2</sup> | per | ingannár*  
 me. Having departed from that one with (the) whom  
*Partitosi*

he had been so long, | he came | | to | England.  
*— éra<sup>2</sup> státo<sup>3</sup> lungaménte<sup>1</sup> | séne venne | in | Inghiltérra.*

I will pay thee | for | this time, and | for |  
*pagherò<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> | di | vólta, e | di |*  
 that. I have heard what you have spoken of me.  
*ho intéso — avéte<sup>4</sup> ragionáto<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>*

And on this occasion | he perceived | | that he had |  
*Ed — s' accórse | | avére |*  
 a very beautiful woman for a wife. | Dost thou  
*béllo dónna — móglie. | Non ódi*

not hear | what he says? This one is the arch-  
*tu | díce? archi-*  
 bishop Ruggéri. That one is Brutus. Conceiving  
*véscovo . é Brúto. Prendéndo*

a sudden hope of being able to return once more  
*— súbita speránza potére ritornáre<sup>5</sup> ancóra<sup>1</sup>*

in the royal state, | by | the counsel of that one.  
<sup>2</sup> *reále*<sup>4</sup> *státo*<sup>3</sup>, | *per* | *consiglio*<sup>2</sup> — <sup>1</sup>

All those who believe so are deceived. In Cyprus  
*Tútti* *crédono*<sup>2</sup> *così*<sup>1</sup> *sóno* *ingannáti*. *Cípri*

and in Rhodes the rumors and the disturbances  
*e* *Ródi* <sup>2</sup> *rumóre*<sup>3</sup> *e*<sup>4</sup> *disturbaménto*<sup>5</sup><sup>6</sup>

were great, and lasted a long time | through | the  
*fúrono*<sup>1</sup> *gránde*<sup>7</sup>, *e* — — *lúngo* *témpo* | *per* |

deeds of these ones.  
*ópera*<sup>2</sup> — <sup>1</sup>.



## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Of indefinite pronouns, the following are used only in the singular, and cannot be put before nouns in the plural number :

<i>qualche</i> , m. & f.	some, any ;
<i>ógni</i> , m. & f.	all, every ;
<i>chiúnque</i> , m. & f.	} whoever, whosoever ;
<i>chisivógliá</i> , m. & f.	
<i>chi che</i> , m. & f.	
<i>chicchessia</i> , m. & f.	} whatever, whatsoever ;
<i>che che</i> , m. & f.	
<i>hecchessia</i> , m. & f.	
<i>qualúnque</i> , m. & f.	} whosoever, whatsoever ;
<i>qualsivógliá</i> , m. & f.	
<i>qualsisia</i> , m. & f.	
<i>núlla</i> , m. & f.	} nothing.
<i>niénte</i> , m. & f.	

<i>úno</i> , m.	<i>úna</i> , f.	one ;
<i>unáltro</i> , m.	<i>unáltra</i> , f.	another ;
<i>qualcúno</i> , m.	<i>qualcúna</i> , f.	} some, some one, some body ;
<i>qualchedúno</i> , m.	<i>qualchedúna</i> , f.	

<i>ognùno</i> , m.	<i>ognùna</i> , f.	} every one, every body ;
<i>ciascùno</i> , m.	<i>ciascùna</i> , f.	
<i>ciaschedùno</i> , m.	<i>ciaschedùna</i> , f.	
<i>verùno</i> , m.	<i>verùna</i> , f.	} no one, nobody.
<i>nessùno</i> , m.	<i>nessùna</i> , f.	
or <i>nissùno</i> , m.	<i>nissùna</i> , f.	
<i>neùno</i> , m.	<i>neùna</i> , f.	
or <i>niùno</i> , m.	<i>niùna</i> , f.	
<i>nùllo</i> , m.	<i>nùlla</i> , f.	

## EXCEPTIONS.

*O'gni*, before numeral adjectives, as in the phrases *ògni dùe mèsi*, 'every two months'; *ògni sei pàgine*, 'every six pages'; *ògni diéci soldàti*, 'every ten soldiers'; and in the word *ognissànti*, 'the day of All-saints'; is used with nouns in the plural.

*Qualche* has been used, by some writers, with nouns in the plural, as, *qualche vèrdi bòschi*, 'some green woods'; but such examples are not to be imitated.

The following are used in both numbers :

Singular.		Plural.	
<i>tàle</i> , m. & f.	such ;	<i>táli</i> , m. & f.	such ;
<i>cotàle</i> , m. & f.	{ such, such one ;	<i>cotáli</i> , m. & f.	{ such, such ones ;
<i>alcùno</i> , m.	{ some, some one, some body.	<i>alcùni</i> , m.	{ some, some ones ;
<i>alcùna</i> , f.		<i>alcùne</i> , f.	
<i>talùno</i> , m.		<i>talùni</i> , m.	
<i>talùna</i> , f.		<i>talùne</i> , f.	
<i>cérto</i> , m.	{ certain ;	<i>cérti</i> , m.	{ certain ;
<i>cérta</i> , f.		<i>cérte</i> , f.	
<i>stéssò</i> , m.	{ same ;	<i>stéssi</i> , m.	{ same ;
<i>stéssa</i> , f.		<i>stéssè</i> , f.	
<i>medésimo</i> , m.		<i>medésimi</i> , m.	
<i>medésima</i> , f.		<i>medésime</i> , f.	

<i>altro</i> , m.	} other ;	<i>altri</i> , m.	} others ;
<i>altra</i> , f.		<i>altre</i> , f.	
<i>tutto</i> , m.	} all ;	<i>tutti</i> , m.	} all, every one, every body ;
<i>tutta</i> , f.		<i>tutte</i> , f.	
<i>alquanto</i> , m.	} a little, somewhat ;	<i>alquanti</i> , m.	} a few, not many ;
<i>alquanta</i> , f.		<i>alquante</i> , f.	
<i>tanto</i> , m.	} so much ;	<i>tanti</i> , m.	} as many ;
<i>tanta</i> , f.		<i>tante</i> , f.	
<i>cotanto</i> , m.		<i>cotanti</i> , m.	
<i>cotanta</i> , f.		<i>cotante</i> , f.	
<i>altrettanto</i> , m.	} as much, as much more ;	<i>altrettanti</i> , m.	} as many, as many more ;
<i>altrettanta</i> , f.		<i>altrettante</i> , f.	
<i>poco</i> , m.	} a little, a few ;	<i>pochi</i> , m.	} few ;
<i>poca</i> , f.		<i>pocche</i> , f.	
<i>molto</i> , m.	} much ;	<i>molti</i> , m.	} many ;
<i>molta</i> , f.		<i>molte</i> , f.	
<i>troppo</i> , m.	} too much ;	<i>troppi</i> , m.	} too many.
<i>troppa</i> , f.		<i>troppe</i> , f.	

---

*Chiunque*, *chisivógli*, *chi che*, *chicchessia*, *qualcuno*, *qualcheduno*, *ognúnσ*, *taluno*, are applied to persons only ; the others may be applied both to persons and things.

---

*Nulla*, *niénte*, ‘nothing,’ mean also ‘some or any thing,’ and *nessuno* or *nissuno*, *neuno* or *niuno*, *veruno*, ‘nothing, no one, nobody,’ mean also ‘some or any thing, any one, any body’ ; as,

<i>s' ella viól</i> NÚLLA,	if she wants any thing ;
<i>se égli si sentisse</i> NIÉNTE,	if he felt any thing ;
<i>non rimarrébbe a sostenér</i> <i>péna</i> NESSÚNA,	there would not remain any punishment to suffer ;
<i>se va in</i> NIÚN luógo,	if he goes to any place ;
<i>s' égli ha bontáte</i> VERÚNA,	if he has any good quality.

*Alcúno*, ‘some,’ is sometimes used instead of *niúno*, ‘nothing, no one’; as,

*chè ALCÚNA glória avrébbero*, for they would derive no glory ;  
*che ALCÚNA viá darébbe*, which would afford no way.

*A'ltro* is sometimes used instead of *altra cósá*, ‘some or any thing else’; as,

*avrésti détto ÁLTRO* ; thou wouldst have said some-  
 thing else ;

*háí fáttö ÁLTRO ?* hast thou done any thing else ?

*A'ltri* is often used in the singular, in speaking of persons ; and then it is equivalent to *altr' uómo*, ‘another man,’ or ‘another person,’ ‘others’; as,

*nè vói, nè ÁLTRI potrà dire ch' io non l' ábbia vedúta*, neither you nor any other man  
 can say that I have not seen  
 it ;

*per non fidármene ad ÁLTRI*, not to trust to other persons.

When *áltri* is thus used, in any other *relation*, than the subjective or the objective, it is changed into *altrúi*; as,

*ho détto mále d' ALTRÚI*, I have spoken ill of another ;

*le presteréi ad ALTRÚI*, I would lend them to others ;

*che io da ALTRÚI non sia udíto*, that I should not be heard by  
 any other person.

*A'ltri* is also used in a distributive sense, and then it corresponds to the English pronouns *one — another* ; *the one — the other* ; *some — others* ; as,

*ÁLTRI fa rémi, ed ÁLTRI vol-ge sárte*, the one makes oars, the other  
 twists ropes ;

*ÁLTRI sen váda errándo, ÁLTRI rimánga ucciso, ÁLTRI ídol si fáccia un dólce sguárdo*, let some go wandering, let  
 some be killed, let others  
 place their happiness in a  
 sweet look.

*Altrúi* is sometimes used with the article, and then the words *avére*, *sostánza*, ‘property’, ‘patrimony’, are understood, and *l’ altrúi* is equivalent to ‘another’s property’, ‘patrimony’, &c.; as,

*domandár l’ ALTRÚI*, to demand another’s property  
*logorár DELL’ ALTRÚI*, to use the property of others.

---

*U’no* and *áltro* are sometimes used with the article, *l’ úno*, *l’ áltro*; and then *l’ úno* corresponds to *the one*, *the former*, and *l’ áltro* to *the other*, *the latter*. *U’no* and *áltro*, when so used, in the plural make *gli úni*, *gli áltri*, for the masculine; and *le úne*, *le áltre*, for the feminine; as,

*l’ età l’ ÚNO, e l’ ÁLTRA avéa trasformáti*, age had changed the one and the other;  
*e DELL’ ÚNE, e DELL’ ÁLTRA fácci quéllo che crédi*, and with the one and with the other do what thou thinkest.  
*GLI ÚNI teménti Annibale, GLI ÁLTRI Filippo*, the former fearing Annibal, the latter Philip.

The expressions *l’ úno e l’ áltro*, *l’ úna e l’ áltra*; *gli úni e gli áltri*, *le úne e le áltre*, correspond to the English pronouns *both*, *both of them*; as,

*l’ ÚNO E l’ ÁLTRO córno*, both horns;  
*l’ ÚNA E l’ ÁLTRA stélla*, both stars.

*L’ un l’ áltro*, *l’ úna l’ áltra*; *gli úni gli áltri*, *le úne le áltre*, are equivalent to the English pronouns *one another*, *each other*; as,

*SI AMÁVANO l’ UN l’ ÁLTRO*, they loved one another;  
*l’ UN l’ ÁLTRO inténti a-ri-guardársi*, intent to look at each other.

*In úno*, is equivalent to the English expression *at the same time*; as,

*Mésta mi véde, ma IN UN fug- gír dal súo cospétto*, he sees me sad, but at the same time to flee from his presence.





and sometimes instead of *nessuno*; as,

*quivi non è CHI leggá, nè CHI scríva,* there is no one there who reads,  
and none who writes.

*Chi* is also used in a distributive sense, and then it is equivalent to the English pronouns *one — another*; *the one — the other*; *some — others*; as,

*portándo, CHI fióri, CHI érbe odorífere, e CHI díverse maniere di spezierie,* carrying, some flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

*Quále* is used in a distributive sense, and corresponds to *one — another*; as,

*QUÁL se n' andò in contádo, e QUÁL quà, e QUÁL là,* one went into the country, and another here, and another there.

*Più* and *parécchi, parécchie*, as indefinite pronouns, are equivalent to the English pronoun *several*; as,

*PIÙ giòrni,* several days;  
*PARÉCCHI áltri,* several others;  
*PARÉCCHIE óre,* several hours.

*Più* and *méno* sometimes take the article, — *il più, il méno*; *i più* or *le più, i méno* or *le méno*; and then *il più, i più* or *le più,* are equivalent to *the most, the greater part*; and *il méno, i méno* or *le méno,* to *the least, the smaller part*; as,

*IL PIÙ del témpo,* the greater part of the time;  
*I PIÙ morívano,* the most of them died;  
*LE PIÙ si trovávano in Berlinzóne,* the greater number of them were found in Berlinzone;  
*il Paradiso è DÉI MÉNO,* Paradise is for the smaller number.

*Si* is used for both genders and both numbers in the *objective* only, and corresponds to the English words *one, we, people, they, &c.*; as,

SI <i>vêde</i> ,	one sees ;
SI <i>è détto</i> ,	we have said ;
SI <i>videro</i> ,	people saw ;
SI <i>prométtono</i> [ <i>mólte</i> ] <i>cóse</i> ,	they promise many things.

*Si* and the verb, in these and similar expressions, hold the place of a *passive proposition*, and may be equally well rendered in English by the verb *to be* ; as,

SI <i>rendéssero gli onóri a Gálba</i> , e SI <i>celebrásse la memória di Pisone</i> ,	honors should be rendered to Galba, and the memory of Piso should be celebrated.
--	--

When *si* is followed by the particle *ne*, we change the *i* of *si* into *e* ; as,

NON SE NE <i>troverébbe úno</i> ,	they would not find one.
-----------------------------------	--------------------------

## EXAMPLES.

*Tu le dirái, s' ÉLLA VUÓL NÚLLA.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)      Thou wilt ask her, whether she wants any thing.

*Il domandò SE ÉGLI SI SENTÍSSE NIÉNTÉ.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)      He asked him whether he felt any thing.

*Che NON RIMARRÉBBE A SOSTENÉR PÉNA NESSÚNA nel purgatorio per gli peccáti,* (Pass.)      That there would not remain in purgatory any punishment to suffer for sins.

*SE Filíppo VA óggi in NIÚN LUÓGO.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)      If Philip goes to-day to any place.

*Per le tentazióni si próva l' uómo, s' ÉGLI HA BONTÁTE VERÚNA.* (Pass. p. 47.)      By temptations it is proved whether a man has any good quality.

*CH' ALCÚNA GLÓRIA i réi AVRÉBBER d' élli.* (Dant. Inf. 3.)      For the guilty would derive no glory from them.

*Ch' ALCÚNA VÍA DARÉBBE a chi su fósse.* (Dant. Inf. 12.)      Which would afford no way to him who should be above.

*ÁLTRO AVRÉSTI DÉTTO, se tu m' avéssi vedúto a Bológna.—* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)      Thou wouldst have said another thing, if thou hadst seen me in Bologna.

O, ÁLTRO HÁI *tu FÁTTO?* (Bocc. n. 1.)

Oh, hast thou done any thing else ?

NÈ VÓI, NÈ ÁLTRI *con ragióne mi potrà più DÍRE CH' ÍO NON L' ÁBBIA VEDÚTA.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

Neither you, nor others can any longer say rightly that I have not seen it.

PER NON FIDÁRMENE *ad ÁLTRI, ío medésima tel son venúta a significáre.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

Not to trust to others, I myself have come to inform thee of it.

Ío ho DÉTTO MAL D' ALTRÚI. (Bocc.)

I have spoken ill of others.

CHE ÍO DA ALTRÚI *che da léi UDÍTO NON SÍA.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

That I should be heard by no other, but by her.

ÁLTRI FA RÉMI, ED ÁLTRI VÓLGE SÁRTE. (Dant. Inf.)

Some make oars, and others twist ropes.

ÁLTRI *disperso* — SEN VÁDA ERRÁNDÓ: ÁLTRI RIMÁNGA UC-CÍSO: — ÁLTRI, *in cùre d' amór soáve immérso*, — ÍDOL SI FÁC-CIA, UN DÓLCE SGUÁRDO, *un ríso.* (Tass. Ger. 4. 18.)

Let some of them go dispersed, and wandering: let some be killed: let others, plunged in the cares of pleasing love, place their happiness in a sweet look, a smile.

Con le vóci *úmili, e mansuète nel DOMANDÁR L' ALTRÚI.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

With humble and mild words in demanding the property of others.

Si dispóse a volér LOGORÁR DELL' ALTRÚI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

She disposed herself to use the property of others.

Tánto L' ETÀ L' ÚNO E L' ÁLTRO, *da quéllo che ésser soléano, gli AVÉA TRASFORMÁTI.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

So much had age changed the one and the other from what they were used to be.

Che le mie cóse ed élla ti siéno *raccomandáte, e QUÉLLO DELL' ÚNE E DELL' ÁLTRA FÁCCI, CHE CRÉDI, che siéno consolazíone dell' ánima mía.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Let my things and her be recommended to thee, and with the one and with the other do what thou thinkest would be of any consolation to my soul.

Immaginái di volér fáre, sic-cóme fécero i Saguntíni, o gli Abidéi, GLI ÚNI TEMÉNTI ANNÍ-BALE *Cartaginése, e GLI ÁLTRI FILÍPPO Macedónico.* (Bocc. Fiamm. 5. 53.)

I thought of doing as the Saguntines and the Abydeans did, the former fearing Annibal the Carthaginian, the latter Philip the Macedonian.

Scaldáva il sol già L' ÚNO E L' ÁLTRO CÓRNO — *Del Táuro.* (Petr. cap. 1.)

The sun was already warming both the horns of Taurus,

*Ov' è 'l bel ciglio, e L' ÚNA E  
L' ÁLTRA STÉLLA — Ch' al córso  
del mio viver lume dénno? (Petr.  
s. 258.)*

Where is the beautiful brow and  
both those stars which gave light  
to my life?

*L' UN L' ÁLTRO di eguále  
amóre SI AMÁVANO. (Bocc.)*

They loved one another with an  
equal love.

*L' UN L' ÁLTRO A RIGUARDÁR-  
SI INTÉNTI. (Tass. Ger.)*

Intent to look at each other.

*MÉSTA ognór MI VÉDE, mésta  
è véro, MA IN UN DAL SÚO COS-  
PÉTTO FUGGÍR mi véde. (Alf.  
Filip. 1. 1.)*

He sees me always sad, sad it is  
true, but at the same time he sees  
me flee from his presence.

*ÉGLI SENZ' ÁLTRO SARÀ COL  
RE. (Maff. Mer. 2. 3.)*

He without doubt is with the  
king.

*RÍCCO, e SÁVIO, E AVVEDÚTO  
PER ÁLTRO, ma avaríssimo. —  
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.)*

Rich, and wise, and prudent  
otherwise, but very avaricious.

*LE PIÁGHE ALTRÚI. (Petr. s.  
6.)*

The wounds of others.

*Ricórdati che úna vólta senza  
più, suóle avvenire, che LA FOR-  
TÚNA SI FA ALTRÚI INCÓNTRO  
col viso liéto, e col grémbo apérto.  
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)*

Remember that once and no  
more, it is wont to happen, that for-  
tune goes to meet others with joy-  
ful countenance, and open bosom.

*NELL' ALTRÚI SÁNGUE già  
BAGNÁTO e tinto. (Petr. s. 29.)*

Already bathed and stained with  
another's blood.

*TAL FU MÍA STÉLLA, e tal mía  
crúda sórte. (Petr. s. 182.)*

Such was my star, and such my  
cruel fate.

*Quéste TÁI doloróse DIMOSTRA-  
ZIÓNI son tróppo vedúte, e cono-  
sciúte. (Castigl. Cort. l. 3.)*

Such painful demonstrations are  
too often seen and known.

*E fécer TÁ' PALÁGI, e tá' ma-  
raviglié, che non si potrébbe dire.  
(Fr. Gior.)*

And they made such palaces,  
and such wonderful things, that  
cannot be described.

*IN QUÉSTO LÓCO di leggiér PUÒ  
ARRIVÁR CHI TI FRASTÓRNI. —  
(Maff. Mer. 3. 4.)*

In this place may easily arrive  
one who will disturb thee.

*QUÍVI NON È chi ragióni — Di  
Crísto, ne CHI LÉGGA, NÈ CHI  
SCRÍVA. (Dant. Par. 12.)*

There is no one there who talks  
of Christ, no one who reads, no  
one who writes.

*Mólti andávano attórno, PORTÁNDO nêlle máni, CHI FIÓRI, CHI ÉRBE ODORÍFERE, E CHI DIVÉRSE MANIÈRE DI SPEZIERÍE.* (Bocc. Introd.)

Many went about carrying in their hands, some, flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

*E le lor dónne, e i figliuóli picciolétti, QUÁL SE N' ANDÒ IN CONTÁDO, E QUÁL QUÀ, E QUÁL LÀ, poveraménte in arnése.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

And of their wives, and young children, one went into the country, and one here, and another there, poorly provided.

*PIÙ GIÓRNI feliceménte navigárono.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

They sailed happily several days.

*Con PARÉCCHI ÁLTRI.* (Petr.)

With several others.

*Durò per lo spázio di PARÉCCHIE ÓRE.* (Giov. Vill.)

It lasted for the space of several hours.

*IL PIÙ DEL TÉMPO, si stánno a mangiáre, e poltrire.* (Dav. Germ.)

The greater part of the time they pass in eating and dozing.

*I PIÙ sénza alcúna fébbre, o áltro accidénte MORÍVANO.* (Bocc. Introd.)

The most of them died without any fever, or any other symptom.

*Máso rispóse, che LE PIÙ SI TROVÁVANO IN BERLINZÓNE.* — (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

Maso replied, that the greater number of them were found in Berlinzone.

*IL PARADÍSO È DÉI MÉNO, e non déi piú.* (Segn. Mann. Marz. 31.)

Paradise is for the smaller number, and not for the larger.

*Cóme SI VÉDE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

As one sees.

*Cóme s' È DÉTTO.* (Dav. Ann.)

As we have said.

*VÍDERSI in quéllo esército soldátì v'cchi, che non avévano fáto mái guárdia.* (Dav.)

People saw in that army old soldiers, who had never been on guard.

*QUÁNTO CÓSE gli SI PROMÉTTONO tútto 'l dì.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

How many things they promise him the whole day.

*Propóse, che SI RENDÉSSERO GLI ONÓRI A GÁLBA: che anche SI CELEBRÁSSE LA MEMÓRIA DI PISÓNE.* (Dav. Stor. l. 4.)

He proposed, that honors should be rendered to Galba, and that the memory of Piso should also be celebrated.

*NON SE NE TROVERÉBBE UN maggiór mái.* (Bocc. g. 2. fin.)

They would never find one greater.

## EXERCISE XIV.

Whoever does otherwise sins. There must be  
*fa*<sup>2</sup> *altriménti*<sup>1</sup> *pécca.* *Vi* *déve éssere*

some deception. Let us give this bread to eat to  
*ingánno.* *Diámo* *páne a mangiáre*

some one. He commanded that every one should  
 — *Comandò* *andás-*

go to rest himself. That we | might not cause |  
*se*<sup>2</sup> *a*<sup>4</sup> *riposáre*<sup>5</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>. *Acciocchè* | *non* *déssimo* |

(to) any one | to | think of us. Each  
<sub>3</sub> <sub>4</sub> | *da*<sup>1</sup> | *pensáre*<sup>2</sup> — —.

one\* of us knows, that the greater part of (the)  
*sa,* <sub>4</sub> <sub>5</sub> *párte*<sup>6</sup> <sub>1</sub>

her friends — (hers) are dead. You will receive a  
 — — <sub>2</sub> *sóno*<sup>3</sup> *mórto*<sup>7</sup> *riceveréte* —

hundred for every one. Every mother is a nurse  
*mádre* *è* — *bália*

of her children. Without any delay, he did what  
*figliuólo.* *Sénza* *indúgio,* — *féce*

the king ordered. No † body perceived | it. |  
*re comandáva.* *persóna* *accórse*<sup>2</sup> | *séne*<sup>1</sup> |

Here it seemed to me that I saw — (to see) no † sanctity, no †  
*Quívi* — *párve*<sup>14</sup> <sub>13</sub> — — *véder*<sup>12</sup> <sub>1</sub> *santità*<sup>3</sup>, <sub>3</sub>

devotion, no † good deed, or example of life.  
*divozióne*<sup>4</sup>, <sub>5</sub> † *buónc*<sup>6</sup> *ópera*<sup>7</sup>, *o*<sup>8</sup> *esémpio*<sup>9</sup> <sub>10</sub> *víta*<sup>11</sup>.

Where every word, every phrase, every mode of  
*O've* *paróla,* *fráse,* *módo* —

expression is explained with clearness. To-morrow I  
 — *vién spiegáto*<sup>3</sup> *con*<sup>1</sup> *chiarézza*<sup>2</sup>. *dománi*<sup>2</sup> —

shall dine with some friends. Some companies of  
*Pranzerò*<sup>1</sup> *con* *amíco.* *compagnía*

Belgians collected in haste, and a band of Vitellians.  
*Bélgí* *fátto* *fúria,* *e* *máno* *Vitelliáni.*

\* Each one, in the feminine gender.

† No, here in the signification of not one, none.

‡ No, in the signification of not any.



one Neapolitan, and that one Milanese. (*The*) one\*  
*Napoletáno,*

of them had a beautiful and large mattress of  
 — — *avéa* a *bélló*<sup>4</sup> *e*<sup>5</sup> *gránde*<sup>6</sup> *materásso*<sup>1 2</sup>

cotton *bambágia*<sup>3</sup> | on | her head, and the other\* a very  
*in* | — *cápo,* *e*

large basket full of things. Some went | into |  
*gránde paniére piéno* *cósa.* *sen' andò* | *in* |

the country, and some here, and some there.  
 — *contádo,* *e* *quà,* *e* *là.*

## CHAPTER VIII.

OF THE PARTICLES *NE, CI, VI.*

WITH pronouns are generally classed the particles *ne, ci, vi,*† which never vary, and always refer to some person, thing, or place, which has been spoken of before.

*Ne* may refer to one person or thing, or to more than one, according to the number of the objects, which have been mentioned; and then it is rendered in English by — *of him, of her, of it; of them; with him, with her, &c.; at him, &c.; some of it, some of them;* as,

*NE páre innamoráto,* he seems enamoured of her;  
*a quánti NE giacévano tagliò* he cut off the hair of as many  
*i capélli,* of them as slept;

\* *The one, the other,* in the feminine gender.

† These particles, in orthography, appear to be the same words as the conjunctive pronouns *ne, ci, vi;* their difference in signification, however, is easily ascertained by the meaning of the sentence in which they are used.



<i>non NE poteva pagáre i calzari,</i>	I could not pay for my shoes with it;
<i>se NE maravigliò,</i>	he wondered at it;
<i>NE ho preso,</i>	I have taken some of it, or some of them.

*Ne* may also refer to the place, which one comes from, or goes to; and then it corresponds to the English adverbs — *hence, thence*; as,

<i>méNE venni,</i>	I came thence;
<i>quando NE andréte?</i>	when shall you go hence?

and sometimes to an indeterminate place; as,

<i>NE è portata dal vento,</i>	it is thence carried away by the wind.
--------------------------------	--

*Ci, vi,* refer to a place, and correspond to the English adverbs — *here, there; hither, thither*; as,

<i>CI era venuto,</i>	I had come hither;
<i>non VI poté entrare,</i>	he could not enter thither.

*Ci,* properly, refers to a place near the person speaking, and *vi,* to a place at a distance; as,

<i>CI sono stato altre volte,</i>	I have been here formerly;
<i>se tu mai VI torni,</i>	if thou shalt ever return there.

This distinction, however, is not observed when the particles *ci, vi,* and the conjunctive pronouns *ci, vi,* would be brought together, as in *io VI VI condurrò, — voi CI CI avete condotti*; in which case, to avoid the harsh sound produced by the repetition of the same word,\* we say, without regard to the distance of the place,

<i>io vi CI condurrò,</i>	I will conduct you thither;
<i>voi VI ci avete condotti,</i>	you have conducted us hither.

\* An instance nevertheless, is met with in Boccaccio, in which *ci* is used instead of *vi,* without the occurrence of the repetition of the word on account of the conjunctive pronoun:

*Non ci sono in nessun luogo abitanze sì presso, che tu di giorno VI potessi arrivare.* (G. 5. n. 3.)

There are nowhere dwellings so near, that you could arrive there before sunset.

*Ci, vi*, may refer also to persons or things, and then they take the signification of the persons or things, which they refer to ; as,

*-pensáste a me ? — ci pensái,* did you think of me ? — I thought of you.  
*baderéte a ciò, or a quésto ?* will you attend to this ? — yes,  
*— sî, vi baderò,* I will attend to it.

*Ci, vi*, are used sometimes instead of *quésto, quéllo, tále, &c.* in the signification of — *to it, in it, from it, &c.* ; as,

*ci troveremo buon compénso,* we shall find in it a good compensation ;  
*ascoltái queste parole senza* I listened to these words without  
*rispondervi,* replying to them ;  
*io non vi consentii,* I did not consent to it.

When the particles *ci, vi*, are followed by the pronouns *to, la, li, gli, le*, they are generally united to them so as to form a single word ; as,

*vÉLO avÉa condóto,* he had conducted him there ;  
*ingÉgnati di ritenérCELO,* contrive to keep him there.

The particles *ne, ci, vi*, are often used as expletives ; as,

*NE andò per la càmera,* he went through the room ;  
*ciascùn che CI nasce,* every one who is born ;  
*dóve VI morì,* where [there] died.

#### EXAMPLES.

*Égli, pianamÉnte andándo, A QUÁNTI in quÉlla càsa NE GIACÉVANO TAGLIÒ I CAPÉLLI.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 2.) He, walking softly, cut off the hair of-as many of them as slept in that house.

*Mi dávan sî póco saláro, che io NON NE POTÉVA appÉna PAGÁRE I CALZÁRI.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.) They gave me so small a salary, that I could hardly pay for my shoes with it.

*Quand' io MÉNE VÉNNI.* —  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

When I came thence.

*La cénere pósta in álto, NE È PORTÁTA DAL VÉNTO.* (Pass. tr. Hu. c. 4.)

The ashes placed on high, is thence carried away by the wind.

*A'nzi CI ÉRA VENÚTO per dovérgli ammoníre.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Nay, I had come hither in order to admonish him.

*Sì tårdi vi giúnse, che, esséndo le pórtte serráte, e i pónti leváti, ENTRÁR NON VI POTÈ DÉNTO.* — (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

He arrived there so late, that, the gates being shut, and the bridges raised, he could not enter thither.

*Veraménte CI SÓNO IO ÁLTRE VÓLTE STÁTO; ma sì m' avéa la paúra di me trátto, chè cosí cóme se mái non ci fóssi, d' ésserci státo mi ricordáva.* (Lab.)

Truly I have been here formerly; but fear had in such a manner deprived me of my senses, that I recollected as little of having been here, as if I never had been here.

*Se égli avvíene, che TU MÁI VI TÓRNI, fa che tu non sù mái piú gelóso.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

If it happens that thou shalt ever return there, take care that thou be no more jealous.

*VÓI VI CI AVÉTE CONDÓTTI.* (Fr. Sacch.)

You have conducted us hither.

*PENSÁSTE A ME? — sì CI PENSAÍ.* (Bemb.)

Did you think of me? -- yes, I thought of you.

*Per avventúra l' ópera nóstra potrà éssere andáta di módo, che nói CI TROVERÉMO, coll' aiúto di Dio, BUÓN COMPÉNSO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Perchance our business may take such a turn, that we shall find in it, with the assistance of God, some compensation.

*QUÉSTE PARÓLE, non úna vólta, e SÉNZÁ RISPÓNDEVI alcúna cósa, ASCOLTÁI con gráve ánimo.* (Bocc. Fiam. l. 5.)

To these words, more than once, and without replying to them any thing, I listened with a serious mind.

*Ringraziándo Iddío, CHE CONDÓTTO VEL' AVÉA.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)

Thanking God that had conducted him there.

*Sáppi se égli, sa lavoráre, ed INGÉGNATI DI RITENÉRCELO.* — (Bocc.)

Learn whether he knows how to work, and contrive to keep him there.

*Chetaménte NE ANDÒ PER LA CÁMERA infíno álla finéstra.* — (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Gently he went through the room as far as the window.

*Natural ragione è di CIASCUN  
CHE CI NASCE, la sua vita, quanto  
può, aiutare, e conservare, e di-  
fendere. (Bocc. Introd.)*

It is a natural thing to every one  
who is born to help, preserve, and  
defend his life, as much as he can.

*Costui disfece Jerusalem, dove  
VI MORÌ, tra d' arme e di fame,  
centinaia di migliaia di Giudei.  
(Petr. Uom. ill. 28.)*

This one destroyed Jerusalem,  
where there died, both by arms and  
of hunger, hundreds of thousands  
of Jews.

## EXERCISE XV.

The miserable Landolfo, although the day before  
*miserò* , *ancorachè* <sup>3</sup> *dì*<sup>4</sup> *davanti*<sup>5</sup>  
had called (the) death many times, seeing it near,  
*avésse*<sup>9</sup> *chiamato*<sup>8</sup> <sup>6</sup> *morte*<sup>7</sup> *mólto*<sup>1</sup> *vólta*,<sup>2</sup> *vedéndo* — *présta*,  
was afraid of it. He wished that I should see  
*ébbe*<sup>2</sup> *paúra*<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>. — *Vólle* *vedéssi*  
all the holy relics, and they were so many, that,  
*sánto* *reliquia*, *e* — *fúron* *tánto*,  
if I wished to relate them to you, I never should  
*se* *voléssi*<sup>3</sup> *contáre*<sup>4</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, *non* *ver-*  
*ché*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> — *cápo*<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup>. “Oh, my master!”  
*dicéva* , “I | do not | wonder (myself) at it,  
*non* | *maraviglio*<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>,  
for I have heard say, that they say nothing —  
*chè* *ho* *udíto* *díre*,  
| (do not | say anything) of it.” But yet coming  
*non* | *dicono*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>.” *Ma* *pure* *uscíto* —  
out thence, he began to wonder (himself) | more  
*incominciò*<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> *maravigliáre*<sup>5</sup> *si*<sup>2</sup> | *an-*  
and more. |  
*córa* *più*.<sup>1</sup> |

Cause (the) generosity | to be painted | here.  
*Fáte* <sup>1</sup> <sup>4</sup> *cortesia*<sup>5</sup> | *dipingere*<sup>3</sup> | <sup>2</sup>.

<table border="0"> <tr> <td>Pretending</td> <td> </td> <td>to</td> <td> </td> <td>have</td> <td> </td> <td>returned</td> <td>there</td> </tr> <tr> <td><i>Semiante facendo</i></td> <td> </td> <td><i>di</i></td> <td> </td> <td><i>essere</i><sup>1</sup></td> <td> </td> <td><i>tornato</i><sup>2</sup></td> <td><sup>2</sup></td> </tr> </table>	Pretending		to		have		returned	there	<i>Semiante facendo</i>		<i>di</i>		<i>essere</i> <sup>1</sup>		<i>tornato</i> <sup>2</sup>	<sup>2</sup>							
Pretending		to		have		returned	there																
<i>Semiante facendo</i>		<i>di</i>		<i>essere</i> <sup>1</sup>		<i>tornato</i> <sup>2</sup>	<sup>2</sup>																

with a great deal more merchandise than before.  
*con* *mercanzia* *prima.*

I		cannot		well	relate	how	I	entered	there.	The
		<i>non so</i>		<i>bén ridire</i>	<i>cóme</i>	<i>entrái</i> <sup>2</sup>	<sup>1</sup>			

church is so full of people, that no \* person can  
*chiésa è sì piena gente , persóna può*<sup>3</sup>

any more enter there. Andreuccio, fearing, entered  
*più*<sup>1</sup> *entráre*<sup>4</sup> <sup>2</sup> *, teméndo, entró*<sup>2</sup>

there, and entering there he thought within himself.  
<sup>1</sup> *e entrándo* — *pensò con*<sup>2</sup> *se*<sup>1</sup>

If I		can	affect		to	be	dumb,	I	shall	be
<i>Se</i>		<i>so far vista</i>		<i>di</i>		<i>ésser mútolo,</i>	<sup>2</sup>	<i>saró</i> <sup>4</sup>		

received there surely.  
*ricevúto*<sup>5</sup> <sup>3</sup> *per cërto*<sup>1</sup>

They † replied: "It is | very | true; since thou  
*rispósero: " — è*<sup>2</sup> *Béne*<sup>1</sup> *véro, perchè*

art the one who makes us stay here. Alas! Zéppa,  
*séi fá*<sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup> *stáre*<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> *Ohimè!*

what does this mean? Have you then made me  
*vuól* <sup>2</sup> *dír?*<sup>1</sup> *avéte*<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> *Dunque*<sup>1</sup> *fátto*<sup>6</sup> <sup>2</sup>

come here for this? I will cause it\* | to be  
*venír*<sup>7</sup> <sup>3</sup> *? farò*<sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup> *dipin-*

painted | here, | in such a manner, | that neither  
*gere*<sup>4</sup> | <sup>1</sup> *di maniera,* | *nè*

you nor any other one | will be able | to tell me  
*nè — — potrà*<sup>2</sup> *dire*<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup>

any longer, that I have not seen it. † These persons §  
*più,*<sup>3</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *abbia non vedúta*<sup>10 8</sup>

make me enter here | to | deceive me. We wish  
*fanno*<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> *entráre*<sup>4</sup> <sup>2</sup> *per ingannár* — *vogliámo*

\* *No*, here in the signification of *no one*. † *They*, in the feminine gender.

† *It* [the generosity — *la cortesia*], in the feminine gender.

§ *These persons*, for *these men near me*.

to go | and | see this holy man; but I, for myself,  
*andáre* | *a* | *vedére* *sánto*; *ma* , *me*,

do not see how we can get there.  
*non védo cóme — possiámo<sup>2</sup> pervenire<sup>3</sup> 1.*

## CHAPTER IX.

### VERBS.

ALL Italian verbs are classed in *three* different *conjugations*, which are distinguished by the termination of their infinitive.

The *first conjugation* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *áre*; as, *amÁRE*, 'to love.'

The *second* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *ére*; as *temÉRE*, 'to fear.'

The *third* comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *íre*; as, *sentÍRE*, 'to hear,' or 'to feel.'

All the verbs of these three different conjugations, whether *regular* or *irregular*, are conjugated or *varied* with one of the *auxiliary* verbs, *avére*, 'to have,' or *éssere*, 'to be'.

### VARIATION OF VERBS.

Verbs may be varied in four different ways; viz. *affirmatively*, *negatively*, *interrogatively*, and *interrogative-negatively*.

In the variation of Italian verbs, the personal pronouns are generally suppressed, the persons being sufficiently

indicated by the different terminations ; but when different *persons* have the *same termination*, the pronouns are *expressed*, to avoid the confusion which might thence arise.

The pronouns are also *expressed* in the *imperative mood* ; and also when verbs are varied in the *interrogative form*, since then the *transposition of the pronoun* distinguishes, in conversation, that form from the affirmative.

In varying the following verbs, we have given, between parentheses, the *poetical forms*, or the peculiar inflexions to which poets have submitted some of the persons of certain tenses of these verbs. Some of these are elegantly *used even in prose*, and some are entirely *confined to verse* ; in order to distinguish the latter from the former, the latter are printed in Roman characters.

---

AUXILIARY VERBS.

*Variation of the Verb Avére affirmatively.*

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

*Avére,*

to have.

*avére avúto,*

to have had.

3. — *Future.*

*avére ad avére,*  
*éssere per avére,*  
*dovére avére,*

} to have to have, or  
to be about to have.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

*avéndo,*

having.

*avéndo avúto,*

having had.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

*avénte*, s.  
*avénti*, p.\* } having.

7. — *Past.*

|| *avúto*, m. s., *avúti*, p. } had.  
|| *avúta*, f. s., *avúte*, p.\* }

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ho</i> or <i>ò</i> I have;	<i>abbiamo</i> ( <i>avémo</i> ),	we have ;
[( <i>aggio</i> ),		
2d p. <i>háí</i> or <i>ái</i> , thou hast;	<i>avéte</i> ,	you have ;
3d p. <i>ha</i> or <i>à</i> ( <i>áve</i> ), he, she, or it has;	<i>hanno</i> , or <i>anno</i> ,	they have.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io avéva</i> I had, or did	<i>avévamo</i> ,	we had ;
[or <i>avéa</i> ,†		
[have ;		
2d p. <i>avévi</i> , thou hadst;	<i>avévate</i> ,	you had ;
3d p. <i>égli</i> or <i>élla</i> he or she had ;	<i>avévano</i> or <i>avé-</i>	they had.
[ <i>avéva</i> or <i>a-</i>		
[ <i>véa</i> ( <i>avía</i> ),	<i>[ano</i> ( <i>avíeno</i> ),	

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ébbi</i> ,	I had ;	<i>avémmo</i> ,	we had ;
2d p. <i>avésti</i> ,	thou hadst ;	<i>avéste</i> ,	you had ;
3d p. <i>ébbe</i> ,	he or she had ;	<i>ébbéro</i> ,	they had.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>avrò</i> ,	I shall or will	<i>avrémo</i> ,	we shall have ;
	[have ;		
2d p. <i>avrái</i> ,	thou wilt have ;	<i>avréte</i> ,	you will have ;
3d p. <i>avrà</i> ,	he or she will	<i>avránno</i> ,	they will have.
	[have ;		

\* The *present participle* of the verb *avére* agrees with the *subject* of the proposition in *gender and number*. The *past participle* agrees, sometimes, with the *object* in *gender and number*.

† Some say *avévo*, *éro*, *amávo*, &c. instead of *avéva*, 'I had'; *éra*, 'I was'; *amáva*, 'I loved'; &c., but this usage which, indeed, presents the advantage of distinguishing the *first* from the *third* person of the *imperfect* of verbs, is contrary to the authority of the best classics.



## COMPOUND TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

5. — *Compound of the Present, or — Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ho avúto,</i>	I have had ;		<i>abbiamo avúto,</i>	we have had ;
2d p. <i>háì avúto,</i>	thou hast had ;		<i>avéte avúto,</i>	you have had ;
3d p. <i>ha avúto,</i>	he or she has		<i>hánno avúto,</i>	they have had.
	[had ;			

6. — *Compound of the Imperfect, or — Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío avéva avúto,</i>	I had had ,	<i>avévamo avúto,</i>	we had had.
-------------------------------	-------------	-----------------------	-------------

7. — *Compound of the Perfect, or — Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>ébbi avúto,</i>	I had had.
---------------------------	------------

8. — *Compound of the Future, or — Future Anterior.*

1st p. <i>avrò avúto,</i>	I shall or will have had.
---------------------------	---------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío ábbia</i>	that I have, or		<i>abbiamo,</i>	that we have ;
( <i>ággia</i> ),	[may have ;			
2d p. <i>tu ábbia</i>	or that thou have ;		<i>abbiate,</i>	that you have ;
[ <i>ábbi</i> ( <i>ággi</i> ),				
3d p. <i>égli</i> or <i>él-</i>	that he or she		<i>abbiano,</i>	( <i>ággia-</i> that they have.
[ <i>la ábbia</i>	[have ;		[ <i>no</i> ),	
[ <i>(ággia)</i> ,				

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío avéssi,</i>	if I had, or should		<i>avéssimo,</i>	if we had ;
	[have ;			
2d p. <i>tu avéssi,</i>	if thou hadst ;		<i>avéste,</i>	if you had ;
3d p. <i>avésse,</i>	if he or she had ;		<i>avéssero</i> ( <i>avés-</i>	if they had.
			[ <i>sino</i> ),	

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Compound of the Present, or — Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ío ábbia</i>	that I have had,		<i>abbiamo avúto,</i>	that we have had.
[ <i>avúto,</i>	[or may have			
	[had ;			

4. — *Compound of the Imperfect, or — Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi avúto*, | if I had had, or should have had.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>avréi</i> (a- [vria),	I should, would, [or could have; [or might have;	<i>avrémmo</i> ,	we should or [would have;
2d p. <i>avrésti</i> ,	thou wouldst [have;	<i>avréste</i> ,	you would have;
3d p. <i>avrébbe</i> [(avria),	he or she would [have;	<i>avrébbero</i> ( <i>avri- [ano or avri- [eno)</i> ,	they would have.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Compound of the Present, or — Past.*

1st p. <i>avréi avú-</i> [to,	I should, would, [or could have [had; or might [have had;	<i>avrémmo avúto</i> ,	we should or [would have had.
----------------------------------	--	------------------------	----------------------------------

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . . *	<i>abbiamo nói</i> ,	let us have;
2d p. <i>ábbi</i> (ág- [gi) <i>tu</i> ,	have thou;	<i>abbiate vói</i> ,	have ye;
3d p. <i>ábbia</i> (ág- [gia) <i>égli</i> or [élla,	let him or her [have;	<i>abbiano</i> (ággia- [no) <i>églino</i> or [élleno,	let them have.

\* The first person of the imperative in all verbs is wanting.

*Variation of the Verb Avére, negatively.*

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

*Non avére* | not to have. || *non avére avúto,* | not to have had.

3. — *Future.*

*non avére ad avére,* } to be not to have, or  
*non avére per avére,* } [not to be about to have.  
*non dovére avére,*

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

*non avéndo,* | not having. || *non avéndo* | not having had.  
 [avúto,

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. [ <i>io</i> ] <i>non ho,</i>	I have not;	<i>non abbiámo,</i>	we have not;
2d p. <i>non hái,</i>	thou hast not;	<i>non avéte,</i>	you have not;
3d p. <i>non ha,</i>	he or she has not;	<i>non hánno,</i>	they have not.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io non</i>	I had not, or did	<i>non avevámo,</i>	we had not;
[ <i>avéva,</i>	[not have;		
2d p. <i>non avévi,</i>	thou hadst not;	<i>non aveváte,</i>	you had not;
3d p. <i>égli or élla</i>	he or she had not;	<i>non avévano,</i>	they had not.
[ <i>non avéva,</i>			

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>non ébbi,</i>	I had not;	<i>non avémmo,</i>	we had not;
2d p. <i>non avésti,</i>	thou hadst not;	<i>non avéste,</i>	you had not;
3d p. <i>non ébbe,</i>	he or she had not;	<i>non ébbero,</i>	they had not.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>non avrò,</i>	I shall <i>or</i> will not	<i>non avrémo,</i>	we shall <i>or</i> will
	[have;]		[not have;]
2d p. <i>non avrái,</i>	thou wilt not	<i>non avréte,</i>	you will not have;
	[have;]		
3d p. <i>non avrà,</i>	he <i>or</i> she will	<i>non avránno,</i>	they will not
	[not have;]		[have.]

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*1st p. [*io*] *non ho avúto,* | I have not had.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io non</i>	that I have not, <i>or</i>	<i>non abbiámo,</i>	that we have not;
	[ <i>abbia,</i> [may not have;]		
2d p. <i>tu non</i>	that thou have	<i>non abbiáte,</i>	that you have
	[ <i>abbia,</i> [not;]		[not;]
3d p. <i>egli or ella</i>	that he <i>or</i> she	<i>non abbiano,</i>	that they have
	[ <i>non abbia,</i> [have not;]		[not.]

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io non</i>	if I had not, <i>or</i>	<i>non avéssimo,</i>	if we had not;
	[ <i>avéssi,</i> [should not have;]		
2d p. <i>tu non</i>	if thou hadst not;	<i>non avéste,</i>	if you had not;
	[ <i>avéssi,</i>		
3d p. <i>non avés-</i>	if he <i>or</i> she had	<i>non avéssero,</i>	if they had not.
	[ <i>se,</i> [not;]		

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>non avréi,</i>	I should, would,	<i>non avrémmo,</i>	we should <i>or</i>
	[ <i>or</i> could not		[would not have;
	[have; <i>or</i> might		
	[not have;]		
2d p. <i>non avré-</i>	thou wouldst not	<i>non avréste,</i>	you would not
	[ <i>sti,</i> [have;]		[have;]
3d p. <i>non avréb-</i>	he <i>or</i> she would	<i>non avrébbero,</i>	they would not
	[ <i>be,</i> [not have;]		[have;]

Singular.

Plural.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>non abbiamo</i>	let us not have ;
2d p. <i>non avére*</i>	have not thou ;	<i>non abbiate</i> [ <i>noi,</i>	have not ye ;
	[ <i>tu,</i>	<i>non abbiano</i>	let them not
3d p. <i>non abbia</i>	let him or let her	[ <i>églino or élleno,</i>	[have.
	[ <i>égli or élla,</i>		
	[not have ;		

*Variation of Avére, interrogatively.*

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>ho io ?</i>	have I ?	<i>abbiamo noi ?</i>	have we ?
2d p. <i>hai tu ?</i>	hast thou ?	<i>avete voi ?</i>	have you ?
3d p. <i>ha égli or</i>	has he or she ?	<i>hanno églino or</i>	have they ?
	[ <i>élla ?</i>	[ <i>élleno ?</i>	

## 2. — Imperfect.

1st p. <i>avéva io ?</i>	had I ?	<i>avevamo noi ?</i>	had we ?
2d p. <i>avévi tu ?</i>	hadst thou ?	<i>avevate voi ?</i>	had you ?
3d p. <i>avéva égli</i>	had he or she ?	<i>avevano églino</i>	had they ?
	[ <i>or élla ?</i>	[ <i>or élleno ?</i>	

## 3. — Perfect.

1st p. <i>ébbi io ?</i>	had I ?	<i>avémmo noi ?</i>	had we ?
2d p. <i>avésti tu ?</i>	hadst thou ?	<i>avéste voi ?</i>	had you ?
3d p. <i>ébbe égli</i>	had he or she ?	<i>ebbero églino or</i>	had they ?
	[ <i>or élla ?</i>	[ <i>élleno ?</i>	

\* The second person of the imperative of Italian verbs, preceded by the negative particle *non*, is changed for the present of the infinitive of the same verbs: as, *non avére* (instead of *non abbi*), 'have not [thou].' Poets, however, and Ariosto and Alfieri in particular, have used both forms indiscriminately.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>avrò io?</i>	shall or will I [have?]	<i>avrémo nói?</i>	shall or will we [have?]
2d p. <i>avrái tu?</i>	wilt thou have?	<i>avréte vói?</i>	will you have?
3d p. <i>avrà égli</i> [or <i>élla?</i> ]	will he or she [have?]	<i>avránno égli</i> [or <i>élleno?</i> ]	will they have?

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st. p. <i>ho ío avúto</i> , or [ <i>ho avúto ío?</i> ]	have I had?
--	-------------

## III. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>avréi ío?</i>	should, would, or [could I have?]	<i>avrémno nói?</i>	should or would [we have?]
2d p. <i>avrésti tu?</i>	wouldst thou [have?]	<i>avréste vói?</i>	would you have?
3d p. <i>avrébbe</i> [ <i>égli</i> or <i>élla?</i> ]	would he or she [have?]	<i>avrébbero égli</i> [or <i>élleno?</i> ]	would they have?

*Variation of Avére, interrogative-negatively.*

## I. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>non ho ío?</i>	have I not?	<i>non abbíamo nói?</i>	have we not?
2d p. <i>non hái</i> [ <i>tu?</i> ]	hast thou not?	<i>non avéte vói?</i>	have you not?
3d p. <i>non ha</i> [ <i>égli</i> or <i>élla?</i> ]	has he or she [not?]	<i>non hánno égli</i> [ <i>no</i> or <i>élleno?</i> ]	have they not?

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>non avéva</i> [ <i>íó?</i> ]	had I not?	<i>non avevámo</i> [ <i>nói?</i> ]	had we not?
---	------------	---------------------------------------	-------------

3. — *Perfect.*

1st. p. <i>non ébbi ío?</i>	had I not?
-----------------------------	------------

4. — *Future.*1st p. *non avrò io ?* | shall or will I not have ?

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*1st p. *non ho io avúto,* | have I not had ?  
[or *non ho avúto io ?*]

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *non avréi io ?* | should, would, or  
[could I not have ?]*Variation of the Verb Éssere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.**Éssere,* | to be.

<i>éssere státo, m. s.</i> <i>[státi, p.]</i> <i>essére státa, f. s.</i> <i>[státe, p.*]</i>	} to have been.
---	-----------------

3. — *Future.*

<i>éssere per éssere,</i> <i>avére ad éssere,</i> <i>dovére éssere,</i>	}	to be about to be, or to have to be.
---	---	---

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.**esséndo(séndot),* | being.

<i>esséndo státo, m.</i> <i>[státa, f.]</i>	} having been.
--	----------------

\* The past participle of the verb *éssere*, always agrees with the subject, in gender and number; thus we say, *io sòno státo*, if the subject is masculine singular; *io sòno státa*, if feminine singular; and *nòì siámo státi*, if the subject is masculine plural; *nòì siámo státe*, if feminine plural, and so on.

† Some authors, and Machiavelli in particular, have used this form constantly in prose.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

(essénte, s.,  
essénti, p.,\*) } being;

|| státo, m. s.  
[státi, p.  
státa, f. s.  
[státe, p. } been.

7. — *Past.*

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io sóno,</i>	I am ;	<i>siámo (sémo),</i>	we are ;
2d p. <i>seí or se',</i>	thou art ;	<i>siéte (séte),</i>	you are ;
3d p. <i>è,</i>	he is ;	<i>églino sóno,</i>	they are.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io éra,</i>	I was ;	<i>eravámo</i> (éra- [mo),†	we were ;
2d p. <i>éri,</i>	thou wast ;	<i>eraváte,</i>	you were ;
3d p. <i>égli éra,</i>	he was ;	<i>éranó,</i>	they were.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>fúí,</i>	I was ;	<i>fúmmo,</i>	we were ;
2d p. <i>fósti,</i>	thou wast ;	<i>fóste,</i>	you were ;
3d p. <i>fu (fúe),</i>	he was ;	<i>fúrono</i> (fúnno, [fúrno, fúro, fur, [or fóro),	they were.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>sarò (fía),</i>	I shall or will be ;	<i>sarémo,</i>	we shall or will [be ;
2d p. <i>sarái,</i>	thou wilt be ;	<i>saréte,</i>	you will be ;
3d p. <i>sard (fía, [fíe),</i>	he will be ;	<i>saránno (fíano, [fíeno),</i>	they will be.

\* These forms are *obsolete*.

† Old writers have used *éramo* even in prose, and Alfieri has followed their usage in his *Vita*.



Singular.

Plural.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p.	<i>io sóno</i>	I have been ;		<i>siámo státi, m.</i>		we have been ;
	[ <i>státo, m.,</i>			[ <i>státe, f.</i>		
	[ <i>státa, f.,</i>					
2d p.	<i>séi státo,</i>	thou hast been ;		<i>siéte státi, -e,</i>		you have been ;
	[ <i>-a,</i>					
3d p.	<i>è státo, -a,</i>	he or she has		<i>églino sóno státi,</i>		they have been.
		[been ;		[ <i>or élleno státe,</i>		

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p.	<i>io éra stá-</i>	I had been ;		<i>eravámo státi, -e,</i>		we had been.
	[ <i>to, -a,</i>					

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p.	<i>fúì státo,</i>	I had been ;		<i>fúmmo státi, -e,</i>		we had been.
	[ <i>-a,</i>					

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p.	<i>sarò státo,</i>	I shall or will		<i>sarémo státi, -e,</i>		we shall or will
	[ <i>-a,</i>	[have been ;				[have been.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p.	<i>io sía,</i>	that I be, or		<i>siámo,</i>		that we be ;
		[may be ;				
2d p.	<i>tu sía</i> or	that thou be ;		<i>siáte,</i>		that you be ;
	[ <i>síi,</i>					
3d p.	<i>égli sía,</i>	that he be ;		<i>siáno or síeno,</i>		that they be.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p.	<i>io fóssi</i>	if I were ; or		<i>fóssimo,</i>		if we were ;
	[ <i>(fússi),*</i>	[should be ;				
2d p.	<i>tu fóssi,</i>	if thou wert ;		<i>fóste,</i>		if you were ;
3d p.	<i>fósse,</i>	if he were ;		<i>fóssero (fóssino),</i>		if they were.

\* This form, as well as *fússe*, and *fússero* used by Villani, Machiavelli, Guicciardini, even in prose, has become *obsolete*.

Singular.

Plural.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io sía stá-</i>	that I have been,	<i>siámo státi, -e,</i>	that we have
<i>[to, -a,</i>	[ <i>or may have</i>		[ <i>been.</i>
	[ <i>been ;</i>		

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io fóssi</i>	if I had been ;	<i>fóssimo státi, -e,</i>	if we had been.
<i>[státo, -a,</i>			

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>saréi (sa-</i>	I should, would,	<i>sarémmo,</i>	we should <i>or</i>
<i>[ría, fóra,</i>	[ <i>or could be ;</i>		[ <i>would be ;</i>
	[ <i>or might be ;</i>		
2d p. <i>sarésti,</i>	thou wouldst be ;	<i>saréste,</i>	you would be ;
3d p. <i>sarébbe</i>	he would be ;	<i>sarébbéro (sarí-</i>	they would be.
<i>[(saría, fóra),</i>		<i>[ano or saríeno,</i>	
		<i>[fórano),</i>	

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. <i>saríi stá-</i>	I should, would,	<i>sarémmo státi,</i>	we should,
<i>[to, -a,</i>	[ <i>or could have</i>	<i>[-e,</i>	[ <i>would, or could</i>
	[ <i>been ; or might</i>		[ <i>have been.</i>
	[ <i>have been ;</i>		

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>siámo nói,</i>	let us be ;
2d p. <i>sía or síi</i>	be thou ;	<i>siáte vói,</i>	be ye ;
<i>[tu,</i>		<i>siano or síeno</i>	let them be.
3d p. <i>sía égli,</i>	let him be ;	<i>[églino,</i>	

## REGULAR VERBS.

*Variation of Active Verbs.*

Active verbs, in the compound tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *avére*, 'to have.'

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

*Variation of the Verb Amáre.*

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *áre*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

1. — *Present.**Am-áre* to love.

Compound Tenses.

2. — *Past.**avére amáto*, to have loved.3. — *Future.*

*avére ad amáre,*  
*éssere per amáre,*  
*dovére amáre,*

} to have to love, or  
 } to be about to love.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.**am-ándo*, loving.5. — *Past.**avéndo amáto*, having loved.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

*am-ánte*, s., *am-*  
 [-*ánti*, p.\* } loving.

7. — *Past.*

*am-áto*, m. s.,  
 [*am-áti*, p.\* } loved.  
*am-áta*, f. s.,  
 [*am-áte*, p.\* }

\* The present participle of active verbs, like that of *avére*, agrees with the subject of the proposition in gender and number. The past participle agrees, sometimes, with the object in gender and number.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ám-o,</i>	I love, or do [love, or am [loving;	<i>am-iámo,</i>	we love ;
2d p. <i>ám-i,</i>	thou lovest ;	<i>am-áte,</i>	you love ;
3d p. <i>ám-a,</i>	he loves ;	<i>ám-ano,</i>	they love.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío am-áva,</i>	I loved, or did [love, or was [loving ;	<i>am-avámo,</i>	we loved ;
2d p. <i>am-ávi,</i>	thou lovedst ;	<i>am-aváte,</i>	you loved ;
3d p. <i>églí am- [-áva,</i>	he loved ;	<i>am-ávano,</i>	they loved ;

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>am-ái,</i>	I loved, or did [love ;	<i>am-ámmo,</i>	we loved ;
2d p. <i>am-ásti,</i>	thou lovedst ;	<i>am-áste,</i>	you loved ;
3d p. <i>am-ò,</i>	he loved ;	<i>am-árono (am- [-áro or am-ár),</i>	they loved.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>am-erò,*</i>	I shall or will [love ;	<i>am-erémo,</i>	we shall or will [love ;
2d p. <i>am-erái,</i>	thou wilt love ;	<i>am-eréte,</i>	you will love ;
3d p. <i>am-erà,</i>	he will love ;	<i>am-eránnno,</i>	they will love ;

\* The verbs of this conjugation in the *future* and the *conditional*, change the *a* of their terminations for *e*, and make *am-erò*, &c.; *am-eréi*, &c.; instead of *am-arò*, &c.; *am-aréi*, &c.

Singular.

Plural.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ho amáto,</i>	I have loved ;	<i>abbiámo amáto,</i>	we have loved ;
2d p. <i>háí amáto,</i>	thou hast loved ;	<i>avéte amáto,</i>	you have loved ;
3d p. <i>ha amáto,</i>	he, she, or it has [loved ;	<i>háнно amáto,</i>	they have loved.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>íó avéva</i>	I had loved ;	<i>avevámo amáto,</i>	we had loved.
[ <i>amáto,</i>			

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>ébbi amáto,</i>	I had loved.
---------------------------	--------------

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. <i>avrò amáto,</i>	I shall or will have loved.
---------------------------	-----------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>íó am-i</i>	that I love, or	<i>am-iámo,</i>	that we love ;
[ <i>(ám-e),</i>	[may love ;		
2d p. <i>tu am-i,</i>	that thou lovest ;	<i>am-iáte,</i>	that you love ;
3d p. <i>égli am-i</i>	that he loves ;	<i>ám-ino,</i>	that they love.
[ <i>(ám-e),</i>			

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>íó am-ássi,</i>	if I loved, or	<i>am-ássimo,</i>	if we loved ;
	[should love ;		
2d p. <i>tu am-ássi,</i>	if thou lovedst ;	<i>am-áste,</i>	if you loved ;
3d p. <i>am-ásse,</i>	if he loved ;	<i>am-ássero</i> (am- [-ássino),	if they loved.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>íó ábbia amáto,</i>	that I have loved, or
	[may have loved ;

4. -- *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi amáto*, | if I had loved.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p.	<i>am-eréi</i>	I should, would,	<i>am-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would
	[( <i>am-ería</i> )],	[ <i>or</i> could love,		[ <i>or</i> could love ;
		[ <i>or</i> might love ;		
2d p.	<i>am-erésti</i> ,	thou wouldst	<i>am-eréste</i> ,	you would love ;
		[love ;		
3d p.	<i>am-erébbe</i>	he would love ;	<i>am-erébbero</i> ( <i>am-</i>	they would love.
	[( <i>am-ería</i> )],		[- <i>eriano</i> , <i>am-</i>	
			[- <i>erieno</i> ),	

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p.	<i>avréi amáto</i> ,	I should, would, <i>or</i> could have
		[loved ; <i>or</i> might have loved.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>am-idmo nói</i> ,	let us love ;
2d p. <i>ám-a tu</i> ,	love thou ;	<i>am-áte vói</i> ,	love ye ;
3d p. <i>ám-i ézli</i> ,	et him love ;	<i>ám-ino églino</i> ,	let them love.

Besides the foregoing changes of termination, there are some verbs of the first conjugation, which undergo in some persons and tenses a change of orthography : Thus, verbs ending in *cáre*, *gáre*, in order to preserve the hard sound of *c*, *g*, in all their inflections, take an *h* after those consonants whenever they are followed by *e*, *i* ; as, *cercáre*, ' to search ' ; *pregáre*, ' to entreat.'

*Variation of the Verb Cercare.*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *càre*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>cérc-o</i> ,	I search, or do [search, or am [searching ;	<i>cerch-iámo</i> ,	we search ;			
2d p. <i>cércH-i</i> ,				thou searchest ;	<i>cerc-áte</i> ,	you search ;
3d p. <i>cérc-a</i> ,						

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>cerch-erò</i> ,	I shall or will [search ;	<i>cerch-erémo</i> ,	we shall or will [search ;			
2d p. <i>cerch-erái</i> ,				thou wilt search ;	<i>cerch-eréte</i> ,	you will search ;
3d p. <i>cerch-erà</i> ,						

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io cercH-i</i>	that I search, or [may search ;	<i>cerch-iámo</i> ,	that we search ;			
2d p. <i>tu cercH-i</i>				that thou search ;	<i>cerch-iáte</i> ,	that you search ;
3d p. <i>egli cercH-i</i>						
[ <i>(cércH-e)</i> ],						

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>cerch-eréi</i>	I should, would, [or could [search ; or [might search ;	<i>cerch-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would, [or could search ;			
2d p. <i>cerch-eré</i>				thou wouldst [search ;	<i>cerch-eréste</i> ,	you would search ;
3d p. <i>cerch-eréb-</i>						
[ <i>be (cércH-ería)</i> ],		[ <i>(cerch-eriano)</i> ],				

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>cercH-íamo nói,</i>	let us search ;
2d p. <i>cérc-a tu,</i>	search thou ;	<i>cerc-áte vói,</i>	search ye ;
3d p. <i>cércH-i</i>	let him, her, or it	<i>cércH-ino égli-</i>	let them search.
	[ <i>égli,</i> ]		[ <i>no,</i> ]
	[search ;]		

—

*Variation of the Verb Pregáre.*

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *gáre.*)

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>prég-o,</i>	I entreat, or do	<i>prégH-íamo,</i>	we entreat ;
	[entreat, or am		
	[entreating ;		
2d p. <i>prégH-i,</i>	thou entrest ;	<i>prég-áte,</i>	you entreat ;
3d p. <i>prég-a,</i>	he entreats ;	<i>prég-ano,</i>	they entreat.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>prégH-erò,</i>	I shall or will en-	<i>prégH-erémo,</i>	we shall or will
	[treat ;		[entreat ;
2d p. <i>prégH-erái,</i>	thou wilt entreat ;	<i>prégH-eréte,</i>	you will entreat ;
3d p. <i>prégH-erà,</i>	he will entreat ;	<i>prégH-eráno,</i>	they will entreat.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío prégH-i</i>	that I entreat, or	<i>prégH-íamo,</i>	that we entreat ;
	[( <i>prégH-e</i> ),		
	[may entreat ;		
2d p. <i>tu prégH-i,</i>	that thou entreat ;	<i>prégH-íate,</i>	that you entreat ;
3d p. <i>égli prégH-i</i>	that he entreat.	<i>prégH-ino,</i>	that they entreat.
	[( <i>prégH-e</i> ),		



## IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>pregn-eréi</i> [( <i>pregn-ería</i> ),	I should, would, [or could en- [treat; or might [entreat;	<i>pregn-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would, [or could en- [treat;
2d p. <i>pregn-eré-</i> [ <i>sti</i> ,	thou wouldst en- [treat;	<i>pregn-eréste</i> ,	you would en- [treat;
3d p. <i>pregn-eréb-</i> [ <i>be</i> ( <i>pregn-</i> [ <i>-ería</i> ),	he would en- [treat;	<i>pregn-erébbero</i> [( <i>pregn-eríano</i> ), [ <i>pregn-eríeno</i> ),	they would en- [treat.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>pregn-íamo nôi</i> ,	let us entreat;
2d p. <i>prég-a tu</i> ,	entreat thou;	<i>prég-áte vôi</i> ,	entreat ye;
3d p. <i>prégH-i</i> [ <i>égli</i> ,	let him, her, or it [entreat;	<i>prégH-ino égli-</i> [ <i>no</i> ,	let them entreat.

Verbs ending in *ciäre*, *giäre*, drop the *i*, which follows *c*, *g*, whenever *ci*, *gi*, precede *e*, *i*; as, *baciäre*, 'to kiss'; *fregiäre*, 'to adorn.'

*Variation of the Verb Baciäre.*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ciäre*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>báci-o</i> ,	I kiss or do kiss, [or am kissing;	<i>bac-íamo</i> ,	we kiss;
2d p. <i>bác-i</i> ,	thou kissest;	<i>báci-áte</i> ,	you kiss;
3d p. <i>báci-a</i>	he kisses;	<i>báci-ano</i> ,	they kiss.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>bac-erò,</i>	I shall, or will	<i>bac-erémo,</i>	we shall, or will
	[kiss ;		[kiss ;
2d p. <i>bac-erái,</i>	thou wilt kiss ;	<i>bac-eréte,</i>	you will kiss ;
3d p. <i>bac-erà,</i>	he will kiss ;	<i>bac-eránno,</i>	they will kiss.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io bác-i</i>	that I kiss, or	<i>bac-íámo,</i>	that we kiss ;
[(bác-e),	[may kiss ;		
2d p. <i>tu bác-i,</i>	that thou kiss ;	<i>bac-íáte,</i>	that you kiss ;
3d p. <i>égli bác-i</i>	that he kiss ;	<i>bác-ino,</i>	that they kiss.
[(bác-e),			

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>bac-eréi</i>	I should, would,	<i>bac-erémmo,</i>	we should, would,
[(bac-ería),	[or could kiss ;		[or could kiss ;
	[or might kiss ;		
2d p. <i>bac-erésti,</i>	thou wouldst	<i>bac-eréste,</i>	you would kiss ;
	[kiss ;		
3d p. <i>bac-erébbe</i>	he would kiss ;	<i>bac-erébbero</i>	they would kiss.
[(bac-ería),		[(bac-eríano,	
		[bac-eríeno),	

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>bac-íámo nói,</i>	let us kiss ;
2d p. <i>báci-a tu,</i>	kiss thou ;	<i>báci-áte vói,</i>	kiss ye ;
3d p. <i>bác-i égli,</i>	let him kiss ;	<i>bác-ino églino,</i>	let them kiss.

*Variation of the Verb Fregiäre.*(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *giäre.*)

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>fréGI-o</i> ,	I adorn, do adorn, [or am adorning;	<i>freg-iámo</i> ,	we adorn;
2d p. <i>frég-i</i> ,	thou adornest;	<i>freg-iáte</i> ,	you adorn;
3d p. <i>fréGI-a</i> ,	he adorns;	<i>fréGI-ano</i> ,	they adorn.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>freg-erò</i> ,	I shall or will [adorn;	<i>freg-erémo</i> ,	we shall or will [adorn;
2d p. <i>freg-erái</i> ,	thou wilt adorn;	<i>freg-eréte</i> ,	you will adorn;
3d p. <i>freg-erà</i> ,	he will adorn;	<i>freg-eránno</i> ,	they will adorn.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io frég-i</i> [(frég-e),	that I adorn, or [may adorn;	<i>freg-iámo</i> ,	that we adorn;
2d p. <i>tu frég-i</i> ,	that thou adorn;	<i>freg-iáte</i> ,	that you adorn;
3d p. <i>égli frég-i</i> [(frég-e),	that he adorn;	<i>frég-ino</i> ,	that they adorn.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>freg-eréi</i> [(freg-eríá),	I should, would, [or could adorn; [or might adorn;	<i>freg-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would, [or could adorn;
2d p. <i>freg-erésti</i> ,	thou wouldst a- [dorn;	<i>freg-eréste</i> ,	you would adorn;
3d p. <i>freg-erébbe</i> [(freg-eríá),	he would adorn;	<i>freg-erébbero</i> , [(freg-eríáno), [freg-eríeno),	they would adorn.

Singular.

Plural.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>freg-íamo nói,</i>	let us adorn ;
2d p. <i>fregi-a tu,</i>	adorn thou ;	<i>fregi-áte vói,</i>	adorn ye ;
3d p. <i>freg-i égli,</i>	let him adorn ;	<i>freg-ino églino,</i>	let them adorn.

Verbs ending in *iáre*, in which *ia* form one syllable, drop the *i* whenever it is followed by another *i* ; as,

*Noiáre*, 'to annoy.'

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *iáre*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>nói-o,</i>	I annoy, do an- [noy, or am [annoying ; thou annoyest ; he annoys ;	<i>no-íamo,</i> <i>noi-áte,</i> <i>nói-ano,</i>	we annoy ; you annoy ; they annoy.
2d p. <i>nói-i,</i>			
3d p. <i>nói-a,</i>			

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>ío nó-i</i>	that I annoy or [may annoy ; that thou annoy ; that he annoy ;	<i>no-íamo,</i> <i>no-íáte,</i> <i>nói-ino,</i>	that we annoy ; that you annoy ; that they annoy.
2d p. <i>tu nó-i,</i>			
3d p. <i>égli nó-i</i> [( <i>nói-e</i> ),			

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>no-íamo,</i>	let us annoy ;
2d p. <i>nói-a tu,</i>	annoy thou ;	<i>noi-áte,</i>	annoy ye ;
3d p. <i>nói-i égli,</i>	let him annoy ;	<i>nói-ino,</i>	let them annoy.

Verbs ending in *iäre*, in which *ia* form two syllables, drop the *i*, only when it would be followed by the vowels *ia*; as,

*Inviäre*, 'to send.'

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

### 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>inví-o</i> ,	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>I send, do send,</td> <td rowspan="3">   <i>inv-íamo</i>,</td> <td rowspan="3"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td>[we send ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td>you send ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td>they send.</td> </tr> </table> </td> </tr> <tr> <td>[or am sending ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td>thou sendest ;</td> </tr> </table>	I send, do send,	<i>inv-íamo</i> ,	<table border="0"> <tr> <td>[we send ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td>you send ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td>they send.</td> </tr> </table>	[we send ;	you send ;	they send.	[or am sending ;	thou sendest ;	
I send, do send,		<i>inv-íamo</i> ,			<table border="0"> <tr> <td>[we send ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td>you send ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td>they send.</td> </tr> </table>	[we send ;	you send ;	they send.		
[we send ;										
you send ;										
they send.										
[or am sending ;										
thou sendest ;										
2d p. <i>inví-i</i> ,	<i>inví-áte</i> ,									
3d p. <i>inví-a</i> ,	<i>inví-ano</i> ,									

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are commonly divided into two classes, those ending in *ēre* (*long*), and those ending in *ĕre* (*short*): both of these in the *perfect* have two terminations, *ĕi* and *ĕtti*; except a few which have the termination *ĕi* only.

### *Variation of the Verb Temére.*

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ēre* (*long*); and of those which in the *perfect* end in *ĕi* and *ĕtti*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

### 1. — Present.

### 2. — Past.

*Tem-ére*, |to fear. || *avére temúto*, |to have feared.

3. — *Future.*

<i>avère a temére,</i> <i>èssere per temére,</i> <i>dovère temére;</i>	}	to have to fear, or to be about to fear.
--	---	---

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

<i>tem-éndo,</i>	fearing;	<i>avéndo temúto,</i>	having feared.
------------------	----------	-----------------------	----------------

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.*

<i>tem-énte, s.,</i> <i>tem-énti, p.,</i>	}	fearing;	}	<i>tem-úto, m. s.,</i> <i>[tem-úti, p.,</i> <i>tem-úta, f. s.,</i> <i>[tem-úte, p.,</i>	} feared.
--	---	----------	---	--	-----------

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>tém-o,</i>	I fear, or do	<i>tem-iámo</i> (tem-	we fear;
2d p. <i>tém-i,</i>	[fear, or am	[-émo),	
3d p. <i>tém-e,</i>	[fearing;	<i>tem-éte,</i>	you fear;
	thou fearest;	<i>tém-ono,</i>	they fear.
	he fears;		

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío tem-éva</i>	I feared, or did	<i>tem-evámo,</i>	we feared;
[or <i>tem-éa,</i>	[fear, or was		
2d p. <i>tem-évi,</i>	[fearing;	<i>tem-eváte,</i>	you feared;
3d p. <i>égli tem-</i>	thou fearedst;	<i>tem-eváno</i> or	they feared.
[ <i>éva</i> or <i>tem-éa,</i>	he feared;	[ <i>tem-éano,</i>	
		[(tem-iéno),	

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>tem-ÉI</i> or [ <i>tem-ÉTTI</i> , [( <i>tem-é'</i> ),	I feared, or did [fear;	<i>tem-émmo</i> ,	we feared ;
2d p. <i>tem-ésti</i> ,	thou fearest ;	<i>tem-éste</i> ,	you feared ;
3d p. <i>tem-È</i> or [ <i>tem-ÉTTE</i> [( <i>tem-éo</i> ),	he feared ;	<i>tem-ÉRONO</i> or [ <i>tem-ÉTTERO</i> [( <i>tem-éRO</i> , <i>tem-ér</i> )	they feared.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>tem-erò</i> ,	I shall or will [fear;	<i>tem-erémo</i> ,	we shall or will [fear ;
2d p. <i>tem-eràì</i> ,	thou wilt fear ;	<i>tem-eréte</i> ,	you will fear ;
3d p. <i>tem-erà</i> ,	he will fear ;	<i>tem-eránno</i> ,	they will fear.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ho temúto</i> ,	I have feared ;	<i>abbidmo temúto</i> ,	we have feared.
---------------------------	-----------------	-------------------------	-----------------

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io avéva temúto</i> ,		I had feared.
---------------------------------	--	---------------

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>ébbi temúto</i> ,		I had feared.
-----------------------------	--	---------------

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. <i>avrò temúto</i> ,		I shall or will have feared.
-----------------------------	--	------------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io tém-a</i> ,	that I fear, or [may fear ;	<i>tem-idmo</i> ,	that we fear ;
2d p. <i>tu tém-a</i> or [ <i>tém-i</i> ,	that thou fear ;	<i>tem-idte</i> ,	that you fear ;
3d p. <i>égli tém-a</i> ,	that he fear ;	<i>tém-ano</i> ,	that they fear.

Singular.

Plural.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io tem-éssi</i> ,	if I feared, or [should fear ;	<i>tem-éssimo</i> ,	if we feared ;
2d p. <i>tu tem-éssi</i> ,	if thou fearest ;	<i>tem-éste</i> ,	if you feared ;
3d p. <i>tem-ésse</i> ,	if he feared ;	<i>tem-éssero</i> (tem- [ <i>-éssino</i> ),	if they feared.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io ábbia temúto</i> ,	that I have feared, or [may have feared.
---------------------------------	---

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io avéssi temúto</i> ,	if I had feared.
----------------------------------	------------------

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>tem-eréi</i> [( <i>tem-ería</i> ),	I should, would, [or could fear ; [or might fear ;	<i>tem-erémmo</i> ,	we should, would, [or could fear ;
2d p. <i>tem-erésti</i> ,	thou wouldst [fear ;	<i>tem-eréste</i> ,	you would fear ;
3d p. <i>tem-erébbe</i> [( <i>tem-ería</i> ),	he would fear ;	<i>tem-erébbero</i> [( <i>tem-eriano</i> , [ <i>tem-erieno</i> ),	they would fear.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. <i>avréi temúto</i> ,	I should, would, or could have [feared ; or might have feared.
------------------------------	---

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>tem-íamo nói</i> ,	let us fear ;
2d p. <i>tém-i tu</i>	fear thou ;	<i>tem-éte vói</i> ,	fear ye ;
3d p. <i>tém-a égli</i> ,	let him fear ;	<i>tém-ano églino</i> ,	let them fear.



*Variation of the Verb Tessere.*

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ĕre* (*short*); and of those which in the *perfect* end in *ĕi* only.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

*Tĕss-ere*, |to weave. || *avĕre tessúto*, |to have woven.

3. — *Future.*

*avĕre a tessere,*  
*ĕssere per tessere,*  
*dovĕre tessere,* } to have to weave, or  
to be about to weave.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

*tĕss-ĕndo*, |weaving. || *avĕndo tessúto*, |having woven.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

7. — *Past.*

*tĕss-ĕnte*, s., } weaving.  
*tĕss-ĕnti*, p., }  
|| *tĕss-úto*, m. s., } woven.  
[*tĕss-úti*, p., }  
*tĕss-úta*, f. s., }  
[*tĕss-úte*, p., }

II. INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *tĕss-o*, | I weave, or do | *tĕss-ídmo* (tĕss- | we weave.  
[weave, or am | [-ĕmo),  
[weaving; ||

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io tess-éva* or *tess-éa*, | I wove, or did weave, or  
[was weaving.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>tess-éi</i> ,	I wove, or did [weave ;	<i>tess-émmo</i> ,	we wove ;	
2d p. <i>tess-ésti</i> ,		<i>tess-éste</i> ,		you wove ;
3d p. <i>tess-è</i> ( <i>tess-</i> [-éó),		<i>tess-érono</i> ( <i>tess-</i> [-éro),		they wove.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *tess-erò*, | I shall or will weave.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho tessúto*, | I have woven.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io avéva tessúto*, | I had woven.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ébbi tessúto*, | I had woven.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *avrò tessúto*, | I shall or will have woven.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io téss-a*, | that I weave, or may weave.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io tess-éssi*, | if I wove, or should weave.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *to ábbia tessúto*, | if I wove, or should weave.

4.—*Pluperfect.*1st p. *ío avéssi tessúto*, | if I had woven.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1.—*Present.*1st p. *tess-eréi* (*tess-ería*), | I should, would, *or* could weave ;  
| [or might weave.]

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2.—*Past.*1st p. *avréi tessúto*, | I should, would, *or* could have  
| [woven ; *or* might have woven.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . | . . . . .  
2d p. *téss-i tu*, | weave thou.

---

[For a list of Verbs of the Second Conjugation, that in the *perfect* end in *éi*, or in *éi* and *étti*, see APPENDIX, F.]

---

Verbs ending in *cēre* (*long*), in order to preserve the soft sound of *c* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a*, *o*, *u* ; as,

*Tacére*, ‘ to be silent.’

(Paradigm of verbs ending in *cēre* (*long*)\*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

7.—*Past.*

*taci-úto*, m. s., *taci-úti*, p., } been silent.  
*taci-úta*, f. s., *taci-úte*, p., }

---

\* These verbs are subject, also, to some *irregularities*, which will be noticed in treating of *Irregular Verbs*.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## I. — Present.

1st p. <i>táci-o*</i> (tác- [ci-o),	I am silent ;	<i>tac-riamo</i> ,	we are silent ;
2d p. <i>tác-i</i> ,	thou art silent ;	<i>tac-éte</i> ,	you are silent ;
3d p. <i>tác-e</i> ,	he is silent ;	<i>táci-ono</i> (táci- [-ono),	they are silent.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## I. — Present.

1st p. <i>io táci-a</i>	that I be silent, or	<i>tac-riamo</i> ,	that we be silent ;
[ (táci-a),	[ may be silent ;		
2d p. <i>tu táci-a</i>	that thou be si-	<i>tac-iate</i> ,	that you be si-
[ or <i>tác-i</i> (táci- [-a),	[ lent ;		[ lent ;
3d p. <i>egli táci-a</i>	that he be silent ;	<i>táci-ano</i> (táci- [-ano),	that they be si-
[ (táci-a),			[ lent.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .		<i>tac-riamo noi</i> ,	let us be silent ;
2d p. <i>tác-i tu</i> ,	be thou silent ;	<i>tac-éte voi</i> ,	be ye silent ;
3d p. <i>táci-a</i> (tác- [ci-a) <i>egli</i> ,	let him be silent ;	<i>táci-ano</i> (táci- [-ano) <i>églino</i> ,	let them be si- [lent

Verbs ending in *cĕre* (*short*) take an *i* after *c*, in the *past participle* only ; as, I. *pásc-ere*, 'to feed' ; 7. — *pasci-úto*, m. s., *pasci-úti*, p. ; *pasci-úta*, f. s. ; *pasci-úte*, p., 'fed.'

Verbs ending in *iere* drop the *i*, whenever it is followed by another *i* ; as,

*Émpiere*, 'to fill.'

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *iere*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

## I. — Present.

1st p. <i>émpri-o</i> ,	I fill, or do fill, or	<i>emp-riamo</i> (emp- [am filling ;	we fill ;
		[ -iémo),	

\* *Táció*, pronounce both the Romans and Florentines, following the orthography of the best prose writers (and not *táccio*, as poets have, sometimes, been obliged to say), to distinguish this from *táccio*, a form of the verb *tacciare*, 'to blame.'

## Singular.

## Plural.

2d p. <i>émp-i</i> ,	thou fillest ;	<i>émp-i-éte</i> ,	you fill ;
3d p. <i>émp-i-e</i> ,	he fills,	<i>émp-i-ono</i> ,	they fill.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io émp-i-a</i>	that I fill, or	<i>émp-i-ámo</i> ,	that we fill ;
[( <i>émp-i-e</i> ),	[may fill ;		
2d p. <i>tu émp-i-a</i>	that thou fill ;	<i>émp-i-áte</i> ,	that you fill ;
[or <i>émp-i</i> ,			
3d p. <i>égli émp-i-a</i>	that he fill ;	<i>émp-i-ano</i> ,	that they fill.
[( <i>émp-i-e</i> ),			

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>émp-i-ámo</i> ,	let us fill ;
2d p. <i>émp-i tu</i> ,	fill thou ;	<i>émp-i-éte</i> ,	fill ye ;
3d p. <i>émp-i-a</i>	let him fill ;	<i>émp-i-ano</i> ,	let them fill.
[ <i>égli</i> ,			

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

The verbs of this conjugation are divided into three classes, those which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end in *o* ; those which end in *isco* ; and those which have *both* of these *terminations*.

*Variation of the Verb Sentire.*

(Paradigm of the verbs of the third conjugation which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end in *o* only.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## Simple Tenses.

## Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

<i>Sent-íre</i> ,	to hear.	<i>avére sentíto</i> ,	to have heard.
-------------------	----------	------------------------	----------------

3. — *Future.*

*avére a sentíre,*  
*éssere per sentíre,*  
*dovére sentíre,* } to have to hear, or  
to be about to hear.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

*sent-éndo,* | hearing.

5. — *Past.*

|| *avéndo sentíto,* | having heard.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

(*sent-énte, s.,*  
*sent-énti, p.,*) } hearing.

7. — *Past.*

{ *sent-íto, m. s.,*  
[*sent-íti, p.,*  
*sent-íta, f. s.,*  
[*sent-íte, p.,*] } heard.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>sent-o,</i>	I hear, or do [hear, or am [hearing;	<i>sent-íamo,</i>	we hear;
2d p. <i>sent-i,</i>	thou hearest;	<i>sent-íte,</i>	you hear;
3d p. <i>sent-e,</i>	he hears;	<i>sent-ono,</i>	they hear.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío sent-íva</i> [or <i>sent-ía,</i>	I heard, or did [hear, or was [hearing;	<i>sent-ivámo,</i>	we heard;
2d p. <i>sent-ívi,</i>	thou heardst;	<i>sent-íváte,</i>	you heard;
3d p. <i>égli sent-</i> [ <i>íva</i> or <i>sent-ía,</i>	he heard;	<i>sent-ívano</i> or [ <i>sent-iano</i> [( <i>sent-íeno</i> ),	they heard.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>sent-íi,</i>	I heard, or did [hear;	<i>sent-ímmo,</i>	we heard;
2d p. <i>sent-ísti,</i>	thou heardst;	<i>sent-íste,</i>	you heard;
3d p. <i>sent-ì</i> ( <i>sent-</i> [ <i>-ío</i> ),	he heard;	<i>sent-írono</i> ( <i>sent-</i> [ <i>-íro, sen-tir</i> ),	they heard.

Singular.

Plural.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>sent-irò,</i>	I shall or will	<i>sent-irémo,</i>	we will hear ;
	[hear ;		
2d p. <i>sent-irái,</i>	thou wilt hear ;	<i>sent-iréte,</i>	you will hear ;
3d p. <i>sent-irà,</i>	he will hear ;	<i>sent-iranno,</i>	they will hear.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>ho sentíto,</i>	I have heard.
---------------------------	---------------

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io avéva sentíto,</i>	I had heard.
---------------------------------	--------------

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>ébbi sentíto,</i>	I had heard.
-----------------------------	--------------

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. <i>avrò sentíto,</i>	I shall or will have heard.
-----------------------------	-----------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io sént-A,</i>	that I hear, or	<i>sent-íamo,</i>	that we hear ;
	[may hear ;		
2d p. <i>tu sént-A</i>	that thou hear ;	<i>sent-íate,</i>	that you hear ;
[or <i>sént-I,</i>			
3d p. <i>égli sént-A,</i>	that he hear ;	<i>sént-ANO,</i>	that they hear.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io sent-íssi,</i>	if I heard, or	<i>sent-íssimo,</i>	if we heard ;
	[should hear ;		
2d p. <i>tu sent-íssi,</i>	if thou heardst ;	<i>sent-íste,</i>	if you heard ;
3d p. <i>sent-ísse,</i>	if he heard ;	<i>sent-íssero (sent-</i>	if they heard.
		<i>[-íssino),</i>	

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io abbia sentíto,</i>	that I have heard, or
	[may have heard.

4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi sentíto*, | if I had heard.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>sent-iréi</i> [( <i>sent-iría</i> ),	I should, would, [or could hear ; [or might hear ;	<i>sent-irémmo</i> ,	we should, would, [or could hear ;
2d p. <i>sent-irésti</i> ,	thou wouldst [hear ;	<i>sent-iréste</i> ,	you would hear ;
3d p. <i>sent-irébbe</i> [( <i>sent-iría</i> ),	he would hear ;	<i>sent-irébbero</i> [( <i>sent-iríano</i> ),	they would hear.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*1st p. *avréi sentíto*, | I should, would, or could have  
[heard ; or might have heard.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>sent-íamo nói</i> ,	let us hear ;
2d p. <i>sént-í tu</i> ,	hear thou ;	<i>sent-íte vói</i> ,	hear ye ;
3d p. <i>sént-A égli</i> ,	let him hear ;	<i>sént-ANO églino</i> ,	let them hear.

*Variation of the Verb Esibíre.*

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, have the termination *isco* only.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.**Esib-íre*, |to offer.|| *avére esibíto*, |to have offered.



3. — *Future.*

*avere ad esibire,*  
*essere per esibire,*  
*dovere esibire,* } to have to offer, or  
to be about to offer.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

*esib-endo,* | offering. || *avendo esibito,* | having offered.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.*

*esib-ente, s.,*  
*esib-enti, p.,* } offering. || *esib-ito, m. s.,*  
[*esib-iti, p.,*  
*esib-ita, f. s.,*  
[*esib-ite, p.,* } offered.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>esib-isco,</i>	I offer, or do	<i>esib-iámo,</i>	we offer ;
	[offer, or am		
	offering ;		
2d p. <i>esib-isci,</i>	thou offerest ;	<i>esib-íte,</i>	you offer ;
3d p. <i>esib-isce,</i>	he offers ;	<i>esib-íscono,</i>	they offer.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io esib-íva* or *esib-ía,* | I offered, or did offer, or  
[was offering.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *esib-íi,* | I offered, or did offer.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *esib-irò,* | I shall or will offer.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho esibito,* | I have offered.

6. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéva esibíto,* | I had offered.7. — *Second Pluperfect.*1st p. *ébbi esibíto,* | I had offered.8. — *Future Anterior.*1st p. *avrò esibíto,* | I shall or will have offered.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io esib-</i>	that I offer, or	<i>esib-iámo,</i>	that we offer ;
[-íSCA,	[may offer ;		
2d p. <i>tu esib-</i>	that thou offer ;	<i>esib-iáte,</i>	that you offer ;
[-íSCA, or <i>esib-</i>			
[-íSCHI,			
3d p. <i>egli esib-</i>	that he offer ;	<i>esib-íscano,</i>	that they offer.
[-íSCA,			

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io esib-íssi,* | if I offered, or should offer.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *io ábbia esibíto,* | that I have offered, or  
[may have offered.4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi esibíto,* | if I had offered.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *esib-iréi (esib-iría),* | I should, would, or could offer ;  
[or might offer.

Singular.

Plural.

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *avrèi esibíto,* | I should, would, or could have  
[offered; or might have offered.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>esib-íamo,</i>	let us offer;
2d p. <i>esib-ísci,</i>	offer thou;	<i>esib-íte,</i>	offer ye;
3d p. <i>esib-ísca,</i>	let him offer;	<i>esib-íscano,</i>	let them offer.

*Variation of the Verb Abborrire.*

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end both in *o* and *isco*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

2. — *Past.*

*Abborr-íre,* | to abhor. || *avére abborrito,* | to have abhorred.

3. — *Future.*

*avére ad abborrire,*  
*éssere per abborrire,*  
*dovére abborrire,* } to have to abhor, or  
to be about to abhor.

GERUND.

4. — *Present.*

5. — *Past.*

*abborr-éndo,* | abhorring. || *avéndo abborrito,* | having abhorred.

PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

7. — *Past.*

<i>abborr-énte,</i> s.,	} abhorring.		<i>abborr-íto,</i> m. s.,	} abhorred.
<i>abborr-énti,</i> p.,			[ <i>abborr-íti,</i> p.,	
	<i>abborr-íta,</i> f. s.,			
	[ <i>abborr-íte,</i> p.,			

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>abbórr-o</i> , or [ <i>abborr-ísco</i> ,	I abhor, or do [abhor, or am [abhorring;	<i>abborr-íamo</i> ,	} we abhor ;	
2d p. <i>abbórr-I</i> , or [ <i>abborr-ísci</i> ,	thou abhorrest ;	<i>abborr-íte</i> ,		} you abhor ;
3d p. <i>abbórr-E</i> , or [ <i>abborr-ísce</i> ,	he abhors ;	<i>abbórr-ono</i> , or [ <i>abborr-íscono</i> ,		

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *to abbórr-íva* or *abbórr-ía*, | I abhorred, or did abhor, or  
[was abhorring.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *abbórr-íi*, | I abhorred, or did abhor.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *abbórr-irò*, | I shall or will abhor.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ho abbórr-íto*, | I have abhorred.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *to avéva abbórr-íto*, | I had abhorred.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ébbi abbórr-íto*, | I had abhorred.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *avrò abbórr-íto*, | I shall or will have abhorred.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io abbórr-A</i> , [or <i>abbórr-ísCA</i> ,	that I abhor, or [may abhor ;	<i>abbórr-iámo</i> ,	that we abhor ;
2d p. <i>tu abbórr-A</i> , [or <i>abbórr-I</i> ; or [ <i>abbórr-ísCA</i> , or [ <i>abbórr-ísCHI</i> ,	that thou abhor ;	<i>abbórr-iáte</i> ,	that you abhor ;
3d p. <i>égli abbórr-</i> [ <i>-A</i> , or <i>abbórr-</i> [ <i>-ísCA</i> ,	that he abhor ;	<i>abbórr-ANO</i> , or <i>ab-</i> [ <i>bórr-ísCANO</i> ,	that they abhor.

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io abbórr-íssi*, | if I abhorred, or should abhor.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *io ábbia abbórríto*, | that I have abhorred, or  
[may have abhorred.4. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *io avéssi abbórríto*, | if I had abhorred.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *abbórr-iréi* (*abbórr-iría*), | I should, would, or could abhor ;  
[or might abhor.

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*1st p. *avréi abbórríto*, | I should, would, or could have ab-  
[horred ; or might have abhorred.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.						
1st p. . . . .							
2d p. <i>abbórr-i</i> , or	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>abborr-íamo nói,</i></td> <td>let us abhor ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>abborr-íte vói,</i></td> <td>abhor ye ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>abbórr-ANO, or</i></td> <td>let them abhor.</td> </tr> </table>	<i>abborr-íamo nói,</i>	let us abhor ;	<i>abborr-íte vói,</i>	abhor ye ;	<i>abbórr-ANO, or</i>	let them abhor.
<i>abborr-íamo nói,</i>		let us abhor ;					
<i>abborr-íte vói,</i>		abhor ye ;					
<i>abbórr-ANO, or</i>	let them abhor.						
[ <i>abborr-ísci tu,</i>							
3d p. <i>abbórr-A</i> , or							
[ <i>abborr-ísca</i>	[ <i>abborr-íscano</i>						
[ <i>égli,</i>	[ <i>églino,</i>						

[For a list of Verbs of the Third Conjugation, that in the *present* of the *indicative* end in *o*, in *íscó*, or in *o* and *íscó*, see APPENDIX, G.]

Verbs ending in *círe*, in order to preserve the soft sound of the *c* in all their inflections, take an *i* after that consonant, whenever it is followed by *a*, *o* ; as,

*Cucíre*, ‘to sew.’

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *círe*.)

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>cúci-o</i> ,	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">I sew, do sew, or</td> <td rowspan="3"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íamo</i></td> <td>(<i>cuc-</i>we sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[am sēwing ;</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[-ímo),</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íte,</i></td> <td>you sew ;</td> </tr> </table> </td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">thou sewest ;</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cúci-ono,</i></td> <td>they sew.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">3d p. <i>cúc-e</i>,</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">he sews ;</td> <td></td> </tr> </table>	I sew, do sew, or	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íamo</i></td> <td>(<i>cuc-</i>we sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[am sēwing ;</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[-ímo),</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íte,</i></td> <td>you sew ;</td> </tr> </table>	<i>cuc-íamo</i>	( <i>cuc-</i> we sew ;	[am sēwing ;	[-ímo),	<i>cuc-íte,</i>	you sew ;	thou sewest ;	<i>cúci-ono,</i>	they sew.	3d p. <i>cúc-e</i> ,	he sews ;	
I sew, do sew, or		<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íamo</i></td> <td>(<i>cuc-</i>we sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[am sēwing ;</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[-ímo),</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íte,</i></td> <td>you sew ;</td> </tr> </table>		<i>cuc-íamo</i>	( <i>cuc-</i> we sew ;	[am sēwing ;	[-ímo),	<i>cuc-íte,</i>	you sew ;						
<i>cuc-íamo</i>				( <i>cuc-</i> we sew ;											
[am sēwing ;	[-ímo),														
<i>cuc-íte,</i>	you sew ;														
thou sewest ;	<i>cúci-ono,</i>	they sew.													
3d p. <i>cúc-e</i> ,	he sews ;														

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>íó cúci-a</i> ,	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">that I sew, or</td> <td rowspan="3"> <table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íamo,</i></td> <td>that we sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[may sew ;</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íate,</i></td> <td>that you sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cúci-ano,</i></td> <td>that they sew.</td> </tr> </table> </td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">that thou sew ;</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cúci-ano,</i></td> <td>that they sew.</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[or <i>cúc-i,</i></td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">that he sew ;</td> <td></td> </tr> </table>	that I sew, or	<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íamo,</i></td> <td>that we sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[may sew ;</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íate,</i></td> <td>that you sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cúci-ano,</i></td> <td>that they sew.</td> </tr> </table>	<i>cuc-íamo,</i>	that we sew ;	[may sew ;	<i>cuc-íate,</i>	that you sew ;	<i>cúci-ano,</i>	that they sew.	that thou sew ;	<i>cúci-ano,</i>	that they sew.	[or <i>cúc-i,</i>	that he sew ;	
that I sew, or		<table border="0"> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íamo,</i></td> <td>that we sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;">[may sew ;</td> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cuc-íate,</i></td> <td>that you sew ;</td> </tr> <tr> <td style="border-right: 1px solid black; padding-right: 5px;"><i>cúci-ano,</i></td> <td>that they sew.</td> </tr> </table>		<i>cuc-íamo,</i>	that we sew ;	[may sew ;	<i>cuc-íate,</i>	that you sew ;	<i>cúci-ano,</i>	that they sew.						
<i>cuc-íamo,</i>				that we sew ;												
[may sew ;	<i>cuc-íate,</i>		that you sew ;													
<i>cúci-ano,</i>	that they sew.															
that thou sew ;	<i>cúci-ano,</i>	that they sew.														
[or <i>cúc-i,</i>	that he sew ;															
2d p. <i>tu cúci-a</i>																
3d p. <i>égli cúci-a</i> ,																

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>cuc-íamo nói,</i>	let us sew ;
2d p. <i>cúc-i tu,</i>	sew thou ;	<i>cuc-íte vói,</i>	sew ye ;
3d p. <i>cúci-a égli,</i>	let him sew ;	<i>cúci-ano églino,</i>	let them sew.

## REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING VERBS.

There are some verbs of the *third* conjugation that belong also to the *second* ; having two terminations in the *infinitive*, one in *ire*, the other in *ěre* ; as,

<i>appetire,</i>	<i>appétere,</i>	to desire ;
<i>inghiottire,</i>	<i>inghióttete,</i>	to swallow :

some, that belong also to the *first* conjugation ; having the two terminations *ire* and *áre* ; as,

<i>impazzire,</i>	<i>impazzáre,</i>	to grow mad ;
<i>incoraggire,</i>	<i>incoraggiáre,</i>	to encourage :

and some others, that belong to *all three* of the conjugations ; as,

<i>ruggire,</i>	<i>ruggere,</i>	<i>ruggiáre,</i>	to roar ;
<i>olire,</i>	<i>ólere,</i>	<i>olezzáre,</i>	to be fragrant.

These verbs are differently varied, according to the conjugation to which their different terminations respectively belong.

The verbs of the *second* and *third* conjugation, in the *first*, *second*, and *third* persons singular of the *present* of the *indicative* and *conjunctive*, and in the *second* and *third* persons singular of the *imperative*, have constantly the *accent* on the *penultimate syllable* ; as, *témo, témi, téme, — téma ; sénto, sénti, sénte, — sénta, &c.* Of those of the *first* conjugation, some have the *accent* on the *penultimate syllable* ; as, *ámo, ámi, áma, — ámi* ; and others, on the *antepenultimate* ;

as, *mórmoro* ('I murmur'), *mórmori*, *mórmora*, — *mórmori*, &c.

[For rules for determining when the verbs of the first conjugation, in the present of the indicative, conjunctive, and imperative, have the accent on the penultimate or the antepenultimate syllable, see APPENDIX, H.]

*Ambire*, 'to crave,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the *indicative*, *conjunctive*, and *imperative*; — and in the *second person plural* of the present of the *conjunctive*, makes *abbiamo ambizione*, — *abbiate ambizione*, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb *ambiare*, 'to amble.'

*Ardire*, 'to dare,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the *indicative*, *conjunctive*, and *imperative*; — in the *second person plural* of the present of the *conjunctive*, — and in the *gerund* makes, *abbiamo ardire* or *ardimento*, — *abbiate ardire*, &c., — *avendo ardire*; and not *ardiamo*, — *ardiate*, — *ardendo*, which come from *ardere*, 'to burn.'

*Bollire*, 'to boil,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the *indicative*, *conjunctive*, and *imperative*, — and in the *second person plural* of the present of the *conjunctive*, changes *ll* into *gl*, and makes *bogliamo*, — *bogliate*, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb *bollare*, 'to stamp,' 'to set a seal.'

*Gioire*, 'to rejoice,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the *indicative*, *conjunctive*, and *imperative*, — in the *second person plural* of the present of the *conjunctive*, — and in the *past participle*, borrows the corresponding forms of the verb *godere*, and makes *godiamo*, — *godiate*, — *goduto*.

*Smaltire*, 'to digest,' in the *first person plural* of the present of the *indicative*, *conjunctive*, and *imperative*, — and in the *second person plural* of the present of the *conjunctive*, makes *procuriamo di smaltire*, — *procuriate di smaltire*; and not *smaltiamo*, — *smaltiate*, which come from *smaltare*, 'to enamel.'



*Suggere*, 'to suck,' in the *past participle* borrows that of *succhiare*, and makes *succhiato*, 'sucked.'

Many regular verbs, in some tenses, have also an irregular formation, which will be noticed in treating of *Irregular Verbs*.

---

EXAMPLES.

*Egli è il véro, ch' io ho AMÁTO, ed ÁMO Guiscárdo, e. quánto viverò io l' AMERÒ; e se apprésso la mórte s' ÁMA, non mi rimarrò d' AMÁRlo.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

It is true, that I have loved, and do love Guiscard, and I will love him as long as I live; and if we love after death, I will not cease to love him.

*Quél che nói CERCHIÁMO di fuggíre.* (Bocc. Introd.)

- That which we endeavour to avoid.

*Chè nói non PREGHIÁMO còse sózze, e non le lascíamo PREGÁRE.* (Albert. 2. 10.)

For we do not ask for vulgar things, nor let others ask for them.

*BACERÉTE il piè a Nóstro Signóre a nóme mío.* (Bemb. Lett.)

You will kiss the feet of Our Lord [the Pope] for me.

*Bontà non è che sua memòria FRÉGI.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

No virtue lends its lustre to his memory.

*Guardáte, che 'l venir su non vi NÓI.* (Dant. Purg. 9.)

Take heed that your coming upward does not harm you.

*TEMÉTTE di non dovérvi essere ricevúto.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

He feared he should not be received there.

*Éssi rúppero le úova degli áspidi, e TESSÉRONO le téle dé' rágnoli.* (Mor. S. Gregor.)

They broke the eggs of the asps, and wove spider's webs.

*Le léggi, cosí le divíne còme le umáne, TÁCIONO.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

The laws, divine as well as human, are silent.

*Éssa, che la séra davánti cenáto non avéa, da fame costréta, a páscere l'érbe si diéde, e PASCIÚTA cóme potè, piangéndo, a várj pensiéri délla súa futúra vita si diéde.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

*Sostién persóna tu di capitáno, — E di mía lontanánza ÉMPI il difétto.* (Tass. Ger. 11., 56.)

*Ésser non può, che quell' angelic' álma, — Non sÉNTA 'l suón dell' amoróse nóte.* (Petr. c. 38.)

*Vássi per tánto a Giacóbbe, e si ESIBÍSCONO le soddisfazióni maggióri, che darsi póssano a uómini forestiéri.* (Segn. Pred. 25.)

*E lo svegliáto ciò che véde* **ABBÓRRE.** (Dant. Par. 26.)

*Abborrénte, [ciòè] che* **ABBORRÍSCE.** (Crúscá.)

*Con tal cúra viéne, — Che la piága da sézzo si RICÚCIA.* (Dant. Purg. 25.)

*Tu ancóra non séi ben temperáto in quésta virtù di APPETÍRE gli onóri.* (Casa, lett. 70.)

*La meditazióne le mostráva, che élla dovésse APPÉTERE, e domandáre.* (Scal. S. Agost.)

*E non par mica vergógna, — Tra i bicchiéri IMPAZZÍR tre vólte l'ángo.* (Red. Ditir. 37.)

*La dónna sentíva sí fáto dolóre, che quási n' éra per IMPAZZÁRE.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

*E 'n sul cor quási féro león RÚGGE, — La nótte allór, quand' ío posár dovréi.* (Petr. s. 228.)

She, that the evening before had not supped, compelled by hunger, began to feed herself on herbs, and after she had fed herself as well as she could, weeping abandoned herself to the various thoughts of her future life.

Do thou support the office of captain, and supply the want of my absence.

It cannot be possible, that that angelic soul does not hear the sound of the amorous notes.

They go therefore to Jacob, and offer him the greatest satisfaction, which could be given to strangers.

And the upstartled abhors what he sees.

Abhorring, [that is to say] that abhors.

It is with such care, that the wound finally heals.

Thou hast not yet moderated thyself in the virtue of desiring honor.

Meditation taught her what she ought to desire and ask.

And it does not seem to be a shame to get crazy among glasses three times a year.

The woman was so much afflicted, that she came near being crazy.

And in my heart, like a fierce lion, it roars in the night when I ought to repose.

*Va come lióne, che RUGGÍSCE,* It goes, like a lion that roars,  
*cercándo cùí pòssa divoráre.* seeking whom he may devour.  
 (Cavalc. Med. cuor.)

*Posciachè 'l fuóco alquánto ébbe* After that the fire had roared  
*RUGGHIÁTO.* (Dant. Inf. 27.) awhile.

## EXERCISE XVI.

[Let the learner change the terminations *áre, ére, íre*, of the infinitive mood of the following Italian verbs, for the particular terminations they respectively take in the person and tense indicated by the English, according to the foregoing Paradigms.]

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

- I. 1.\* — To love. 4. — loving. 7. — loved. — II.  
*Amáre. am-áre. am-áre.*
1. — I love, thou speakest, he sings, we play, you dance,  
*am-áre, parl-áre, cant-áre, son-áre, ball-áre,*  
 they study. 2. — I walked, thou passedst, he called,  
*studi-áre. cammin-áre, pass-áre, chiam-áre,*  
 we prattled, you confessed, they ordered. 3. — I  
*ciarl-áre, confess-áre, ordin-áre.*  
 confirmed, thou didst deliver, he considered, we preserved,  
*conferm-áre, consegn-áre, consider-áre, conserv-áre,*  
 you advised, they disputed. 4. — I will expect, thou  
*consigli-áre, contrast-áre. aspett-áre,*  
 wilt imagine, he will assault, we will dedicate, you will  
*immagin-áre, assalt-áre, dedic-áre,*  
 assure, they will seek. 5. — I have praised.† — III.  
*assicur-áre, cerc-áre. lod-áre.*
1. — I may fast, thou mayest besiege, he may ride, we  
*digiun-áre, assedi-áre, cavalc-áre,*  
 may punish, you may prove, they may practise. 2. —  
*castig-áre, prov-áre, pratic-áre.*

\* To facilitate reference, we use, in this and the following exercises on verbs, the numbers, which we have affixed to the moods and tenses in the Paradigms.

† The learner can form the compound tenses of any of these verbs by joining their *past participle* to the simple tenses of the auxiliary verb *avére*, 'to have.'

I might refuse, thou mightest invent, he might accept, we  
*rifjut-áre,* *invent-áre,* *accett-áre,*  
 might accompany, you might experience, they might ad-  
*accompagn-áre,* *speriment-áre,* *amministr-*  
 minister. — IV. 1.—I would prolong, thou wouldst ven-  
*-áre.* *prolung-áre,* *arrisic-*  
 ture, he would eat, we would pray, you would envy,  
*-áre,* *mangi-áre,* *preg-áre,* *invidi-áre,*  
 they would tire. — V. — ask thou, let him judge, let  
*annoi-áre.* *domand-áre,* *giudic-áre,*  
 us change, carry ye back, let them wait.  
*cambi-áre,* *riport-áre,* *aspett-áre.*

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

I. 1. — To fear. 4. — fearing. 7. — feared. — II.  
*Temére.* *tem-ére.* *tem-ére.*

1. — I believe, thou receivest, he sells, we repeat, you  
*créd-ere,* *ricév-ere,* *vénd-ere,* *ripét-ere;*

enjoy, they depend. 2. — I wove, thou didst beat down,  
*god-ére,* *dipénd-ere.* *téss-ere,* *abbátt-ere,*

he rivaled, we debated, you exacted, they consented.  
*compét-ere,* *dibátt-ere,* *esig-ere,* *accéd-ere.*

3. — I mowed, thou didst beat, he groaned, we sheared,  
*miét-ere,* *bátt-ere,* *gém-ere,* *tónd-ere,*

you reflected, they turned. 4. — I will provide, thou  
*riflétt-ere,* *intéss-ere.* *provvéd-ére,*

wilt fill, he will rage, we will feed, you will lose, they  
*émpi-ere,* *frém-ere,* *pásc-ere,* *pérd-ere,*

will press. — III. 1. — I may cleave, thou mayest render,  
*prém-ere.* *fénd-ere,* *rénd-ere,*

he may resolve, we may re-enjoy, you may unweave,  
*risólv-ere,* *rigod-ére,* *stéss-ere,*

they may succeed. 2. — I might yield, thou mightest  
*succéd-ere.* *céd-ere,* *assólv-*

absolve, he might grant, we might dissolve, you might fill  
*-ere,* *concéd-ere,* *dissólv-ere,* *riémpi-*

again, they might suck. — IV. 1. — I would combat,  
 -ere, *súgg-ere.* *combátt-ere,*

thou wouldst precede, he would hang up, we would sell  
*preced-ere,* *appénd-ere,* *rivénd-*

over again, you would proceed, they would succumb. —  
 -ere, *proced-ere,* *soccómb-ere.*

V. — desist thou, let him drink, let us accomplish, recede  
*desíst-ere,* *bév-ere,* *cómpi-ere,* *ricéd-ere,*

ye, let them pour out.\*  
*mésc-ere.*

## THIRD CONJUGATION.

I. 1. — To hear. 4. — hearing. 7. — heard. — II.  
*Sentíre.* *sent-íre.* *sent-íre.*

1. — I sleep, thou consentest, he understands, we rejoice,  
*dorm-íre,* *consent-íre,* *cap-íre,* *gio-íre,*

you transfer, they serve. 2. — I fled, thou embellishedst,  
*trasfer-íre,* *serv-íre.* *fugg-íre,* *abell-íre,*

he animated, we weakened, you attacked, they admonished.  
*anim-íre,* *indebbol-íre,* *assal-íre,* *ammon-íre.*

3. — I constructed, thou conceivedst, he banished, we  
*costru-íre,* *concep-íre,* *band-íre,*

assisted, you supplied, they finished. 4. — I will favor,  
*accud-íre,* *suppl-íre,* *fin-íre.* *favor-íre,*

thou wilt differ, he will cure, we will hinder, you will  
*differ-íre,* *guar-íre,* *imped-íre,*

infer, they will grow proud. — III. 1. — I may assent,  
*infer-íre,* *insuperb-íre.* *assent-íre,*

thou mayest furnish, he may chide, we may boil,  
*forn-íre,* *garr-íre,* *boll-íre,*

you may crave, they may establish. 2. — I might  
*amb-íre,* *stabil-íre.* *un-*

unite, thou mightest betray, he might nourish, we  
*-íre,* *trad-íre,* *nutr-íre,*

\* The number of Italian regular verbs in *ére* is so small, that, having already employed them all in this Exercise, we have been obliged to make use of some verbs which, in some of their tenses, are subject to certain irregularities, which will be noticed under *Irregular Verbs*.

might warrant, you might encourage, they might plead.  
*garant-íre,* *incoragg-íre,* *piat-íre.*

— IV. 1. — I would restore, thou wouldst quench, he  
*restitu-íre,* *sop-íre,*

would exhaust, we would define, you would ascertain,  
*esaur-íre,* *defin-íre,* *chiar-íre,*

they would season. — V. — act thou, let him hear, let  
*cond-íre.* *ag-íre,* *sent-íre,*

us dare, obey ye, let them punish.  
*ard-íre,* *obbed-íre,* *pun-íre.*

#### VARIATION OF PASSIVE VERBS.

Passive verbs are formed by joining the verb *éssere*, 'to be,' to the *past participle* of active verbs.

Passive verbs, therefore, through all their tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *éssere*.

#### *Variation of the Verb Éssere Amáto.*

(Paradigm of the *passive verbs*.)

#### I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

1. — *Present.*

*Éssere* { *amáto*, m. s., }  
 { [-i, p., } to be  
 { *amáto*, f. s., } loved.  
 { [-e, p., }

Compound Tenses.

2. — *Past.*

{ *státo amáto*, m. s., }  
 { *státi amáti*,\* p., } to have  
 { *státa amáta*, f. s., } been  
 { *state amáte*, p., } loved.

3. — *Future.*

*avére ad éssere* } *amáto*, m. s., -i, p. } to have to be loved, or  
*éssere per éssere* } *amáta*, f. s., -e, p. } to be about to be loved.  
*dovére éssere*

\* The *past participle* of passive verbs, like that of *éssere*, agrees with the *subject* of the verb in *gender* and *number*.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

essendo	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{am\`ato}, \textit{m. s.}, \\ [-i, \textit{p.},] \\ \textit{am\`ata}, \textit{f. s.}, \\ [-e, \textit{p.},] \end{array} \right\}$	being loved.	$\left\  \begin{array}{l} \textit{es-} \\ \textit{s\`en-} \\ \textit{do.} \end{array} \right\ $	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{st\`ato am\`ato}, \textit{m. s.}, \\ \textit{st\`ati am\`ati}, \textit{p.}, \\ \textit{st\`ata am\`ata}, \textit{f. s.}, \\ \textit{st\`ate am\`ate}, \textit{p.}, \end{array} \right\}$	having been loved.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io s\`ono</i>	I am loved ;		<i>si\`amo am\`ati</i> , m.,	we are loved ;
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} \textit{am\`ato}, \textit{m.}, \\ \textit{am\`ata}, \textit{f.}, \end{array} \right]$			$\left[ \textit{am\`ate}, \textit{f.}, \right]$	
2d p. <i>s\`ei am\`ato</i> ,	thou art loved ;		<i>si\`ete am\`ati</i> , -e,	you are loved ;
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} -a, \\ -a, \end{array} \right]$				
3d p. <i>\`e am\`ato</i> ,	he is loved, she		<i>\`egli\`no s\`ono am\`a-</i>	they are loved.
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} -a, \\ -a, \end{array} \right]$	[is loved ;		$\left[ \textit{ti}, \textit{\`elleno} -e, \right]$	

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io \`era am\`a-</i>	I was loved ;		<i>erav\`amo am\`ati</i> ,	we were loved ;
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} \textit{to}, -a, \\ \textit{to}, -a, \end{array} \right]$			$\left[ \begin{array}{l} -e, \\ -e, \end{array} \right]$	
2d p. <i>\`eri am\`ato</i> ,	thou wast loved ;		<i>erav\`ate am\`ati</i> ,	you were loved ;
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} -a, \\ -a, \end{array} \right]$			$\left[ \begin{array}{l} -e, \\ -e, \end{array} \right]$	
3d p. <i>\`egli \`era</i>	he was loved, she		<i>\`erano am\`ati</i> , -e,	they were loved.
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} \textit{am\`ato}, \textit{\`ella} -a, \\ \textit{am\`ato}, \textit{\`ella} -a, \end{array} \right]$	[was loved ;			

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>f\`ui am\`ato</i> ,	I was loved ;		<i>f\`ummo am\`ati</i> , -e,	we were loved ;
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} -a, \\ -a, \end{array} \right]$				
2d p. <i>f\`osti am\`a-</i>	thou wast loved ;		<i>f\`oste am\`ati</i> , -e,	you were loved ;
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} \textit{to}, -a, \\ \textit{to}, -a, \end{array} \right]$				
3d p. <i>f\`u am\`ato</i> ,	he was loved, she		<i>f\`urono am\`ati</i> , -e,	they were loved.
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} -a, \\ -a, \end{array} \right]$	[was loved ;			

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>sar\`o am\`a-</i>	I shall or will be		<i>sar\`emo am\`ati</i> , -e,	we shall or will
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} \textit{to}, -a, \\ \textit{to}, -a, \end{array} \right]$	[loved ;			[be loved ;
2d p. <i>sar\`ai am\`a-</i>	thou wilt be lov-		<i>sar\`ete am\`ati</i> , -e,	you will be lov-
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} \textit{to}, -a, \\ \textit{to}, -a, \end{array} \right]$	[ed ;			[ed ;
3d p. <i>sar\`a am\`a-</i>	he will be loved,		<i>sar\`anno am\`ati</i> ,	they will be lov-
$\left[ \begin{array}{l} \textit{to}, -a, \\ \textit{to}, -a, \end{array} \right]$	[she will be [loved ;		$\left[ \begin{array}{l} -e, \\ -e, \end{array} \right]$	[ed.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. <i>io sòno stá-</i> [ <i>to amáto,</i> [ <i>státa amáta,</i>	I have been lov- [ed ;	<i>siámo státi amá-</i> [ <i>ti, státe amáte,</i>	we have been [loved.
---	---------------------------	--	-------------------------

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>io éra státo amáto, stá-</i> [ <i>ta amáta,</i>	I had been loved.
--	-------------------

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>fúi státo amáto, státa</i> [ <i>amáta,</i>	I had been loved.
---	-------------------

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. <i>sarò státo amáto, státa</i> [ <i>amáta,</i>	I shall or will have been loved.
--	----------------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io sía amá-</i> [ <i>to, -a,</i>	that I be loved, [or may be lov- [ed ;	<i>siámo amáti, -e,</i>	that we be loved ;
2d p. <i>tu sía amá-</i> [ <i>to, -a,</i>	that thou be lov- [ed ;	<i>siáte amáti, -e,</i>	that you be lov- [ed ;
3d p. <i>églí sía</i> [ <i>amáto, élla -a,</i>	that he be loved ; [she be loved ;	<i>siáno amáti, -e,</i>	that they be lov- [ed.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io fòssi</i> [ <i>amáto, -a,</i>	if I were loved, [or should be [loved ;	<i>fòssimo amáti, -e,</i>	if we were loved ;
2d p. <i>tu fòssi</i> [ <i>amáto, -a,</i>	if thou wert lov- [ed ;	<i>fòste amáti, -e,</i>	if you were lov- [ed ;
3d p. <i>fòsse amá-</i> [ <i>to, -a,</i>	if he were loved, [she were loved ;	<i>fòssero amáti, -e,</i>	if they were lov- [ed.



COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *io sia stato amato, stata* | that I have been loved, or  
 [amata, | [may have been loved.

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io fossi stato amato, stata* | if I had been loved.  
 [amata, |

IV. CONDITIONAL.

SIMPLE TENSE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>sarèi amá-</i>	I should, would,	<i>sarémmo amáti,</i>	we should, would,
[to, -a,	[or could be lov-	[e,	[or could be
	[ed; or might be		[loved;
	[loved;		
2d p. <i>sarèsti</i>	thou wouldst be	<i>sarèste amáti, -e,</i>	you would be
[amáto, -a,	[loved;		[loved;
3d p. <i>sarèbbe</i>	he would be lov-	<i>sarèbbero amáti,</i>	they would be
[amáto, -a,	[ed, she would	[e,	[loved.
	[be loved;		

COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *sarèi stato amato, stata* | I should, would, or could have  
 [amata, | [been loved; or might have been  
 [loved.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . .	. . . . .	<i>siámo amáti, -e,</i>	let us be loved;
		[nóti,	
2d p. <i>sii amáto,</i>	be thou loved;	<i>siáte amáti, -e,</i>	be ye loved;
[-a, tu,		[vóti,	
3d p. <i>sia amáto,</i>	let him be loved;	<i>siano amáti égli-</i>	let them be lov-
[égli, -a élla,	[her be loved;	[no, -e élleno,	[ed.



## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*

*parténte*, m. s., } departing.  
*parténti*, p., }

7. — *Past.*

{ *partíto*, m. s.,  
*partíti*, p.,  
*partíta*, f. s.,  
*partíte*, p. } departed.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *parto*, | I depart, or do depart, or  
 [am departing.]

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío partíva*, | I departed, or did depart, or  
 [was departing.]

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *partí*, | I departed, or did depart.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *partirò*, | I shall or will depart.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

1st p. *ío sóno partíto*, -a, | I have departed.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *ío éra partíto*, -a, | I had departed.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

1st p. *fúi partíto*, -a, | I had departed.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

1st p. *sarò partíto*, -a, | I shall or will have departed.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io pártá,* | that I depart, *or* may depart.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io partíssi,* | if I departed, *or* should depart.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *io síá partíto, -a,* | that I have departed, *or*  
[may have departed.]

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. *io fóssi partíto, -a,* | if I had departed.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *partiréi,* | I should, would, *or* could depart;  
[*or* might depart.]

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. *saréi partíto, -a,* | I should, would, *or* could have de-  
[parted; *or* might have departed.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . |  
2d p. *párti tu,* | depart thou.

---

There are some neuter verbs which require to be varied with *avére*; as, *vivere*, 'to live'; *dormire*, 'to sleep'; *tacere*, 'to keep silent'; *parlare*, 'to speak'; *gridare*, 'to cry out'; *ridere*, 'to laugh'; *scherzare*, 'to sport'; *pranzare*, 'to dine'; *cenare*, 'to sup'; *passeggiare*, 'to walk'; *cavalcare*, 'to ride'; *navigare*, 'to sail'; *tardare*, 'to retard'; *indugiare*, 'to delay'; &c.:—*ho vivúto*, 'I have lived'; *ho dormúto*, 'I have slept'; *ho taciúto*, 'I have kept silent'; &c.

Others are indifferently varied with the auxiliary *avére*, or *éssere*; as, *durare*, 'to last'; *succómbere*, 'to sink under'; *ammutire*, 'to become dumb'; *impallidire*, 'to grow pale'; &c.:—*è duráto* or *ha duráto*, 'it has lasted'; &c.

Others may be varied with either *avére*, or *éssere*; as, *morire*, *guarire*; but the change of the auxiliary alters their signification:—*avére mórtó*, 'to have killed'; *éssere mórtó*, 'to be killed,' or 'to be dead'; *avére gua- rúto*, 'to have cured'; *éssere guarúto*, 'to be cured,' or 'to have recovered.'

---

*Dovére*, 'to be obliged'; *potére*, 'to be able'; *volére*, 'to be willing,' 'to will,' 'to wish'; when joined to a pronominal verb; as, *arréndersi*, 'to surrender one's self'; *frenársi*, 'to restrain one's self'; *pérdersi*, 'to lose one's self'; require to be varied with *éssere*:—*si è dovúto arréndere*, 'he has been obliged to surrender himself'; *non mi son potúto frenare*, 'I have not been able to restrain myself'; *ti séi volúto pérdere*, 'thou wishedst to lose thyself.'\*

---

\* Many of the foregoing verbs are irregular, as will be shown in their proper place.

## VARIATION OF PRONOMINAL VERBS.

Pronominal verbs are varied with the auxiliary *éssere*, 'to be,' according to the conjugation to which their termination belongs.

*Variation of the Verb Pentirsi.*

(Paradigm of the *pronominal verbs*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

*Pentir-si,* | to repent one's | *ésser-si pentito,* | to have repented  
[self. || [one's self.

3. — *Future.*

*avér-si a pentire,*  
*ésser-si per pentire,*  
*dovér-si pentire,* } to have to repent one's self, or  
to be about to repent one's self.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

*penténdo-si,* | repenting one's | *esséndo-si penti-* | having repented  
[self. || [to,] [one's self.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.*

*penténte-si, s.,* } repenting one's  
*penténti-si, p.,* } self. | *pentito-si, m. s.,* }  
| *[pentiti-si, p.,* } [having] repent-  
| *pentita-si, f. s.,* } ed one's self.  
| *[pentite-si, p.,* }

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io mi pén-</i>	I repent myself;	<i>nói ci pentidmo,</i>	we repent our-
	[ <i>to,</i>		[selves;
2d p. <i>ti pénti,</i>	thou repentest	<i>vi pentíte,</i>	you repent your-
	[thyself;		[selves;
3d p. <i>si pénte,</i>	he repents him-	<i>si péntono,</i>	they repent them-
	[self;		[selves.

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *mi pentíva,* | I repented myself.3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *mi pentíi,* | I repented myself.4. — *Future.*1st p. *mi pentirò,* | I shall or will repent myself.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*1st p. *mi sóno pentíto, -a,* | I have repented myself.6. — *Pluperfect.*1st p. *mi éra pentíto, -a,* | I had repented myself.7. — *Second Pluperfect.*1st p. *mi fúi pentíto, -a,* | I had repented myself.8. — *Future Anterior.*1st p. *mi sarò pentíto, -a,* | I shall or will have repented  
[myself.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>mi penta,</i>	that I repent myself, <i>or</i> may [repent myself.
-------------------------	--

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>mi pentissi,</i>	if I repented myself, <i>or</i> should [repent myself.
----------------------------	---

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>mi sia pentito, -a,</i>	that I have repented myself, <i>or</i> [may have repented myself.
-----------------------------------	--

4. — *Pluperfect.*

1st p. <i>mi fossi pentito, -a,</i>	if I had repented myself.
-------------------------------------	---------------------------

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>mi pentirei,</i>	I should, would, <i>or</i> could repent [myself; <i>or</i> might repent myself.
----------------------------	--

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

1st p. <i>mi sarei pentito, -a,</i>	I should, would, <i>or</i> could have re- [pented myself; <i>or</i> might have [repented myself.
-------------------------------------	--



## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>pentíamo-ci nói,</i>	let us repent our-
2d p. <i>pentí-ti tu,</i>	repent thyself ;	<i>pentíte-vi vói,</i>	repent [selves ; your-
3d p. <i>si pénta,</i> or	let him repent	<i>si péntano</i> or	let them repent
[ <i>pénta-si égli,</i>	[himself ;	[ <i>péntan-si</i>	[themselves.
		[ <i>églino,</i>	

A great number of active and neuter verbs may become pronominal by the addition of the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si,* &c. either in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution* ; and then these verbs are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, ‘to be’ ; as, *lodáre*, ‘to praise’ ; *dáre*, ‘to give’ ; *tacére*, ‘to keep silent’ :

*mi sóno dáto un cólpo,*

I have given [to] myself a blow ;

*ti séi dáto per vinto,*

thou hast given thyself up as conquered ;

*si è lodáto,*

he has praised himself ;

*ci siámo taciúti,*

we have kept ourselves silent.

Usage, however, in some instances allows us also to employ the auxiliary *avére*, ‘to have’ ; but then the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si,* &c. are always in the *relation of attribution* ; as,

*mélo sóno* or *mél’ ho godúto,*

I have enjoyed it ;

*télo séi* or *tel’ hai credúto,*

thou hast believed it ;

*sel’ è* or *sel’ ha bevúto,*

he has drunk it.

## VARIATION OF UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

Unipersonal verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary *avére*, 'to have,' according to the conjugation to which they belong.

*Variation of the Verb Pióvere.*(Paradigm of the *unipersonal verbs*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

Simple Tenses.

Compound Tenses.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

*Pióvere*, |to rain. || *avére pióvúto*, |to have rained.

3. — *Future.*

*avére a pióvere*, } to have to rain, or  
*éssere per pióvere*, } to be about to rain.

## GERUND.

4. — *Present.*5. — *Past.*

*pióvendo*, |raining. || *avéndo pióvúto*, |having rained.

## PARTICIPLE.

6. — *Present.*7. — *Past.*

*pióvénte*, |raining. || *pióvúto*, |rained.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *pióve*, | it rains, it does rain, or it is rain-  
 [ing.]

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *piovéva*, or *piovéa*, | it rained, it did rain, or it was  
[raining.]

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *piovè*, *piovètte*, or *pióvve* | it rained, or it did rain.  
[(*pióbbe*),

4. — *Future.*

3d p. *pioverà*, | it will rain.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

5. — *Second Perfect.*

3d p. *ha piovúto*, | it has rained.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *avéva piovúto*, | it had rained.

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ébbe piovúto*, | it had rained.

8. — *Future Anterior.*

2d p. *avrà piovúto*, | it will have rained.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *pióva*, | that it rains, or may rain.

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *piovésse*, | if it rained, or should rain.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *abbia piovúto*, | that it has rained, or may have  
[rained.]

4. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *avésse piovúto*, | if it had rained.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *pioverébbe* (*piovería*), | it would *or* could rain, *or* might  
[rain.]

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

3d p. *avrébbe piovúto*, | it would *or* could have rained, *or*  
[might have rained.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. *piova*, | let it rain.

The following are the *unipersonal verbs* most in use :

<i>aggiornáre</i> ,	to be day ;	<i>geláre</i>	} to freeze ;
<i>annottáre</i> ,	to grow night ;	<i>ghiacciáre</i> ,	
<i>balenáre</i>	} to lighten ;	<i>dighiacciáre</i>	} to thaw ;
<i>lampeggiáre</i> ,			
<i>tuonáre</i> ,	to thunder ;	<i>far frédde</i> ,	to be cold ;
<i>piovere</i> ,	to rain ;	<i>far chiáro</i> ,	to be light ;
<i>diluviáre</i> ,	} to rain very hard ;	<i>far búio</i> ,	to be dark ;
		<i>far cálde</i> ,	to be hot ;
<i>nevicáre</i> ,	to snow ;	<i>far vénlo</i> ,	to be windy ;
<i>grandináre</i>	} to hail ;	<i>far buón témpo</i> ,	to be good weather ;
		<i>far cattivo témpo</i> ,	to be bad weather.

The following verbs, though not *unipersonal in themselves*, are often used *unipersonally*, and may have the third person plural, as well as singular ; and are varied with the auxiliary *éssere*, ' to be ' :

<i>accadére,</i>	} to happen ;	<i>incréscere,</i>	} to displease ;
<i>avveníre,</i>		<i>dispiacére,</i>	
<i>occorrere,</i>		<i>spiacére,</i>	
<i>aggradáre,</i>	} to please ;	<i>parére,</i>	} to seem ;
<i>piacére,</i>		<i>sembráre,</i>	
<i>appartenére,</i>	to belong ;	<i>spettáre,</i>	} to belong ;
<i>bastáre,</i>	to be enough ;	<i>toccaré,</i>	
<i>bisognáre</i>	} to be needful ;	<i>far uópo,</i>	} to be necessary.
<i>conveníre,</i>		<i>far d' uópo,</i>	
<i>importáre,</i>	to be important ;	<i>far mestíeri,</i>	
<i>dipéndere,</i>	to depend ;	<i>far di mestíeri,</i>	

To these may be added all verbs which become passive by taking the particle *si*, either before or after them ; which are varied in the third person both singular and plural, and with the auxiliary *éssere* ; as, *vedérsi*, 'to be seen' :— *si véde*, 'it is seen' ; *si sóno vedúti*, 'they have been seen' ; *biasimársi*, 'to be blamed' ; *si sóno biasimáti*, 'they have been blamed' ; &c.

*E'ssere*, 'to be,' is also used unipersonally, both in the singular and plural, when it is joined to the particles *ci* or *vi* ; as, *ésserci* or *ésservi*, 'to be here,' or 'to be there.' It is varied as follows :

### Variation of the Verb *E'ssere*, unipersonally used.

#### I. INFINITIVE.

##### Simple Tenses.

##### 1. — Present.

*ésser-ci* or *ésser-* | to be here or  
[-*vi*, | [to be there.

##### Compound Tenses.

##### 2. — Past.

*ésser-ci* { *státo*, m. s., } to have  
or *ésser-* { *státi*, p., } been there.  
-*vi*, { *státa*, f. s., }  
          { *státe*, p., }

##### 3. — Future.

*ésser-ci* or *ésser-vi per éssere,* } to have to be there, or  
*avér-ci* or *avér-vi ad éssere,* } to be about to be there.  
*dovér-ci* or *dovér-vi éssere,*



Singular.

Plural.

6. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *c' éra* or *v'* | there had been ; || *c' érano* or *v' éra* | there had been.  
 [ *éra státo, -a,* | [ *no státi, -e,* |

7. — *Second Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ci fu* or *vi* | there had been ; || *ci fúrono* or *vi* | there had been.  
 [ *fu státo, -a,* | [ *fúrono státi, -e,* |

8. — *Future Anterior.*

3d p. *ci sarà* or *vi* | there will have | *ci saránno* or *vi* | there will have  
 [ *sarà státo, -a,* | [ been ; || [ *saránno státi,* | [ been.  
 [ *-e,* |

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## SIMPLE TENSES.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *ci sía* or *vi* | that there be, or | *ci síano, vi sía* | that there be, or  
 [ *sía,* | [ may be ; || [ *no, or ci síeno,* | [ may be.  
 [ *vi síeno,* |

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *ci fósse* or | if there were ; or | *ci fóssero* or *vi* | if there were ; or  
 [ *vi fósse,* | [ should be ; || [ *fóssero,* | [ should be.

## COMPOUND TENSES.

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *ci sía* or *vi* | that there has | *ci síano* or *vi sía* | that there have  
 [ *sía státo, -a,* | been ; || [ *no státi, -e,* | [ been, or may  
 [ have been.

4. — *Pluperfect.*

3d p. *ci fósse* or | if there had been ; | *ci fóssero* or *vi* | if there had been.  
 [ *vi fósse státo,* | [ *fóssero státi,* |  
 [ *-a,* | [ *-e,* |

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

## SIMPLE TENSE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. <i>ci sarébbe</i> [or <i>vi sarébbe</i> ,	there should, [would, or could [be ; or might [be ;		<i>ci sarébbéro</i> or <i>vi</i> [sarébbéro,	there should, [would, or could [be ; or might [be.
--	--	--	---	---

## COMPOUND TENSE.

2. — *Past.*

3d p. <i>ci sarébbe</i> [or <i>vi sarébbe</i> [státo, -a,	there should, [would, or could [have been ; or [might have [been ;		<i>ci sarébbéro</i> or <i>vi</i> [sarébbéro stá- [ti, -e,	there should, [would, or could [have been ; or [might have [been.
---	--	--	---	---

## V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. <i>ci sía</i> , <i>vi</i> [sía, or <i>sía-ci</i> , [sía-vi,	let there be ;		<i>ci síano</i> , <i>vi síe</i> - [no, or <i>sían-ci</i> , [sien-vi,	let there be.
---	----------------	--	--	---------------

The verb *avére*, 'to have,' is often substituted for the verb *éssere* when unipersonally used, and then it is varied after the same manner; as, *avérci* or *avérvi*, 'to be here' or 'to be there'; *ci ha* or *vi ha*, 'here is' or 'there is'; *ci hánno* or *vi hánno*, 'there are'; &c.

The verb *avére*, not only may be used with propriety for the verb *éssere*, but is also elegantly used in the singular, although the noun to which it is joined is in the plural; as, *quánte miglia ci HA?* 'how many miles is it?' *ÉBBEVI mólti uómini*, 'there were a great many men there'; &c.

To express in Italian *here* or *there is some of it*, *here* or *there are some of them*, we join the particle *ne*, 'of it, of them,' to *ci* or *vi*, and say, *éssercene* or *ésservene*,



*avércene* or *avérvene*; as, *cen' è* or *ven' è*, *cen' ha* or *ven' ha*, 'here is some of it,' or 'there is some of it'; *céne sóno* or *véne sóno*, *cen' hánno* or *ven' hánno*, 'there are some of them'; &c.

## EXAMPLES.

*Per certo chi non v' áma, da voi non desidera d' ÉSSERE AMÁTO.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.) Surely he who does not love you, does not desire to be loved by you.

*Nói ERAVÁM PARTÍTI già da ello.* (Dant. Inf. 32.) We had already departed from him.

*DORMÍTO HAI, bella donna, un brève sóno.* (Petr. s. 284.) Thou hast slept, beautiful woman, a short sleep.

*Fu accusáto falsaménte che dovéa AVÉR MÓRTO un rómo, cólla móglie, e con tútta la famíglia.* (Vit. S. Franc.) He was falsely accused to have killed a man, with his wife, and all his family.

*Tarquínio álla fine FU MÓRTO per gli figliuóli del sopradétto Márco Márzio.* (Giov. Vill. l. 1. c. 2.) Tarquin at length was killed by the sons of the above mentioned Marcus Martius.

*Lasciate costúti dille mie múse, che LO GUARÍSCANO.* (Varch. Boez. 1. 1.) Let him be cured by my muses.

*Mío fratéllo per méra grázia di Dio È GUARÍTO.* (Red. lett. 1.) My brother has recovered through the mere mercy of God.

*E 'l PENTÍRSI, e 'l conóscer chiaraménte, — Che quánto piáce al móndo è un brève sóno.* (Petr. s. 1.) And to repent and to know clearly, that what pleases the world is a short dream.

*Dálle quáli facilménte tu TI SARÉSTI POTÚTO ASTENÉRE.* (Mach. Com.) From which thou wouldst have easily abstained.

*Se io dálla verità del fáttö MI FÓSSI SCOSTÁRE VOLÚTA, avréi ben sapúto sótto áltri nómi raccontárla.* (Bocc.) If I had wished to depart from the truth of the fact, I should have known how to relate it under different names.

*Acciocchè mále e scándalo non ne nascésse, ME ne SÓNO TACIÚTA.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.) That no evil or scandal should arise from it, I have kept silent.

*Élla fu sávia céрто, e di grand' ánimo, — Un' áltra SI SARÉ' [sarébbe] DÁTA sul piángere.* (Cecch. Inc. 1. 1.) She was wise surely, and of a great mind; for another would have given herself to weeping.

*Égli è nótte búia, e piovíggina, e par che sia per PIÓVER piú fórte.* (Sacch. nov. 28.) It is a very dark night, and it drizzles, and seems as if it would rain harder.

*CI SÓNO délle áltre dónne assái.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.) Here are many other ladies.

*Caválca, e quándo ANNÓTTA e quándo AGGIÓRNA.* (Ariost. Fur. 27. 12.) He rides both when it grows night, and when it is day.

*Non altraménti a lúì AVVÉNNE, che al Dúca AVVENÚTO ÉRA.* (Bocc. 9. 2. n. 7.) It happened to him not otherwise than it had happened to the Duke.

*E che i vízj débbero da tútti BIASIMÁRSI.* (Pass.) And that vices ought to be blamed by all.

*QUÁNTE MÍGLIA CI HA? — HÁCCENE piú di millánta.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.) How many miles is it? It is an infinite number.

*Là dóve CEN' È úna, che è mólto córta.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.) Where there is one [way] which is very short.

---

## EXERCISE XVII.

[The learner, in the following exercise, will put the *past participle* of *passive* verbs, and of such *neuter* and *pronominal* verbs as are varied with the verb *éssere*, both in the *masculine* and *feminine* gender, by alternating the gender at each tense, as is here done in the English with the *third* person singular.]

### PASSIVE VERBS.

I. 1. — To be loved. *Éssere amáto.* 2. — to have been feared. *éssere státo temúto.*

4. — being believed. *éssere credúto.* 5. — having been heard. — *éssere státo sentúto.*

II. 1. — I am praised, thou art invited, he is expected,  
*lodáto,* *invitáto,* *aspettáto,*

we are called, you are assured, they are punished. 2. —  
*chiamáto,* *assicuráto,* *castigáto.*

I was sought, thou wast advised, she was prayed, we  
*cercáto,* *consigliáto,* *pregáto,*

were accompanied, you were envied, they were assured.  
*accompagnáto,* *invidiáto,* *assicuráto.*

3. — I was assailed, thou wast besieged, he was ordered,  
*assaltáto,* *assediató,* *ordináto,*

we were confirmed, you were delivered, they were  
*confirmáto,* *consegnáto,*

accepted. 4. — I shall be proved, thou wilt be asked,  
*accettáto.* *prováto,* *domandáto,*

she will be admired, we shall be paid, you will be  
*ammiráto,* *pagáto,*

honored, they will be blamed. 5. — I have been  
*onoráto,* *biasimáto.*

robbed.\* — III. 1. — I may be believed, thou mayest  
*rubbáto.* *credúto,*

be received, he may be beaten, we may be preceded,  
*ricevúto,* *battúto,* *precedúto,*

you may be provided, they may be sold. 2. — I  
*provvedúto,* *vendúto.*

might be punished, thou mightest be furnished, she  
*púnúto,* *fornúto,*

might be hindered, we might be attacked, you might  
*impedúto,* *assalúto,*

be betrayed, they might be supplied. — IV. 1. —  
*tradúto,* *supplúto.*

I should be admonished, thou wouldst be wounded, he  
*ammonúto,* *ferúto,*

would be banished, we would be encouraged, you would  
*bandúto,* *incoraggúto,*

---

\* The learner can form the compound tenses of any of these verbs by joining the past participle to the compound tenses of the verb *essere*.

be obeyed, they would be invested. — V. — Be thou  
*obbedúto,* *investúto.*  
 allured, let *her* be listened to, let us be employed, be  
*allettúto,* *ascollúto,* *impiegúto,*  
 ye trusted, let them be saved.  
*fidúto,* *salvúto.*

## NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL VERBS.

I. 2. — To have departed. 5. — having repented  
*partúto.* *penitúto*<sup>1</sup>  
 one's self. II. 5. — I have delayed, thou hast kept  
*si.*<sup>2</sup> *indugiúto,* *taciú-*  
 silent (*thysel*), *he* has gone out, we have cured, you  
*to*<sup>3</sup> *ti,*<sup>1</sup> *uscúto,* *guarúto,*  
 have praised yourselves, they have lived. 6. — I had  
<sup>2</sup> *lodúto*<sup>3</sup> *vi,*<sup>1</sup> *vivúto.*<sup>2</sup>  
 wounded myself, thou hadst become dumb, *she* had  
*ferúto*<sup>3</sup> *mi,*<sup>1</sup> *ammulúto,*<sup>2</sup>  
 corrected herself, you had grown childish, they had  
*ricredúto*<sup>3</sup> *si,*<sup>1</sup> *rimbambúto,*<sup>2</sup>  
 seized (*themselves*). 7. — I had dined, thou hadst soiled  
*impadronúto*<sup>3</sup> *si.*<sup>1</sup> *pranzúto,* *imbrattúto*<sup>3</sup>  
 thyself, *he* had grown mad, we had lost ourselves, you  
*ti,*<sup>1</sup> *impazzúto,* <sup>2</sup> *smarrúto*<sup>3</sup> *ci,*<sup>1</sup>  
 had spoken, they were dismayed (*themselves*). 8. —  
*parlúto,* <sup>2</sup> *sbigottúto*<sup>3</sup> *si.*<sup>1</sup>  
 I shall have sailed, thou wilt have complained (*thysel*),  
*navigúto,* <sup>2</sup> *lamentúto*<sup>3</sup> *ti,*<sup>1</sup>  
*she* will have recovered, we will have taken leave  
*guarúto,* <sup>2</sup> *licenziúto*<sup>3</sup>  
 (*ourselves*), you will have walked, they will have married  
*ci,*<sup>1</sup> *passeggiúto,* <sup>2</sup> *maritúto*<sup>3</sup>  
 (*themselves*). — III. 3. — I may have rejoiced (*mysel*),  
*si.*<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *rallegrúto* *mi,*<sup>1</sup>  
 thou mayest have sported, *he* may have colored himself,  
*scherzúto,* <sup>2</sup> *incolorúto*<sup>3</sup> *si,*<sup>1</sup>

we may have gone near, you may have risen (*yourselves*),  
*avvicinato*, <sup>2</sup> *alzato*<sup>3</sup> *vi*<sup>1</sup>,

they may have arrived. 4. — I might have enriched  
*arrivato*. <sup>2</sup> *arricchito*<sup>3</sup>

myself, thou mightest have slept, *she* might have  
*mi*<sup>1</sup>, *dormito*, <sup>2</sup>

instructed herself, we might have sunk under, you  
*istruito*<sup>3</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, *succombuto*,

might have assembled yourselves, they might have  
<sup>2</sup> *riunito*<sup>3</sup> *vi*<sup>1</sup>,

grown pale. — IV. 2. — I should have married myself,  
*impallidito*. <sup>2</sup> *ammogliato*<sup>3</sup> *mi*<sup>1</sup>,

thou shouldst have grown proud, *he* would have rejoiced  
*insuperbito*, <sup>2</sup> *rallegrato*<sup>3</sup>

himself, we would have cried out, you would have  
*si*<sup>1</sup>, *gridato*, <sup>2</sup>

enamoured yourselves, they would have become cruel.  
*innamorato*<sup>3</sup> *vi*<sup>1</sup>, *inferocito*.

— V. — Defend thyself, let her imagine herself,  
*difendere* *ti*, *immaginare*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, or *immaginare*

let us help ourselves, ennoble yourselves, let them  
*si*, *aiutare* *ci*, *annobilire* *vi*, *rispet-*

respect themselves.  
*tare*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, or *rispettare* *si*.

## UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

I. 1. — To rain. 4. — raining. 7. — rained. To  
*Piovere*. *piovere*. *piovere*.

have rained. — II. 1. — It is day. 2. — it grew  
*piovuto*. *aggiornare*. *annot-*

night. 3. — it lightened. 4. — it will thunder. 5. —  
*tare*. *balenare*. *tuonare*.

it has snowed. 6. — it had happened. 7. — it had  
*nevicato*. *avvenuto*.

frozen. 8. — it will have seemed. — III. 1. — it  
*gelato*. *sembrato*.

- may freeze. *gelâre.* 2. — it might thaw. *dimoidâre.* 3. — it may have been cold. *fâtto câldo.* 4. — it might have displeased. — IV. 1. — *dispiaciûto.*
- it would be important. *importâre.* 2. — it would have belonged. *appartenûto.*
- V. — let it be sufficient. *bastâre.*

ÉSSERCI OR ÉSSERVI, AVÉRCI OR AVÉRVI.

- I. 4. — There being. — II. 1. — here is, or there is, *ci<sup>2</sup> Ésser<sup>1</sup>*. *ci éssere, or vi avérc,*
- there are. 2. — there was, there were. 3. — *ci éssere or avére.* *vi éssere, ci \* avére.*
- there was, there were. 4. — there will be, *sing.*, there *vi éssere, ci éssere.* *vi avére, ci*
- will be, *plur.* 5. — there has been some of it, *sing.*, *avére.* *vi éssere<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>,*
- there has been some of them, *plur.* — III. 1. — that there *ci avére<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>* *vi*
- may be, *sing.*, that there may be, *plur.* 2. — if there *avére,* *ci éssere.* *vi*
- were some of it, *sing.*, if there were some of them, *plur.* *avére<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>,* *ci éssere<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>.*
- IV. 1. — there should be, *sing.*, there should be *vi éssere,* *ci avére<sup>2</sup>*
- some of them, *plur.* — V. — let there be, *sing.*, *ci avére, or éssere, ci,*
- let there be some of them, *plur.* *vi éssere<sup>2</sup> ne<sup>1</sup>, or avére, vi, ne.*

## CHAPTER X.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

THE irregularities of Italian Verbs are chiefly confined to the *perfect* tense of the *indicative* mood, and the *past participle*.

Some verbs, however, are also irregular in the *present* of the *indicative*; and then they are irregular likewise in the *present* of the *conjunctive* and in the *imperative*.

When verbs are contracted in the *infinitive* mood, they are contracted also in the *future* tense, and in the *conditional* mood.

---

In those tenses in which verbs are irregular, the irregularity, generally, does not extend to all the persons: thus, with very few exceptions, in the *perfect* of the *indicative*, the *second person singular* and the *first* and *second persons plural*;—and in the *present* of the *indicative* and *conjunctive*, and in the *imperative*, the *first* and *second persons plural*,—are *regular*.

---

In the variation of these verbs, we will give only those tenses in which they depart from the paradigms already given, to which we must refer for the formation of the other tenses. The *persons* which are *irregular* are here printed in *small capitals*.

For the assistance of learners, we have added to each verb, the *auxiliary* with which it is varied in its compound tenses.

---

VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

There are but *four* simple verbs in the first conjugation, which are not varied like *amàre*, viz.

<i>Andàre,</i>	to go ;		<i>fàre,</i>	to do or to make ;
<i>dàre,</i>	to give ;		<i>stàre,</i>	to be, to dwell, to stand, [or to stay.]

*Andàre.*

(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

*Andàre,* | to go.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*andàndo,* |going ; || *andàto,* |gone.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. vo, or vÁ,	I go, or am go- [DO,*]   [ing ;	<i>andiàmo,</i>	we go ;		
2d p. vÁI,		thou goest ;		<i>andáte,</i>	you go ;
3d p. vA,		he goes ;		<i>vánno,</i>	

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *andrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will go.  
[anderò], |

\* *Andàre* is also a *defective* verb, and borrows these forms from the Latin verb *videre*.



III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío</i> VÁDA,	that I go <i>or</i> may [go ;	<i>andiámo,</i>	that we go ;	
2d p. <i>tu</i> VÁDA		<i>andiáte,</i>		that you go ;
[( <i>vádi</i> ),				
3d p. <i>égli</i> VÁDA,	that he go ;	<i>vádano,</i>	that they go.	

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>andréi</i> ( <i>andría</i> ) [by contrac- [tion for <i>anderéi</i> ( <i>andería</i> )],	I should, would, <i>or</i> could go ; <i>or</i> [might go.
--	---

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>andiámo nói,</i>	let us go ;	
2d p. <i>va</i> ( <i>vá</i> ) <i>tu,</i>		<i>andáte vói,</i>		go ye ;
3d p. VÁDA <i>égli,</i>		<i>vádano églino,</i>		let them go.

*Andáre* is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, ci, vi, si*, and the particle *ne* ; thus, **ME NE** *vo*, ‘ I go hence ’ ; **TE NE** *vái*, ‘ thou goest hence ’ ; &c. *Me, te*, &c. are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *andáre*, as *riandáre*, signifying ‘ to go again ’, &c. have the same irregularities.

EXCEPTIONS.

*Riandáre*, signifying ‘ to examine ’ or ‘ to go over again ’ ; and *trasandáre*, ‘ to go beyond ’ ; are *regular* and varied like *amáre*.

The verbs *mandáre*, ‘ to send ’ ; *rimandáre*, ‘ to send back again ’ ; *tramandáre*, ‘ to transmit ’ ; *comandáre*, ‘ to command ’ ; *dimandáre*, ‘ to ask ’ ; &c. are not derivatives of *andáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.

*Dàre.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Dàre,* | to give.

## GERÜND.

## PARTICIPLE.

*dándo,* | giving. || *dáto,* | given.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>do,</i>	I give, or am [giving];	<i>diámo,</i>	we give;
2d p. <i>dái,</i>	thou givest;	<i>dáte,</i>	you give;
3d p. <i>dá,</i>	he gives;	<i>dánno,</i>	they give.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>déttl,</i> or [ <i>diédi (diéi),</i>	I gave; or did [give];	<i>démmo,</i>	we gave;
2d p. <i>désti,</i>	thou gavest;	<i>déste,</i>	you gave;
3d p. <i>détte,</i> or [ <i>diéde (diéo, [diè),</i>	he gave;	<i>déttero,</i> or <i>dié-</i> [ <i>dfro (diérono, [diéro, diér, dé-</i> [no, diénno, dén- [no),	they gave.

4. — *Future.*1st p. *darò,* | I shall, or will give.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io día,</i>	that I give, or [may give];	<i>diámo,</i>	that we give;
2d p. <i>tu día,</i> or [ <i>dii,</i>	that thou give;	<i>diáte,</i>	that you give;
3d p. <i>egli día,</i>	that he give;	<i>díano,</i> or <i>díeno,</i>	that they give.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io DÉSSI,* | if I gave *or* should give.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *DARÉI* (*darfa*), | I should, would, *or* could  
[give; *or* might give.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>diámo nói,</i>	let us give;
2d p. <i>dà</i> ( <i>dá</i> ) <i>tu,</i>	give thou;	<i>dáte vói,</i>	give ye;
3d p. <i>día égli,</i>	let him give;	<i>díano, or díeno</i>	let them give.
			[ <i>églino</i> ].

The compounds of *dáre*, as *ridáre*, ‘to give again’; *addársi*, ‘to devote one’s self’; &c., have the same irregularities.

The verbs *abbondáre*, ‘to abound’; *accommodáre*, ‘to mend’; *badáre*, ‘to mind’; *accordáre*, ‘to grant’; *circondáre*, ‘to surround’; *fidáre*, ‘to trust’; *freddáre*, ‘to cool’; *gridáre*, ‘to cry out’; *guardáre*, ‘to look’; *guidáre*, ‘to guide’; *lodáre*, ‘to praise’; *predáre*, ‘to prey’; *ricordáre*, ‘to remember’; *rivediáre*, ‘to remedy’; *scaldáre*, ‘to warm’; *secondáre*, ‘to second’; &c., are not derivatives of *dáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.

*Färe.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

FÁRE (fácere),\* | to do, or to make.

## GERUND.

## PARTICIPLE.

*facéndo,* | doing. | || FÁTTO, | done.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>fo</i> ( <i>fáccio</i> ),	I do or am do-	FACCIÁMO,	we do ;
	[ing ;		
2d p. FÁI ( <i>fáci</i> ),	thou doest ;	<i>fáte,</i>	you do ;
3d p. <i>fa</i> ( <i>fáce</i> ),	he does ;	FÁNNO ( <i>fán</i> ),	they do.

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *ío facéva* or *facéa* (*féa*), | I did or was doing.3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. FÉCI ( <i>féi</i> ),	I did ;	<i>facémmo</i> ( <i>fém-</i>	we did ;	
				[mo),
2d p. FACÉSTI	thou didst ;	<i>facéste</i> ( <i>féste</i> ),	you did ;	
	[ <i>(féstì)</i> ,			
3d p. FÉCE ( <i>fé</i> ,	he did ;	FÉCERO ( <i>férono</i> ,	they did.	
	[ <i>féo</i> ),			[ <i>férno, féro, fer,</i>
				[ <i>fénno, fen</i> ),

4. — *Future.*

1st p. FARÒ, | I shall or will do.

\* This verb belongs properly to the second conjugation, it being but a contraction of *fácere*, now become *obsolete*, of which it retains many of the forms.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> FÁCCIA,	that I do, <i>or</i> may	FACCIÁMO,	that we do ;
	[do ;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> FÁCCIA,	that thou do ;	FACCIÁTE,	that you do ;
3d p. <i>egli</i> FÁC-	that he do ;	FÁCCIANO,	that they do.
[CIA,			

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io* *faceffi* (*féffi*), | if I did *or* should do.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. FARÉI (*faría*, *faré'*), | I should, would, *or* could  
[do ; *or* might do.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .		FACCIÁMO,	let us do ;
2d p. <i>fa</i> ( <i>fá'</i> ) <i>tu</i> ,	do thou ;	<i>fáte</i> ,	do ye ;
3d p. FÁCCIA	let him do ;	FÁCCIANO,	let them do.
[ <i>egli</i> ,			

The compounds of *färe*, as *assuefäre*, 'to accustom'; *confäre*, 'to suit,' 'to agree'; *contraffäre*, 'to mimic,' 'to imitate'; *disfäre*, 'to undo'; *misfäre*, 'to do wrong'; *liquefäre*, 'to melt'; *sopraffäre*, 'to overpower'; *stupéfäre*, 'to stupefy,' 'to astonish'; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Sodisfäre* or *soddisfäre*, 'to satisfy,' is both *regular* and *irregular*.

The verbs *olfäre*, 'to smell'; *schifäre*, 'to shun'; *trionfäre*, 'to triumph,' are not derivatives of *färe*, and are varied like *amäre*.

*Stàre.*(Varied with *éssere.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

1. — *Present.*

<i>Stàre,</i>	to stand, to stay, to dwell, or to be.
---------------	---

## GERUND.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>stàndo,</i>	standing.	<i>stàto;</i>	stood.
----------------	-----------	---------------	--------

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>sto,</i>	I stand or am [standing;	<i>stiàmo,</i>	we stand ;
2d p. <i>stái,</i>	thou standest ;	<i>stàte,</i>	you stand ;
3d p. <i>stà,</i>	he stands ;	<i>stàno,</i>	they stand.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>stétti</i> [( <i>stéi</i> ),	I stood ;	<i>stémmo,</i>	we stood ;
2d p. <i>stésti,</i>	thou stoodst ;	<i>stéste,</i>	you stood ;
3d p. <i>stétte</i> [( <i>stè</i> ),	he stood ;	<i>stéttero</i> ( <i>stéro,</i> [ <i>stér,</i> <i>stíero,</i> [ <i>stíer</i> ),	they stood.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>starò,</i>	I shall or will stand.
----------------------	------------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io stía,</i>	that I stand or [may stand ;	<i>stiàmo,</i>	that we stand ;
2d p. <i>tu stía,</i> or [ <i>stíi,</i>	that thou stand ;	<i>stíate,</i>	that you stand ;
3d p. <i>egli stía,</i>	that he stand ;	<i>stíano,</i> or <i>stíe-</i> [ <i>no,</i>	that they stand.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío stéssi*, | if I stood *or* should stand.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *STARÉI* (*staría*), | I should, would, *or* could  
[stand; *or* might stand.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>stíamo,</i>	let us stand ;
2d p. <i>stá</i> ( <i>stá'</i> )	stand thou ;	<i>státe,</i>	stand ye ;
	[ <i>tu,</i>		
3d p. <i>stía égh,</i>	let him stand ;	<i>STÍANO,</i> <i>OR</i> <i>STÍE-</i>	let them stand.
		[NO <i>églino,</i>	

*Stáre*, is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns, *mi, ti, si, &c.*, and the particle *ne* : thus, *ME NE sto*, 'I remain here'; *TE NE stái*, 'thou remainest here'; &c. — *Me, te, &c.* are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *stáre*, as *contrastáre*, signifying 'to stand against'; *distáre*, 'to be distant'; *instáre*, 'to entreat'; *ristáre*, 'to stop'; *soprastáre* or *sovrastáre*, signifying 'to delay,' 'to differ'; &c. have the same irregularities.

EXCEPTIONS.

*Contrastáre*, signifying 'to deny,' 'to dispute'; *soprastáre* or *sovrastáre*, signifying 'to stand over,' 'to threaten'; *ostáre*, 'to oppose'; *restáre*, 'to remain'; are *regular*, and are varied like *amáre*.

The verbs *accostáre*, 'to approach'; *acquistáre*, 'to acquire'; *costáre*, 'to cost'; *manifestáre*, 'to manifest'; *pestáre*, 'to pound,' are not derivatives of *stáre*, and are varied like *amáre*.

The foregoing verbs, *andáre, dáre, fáre, and stáre*, in all those forms in which, when they are simple, they form but one syllable, have in their compounds the accent on the last syllable; as, *vo, da, fe', sta*: — *rivò*, 'I go again'; *ridà*, 'he gives back again'; *disfè'*, 'he destroyed'; *instà*, 'entreat thou'; &c.

---

EXAMPLES.

VA *il cavál per Giò, — Per* The horse goes by *Giò*, the ox  
 Ánda VA *il bò, — E l' ásino per* by *Ánda*, and the ass by *A'rri*.\*

Or VÁ', *ch' un sol volére è* Now go, for one only will is in  
 d' amendúe. (Dant. Inf. 2.) both of us.

Quésto, *udito dal sánto vécchio* Having heard this he went to  
 SE NE ANDÒ *mólto consoláto.* the holy man quite consoled.  
 (Vit. S. Ant.)

Príma *ch' áltri dinánzi li RI-* Ere any one repassed before  
 VÁDA. (Dant. Inf. 28.) him.

RIÁnda *le cose, che tu gli hái* Examine the things, which thou  
 détte di me. (Salv. Granch. 2., 5.) hast said to him of me.

Sóno mólti di sí liéve *fantasia,* There are many of so light a  
*che in tutte le lóro ragióni* TRA- mind, that in all their reasonings  
 SÁNDANO.† (Dant. Conv. 178.) they [go beyond the question]  
 wander from the subject of them.

La senténza la quále *San Pié-* The sentence which saint Peter  
 tro DÉTTE *cóntro Ananía.* (Ca- gave against Ananias.  
 vale. Pungill. 97.)

Al cónte piáque móltó *quésta* 'This request pleased the count  
*dománda, e prestaménte rispóse* much, and he immediately replied  
*di sí, e gliéle DIÉDE.* (Bocc. g. that he would, and gave them to  
 2. n. 8.) him.

\* Different interjections used by the Italians in driving those animals.

† We are aware that some copies of the *Convívio* have *trasváno*; *trasándano*, however, is the better reading.



*E il buon maestro del parlar  
próprio [Dánte] disse: ío mi  
FÉCI al mostráto innánzi un póco;  
e Ver me si FÉCE, ed ío ver lúi  
mi FÉI. (Dep. Decam. 99.)*

And the good master of correct  
speaking [*Dante*] said: *I* [made  
myself] *drew a little nearer to*  
*him who had been shown me;*  
and *He drew near me, and I drew*  
*near him.*

*All' inférno non sodísfano  
eziandío le prezíose cóse. (Fr.  
Giord.)*

In hell even precious things  
give no satisfaction.

*E què convièn, ch' ì questo  
pésó pórti — Per léi, tánto ch' a  
Dío si SODDISFÁCCIA. (Dant.  
Pur. 11.)*

And here I must bear for it this  
weight, till satisfaction be made to  
God.

*Veggéndo che da niún cono-  
sciúto v' éra, si STÉTTE. (Bocc.  
g. 5. n. 6.)*

Seeing that he was known by  
none, he stayed there.

*Póssó favelláre, s' ío vóglío; e  
se nó, sí ME NE PÓSSO STÁRE.  
(Fr. Giord. S. Pred. 32.)*

I can speak, if I wish; if not, I  
can refrain from it.

*Ma paúra e pietáde CONTRA-  
STÉTTE — Al mío crudél ardíre.  
(Ovid. Pist.)*

But fear and pity stood against  
my fierce desire.

*Ráde vólte addivién, che all' ál-  
te imprése — Fortúna ingiuri-  
ósa non CONTRÁSTI. (Petr.  
c. 11.)*

Seldom it happens that Fortune  
does not oppose great undertak-  
ings.

*Martúccio, veggéndo la gió-  
vane, maravigliándosi, SOPRA-  
STÉTTE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)*

Martuccio, seeing the lass, won-  
dering at it, tarried.

*Sánza montáre al dósso —  
Dell' árcó, óve lo scóglio più so-  
VRÁSTA. (Dant. Inf. 18.)*

Without ascending on the top  
of the arch where the rock is more  
jutting.

## EXERCISE XVIII.

[In this and the following exercises on *Irregular Verbs*, have been introduced many of those verbs, which, although they are, or, from the similarity of their terminations, seem to be, derived from the simple irregular verbs here given, are yet *regular*. This has been done with a view of early accustoming the learner to make the necessary discrimination.]

- I. 1.—To go. *Andàre.* 4.—giving. *dàre.* 7.—made. *fàre.* — II. 1.—I stay, *stàre,*  
 thou sendest, *mandàre,* he gives again, *ridàre,* we melt, *liquefàre,* you entreat, *instàre,*  
 they go over again. *riandàre.* 2.—I gave, *dàre,* thou accustomedst, *assuefàre,*  
 he stood against, *contrastàre,* we asked, *dimandàre,* you granted, *accordàre,* they triumphed. *trionfàre.*  
 3.—I stayed, *stàre,* thou sendedst back, *rimandàre,* he devoted himself, *addàre*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup>, we  
 imitated, *traffàre,* you delayed, *soprastàre,* they transmitted. *tramandàre.* 4.—I will make, *fàre,*  
 thou wilt oppose, *ostàre,* he will go again, *riandàre,* we will trust, *fidàre,* you will  
 stand over, *vrastàre,* they will praise. *lodàre.* 5.—I have gone, *andàto,*  
 hast made over again, *rifatto,* he has remained, *restato,* we have given, *dato,*  
 you have commanded, *comandato,* they have manifested. *manifestato.* III. 1.—  
 that I deny, *contrastàre,* that thou mayest go beyond, *trasandàre,* that he may  
 satisfy, *fàre,* that we may pound, *pestàre,* that you may attend, *badàre,* that  
 they may cost. *costàre.* 2.—I might astonish, *stupefàre,* thou mightest *pre-*  
 pray, *dàre,* he might approach, *accostàre,* we might disdain, *schifàre,* you might *scal-*  
 warm, *dàre,* they might abound. *abbondàre.* — IV. 1.—I would do wrong, *misfàre,*

thou wouldst acquire, he would command, we would scold,  
*acquistáre,* *comandáre,* *gridáre,*  
 you would smell, they would cost. — V. — go thou, let  
*olfáre,* *costáre.* *andáre,*  
 him give, let us make, stay ye, let them dispute.  
*dáre,* *fáre,* *stáre,* *contestáre.*



VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

*Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ěre (long).*

The simple irregular verbs in ěre (*long*) are the following ; viz.

<i>cadére,</i>	to fall ;	<i>rimanére,</i>	to remain ;
<i>dissuadére,</i>	to dissuade ;	<i>sapére,</i>	to know ;
<i>dolére,</i>	to grieve ;	<i>sedére,</i>	to sit down ;
<i>dovére,</i>	to owe ;	<i>tacére,</i>	to be or keep si-
<i>giacére,</i>	to lie down ;	<i>tenére,</i>	to hold ; [lent ;
<i>parére,</i>	to seem ;	<i>valére,</i>	to be worth ;
<i>persuadére,</i>	to persuade ;	<i>vedére,</i>	to see ;
<i>piacére,</i>	to please ;	<i>volére,</i>	to wish, to will,
<i>potére,</i>	to be able ;		[or to be willing.

*Cadére.*

(Varied with *éssere.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Cadére,* |to fall. || *cadúto,* |fallen.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>cádo</i> ( <i>cág-</i> [ <i>gio</i> ])	I fall ;		<i>cadíamo</i> ( <i>caggiá-</i> [ <i>mo, cadémo</i> ])	we fall ;
2d p. <i>cádi,</i>	thou fallest ;		<i>cadéte,</i>	you fall ;
3d p. <i>cade,</i>	he falls ;		<i>cádono</i> ( <i>cággio-</i> [ <i>no</i> ])	they fall.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>cÁDDI</i> ( <i>ca-</i> [ <i>déi, cadétti</i> ])	I fell ;		<i>cadémmo,</i>	we fell ;
2d p. <i>cadésti,</i>	thou fellest ;		<i>cadéste,</i>	you fell ;
3d p. <i>CÁDDE</i> ( <i>ca-</i> [ <i>déo, cadétte,</i> <i>cadè</i> ])	he fell ;		<i>CÁDDERO</i> ( <i>cadéro,</i> [ <i>cadér ; cadéro-</i> <i>no, cadéttero</i> ])	they fell.

4. — *Future.*1st p. *caderò* (*cadrà*), | I shall or will fall.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io cáda</i>	that I fall or		<i>cadíamo</i> ( <i>caggiá-</i> [ <i>mo</i> ])	that we fall ;
[( <i>cággia</i> ),	[may fall ;		<i>cadíate</i> ( <i>caggiá-</i> [ <i>te</i> ])	that you fall ;
2d p. <i>tu cáda</i>	that thou fall ;		<i>cádano</i> ( <i>cággio-</i> [ <i>no</i> ])	that they fall.
[( <i>cággia</i> ),				
3d p. <i>egli cáda</i>	that he fall ;			
[( <i>cággia</i> ),				

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *caderéi* (*cadréi, cadería,* | I should, would, or could fall ; or  
[*cadría*], | [might fall.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .  
2d p. *cádi tu,*

fall thou.

The compounds of *cadére*, as *accadére*, 'to happen'; *decadére*, 'to decline'; *ricadére*, 'to fall again'; &c., have the same irregularities. The poetical forms, however, *ággio*, *ággia*, *aggiámo*, *ággiono*, *ággiano*, are peculiar to *cadére* and not met with in its compounds.\*

---

*Dissuadére.*

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Dissuadére*, |to dissuade. || DISSUÁSÓ, |dissuaded.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. DISSUÁSI,	I dissuaded;	<i>dissuadémmo</i> ,	we dissuaded;
2d p. <i>dissuadésti</i> ,	thou dissuadest;	<i>dissuadéste</i> ,	you dissuaded;
3d p. DISSUÁSE,	he dissuaded;	DISSUÁSERO,	they dissuaded.

---

*Dissuadére*, properly speaking, is a compound of the Latin verb *suadere*, as well as *persuadére*, 'to persuade,' which has the same irregularities.

---

*Dolére.*

(Varied with *éssere*, and the conjunctive pronouns, *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Dolér-si*, |to grieve. || *dolúto-si*, |grieved.

---

\* Of *ricadére*, Galileo has used *ricággia*.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>mi</i> DÓLGO	I grieve ;	<i>ci</i> DOGLIÁMO (do- [lémo),	we grieve ;
2d p. <i>tí</i> DUÓLI,	thou grieveſt ;	<i>vi</i> doléte,	you grieve ;
3d p. <i>ſi</i> DUÓLE [(dóle),	he grieves ;	<i>ſi</i> DÓLGONO (dó- [gliano),	they grieve.

## 3. — Perfect.

1st p. <i>mi</i> DÓLSI,	I grieved ;	<i>ci</i> dolémmo,	we grieved ;
2d p. <i>tí</i> doléſti,	thou grievedſt ;	<i>vi</i> doléſte,	you grieved ;
3d p. <i>ſi</i> DÓLSE,	he grieved ;	<i>ſi</i> DÓLSERO,	they grieved.

## 4. — Future.

1st p. *dorrò* [by contraction for  
[*dolerò\**], I shall or will grieve.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>mi</i> DÓLGA	that I grieve or [( <i>dóglia</i> ), [may grieve ;	<i>ci</i> DOGLIÁMO,	that we grieve ;
2d p. <i>tí</i> DÓLGA	that thou grieve ;	<i>vi</i> DOGLIÁTE,	that you grieve ;
3d p. <i>ſi</i> DÓLGA	that he grieve ;	<i>ſi</i> DÓLGANO (dó- [ <i>dóglia</i> ), [gliano),	that they grieve.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. *dorréi* (*dorría*) [by contrac-  
[tion for *doleréi* (*dolería*)†], I should, would, or could grieve ;  
[or might grieve.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	DOGLIÁMO- <i>ci</i> ,	let us grieve ;
2d p. DUÓLI- <i>tí</i> ,	grieve thou ;	<i>doléte-vi</i> ,	grieve ye ;
3d p. <i>ſi</i> DÓLGA	let him grieve ;	<i>ſi</i> DÓLGANO (dó- [ <i>dóglia</i> ), [gliano),	let them grieve.

\* To distinguish it from *dolerò*, future of the verb *doláre*, 'to defraud.'

† To distinguish them from *doleréi* (*dolería*), forms of the conditional of the verb *doláre*, 'to defraud.'

The compounds of *dolére*, as *condolére*, 'to condole'; &c. have the same irregularities.

—  
*Dovére.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Dovére* (devére\*), | to owe.

|| *dovúto*,

| owed.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *dévo*, or | I owe;

[DÉBBO (*dég-*  
[*gio*),

2d p. *dévi* (*déi*), | thou owest;

3d p. *déve*, or | he owes;

[DÉBBE (*dée*,  
[*dé'*),

DOBBIÁMO (*deb-* | we owe;

[*biámo*, *deggia-*  
[*mo*, *devémo*),

*dovéte*, | you owe;

*dévono*, or DÉB- | they owe.

[BONO (*déggio-*  
[*no*, *déono*, *dén-*  
[*no*),

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *dovéi* or *dovétti*, | I owed.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *doverò* or *dovrò*, | I shall or will owe.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io* DÉBBA | that I owe, or  
[(*déggia*), | [may owe;

2d p. *tu* DÉBBA | that thou owe;

3d p. *egli* DÉBBA | that he owe;

[(*déggia*),

DOBBIÁMO (*deg-* | that we owe;

[(*giámo*),

DOBBIÁTE (*deg-* | that you owe;

[*giáte*),

DÉBBANO (*dég-* | that they owe.

\* The Latin *debere*, from which *dovére* derives some of its forms.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *doveréi* or *dovréi* (*dovería* | I should, would, or could owe ; or  
[or *dovría*], | [might owe.

## V. IMPERATIVE.\*

*Giacére.*

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Giacére,* | to lie down. || *giaciúto,* | lain down.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. GIACCIO,	I lie down ;	GIACCIAMO,	we lie down ;
2d p. <i>giáci,</i>	thou liest down ;	<i>giacéte,</i>	you lie down ;
3d p. <i>giáce,</i>	he lies down ;	GIACCIONO,	they lie down.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. GIACQUI,	I lay down ;	<i>giacémmo,</i>	we lay down ;
2d p. <i>giacésti,</i>	thou layest down ;	<i>giacéste,</i>	you lay down ;
3d p. GIACQUE,	he lay down ;	GIACQUERO,	they lay down.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> GIACCIA,	that I lie down or	GIACCIAMO,	that we lie down ;
	[may lie down ;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> GIACCIA,	that thou lie	<i>giaciáte,</i>	that you lie
	[down ;		[down ;
3d p. <i>egli</i> GIAC-	that he lie down ;	GIACCIANO,	that they lie
CIA,			[down.

\* "Strictly is wanting." — Teor. Verb. Ital., Part. II., §. 48.



V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	GIACCIAMO <i>nói</i> ,	let us lie down ;
2d p. <i>giáci tu</i> ,	lie thou down ;	<i>giacéte vói</i> ,	lie ye down ;
3d p. GIACCIA	let him lie down ;	GIACCIANO <i>égli-</i>	let them lie
[ <i>égli</i> ,		[ <i>no</i> ,	[down.

The compounds of *giacére*, as *soggiacére*, ‘to be subject’; &c., as well as *piacére*, and its compounds *compiacére*, ‘to please’; *dispiacére*, ‘to displease’; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Piacére* and its compounds *compiacére*, &c., in the *second person plural* of the *present* of the *conjunctive*, and in the *second person plural* of the *imperative mood*, make *PIACCIÁTE*, &c.

*Parére.*

(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Parére</i> ,	to seem.	<i>parúto</i> ( <i>párso</i> ),	seemed.
-----------------	----------	---------------------------------	---------

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. PÁIO,	I seem ;	<i>pariámo</i> ,	we seem ;
2d p. <i>pári</i> ,	thou seemest ;	<i>paréte</i> ,	you seem ;
3d p. <i>páre</i> ( <i>pár</i> ),	he seems ;	<i>párono</i> , or PÁIO-	they seem.
		[ <i>no</i> ,	

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. PÁRVI	I seemed ;	<i>parémmo</i> ,	we seemed ;
[ <i>(pársi)</i> ,		<i>paréste</i> ,	you seemed ;
2d p. <i>parésti</i> ,	thou seemedst ;	PÁRVERO ( <i>párse-</i>	they seemed.
3d p. PÁRVE	he seemed ;	[ <i>(ro)</i> ,	
[ <i>(párse)</i> ,			

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *parrò* [by contraction for *[parerò\*]*, | I shall *or* will seem.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío PÁIA</i> ,	that I seem <i>or</i>	<i>pariámo</i> ,	that we seem ;
	[may seem ;		
2d p. <i>tu PÁIA</i> ,	that thou seem ;	<i>PAIÁTE</i> ,	that you seem ;
3d p. <i>égli PÁIA</i> ,	that he seem ;	<i>PÁIANO</i> ,	that they seem.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *parréi* (*parría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, *or* could seem ; *or*  
[tion for *pareréi* (*parería*)†], | [might seem.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>pariámo nói</i> ,	let us seem ;
2d p. <i>pári tu</i> ,	seem thou ;	<i>paréte vói</i> ,	seem ye ;
3d p. <i>PÁIA égli</i> ,	let him seem ;	<i>PÁIANO égliño</i> ,	let them seem.

*Persuadére.*( See *dissuadére*, p. 251.)*Piacére.*( See *giacére*, pp. 254 and 255.)

\* To distinguish it from *parerò*, future of the verb *paráre*, 'to parry,' 'to adorn.'

† To distinguish them from *pareréi* (*parería*), corresponding forms of the verb *paráre*, 'to parry'; &c.

*Potére.*

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Potére,* | to be able. || *potúto,* - - | been able.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. PÓSSO,	I am able ;	POSSIÁMO (poté- [mo]),	we are able ;			
2d p. PΥÓΙ [(puó'),				thou art able ;	potéte,	you are able ;
3d p. PΥÒ (puóte, [póte),						

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *potrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will be able.  
[*poterò\**],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. PÓSSA, | that I be able or may  
| [be able.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *potréi* (*potría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could be able ;  
[tion for *poteréi* (*potería*, †) | [or might be able.  
[*poría*),

\* To distinguish it from *poterò*, future of the verb *potére*, 'to prune.'

† To distinguish them from *poteréi* (*potería*), corresponding forms of the verb *potére*, 'to prune.'

## V. IMPERATIVE.\*

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	POSSÍAMO <i>nói</i> ,	let us be able ;
2d p. PÓSSA <i>tu</i> ,	be thou able ;	POSSIÁTE <i>vói</i> ,	be ye able ;
3d p. PÓSSA <i>égli</i> ,	let him be able ;	PÓSSANO <i>égli</i> no,	let them be able.

*Rimanére.*(Varied with *éssere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Rimanére*, | to remain. || RIMÁSTO (*rimáso*), | remained.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. RIMÁNGO	I remain ;	<i>rimaniámo</i> ,	we remain ;
[( <i>rimángo</i> ),			
2d p. <i>rimáni</i> ,	thou remainest ;	<i>rimanéte</i> ,	you remain ;
3d p. <i>rimáne</i> ,	he remains ;	RIMÁNGONO,	they remain.

## 3. — Perfect.

1st p. RIMÁSI,	I remained ;	<i>rimanémmo</i> ,	we remained ;
2d p. <i>rimanésti</i> ,	thou remainedst ;	<i>rimanéste</i> ,	you remained ;
3d p. RIMÁSE,	he remained ;	RIMÁSERO,	they remained.

## 4. — Future.

1st p. *rimarrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will remain.  
[*rimanerò*],

\* "Observe that grammarians believe that this verb has *no imperative* ; because, they say, we cannot command any one to have a power which he has not. But they have not reflected that one can give power, when he is able to do so ; as in the case with God in relation to all things ; and as, to a smaller extent, may be the case with man and certain relations of man. Which ideas being susceptible of being expressed also in the imperative mood, *reason requires* that this verb *should not be* so easily deprived of it." — Teor. Verb. Ital., Part. II., §. 120.

Besides, the verb *potére* does not mean only "*avér póssa o virtù, ma volontà ancora, e satisfazióne, e conténto ; ché non è sémpré il vérbó déi portatóri, e dégli úsini.*" — Dep. Decam., 104.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> RIMÁNGA	that I remain or	<i>rimaniámo,</i>	that we remain ;
[(rimáгна),	[may remain ;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> RIMÁNGA	that thou remain ;	<i>rimaniáte,</i>	that you remain ;
[(rimáгна),			
3d p. <i>égli</i> RIMÁN-	that he remain ;	RIMÁNGANO,	that they remain.
[GA,			

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>rimarréi</i> (rimarría)	[by con-	I should, would, or could remain ;
[traction for <i>rimaneréi</i> (rimane-	[ría)],	[or might remain.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>rimaniámo nói,</i>	let us remain ;
2d p. <i>rimáni tu,</i>	remain thou ;	<i>rimanéte vói,</i>	remain ye ;
3d p. RIMÁNGA	let him remain ;	RIMÁNGANO	let them remain.
[égli,		[églino,	

*Sapére.*

(Varied with *avére.*)



I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>Sapére</i> (savére*),	to know.	<i>sapúto,</i>	known.
--------------------------	----------	----------------	--------

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>so,</i>	I know ;	<i>SAPPIÁMO,</i>	we know ;
2d p. <i>sái,</i>	thou knowest ;	<i>sapéte,</i>	you know ;
3d p. <i>sa</i> (sápe),	he knows ;	<i>SÁNNO,</i>	they know.

\* This form, met with in Dante, Alamanni, and other poets, has become *obsolete.*

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. SÉPPI,	I knew ;	<i>sapémmo,</i>	we knew ;
2d p. <i>sapésti,</i>	thou knewest ;	<i>sapéste,</i>	you knew ;
3d p. SÉPPE,	he knew ;	SÉPPERO,	they knew.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *saprò* [by contraction for | I shall or will know.  
[*saperò*],

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *ío sáppia,* | that I know, or may know.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *sapréi* (*sapría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could know ;  
[tion for *saperéi* (*sapéria*)], | [or might know.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	SAPPÍAMO <i>nói,</i>	let us know ;
2d p. SÁPPI <i>tu,</i>	know thou ;	SAPPÍATE <i>vói,</i>	know ye ;
3d p. SÁPPIA <i>égli,</i>	let him know ;	SÁPPIANO <i>églino,</i>	let them know.

The compounds of *sapére*, as *risapére*, ‘to learn,’ or ‘to come to know’; follow the same irregularities.

*Sedére.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Sedére* (*séggere\**), | to sit down.

\* This verb, now become *obsolete*, is still used in many of the *forms* of the modern verb *sedére*.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*sedéndo* (*seggéndo*), | sitting.      || *sedúto*,      | seated.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. SIÉDO, or [SÉGGO ( <i>seggio</i> ),	I sit ;	<i>sedíamo</i> or <i>SEG-</i>	we sit ;
		[GIÁMO ( <i>sedé-</i> [mo),	
2d p. SIÉDI,	thou sittest ;	<i>sedéte</i> ,	you sit ;
3d p. SIÉDE ( <i>sé-</i> [de),	he sits ;	SIÉDONO, or SÉG- [GONO ( <i>seggio-</i> [no),	they sit.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *sedéi* or *sedétti*,      | I sat.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *sederò\** (*sedrò*),      | I shall or will sit.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> SIÉDA, or [SÉGGA ( <i>seggia</i> ),	that I sit, or may [may sit ;	<i>sedíamo</i> or <i>SEG-</i>	that we sit ;
		[GIÁMO,	
2d p. <i>tu</i> SIÉDA, or [SÉGGA ( <i>seggia</i> [or <i>seggi</i> ),	that thou sit ;	<i>sedíate</i> ( <i>seggia-</i> [te),	that you sit ;
3d p. <i>egli</i> SIÉDA, [or SÉGGA,	that he sit ;	SIÉDANO, or SÉG- [GANO ( <i>seggia-</i> [no),	that they sit.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *sederéi* (*sedréi*, *sedería*),      | I should, would, or could sit ; or  
[might sit.

\* Mastrofini proposes *siederò*, and in the conditional *siederéi*; but this, which indeed would present the advantage of distinguishing these forms from the corresponding ones of the verb *sedare*, 'to appease,' has not been adopted by the generality of Italian writers.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>sedíamo</i> (seggiá-	let us sit ;
		[mo) <i>nói,</i>	
2d p. <i>SIÉDI tu,</i>	sit thou ;	<i>sedéte vói,</i>	sit ye ;
3d p. <i>SIÉDA,</i> or	let him sit ;	<i>SIÉDANO,</i> or <i>SÉG-</i>	let them sit.
	[ <i>SÉGGA égli,</i>	[ <i>GANO églino,</i>	

*Sedére* is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c., and then it requires the auxiliary *éssere* ; as *mi siédo*, ‘ I sit (myself) ’ ; *ti séi sedúto*, ‘ thou hast sat (thyself) ’ ; &c.

The compounds of *sedére*, as *possedére*, ‘ to possess ’ ; *risedére*, ‘ to reside ’ ; *soprassedére*, ‘ to supersede ’ ; have the same irregularities.

*Tacére.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>Tacére,</i>	to be, or keep si-	<i>taciúto,</i>	been silent.
	[lent.		

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>tácio</i> ( <i>táccio</i> ),	I am silent.
--	--------------

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>TÁCQUI,</i>	I was silent ;	<i>tacémmo,</i>	we were silent ;
2d p. <i>tacésti,</i>	thou wast silent ;	<i>tacéste,</i>	you were silent ;
3d p. <i>TÁCQUE,</i>	he was silent ;	<i>TÁCQUERO,</i>	they were silent.



III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io tácia* (táccia), | that I be silent *or* may be silent.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . |  
2d p. *táci tu*, | be thou silent.

*Tacére* is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, &c., and then it requires the auxiliary *éssere*; *mi tácio*, 'I keep silent'; *si è taciúto*, 'he has kept silent'; &c.

The compound of *tacére*, — *ritacére*, 'to become once more silent'; follows the same irregularities.

*Tenére.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Tenére*, |to hold. || *tenúto*, |holden.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. TÉNGO	I hold ;	<i>teniámo</i> (tegná-	we hold ;
[(tégnó),		[mo),	
2d p. TIÉNI (té-	thou holdest ;	<i>tenéte</i> ,	you hold ;
[gni),			
3d p. TIÉNE,	he holds ;	TÉNGONO,	they hold.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. TÉNNI,	I held ;	<i>tenémmo,</i>	we held ;
2d p. <i>tenésti,</i>	thou heldest ;	<i>tenéste,</i>	you held ;
3d p. TÉNNE,	he held ;	TÉNNERO,	they held.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>terrò</i> [by contraction for [ <i>tenerò</i> ],	I shall or will hold.
---	-----------------------

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> TÉNGA	that I hold or	<i>teniámno</i> ( <i>tegná-</i>	that we hold ;
[( <i>tégna</i> ),	[may hold ;	[no),	
2d p. <i>tu</i> TÉNGA,	that thou hold ;	<i>teniánte</i> ( <i>tegnánte</i> ),	that you hold ;
3d p. <i>égli</i> TÉNGA	that he hold ;	TÉNGANO ( <i>tégna-</i>	that they hold.
[( <i>tégna</i> ),		[no),	

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>terréi</i> ( <i>terría</i> ) [by contrac- [tion for <i>teneréi</i> ( <i>tenería</i> )],	I should, would, or could hold ; or [might hold.
--	---

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . .	. . . . .	<i>teniámno</i> ( <i>tegná-</i>	let us hold ;
		[mo) <i>nói,</i>	
2d p. TIÉNI ( <i>té'</i> )	hold thou ;	<i>tenéte vói,</i>	hold ye ;
[ <i>tu,</i>			
3d p. TÉNGA	let him hold ;	TÉNGANO ( <i>tégna-</i>	let them hold.
[( <i>tégna</i> ) <i>égli,</i>		[no) <i>églino,</i>	

*Tenére* is sometimes varied with the pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.*, and then it requires the auxiliary *éssere*; as, *mi sóno tenúto*, 'I have holden or restrained myself'; &c.

The compounds of *tenere*, as *appartenere*, 'to belong'; *astenerere*, 'to abstain'; *attenere*, 'to attain'; *contenere*, 'to contain,' 'to refrain'; *detenere*, 'to detain'; *manutenere*, 'to maintain'; *ottenere*, 'to obtain'; *rattenere*, 'to stop,' 'to restrain'; *sostenere*, 'to support,' 'to sustain'; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Valere.*

(Varied with either *avere* or *essere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Valere*, | to be worth, or | *valuto* (*valso*), | been worth.  
 [to avail.] |

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>válgo</i> [( <i>váglio</i> ),	I am worth ;	<i>valiamo</i> ,	we are worth ;
2d p. <i>váli</i> ,	thou art worth ;	<i>valéte</i> ,	you are worth ;
3d p. <i>vále</i> ( <i>vál</i> ),	he is worth ;	<i>válgono</i> , or <i>vá-</i> [ <i>gliono</i> ,	they are worth.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>válsi</i> ,	I was worth ;	<i>valémmo</i> ,	we were worth ;
2d p. <i>valésti</i> ,	thou wast worth ;	<i>valéste</i> ,	you were worth ;
3d p. <i>válse</i> ,	he was worth ;	<i>válséro</i> ,	they were worth.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *varrà* [by contraction for | I shall or will be worth.  
 [*valerò*], |

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío VÁLGA</i> ,	that I be worth		<i>valiámo</i> ,		that we be
[or <i>VÁGLIA</i> ,	[or may be				[worth;
2d p. <i>tu VÁLGA</i> ,	that thou be		<i>valiáte</i> ,		that you be
[or <i>VÁGLIA</i> ,	[worth;				[worth;
3d p. <i>égli VÁLGA</i> ,	that he be worth;		<i>VÁLGANO</i> , or <i>VÁ-</i>		that they be
[or <i>VÁGLIA</i> ,					[GLIANO,

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>varréi</i> ( <i>varría</i> )	[by contrac-		I should, would, <i>or</i> could be worth;
- [tion for <i>valeréi</i> ( <i>valería</i> )]	],		

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .		<i>valiámo nói</i> ,		let us be worth;
2d p. <i>váli tu</i> ,		<i>valéte vói</i> ,		let them be
3d p. <i>VÁLGA</i>				
[( <i>vágli</i> ) <i>égli</i> ,		[ <i>GLIANO églino</i> ,		[worth.

The compounds of *valére*, as *disvalére*, ‘to hurt’; *equiválére*, ‘to be equivalent’; *invalére*, ‘to lose worth or strength’; *prevalére*, ‘to prevail’; *rivalére*, ‘to recover worth or strength’; have the same irregularities. Of the two forms of the *present*, however, that in *álgo* is better adapted to them; and *disválgo*, ‘I hurt’; *equiválga*, ‘let it be equivalent’; *inválgano*, ‘that they lose strength’; &c., are oftener met with in books than *disváglio*, &c.

The poetical form *preválsó*, ‘prevailed,’ of the *past participle* of *prevalére*, has been used by good writers even in prose. *Invalére*, in the same *participle* has *inválsó*, ‘[having] lost strength’; only.

*Vedere.*

(Varied with *avere.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

*Vedere,* | to see.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*vedendo,* or *VEG-* | seeing.  
[*GÉNDO,*]

|| *veduto (visto),* | seen.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *vedo,* *VÉG-* | I see ;  
[*GO,* or *VÉGGIO,*

2d p. *vedi (vé')*, | thou seest ;

3d p. *vede,* | he sees ;

|| *vediamo,* or *VEG-* | we see ;  
[*GIAMO,*

*vedete,* | you see ;

*vedono,* *VÉGGO-* | they see.

[*NO,* or *VÉG-*  
[*GIONO,*

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *vidi (vid-* | I saw ;  
[*di),*

2d p. *vedésti,* | thou sawest ;

3d p. *vide,* | he saw ;

|| *vedemmo,* | we saw ;

*vedeste,* | you saw ;

*videro (vider),* | they saw.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *vedrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will see.  
[*vederò*],

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io veda,* | that I see or may  
[*VÉGGA,* or [see ;

2d p. *tu veda,* | that thou see ;  
[*VÉGGIA,*

3d p. *egli veda,* | that he see ;  
[*VÉGGA,* or

[*VÉGGIA,*

|| *vediamo,* or *VEG-* | that we see ;  
[*GIAMO,*

*vediate,* or *VEG-* | that you see ;  
[*GIATE,*

*vedano,* *VÉGGA-* | that they see.

[*NO,* or *VÉG-*  
[*GIANO,*

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. *vedréi* (*vedría*) [by contraction for *vederéi* (*vedería*)], I should, would, or could see; or [might see.]

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	<i>vediamo</i> , or <i>veg-</i>	let us see;
	[ <i>GIAMO nõi</i> ,	
2d p. <i>vedi</i> ( <i>vé</i> ) <i>tu</i> ,	<i>vedete vói</i> ,	see ye;
3d p. <i>véda</i> , <i>vég-</i>	<i>vedano</i> , <i>végga-</i>	let them see.
[ <i>GA</i> , or <i>VÉGGIA</i>	[ <i>NO</i> , or <i>VÉG-</i>	
[ <i>égli</i> ,	[ <i>GIANO égli</i> no,	

The compounds of *vedere*, as *antivedere*, ‘to foresee’; *avvedere*, ‘to perceive’; *divedere*, ‘to be sensible of’; *prevedere*, ‘to foresee’; *provvedere*, ‘to provide’; *ravedere*, ‘to amend’; *rivedere*, ‘to see again’; *travedere*, ‘to see one thing for another’; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Antivedere*, *avvedere*, *divedere*, *travedere*, in the *past participle* make only *antivedúto*, ‘foreseen’; *avvedúto*, ‘perceived’; *divedúto*, ‘been sensible of’; *travedúto*, ‘[having] seen one thing for another’: and *divedere*, *prevedere*, *provvedere*, *ravedere*, *travedere*, in the *future* and *conditional* are never contracted, and make *divederò*, ‘I will be sensible of’; *prevederéi*, ‘I would foresee’; &c.

*Volére.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Volére*, |to wish, to will,|| *volúto*, |been willing.  
|[or to be willing.]

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. VÓGLIO, or [vó',	I am willing;	VOGLIÁMO (volé- [mo),	we are willing;
2d p. VUÓI (vuó- [li, vuó'),	thou art willing;	voléte,	you are willing;
3d p. VUÓLE (vó- [le),	he is willing;	VÓGLIONO (vón- [no, von),	they are willing.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. VÓLLI [(vólsi*),	I was willing;	volémmo,	we were willing;
2d p. volésti,	thou wast wil- [ling;	voléste,	you were wil- [ling;
3d p. VÓLLE,	he was willing;	VÓLLERO,	they were wil- [ling.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. vorrò [by contraction for [volerò†];	I shall or will be willing.
--	-----------------------------

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. ío VÓGLIA,	[ that I be willing or may [be willing.
-------------------	--

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. vorréi (vorría) [by contrac- [tion for voleréi (volería)†],	I should, would, or could be wil- [ling; or might be willing.
---	--

\* *Vólsi*, as well as *vólse* and *vólsero*, has become *obsolete*; and the few examples we find in Dante, Ariosto, Berni, and Tasso, ought not to authorize the use of these forms, which properly belong to the *perfect* of *vólgere*, 'to turn'; and not of *volére*, 'to be willing.'

† To distinguish it from the *future* of the verb *volére*, 'to fly.'

‡ To distinguish them from the corresponding forms of *voldre*, 'to fly.'

## V. IMPERATIVE.\*

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	VOGLIÁMO <i>nói</i> ,	let us be willing ;
2d p. VÓGLI <i>tu</i> ,	be thou willing ;	VOGLIÁTE <i>vói</i> ,	be ye willing ;
3d p. VÓGLIA	let him be wil-	VÓGLIANO	let them be wil-
[ <i>égli</i> ,	[ling ;	[ <i>églino</i> ,	[ling.

The compounds of *volére*, as *disvolére*, ‘to desire the contrary of what one has wished’; *rivolére*, ‘to wish again,’ or ‘to be once more willing’; have the same irregularities.

## EXAMPLES.

<i>E CÁDDI, còme còrpo mórtò</i> CÁDE. (Dant. Inf. 5.)	And I fell, as a dead body falls.
<i>Il timóre, mólto più che la fòr- za dèlle ragióni, lo DISSUÀSE.</i> (Fra. Gior.)	Fear dissuaded him a great deal more than the power of reason.
<i>Là dóve più MI DÓLSE [dólsi] áltri SI DUÓLE, e DOLÉNDÒ addòl- cisce il mío dolóre.</i> (Petr. c. 22.)	Others grieve for what I most grieved, and grieving they assuage my grief.
<i>Di niúna còsa durár DOBBIÁ- MO, la quále ábbia fòrza d' offén- dere.</i> (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)	We ought to endure nothing that has the power of offending.
<i>Quésti è colúì, che GIÁCQUE sópra 'l pètto — Del nóstro Pelli- cáno.</i> (Dant. Par. 25.)	This one is he, who lay upon the bosom of our Pelican.

\* It has been asserted that *volére* has *no imperative*, but the slightest acquaintance with our classic writers might convince any one to the contrary :

VÓGLITENE <i>venír con méco.</i> (Bocc. g. 2. n. 10.)	Be thou willing to come with me.
VÓGLI <i>avére carità.</i> (Gr. S. Gir. 12.)	Have charity.



*Or ti PIACCIA gradír la súa venúta.* (Dant. Purg. 1.)

Now may his coming, please thee.

*Non so, se a vói quéllo se ne PARRÀ, che a me ne PARRÉBBE.* (Bocc. Introd.)

I do not know, whether it will appear to you so as it would appear to me.

*Così velóci séguono i suói vími,— Per simigliársa al Púnto quánto PÓNNO,— E PÓSSON, quánto a vedér son sublími.* (Dant. Par. 23.)

Thus swift follow their hoops, approaching in likeness to the Point as near as they can; and they can the more, the loftier their vision is.

*Io non morí, e non RIMÁSI vívo.* (Dant. Inf. 34.)

I did not die, neither remained I alive.

*O'nde, ben SÉPPE che dírsa Dánte, quándo, nel Cánto Décimo dell' Inférno, indússe Farináta a dírgli quélle paróle.* (Salviat. Avvert. 1. 2. 12.)

Therefore, Dante knew well what he said, when, in the Tenth Canto of the Inferno, he induced Farinata to say to him those words.

*Chè SEGGÉNDÓ in piúme in fáma non si vién, nè sótto cóltre.* (Dant. Inf. 24.)

For neither by reposing on feathers, nor under a coverlet, is fame won.

*E giammái pói la mía língua non TÁCQUE,— Méntre potéo.* (Petr. c. 4.)

And never afterwards was my tongue silent, whilst it could [speak].

*Mórto che ébbero Costantíno lóro fratéllo, lóro dúe TÉNNERO l' império.* (Petr. Uom. ill.)

After they had killed Constantine their brother, both of them held the empire for themselves.

*Nè l' un mi VARRÉBBE, nè l' áltro VÓGLIO che mi VÁGLIA.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Neither the one could, nor I wish that the other should, avail me.

*Nói eravám partíti già da éllo — Ch' í víDI dúo ghiacciáti in úna búca.* (Dant. Inf. 32.)

We had now left him, when I saw two spirits by the ice pent in one hollow.

*Iddío VÓLLE, in quéstá víta, priváre nói di quéstá líce.* (Dant. Conv. 114.)

God wished to deprive us, in this life, of this light.

## EXERCISE XIX.

- I. 1.—To fall. *Cadére.* 4.—lying down. *giacére.* 7.—remained. *rimanére.*
- II. 1.—I grieve, thou art able, he sits, we seem,  
*dolére,* *potére,* *sedére,* *parére,*  
 you owe, they know. 2.—I dissuaded, thou heldest,  
*dovére,* *sapére.* *dissuadére,* *tenére,*  
 he wished, we pleased, you saw, they were worth.  
*volére,* *piacére,* *vedére,* *valére.*
- 3.—I fell again, thou pleasedst, he was subject, we  
*ricadére,* *compiacére,* *soggiacére,* *ri-*  
 learned, they sustained. — I prevailed, thou maintainedst,  
*sapére,* *sostenére.* *prevalére,* *mantenére,*  
 he was silent again, we declined, you foresaw, they  
*ritacére,* *decadére,* *antivedére,* *ri-*  
 wished again. — I condoled, thou possessedst, he ab-  
*volére.* *condolére,* *possedére,* *aste-*  
 stained, we provided, you hurt, they super-  
*nére,* *provvedére,* *disvalére,* *soprasse-*  
 seded. 4.—I will grieve, thou wilt seem, he will be  
*dére.* *dolére,* *parére,* *poté-*  
 able, we will remain, you will know, they will hold.  
*re,* *rimanére,* *sapére,* *tenére.*
- III. 1.—I may entertain, thou mayest lose strength, he  
*trattenére,* *invalére,* *rav-*  
 may amend, we may displease, you may reside, they  
*vedére,* *dispiacére,* *risedére,* *con-*  
 may contain. 2.—I might foresee, thou mightest please  
*tenére.* *antivedére,* *ripiacé-*  
 again, he might see again, we might preside, you might  
*re,* *rivedére,* *presedére,* *appar-*  
 belong, they might hate. — IV. 1.—I should grieve  
*tenére,* *malvedére.*
- again, thou wouldst come to know, he would attain,  
*re,* *risapére,* *attenére,*

we would be sensible of, you would provide, they would  
*divedére,* *provedére,* *rav-*  
 amend. — V. — Know thou, let him seem, let us see,  
*vedére.* *sapére,* *parére,* *vedére,*  
 please ye, let them be able.  
*piacére,* *potére.*

*Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ěre (short).*

There are about four hundred verbs in ěre (*short*), that are irregular; but, as their irregularity, generally, depends on the letters which precede that termination, they may be reduced to the following *forty-one*; viz.

Verbs ending in

<i>ěre,</i> preceded by a vowel; as, <i>trÁERE,</i>	to draw.	(Class 4th.*)
<i>běre,</i>	“ <i>assóRBERE,</i>	to absorb. (2d.)
<i>cěre,</i> preceded by	{ <i>ó;</i> “ <i>cuóCERE,</i>	to cook. } (4th.)
	{ <i>ú;</i> “ <i>addúCERE,</i>	to allege. } (4th.)
	{ <i>n;</i> “ <i>víncERE,</i>	to conquer. } (2d.)
	{ <i>r;</i> “ <i>tóRCERE,</i>	to twist. } (2d.)
<i>děre,</i> preceded by	{ <i>á;</i> “ <i>invÁDERE,</i>	to invade. } (1st.)
	{ <i>é;</i> “ <i>lÉDERE,</i>	to offend. } (1st.)
	{ <i>í;</i> “ <i>rÍDERE,</i>	to laugh. } (1st.)
	{ <i>ó;</i> “ <i>rÓDERE,</i>	to gnaw. } (1st.)
	{ <i>ú;</i> “ <i>allÚDERE,</i>	to allude. } (1st.)
	{ <i>r;</i> “ <i>áRDERE,</i>	to burn. } (1st.)
	{ <i>én;</i> “ <i>accÉNDERE,</i>	to kindle. } (3d.)
	{ <i>ín;</i> “ <i>scÍNDERE,</i>	to cut asunder. } (3d.)
	{ <i>ón;</i> “ <i>risPóNDERE,</i>	to answer. } (5th.)
	{ <i>iú;</i> “ <i>chiÚDERE,</i>	to shut. } (1st.)
{ <i>ie;</i> “ <i>chiÉDERE,</i>	to ask. } (5th.)	
{ <i>cé;</i> “ <i>concÉDERE,</i>	to grant. } (3d.)	
<i>gěre,</i> preceded by	{ <i>í;</i> “ <i>dirÍGERE,</i>	to direct. } (4th.)
	{ <i>g;</i> “ <i>léGGERE,</i>	to read. } (4th.)
	{ <i>l;</i> “ <i>vóLGERE,</i>	to turn. } (2d.)
	{ <i>n;</i> “ <i>giúNGERE,</i>	to arrive. } (2d.)
	{ <i>ár;</i> “ <i>spÁRGERE,</i>	to spread. } (1st.)
	{ <i>ér;</i> “ <i>mÉRGERE,</i>	to dive. } (1st.)
	{ <i>ór;</i> “ <i>póRGERE,</i>	to offer. } (2d.)
{ <i>úg;</i> “ <i>distrÚGGERE,</i>	to destroy. } (4th.)	

\* For the convenience of learners, and the purpose of rendering more simple the variation of these verbs, they have been arranged in *classes*. To facilitate reference, we here indicate the *class* in which they will be found.

<i>glière,</i>		as, <i>cÓGLIERE,</i>	to gather.	} (2d.)
<i>gnère,</i>		“ <i>spÉGNERE,</i>	to extinguish.	
<i>guère,</i>		“ <i>distíNGUERE,</i>	to distinguish.	
<i>lère,</i>		“ <i>svÉLÈRE,</i>	to root up.	} (3d.)
<i>mère,</i>	preceded by { <i>í;</i>	“ <i>esprÍMERE,</i>	to express.	
	{ <i>ú;</i>	“ <i>assÚMERE,</i>	to assume.	(2d.)
<i>nère,</i>		“ <i>pÓNERE,</i>	to put.	(5th.)
<i>rère,</i>		“ <i>cÓRRERE,</i>	to run.	(1st.)
	{ <i>ó;</i>	“ <i>scuÓTERE,</i>	to shake.	} (3d.)
<i>tère,</i>	preceded by { <i>ú;</i>	“ <i>discÚTERE,</i>	to discuss.	
	{ <i>r;</i>	“ <i>rivÉRTERE,</i>	to return.	
	{ <i>t;</i>	“ <i>connÉTTERE,</i>	to connect.	(3d.)
	{ <i>í;</i>	“ <i>scrÍVERE,</i>	to write.	(4th.)
<i>vère,</i>	preceded by { <i>ó;</i>	“ <i>muÓVERE,</i>	to move.	(3d.)
	{ <i>l;</i>	“ <i>vÓLVERE,</i>	to turn.	(2d.)

These verbs are chiefly irregular in the *perfect* of the *indicative*, which ends in *si* or *ssi*; and in the *past participle*, which ends in *so* or *sso*, in *to* or *tto*, or in *sto*. We shall, therefore, first classify them according to the termination of their *perfect* and *participle*, and then we shall vary one of each class, and such of the same class as may be otherwise irregular, and note, by way of exceptions, those verbs which depart in any respect from their paradigm.

[The letters *a, e, ae*, between parentheses, prefixed to the following verbs, denote the auxiliary with which they are varied:—(a), *avère*; (e), *éssere*; (ae), *either avète or éssere*.]

## FIRST CLASS.

Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.	Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.
<i>á -dere,</i>	} ...-si, ...-so; .. as,	}	(a) <i>invÁ-DERE,</i>	<i>invá-SI,</i>	<i>invá-SO.</i>
<i>é -dere,</i>			(a) <i>lé-DERE,</i>	<i>lé-SI,</i>	<i>lé-SO.</i>
<i>í -dere,</i>			(a) <i>rÍ-DERE,</i>	<i>rí-SI,</i>	<i>rí-SO.</i>
<i>ó -dere,</i>			(a) <i>rÓ-DERE,</i>	<i>ró-SI,</i>	<i>ró-SO.</i>
<i>ú -dere,</i>			(a) <i>allÚ-DERE,</i>	<i>allú-SI,</i>	<i>allú-SO.</i>
<i>r -dere,</i>			(ae) <i>ár-DERE,</i>	<i>ár-SI,</i>	<i>ár-SO.</i>
<i>én -dere,</i>			(a) <i>accÉN-DERE,</i>	<i>accé-SI,</i>	<i>accé-SO.</i>
<i>iú -dere,</i>			(a) <i>chiÚ-DERE,</i>	<i>chiú-SI,</i>	<i>chiú-SO.</i>
<i>ár -gere,</i>			(a) <i>spár-GERE,</i>	<i>spár-SI,</i>	<i>spár-SO.</i>
<i>ér -gere,</i>			(ae) <i>mÉR-GERE,</i>	<i>mér-SI,</i>	<i>mér-SO.</i>
<i>-rere,</i>			(ae) <i>cór-RERE,</i>	<i>cór-SI,</i>	<i>cór-SO.</i>
<i>r -tere,</i>			(e) <i>rivÉR-TERE,</i>	<i>rivér-SI,</i>	<i>rivér-SO.</i>

SECOND CLASS.

Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.	Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.
-bere,	} ...-si, ...-to; ... as,	}	(æ) <i>assór-BERE,</i>	<i>assór-SI,</i>	<i>assór-TO.</i>
n -cere,			(a) <i>vin-CERE,</i>	<i>vin-SI,</i>	<i>vin-TO.</i>
r -cere,			(a) <i>tór-CERE,</i>	<i>tór-SI,</i>	<i>tór-TO.</i>
l -gere,			(a) <i>vól-GERE,</i>	<i>vól-SI,</i>	<i>vól-TO.</i>
n -gere,			(e) <i>giún-GERE,</i>	<i>giún-SI,</i>	<i>giún-TO,</i>
ór -gere,			(a) <i>pór-GERE,</i>	<i>pór-SI,</i>	<i>pór-TO.</i>
-gliere,			(a) <i>có-GLIERE,</i>	<i>cól-SI,</i>	<i>cól-TO.</i>
-gnere,			(a) <i>spé-GNERE,</i>	<i>spén-SI,</i>	<i>spén-TO.</i>
-guere,			(æ) <i>distín-GUERE,</i>	<i>distín-SI,</i>	<i>distín-TO.</i>
-lere,			(a) <i>svél-LERE,</i>	<i>svél-SI,</i>	<i>svél-TO.</i>
ú -mere,			(a) <i>assú-MERE,</i>	<i>assún-SI,</i>	<i>assún-TO.</i>
l -vere,			(a) <i>vól-VERE,</i>	<i>vól-SI,</i>	<i>vól-TO.</i>

THIRD CLASS.

<i>cé-dere,</i>	} ...-ssi, ...-sso; ... as,	}	(a) <i>concé-DERE,</i>	<i>concé-SSI,</i>	<i>concé-SSO.</i>
<i>ín-dere,</i>			(a) <i>scín-DERE,</i>	<i>scí-SSI,</i>	<i>scí-SSO.</i>
<i>í -mere,</i>			(a) <i>esprí-MERE,</i>	<i>espré-SSI,</i>	<i>espré-SSO.</i>
<i>ó -tere,</i>			(a) <i>scuó-TERE,</i>	<i>scó-SSI,</i>	<i>scó-SSO.</i>
<i>ú -tere,</i>			(a) <i>discú-TERE,</i>	<i>discú-SSI,</i>	<i>discú-SSO.</i>
<i>t -tere,</i>			(a) <i>connét-TERE,</i>	<i>conné-SSI,</i>	<i>conné-SSO.</i>
<i>ó -vere,</i>			(a) <i>muó-VERE,</i>	<i>mó-SSI,</i>	<i>mó-SSO.</i>

FOURTH CLASS.

<i>ó -cere,</i>	} ...-ssi, ...-tto; ... as,	}	(a) <i>cuó-CERE,</i>	<i>có-SSI,</i>	<i>có-TTO.</i>
<i>ú -cere,</i>			(a) <i>addú-CERE,</i>	<i>addú-SSI,</i>	<i>addó-TTO.</i>
<i>í -gere,</i>			(a) <i>dirí-GERE,</i>	<i>diré-SSI,</i>	<i>diré-TTO.</i>
<i>g -gere,</i>			(a) <i>léG-GERE,</i>	<i>lé-SSI,</i>	<i>lé-TTO.</i>
<i>ug-gere,</i>			(a) <i>distrúG-GERE,</i>	<i>distrú-SSI,</i>	<i>distrú-TTO.</i>
<i>í -vere,</i>			(a) <i>scrí-VERE,</i>	<i>scrí-SSI,</i>	<i>scrí-TTO.</i>
<i>-ere,</i>			(a) <i>trá-ERE,</i>	<i>trá-SSI,</i>	<i>trá-TTO.</i>

FIFTH CLASS.

<i>ón-dere,</i>	} ...-si, ...-sto; ... as,	}	(a) <i>rispón-DERE,</i>	<i>rispó-SI,</i>	<i>rispó-STO.</i>
<i>ié-dere,</i>			(a) <i>chié-DERE,</i>	<i>chié-SI,</i>	<i>chié-STO.</i>
<i>-nere,</i>			(a) <i>pó-NERE,</i>	<i>pó-SI,</i>	<i>pó-STO.</i>

*Variation of the Verb Invádere.*

(Paradigm of the *First Class* of the verbs in  
*ere* (*short*).)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Invá-DVRE*, |to invade.      || *invá-so*,      |invaded.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>invá-si</i> ,	I invaded ;	<i>invadémmo</i> ,	we invaded ;
2d p. <i>invadésti</i> ,	thou invadest ;	<i>invadéste</i> ,	you invaded ;
3d p. <i>invá-se</i> ,	he invaded ;	<i>invá-sero</i> ,	they invaded.

The verbs *evádere*, ‘to evade’; — *lédere*, ‘to offend’; — *ridere*, ‘to laugh’; *divídere*, ‘to divide’; *conquídere*, ‘to conquer’; *intradere*, ‘to temper’; *uccídere*, ‘to kill’; — *ródere*, ‘to gnaw’; — *allúdere*, ‘to allude’; *delúdere*, ‘to delude’; *illúdere*, ‘to illude’; — *árdere*, ‘to burn’; *mórdere*, ‘to bite’; — *accéndere*, ‘to kindle’; *incéndere*, ‘to set on fire’; *offéndere*, ‘to offend’; *scéndere*, ‘to descend’; *spéndere*, ‘to spend’; *téndere*, ‘to stretch’; *vilipéndere*, ‘to vilify’; — *chiúdere*, ‘to shut’; — *spárgere*, ‘to spread’; — *mérgere*, ‘to sink’; *térgere*, ‘to wipe’; *aspérgere*, ‘to sprinkle’; — *córrere*, ‘to run’; — *rivértere*, ‘to turn’; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

The compounds of *córrere*, — *occórrere*, ‘to occur’; *soccórrere*, ‘to succour’; in the *future* and the *conditional* are often contracted; and make *accorrà*, ‘it will occur’; *soccorrèbbe*, ‘he would succour.’

*Diféndere*, ‘to defend’; *pérdere*, ‘to lose’; and *réndere*, ‘to render,’ are both *regular* and *irregular*; and make in the *perfect*, *difendéi* or *difési*, ‘I defended’; and in the *participle*, *difendúto* or *difeso*, ‘defended’; &c.

*Féndere*, 'to cleave'; is both *regular* and *irregular*; and makes, in the *perfect*, *fendéi* or *féssi*, 'I cleaved'; and in the *participle*, *fendúto* and *féssó*, 'cleaved.'

*Préndere*, 'to take'; and *rádere*, 'to shave'; are both *regular* and *irregular* in the *perfect*; but in the *participle* are *irregular* only, and make *préso*, 'taken'; and *rásó*, 'shaven.'

The verbs *péndere*, 'to hang'; *spléndere*, 'to glitter'; *véndere*, 'to sell'; *strídere*,\* 'to shriek'; and their compounds, are *regular*, and are varied like *téssere*.

*Variation of the Verb Assórbere.*

(Paradigm of the *Second Class* of the verbs in *ěre* (*short*).)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Assór-BERE*, |to absorb. || *assór-TO*, |absorbed.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>assór-SI</i> ,	I absorbed;	<i>assorbémmo</i> ,	we absorbed;
2d p. <i>assorbésti</i> ,	thou absorbedst;	<i>assorbéste</i> ,	you absorbed;
3d p. <i>assór-SE</i> ,	he absorbed;	<i>assór-SERO</i> ,	they absorbed.

Verbs ending in *gliěre*, *gněre*, and *lěre*, besides the above, have also other irregularities, as will be seen by the following Paradigms:

\* Alfonso Varano has written *stríse*, 'he shrieked'; and *stríséro*, 'they shrieked.'

*Cogliere.*(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *glière.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>CÓGLIERE</i> , or [ <i>CÓRRE</i> ( <i>cor</i> ),	to gather.	<i>CÓLTO</i> ,	gathered.
--	------------	----------------	-----------

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>cóglio</i> , or [ <i>CÓLGO</i> ,	I gather or am [gathering ;	<i>cogliámo</i> ,	we gather ;
2d p. <i>cógli</i> ,	thou gatherest ;	<i>cogliéte</i> ,	you gather ;
3d p. <i>cóglie</i> ,	he gathers ;	<i>coglióno</i> , or <i>CÓL-</i> [ <i>GONO</i> ,	they gather.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>CÓLSI</i> ( <i>co-</i> [ <i>gliéi</i> ),	I gathered ;	<i>cogliémmo</i> ,	we gathered ;
2d p. <i>cogliésti</i> ,	thou gatheredst ;	<i>cogliésté</i> ,	you gathered ;
3d p. <i>CÓLSE</i> ( <i>co-</i> [ <i>gliè</i> , <i>cogliétte</i> ),	he gathered ;	<i>CÓLSERO</i> ( <i>coglié-</i> [ <i>rono</i> , <i>cogliétte-</i> [ <i>ro</i> ),	they gathered.

4. — *Future.*1st p. *COGLIERÒ*, or *CORRÒ*, | I shall or will gather.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io cógli</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> ,	that I gather or [may gather ;	<i>cogliámo</i> ,	that we gather ;
2d p. <i>tu cógli</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> ( <i>cógli</i> [or <i>cólghi</i> ),	that thou gather ;	<i>cogliáte</i> ,	that you gather ;
3d p. <i>egli cógli</i> , [or <i>CÓLGA</i> ,	that he gather ;	<i>cogliáno</i> , or <i>CÓL-</i> [ <i>GANO</i> ,	that they gather.



IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *COGLIERÉI*, or *CORRÉI* (co- | I should, would, or could gather ;  
 [gliería, or corría), | [or might gather.

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1st p. . . . .			
2d p. <i>cogli</i> ( <i>có'</i> ) gather thou ;			
	[ <i>tu</i> ,		<i>cogliéte vói</i> ,   gather ye ;
3d p. <i>cógli</i> , or let him gather ;			
[ <i>cólga égli</i> ,			<i>cógliano</i> , or <i>cól-</i>   let* them gather.
			[ <i>gano églino</i> ,

*Spégnere.*

(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *gnère.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Spégnere*, or | to extinguish. || *spénto*, | extinguished.  
 [*spéngere*,

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>spégn</i> o, or   I extinguish or   <i>spégnámo</i> ,   we extinguish ;			
[ <i>spéng</i> o,   [am extinguish-			
2d p. <i>spégn</i> i,   thou extinguish-			
	[est ;		
3d p. <i>spégn</i> e,   he extinguishes ;			<i>spégnono</i> , or   they extinguish.
			[ <i>spéngono</i> ,

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *spénsi*, | I extinguished.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io spégna,</i> [or <i>spéNGA,</i>	that I extinguish, [or may extin- guish ;	<i>spegnriámo,</i>	that we extin- guish ;
2d p. <i>tu spégna,</i> [or <i>spéNGA</i> [( <i>spégni,</i>	that thou extin- guish ;	<i>spegnriáte,</i>	that you extin- guish ;
3d p. <i>egli spégna,</i> [or <i>spéNGA,</i>	that he extin- guish ;	<i>spégnano</i> or [ <i>spéNGANO,</i>	that they extin- guish.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>spegnriámo nói,</i>	let us extinguish ;
2d p. <i>spégni tu,</i>	extinguish thou ;	<i>spegnéte vói,</i>	extinguish ye ;
3d p. <i>spégna,</i> or [ <i>spéNGA égli,</i>	let him extin- guish ;	<i>spégnano,</i> or [ <i>spéNGANO</i> [ <i>églino,</i>	let them extin- guish.

*Svellere.*(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *lère.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Svellere,* | to root up. || *svélto,* | rooted up.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>svéllo,</i> or [ <i>svélgo,</i>	I root up ;	<i>svelliámo,</i>	we root up ;
2d p. <i>svélli,</i>	thou rootest up ;	<i>svelléte,</i>	you root up ;
3d p. <i>svélle,</i>	he roots up ;	<i>svéllono,</i> or <i>svél-</i> [ <i>gono,</i>	they root up.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *svélsi,* | I rooted up.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io svélla</i> ,	that I root up, or [may root up ;	<i>svellidmo</i> ,	that we root up ;
[or <i>svélgA</i> ,			
2d p. <i>tu svélla</i> , or	that thou root up ;	<i>svellidte</i> ,	that you root up ;
[ <i>svélgA</i> ( <i>svélli</i> , [or <i>svélgghi</i> ),			
3d p. <i>égli svélla</i> ,	that he root up ;	<i>svéllano</i> , or <i>svél-</i>	that they root up.
[or <i>svélgA</i> ,			

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>svellidmo nói</i> ,	let us root up ;
2d p. <i>svélli tu</i> ,			
3d p. <i>svélla</i> , or	let him root up ;	<i>svéllano</i> , or <i>svél-</i>	let them root up.
[ <i>svélgA égli</i> ,			

The compounds of *assórbere*, ‘to absorb’; *cógliere*, ‘to gather’; and the verbs *vincere*, ‘to conquer’; — *tórcere*, ‘to twist’; — *vólgere*, ‘to turn’; *rifúlgere*, ‘to shine’; — *giúngere*, ‘to arrive’; *múngere*, ‘to milk’; *púngere*, ‘to prick’; *úngere*, ‘to anoint’; — *piángere*, ‘to weep’; *frángere*, ‘to break’; — *cingere*, ‘to gird’; *figgere*, ‘to fain’; *píngere*, ‘to paint’; *spíngere*, ‘to push’; *tíngere*, ‘to tinge’; — *pórgere*, ‘to offer’; *accórgere*, ‘to perceive’; *sórgere*, ‘to rise’; — *scégliere*, ‘to choose’; *sciógliere*, ‘to untie’; *tógliere*, ‘to take away’; — *distínguere*, ‘to distinguish’; *estínguere*, ‘to extinguish’; — *avéllere*, ‘to pull by force’; *divéllere*, ‘to pluck up’; — *assúmere*, ‘to assume’; — *vólvere*, ‘to turn’; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

*Rifúlgere* has no participle.

*Sórgere* has been by poets changed into *súrgere*, and so throughout its inflexions: — *súrsi*, ‘I rose’; *súrto*, ‘risen’; &c.

*Stríngere*, ‘to bind’; and its compounds, as *astríngere*, ‘to constrain’; &c., in the participle makes *strétto*, ‘bound’; *astrétto*, ‘constrained’; &c.

*Espéllere*, 'to expel'; *impéllere*, 'to impel'; *repéllere*, 'to repel'; in the *perfect* make *espúlsi*, 'I expelled'; *impúlsi*, 'I impelled'; *repúlsi*, 'I repelled'; and in the *participle*, *espúlso*, 'expelled'; *impúlso*, 'impelled'; *repúlso*, 'repelled.'

*Invólvere*, 'to involve'; and *devólvere*, 'to devolve'; in the *participle* make *involúto*, 'involved'; *devolúto*, 'devolved.'

*Presúmere*, 'to presume'; and *riassúmere*, 'to re-assume'; *assólvere*, 'to absolve'; *dissólvere*, 'to dissolve'; and *risólvere*, 'to resolve'; in the *perfect* are both *regular* and *irregular*; and make *presuméi* or *presúnsi*, 'I presumed'; *assolvéi* or *assólsi*, 'I absolved'; &c.

*Assólvere*, *dissólvere*, and *risólvere* in the *participle* make, *assolúto*, 'absolved'; *dissolúto*,\* 'dissolved'; *risolúto*, 'resolved.'

The verb *sólvere*, 'to untie,' 'to solve,' is *regular*, and is varied like *téssere*.

### Variation of the Verb *Concédere*.

(Parádigm of the *Third Class* of the verbs in *ere* (*short*).

#### I. INFINITIVE.

*Concé-DERE*, |to grant.

#### PARTICIPLE.

|| *concé-ssó*, |granted.

#### II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

#### 3. — *Perfect*.

1st p. *concé-ssi*, |I granted;

2d p. *concedésti*, |thou grantedst;

3d p. *concé-sse*, |he granted;

|| *concedémmo*,

|| *concedéste*,

|| *concé-ssero*,

|we granted;

|you granted;

|they granted.

The verbs *scíndere*, 'to cut asunder'; — *esprimere*, 'to express'; — *scuótere*, 'to shake'; *percuótere*, 'to

\* For this *participle* we, generally, substitute *disciólto*, a corresponding form of the verb *disciógliere*, 'to dissolve'; to distinguish it from the word *dissolúto*, 'dissolute.'

strike'; — *discútere*, 'to discuss'; *concútere*, 'to shake'; — *connéttere*, 'to connect'; — *muóvere*, 'to move'; and their compounds have the same irregularities.

*Redímere*, 'to redeem'; in the *perfect* makes *redénsi*, 'I redeemed'; and in the *participle*, *redénto*, 'redeemed.'

*Méttere*, 'to put'; and its compounds *amméttere*, 'to admit'; *comméttere*, 'to commit'; &c., in the *perfect* make *mísi*, 'I put'; *ammi-si*, 'I admitted'; &c.

*Concédere*, 'to grant'; *intercédere*, 'to intercede'; *precédere*, 'to precede'; and *succédere*, 'to succeed,' are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make, in the *perfect*, *concéssi* or *concedéi*, 'I granted'; and in the *participle*, *concéssó* or *concedúto*, 'granted'; &c.

*Connéttere*, signifying 'to reason,' is *regular*, and makes, in the *perfect*, *connettéi*, 'I reasoned'; and in the *participle*, *connettúto*, 'reasoned.'

The verbs *cédere*, 'to yield'; *accédere*, 'to accede'; *eccédere*, 'to exceed'; *procédere*,\* 'to proceed'; — *prescindere*, 'to prescind'; — *prémere*, 'to press'; *sprémere*, 'to squeeze'; — *rifléttere*, 'to reflect'; and *báttere*, 'to beat'; and its compounds, are *regular*, and are varied like *téssere*.

*Rifléttere*, when applied to 'light,' 'sound,' &c., in the *participle* makes *rifléssó*, 'reflected.'

### Variation of the Verb *Cuócere*.

(Paradigm of the *Fourth Class* of the verbs ending in *ěre* (*short*).)

#### I. INFINITIVE.

#### PARTICIPLE.

*Cuó-CERE*, |to cook. || *có-ТТО*, |cooked.

\* Of this verb, Castiglione has used *procéssé*, 'he proceeded.'

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>có-ssi</i> ,	I cooked ;	<i>cocémmo</i> ,	we cooked ;
2d p. <i>cocésti</i> ,	thou cookedst ;	<i>cocéste</i> ,	you cooked ;
3d p. <i>có-sse</i> ,	he cooked ;	<i>có-ssero</i> ,	they cooked.

*Addúcere.*(Paradigm of the Verbs ending in *úcere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>Addúcere</i> , or	to allege.	<i>addótto</i> ,	alleged.
[ <i>addúrre</i> ],			

## II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *addússi*, | I alleged.4. — *Future.*1st p. *addurrò* [by contraction | I shall or will allege.  
[for *adducerò*], |

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *addurréi* (*addurría*) [by | I should, would, or could allege ; or  
[contraction for *adduceréi* (ad- | [might allege.  
[*ducería*)], |

*Rilúcere*, 'to shine'; and *tralúcere*, 'to shine through'; are never contracted in the *infinitive*, and make, in the *future*, *rilucerà*, 'it will shine'; *tralucerà*, 'it will shine through'; and in the *conditional*, *rilucerébbe*, 'it would shine'; &c.

*Distruggere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*DistrúGGERE*, or *to destroy.*      || *distrúTTO*,      | *destroyed.*  
 [*distrúrRE*,]

II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *distrúSSI*, | I *destroyed.*

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *distrUGGERÒ*, or *distrURRÒ*, | I shall or will *destroy.*

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *distrUGGERÉI*, or *distrUR-* | I should, would, or could *destroy* ;  
 [*RÉI* (*distruggería* or *distrurría*), |      [*or might destroy.*

*Struggere*, 'to melt'; is never contracted in the *infinitive*, and makes, in the *future*, only *struggerò*, 'I will melt'; and in the *conditional*, *struggeréi*, 'I should melt.'

*Tráere.\**

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*TráERE*, or *trár-* | *to draw.*      || *trátTO*,      | *drawn.*  
 [*RE*,]

\* From the Latin *trahere*, converted also by the Italians into *trággere*, now become *obsolete*, but of which it retains many of the forms.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>trággō</i> ,	I draw ;		<i>tráíamo</i> , or <i>trag-</i>		we draw ;
2d p. <i>trái</i> ,	thou drawest ;		<i>tráéte</i> ,	[GIÁMO,	you draw ;
3d p. <i>tráe</i> ( <i>trág-</i> [ge]),	he draws ;		<i>trággono</i> ( <i>trán-</i> [no]),		they draw.

3. — *Perfect.*1st p. *trássī*, | I drew.4. — *Future.*1st p. *trarrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will draw.  
[*traerò*],

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío trággā</i> ,	that I draw or [may draw ;		<i>tráíamo</i> , or <i>trag-</i>		that we draw ;
2d p. <i>tu trággā</i> ,	that thou draw ;		<i>tráíte</i> or <i>trag-</i>	[GIÁMO,	that you draw ;
3d p. <i>égli trág-</i> [GA,	that he draw ;		<i>trággāno</i> ,	[GIÁTE,	that they draw.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*1st p. *trarréi* (*trarría*) [by contrac- | I should, would, or could draw ; or  
[ion for *traeréi* (*traería*)], | [might draw.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .		<i>tráíamo</i> or <i>trag-</i>		let us draw ;
2d p. <i>trái tu</i> ,	draw thou ;		<i>tráéte</i> ,	[GIÁMO,	draw ye ;
3d p. <i>trággā</i> [égli,	let him draw ;		<i>trággāno</i> ,		let them draw.



The compounds of *cuocere*, 'to cook'; *tràere*, 'to draw'; and the verbs *indúcere*, 'to induce'; *condúcere*, 'to conduct'; *dedúcere*, 'to deduct'; *prodúcere*, 'to produce'; *ridúcere*, 'to reduce'; *sedúcere*, 'to seduce'; *tradúcere*, 'to translate'; — *dirigere*, 'to direct'; *erígere*,\* 'to erect'; *negligere*, 'to neglect'; *prediligere*, 'to have a predilection for'; — *leggere*, 'to read'; *reggere*, 'to support'; *protéggere*, 'to protect'; — *strúggere*, 'to melt'; — *scrivere*, 'to write'; and their compounds, have the same irregularities.

*Figgere*,† 'to fix'; *infiggere*, 'to infix'; *trafiggere*, 'to transfix'; in the *participle* end both in *ssó* and *tto*; and make *fisso* or *fitto*, 'fixed'; *infisso* or *infitto*, 'infix'; &c. — *Affiggere*, 'to affix'; *crocifiggere*, 'to crucify'; *prefiggere*, 'to prefix'; end in *ssó*; and make *affisso*, 'affixed'; *crocifisso*, 'crucified'; &c. — *Configgere*, 'to thrust into'; *sconfiggere*, 'to defeat'; *friggere*, 'to fry'; *soffiggere*, 'to fry'; *affiggere*, 'to afflict'; *infiggere*, 'to inflict'; end in *tto*; and make *confitto*, 'thrust into'; *fitto*, 'fried'; *infitto*, 'inflicted'; &c.

*Rilúcere*, 'to shine'; *tralúcere*, 'to shine through'; are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *rilucéi* or *rilússi*, 'I shone'; *tralucé* or *tralússe*, 'it shone through'; but they have *no participle*.

*Esígere*, 'to exact'; in the *perfect* is both *regular* and *irregular*, and makes *esigéi* or *csàssi*, 'I exacted'; and in the *participle* makes *esátto*, 'exacted.'

*Vivere*, 'to live'; in the *participle* makes *vivúto* or *vissúto*, 'lived'; and in the *future* and *conditional*, is often contracted into *vivrò*, 'I will live'; and *vivréi* (*vivría*), 'I would live.'

---

\* *Erígere* is often by poets contracted into *érgere*, but then has *no participle*. The *érto* mentioned by Mastrofini, notwithstanding its derivation from *erétto*, *participle* of *erígere*, is used in Italian as an adjective, but not as a *participle*.

† *Figgere*, and some of its compounds, as *affiggere*, &c., are sometimes spelt with one *g* only: — *figere*, *affigere*; and then make, in the *perfect*, *fisi*, *affisi*; and in the *participle*, *fisso*, *affisso*; &c.

*Variation of the Verb Rispondere.*

(Paradigm of the *Fifth Class* of the verbs in *ěre* (short).)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Risp-ÓNDERE*, |to answer.      || *rispó-STO*,      |answered.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>risp-ÓSI</i> ,	I answered ;	<i>rispondémmo</i> ,	we answered ;
2d p. <i>rispondésti</i> ,	thou answeredst ;	<i>rispondéste</i> ,	you answered ;
3d p. <i>risp-ÓSE</i> ,	he answered ;	<i>risp-ÓSERO</i> ,	they answered.

*Chiedere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*ChIEDERE*,      |to ask.      || *chiésto*,      |asked.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>chiédo</i> [(chiéggio),	I ask or am ask- [ing ;	<i>chiediámo</i> ( <i>chieg-</i> [ <i>giámo</i> , <i>chiedé-</i> [ <i>mo</i> ),	we ask ;
2d p. <i>chiédi</i> ,	thou askest ;	<i>chiedéte</i> ,	you ask ;
3d p. <i>chiéde</i> ,	he asks ;	<i>chiedono</i> ( <i>chieg-</i> [ <i>giono</i> , <i>chiég-</i> [ <i>gono</i> ),	they ask.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *chiési*,      | I asked.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io chiedo</i>	that I ask, or	<i>chiediámolo</i>	( <i>chied-</i> )	that we ask ;
[ <i>chiedgia,</i>	[may ask ;	[ <i>giámolo</i> ],		
[ <i>chiedgga</i> ),				
2d p. <i>tu chiedi</i>	that thou ask ;	<i>chiediate</i>	( <i>chied-</i> )	that you ask ;
[( <i>chiedgia,</i>		[ <i>giáte</i> ),		
[ <i>chiedgga,</i>				
[ <i>chiedghi</i> ),				
3d p. <i>egli chiedo</i>	that he ask ;	<i>chiedano</i>	( <i>chied-</i> )	that they ask.
[( <i>chiedgia,</i>		[ <i>giano, chieg-</i>		
[ <i>chiedgga</i> ),		[ <i>gano</i> ),		

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>chiediámolo noi,</i>	let us ask ;
2d p. <i>chiedi tu,</i>	ask thou ;	<i>chiedéte voi,</i>	ask ye ;
3d p. <i>chieda</i>	let him ask ;	<i>chiedano</i>	( <i>chied-</i> )
[( <i>chiedgga</i> ) <i>egli,</i>		[ <i>gano</i> ] <i>églino,</i>	let them ask.

*Pónere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

<i>PÓNERE</i> , or <i>pórre</i> ,   to put.	<i>pósto</i> ,	put.
---	----------------	------

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>póno</i>	I put ;	<i>poniámolo,</i>	we put ;
[( <i>póno</i> ),			
2d p. <i>póni,</i>	thou puttest ;	<i>ponéte,</i>	you put ;
3d p. <i>póne,</i>	he puts ;	<i>póngono,</i>	they put.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>pósi,</i>	I put.
---------------------	--------

4. — *Future.*

1st p. <i>porrò</i> [by contraction for	I shall or will put.
[ <i>ponerò</i> ],	

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>io pónGA</i>	that I put ;	<i>poniámo,</i>	that we put ;
[(pógna),			
2d p. <i>tu pónGA</i>	that thou put ;	<i>poniáte,</i>	that you put ;
[(pógni),			
3d p. <i>égli pónGA</i>	that he put ;	<i>pónGANO,</i>	that they put.
[(pógna),			

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. <i>porréi</i> ( <i>porría</i> )	[by contrac-	I should, would, or could put ; or
	[tion for <i>poneréi</i> ( <i>ponería</i> ),	[might put.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>ponidmo nói,</i>	let us put ;
2d p. <i>póni tu,</i>	put thou ;	<i>ponéte vói,</i>	put ye ;
3d p. <i>pónGA égli,</i>	let him put ;	<i>pónGANO égliño,</i>	let them put.

The verbs *corrispóndere*, ‘to correspond’; *ascóndere*, ‘to conceal’; *nascóndere*, ‘to hide’; — *richiédere*, ‘to request’; — and all the compounds of *pónere*, ‘to put’; have the same irregularities.

*Ascóndere* and *nascóndere*, in the *participle*, end also in *so*, making *ascóso*, ‘concealed’; and *nascóso*, ‘hidden.’

*Fóndere*, ‘to melt,’ and its compounds *confóndere*, ‘to confound’; &c. in the *perfect* make *fúsi*, ‘I melted’; *confúsi*, ‘I confounded’; &c.; and in the *participle*, *fúso*, ‘melted’; *confúso*, ‘confounded’; &c.

*Fóndere* is also *regular*, making also, in the *perfect*, *fondéi*, and in *participle*, *fondúto*.

*Tóndere*,\* ‘to shear’; and *scérnere*, ‘to distinguish’; † *discérnere*, ‘to discern’; *concérnere*, ‘to concern’; are *regular*, and varied like *téssere*.

\* The *participle* *tóso*, erroneously attributed to *tóndere*, is a contraction of *tosáto*, *participle* of the verb *tosáre*, ‘to shear.’

† Manzoni has written *scérse*, ‘she distinguished’; and *scérsero*, ‘they distinguished.’

*Variation of other Irregular Verbs in ěre (short), not included in any of the preceding classes.*

To the above five classes of verbs in ěre (*short*) must be added the verbs,

<i>conóscere,</i>	to know ;		<i>náscere,</i>	to be born ;
<i>créscere,</i>	to grow ;		<i>rómperere,</i>	to break ;
<i>nuócere,</i>	to hurt ;			

which, in the *perfect*, end in *bbi, cqui, ppi*; and in the *participle*, in *úto, to, tto* : thus,

Infinitive.	Perfect.	Participle.
<i>conóSCERE,</i>	<i>conó-BBI,</i>	<i>conosci-ÚTO ;</i>
<i>créSCERE,</i>	<i>cré-BBI,</i>	<i>cresci-ÚTO ;</i>
<i>nuóCERE,</i>	<i>nó-CQUI,</i>	<i>noci-ÚTO ;</i>
<i>náSCERE,</i>	<i>ná-CQUI,</i>	<i>ná-TO ;</i>
<i>rómPERE,</i>	<i>rú-PPI,</i>	<i>ró-TTO.</i>

---

*Conóscere.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Conóscere,* |to know. || *conosci-úto,* |known.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>conó-BBI</i>	I knew ;	<i>conoscémmo,</i>	we knew ;
[( <i>conoscéi</i> ),			
2d p. <i>conoscésti,</i>	thou knewest ;	<i>conoscéste,</i>	you knew ;
3d p. <i>conó-BBE</i>			
[( <i>conoscè</i> ),	he knew ;	<i>conó-BBERO,</i>	they knew.

The compounds of *conóscere*, — and the verb *créscere*, ‘to grow,’ and its compounds, — have the same irregularities.

---

*Nuócere.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Nuócere*, |to hurt. || *noci-úto*, |hurt.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>nó-cqui</i> ,	I hurt ;	<i>nocémmo</i> ,	wé hurt ;
2d p. <i>nocésti</i> ,	thou hurtest ;	<i>nocéste</i> ,	you hurt ;
3d p. <i>nó-cque</i> ,	he hurt ;	<i>nó-cquero</i> ,	they hurt.

---

*Rinuócere*, ‘to hurt again,’ — and the verb *náscere*, ‘to be born’ ; and its compound *rináscere*, ‘to be born again,’ — in the *perfect*, have the same irregularities.

*Náscere*, and its compound *rináscere*, in the *participle* make *ná-to*, ‘been born’ ; *riná-to*, ‘been born again.’

The verb *páscere*, ‘to feed,’ although it has the same termination as *conóscere*, *créscere*, *náscere*, is *regular*. The verb *méscere*, signifying ‘to pour,’ is *regular*, but signifying ‘to mix,’ in the *participle*, is *irregular*, and makes *místo*, ‘mixed.’

---

*Rómpere.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Rómpere*, |to break. || *ró-tto*, |broken.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>rú-PPi</i> [(róppi, rompéi), 2d p. <i>rompésti</i> , 3d p. <i>rú-PPe</i> [(róppe, rompè),	I broke ; thou brokest ; he broke ;	<i>rompémmo</i> ,    <i>rompéste</i> ,    <i>rú-PPERO</i> ,	we broke ;   you broke ;   they broke.
---	---	---	--



The compounds of *rómpere*, as *corrómpere*, ‘to corrupt’; *dirómpere*, ‘to break’; &c., have the same irregularities.



*Variation of the Verb Bévere.*

*Bévere*, ‘to drink,’ is a *regular* verb; but, as it has been by poets so contracted as to give it the appearance of an irregular one, we will here give its variation.

*Bévere.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Bévere*) *bére*, | to drink.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*bevéndo* (beéndo), | drinking.      || *bevúto*,      | drunk.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>bévo</i> (béo), 2d p. <i>bévi</i> (béi), 3d p. <i>béve</i> (bée),	I drink ;   thou drinkest ;   he drinks ;	<i>beviámo</i> ,    <i>bevéte</i> ( <i>beéte</i> ),    <i>bévono</i> ( <i>béono</i> ),	we drink ;   you drink ;   they drink.
---	---	--	--

2. — *Imperfect.*1st p. *io bevéva* or *bevéa*, | I drank.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>bevéi</i> or [ <i>bevétti</i> , <i>BÉVV</i> ] [( <i>bébbi</i> ),	I drank ;	<i>bevémmo</i> ,	we drank ;
2d p. <i>bevésti</i> ,	thou drankest ;	<i>bevéste</i> ,	you drank ;
3d p. <i>bevè</i> or <i>be-</i> [ <i>vétte</i> , <i>BÉVVE</i> ] [( <i>bébbe</i> ),	he drank ;	<i>bevérono</i> or <i>be-</i> [ <i>véttero</i> , <i>BÉV-</i> [ <i>vero</i> ( <i>bébbe-</i> [ <i>ro</i> , <i>bévvono</i> ),	they drank.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. ( <i>beverò</i> , [ <i>bevrò</i> ) <i>berò</i> ,	I shall or will [drink ;	( <i>beverémo</i> , <i>be-</i> [ <i>vrémo</i> ) <i>berémo</i> ,	we will drink ;
2d p. ( <i>beverái</i> ) [ <i>berái</i> ,	thou wilt drink ;	( <i>beveréte</i> ) <i>beréte</i> ,	you will drink ;
3d p. ( <i>beverà</i> , [ <i>bevrà</i> ) <i>berà</i> ,	he will drink ;	( <i>beveránno</i> ) <i>be-</i> [ <i>ránno</i> ,	they will drink.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io béva</i> [( <i>béa</i> ),	that I drink or [may drink ;	<i>beviámo</i> ,	that we drink ;
2d p. <i>tu béva</i> [( <i>bévi</i> ; <i>béa</i> , <i>béi</i> ),	that thou drink ;	<i>beviáte</i> ,	that you drink ;
3d p. <i>égli béva</i> [( <i>béa</i> ),	that he drink ;	<i>bévano</i> ( <i>béano</i> ),	that they drink.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io bevéssi</i> [( <i>beéssi</i> ),	if I drink ;	<i>bevéssimo</i> ( <i>beés-</i> [ <i>simo</i> ),	if we drink ;
2d p. <i>tu bevéssi</i> [( <i>beéssi</i> ),	if thou drinkest ;	<i>bevéste</i> ( <i>beéste</i> ),	if you drink ;
3d p. <i>bevésse</i> [( <i>beésse</i> ),	if he drinks ;	<i>bevéssero</i> ( <i>beés-</i> [ <i>sero</i> , <i>beéssonno</i> ),	if they drink.



IV. CONDITIONAL.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — Present.

1st p. ( <i>beveréi</i> ) [( <i>bevería</i> )) <i>beréi</i> [( <i>bería</i> ), 2d p. ( <i>beverésti</i> ) [ <i>berésti</i> , 3d p. ( <i>beverébbe</i> ) [( <i>bevería</i> )) <i>be-</i> [ <i>rébbe</i> ( <i>bería</i> ),	I should, would, [or could drink; [or might drink; thou wouldst [drink; he would drink;	( <i>beverémmo</i> ) <i>be-</i> [ <i>rémmo</i> , ( <i>beveréste</i> ) <i>beré-</i> [ <i>ste</i> , ( <i>beverébbero</i> ( <i>be-</i> [ <i>veriano</i> , <i>beverí-</i> [ <i>eno</i> )) <i>berébbero</i> [( <i>beriano</i> , <i>berí-</i> [ <i>eno</i> ),	we would drink; you would drink; they would drink.
---	--	---	--

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . 2d p. <i>bévi</i> ( <i>béi</i> ) [ <i>tu</i> , 3d p. <i>béva</i> ( <i>béa</i> ) [ <i>égli</i> ,	. . . . . drink thou; let him drink;	<i>beviámo nói</i> , <i>bevéte</i> ( <i>beéte</i> ) <i>vóí</i> , <i>bévano</i> ( <i>béano</i> ) [ <i>églino</i> ,	let us drink; drink ye; let them drink.
--	--	--	---

The compounds of *bévere*, as *imbévere*, ‘to imbibe’; *ribévere*, ‘to drink again’; have the same irregularities.

REMARKS ON THE FOREGOING VERBS.

All verbs ending in *úcere*, as *addúcere*, ‘to allege’; *indúcere*, ‘to induce’; &c. in the *participle*, besides changing *cére* into *tto*, change also the *u* into *o*; and make *addóto*, ‘alleged’; *indóto*, ‘induced’; &c.

*Rilúcere*, ‘to shine’; and *tralúcere*, ‘to shine through’; have *no participle*.

Verbs ending in *glière*, as *cógliere*, ‘to gather’; *tógliere*, ‘to take away’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle* retain the *l* of their termination; and make *cólsi*,

‘ I gathered ’; *cólto*, ‘ gathered ’; *tólso*, ‘ I took away ’; &c.

All verbs ending in *ndere*, as *accéndere*, ‘ to kindle ’; *scíndere*, ‘ to cut asunder ’; *rispóndere*, ‘ to answer ’; &c., in the *perfect* and the *participle* lose the *n*; and make *accési*, ‘ I kindle ’; *accéso*, ‘ kindled ’; *scíssi*, ‘ I cut asunder ’; &c.

Verbs ending in *ngere* may end also in *gnere*, and *vice versá*; thus, *giúngere* or *giúgnere*, ‘ to arrive ’; *spégnere* or *spéngere*, ‘ to extinguish ’; &c. When they end in *gnere*, in the *perfect* and *participle* they retain the *n* of their termination; and make *spénsi*, ‘ I extinguished ’; *spénto*, ‘ extinguished ’; &c.

The transposition of the *n* in verbs in *ngere* ought not to be made except in those inflexions in which *ng* is followed by *e* or *i*; as, *giungo*, ‘ I arrive,’ *giúgni*, ‘ thou arrivest ’; *giúgne*, ‘ he arrives ’; *giugniámo*, ‘ we arrive ’; *giugnéte*, ‘ you arrive ’; *giungono*, ‘ they arrive ’; and *vice versá* in verbs in *gnere*, it ought not to be made but in those inflexions in which *gn* is followed by *o* or *a*; as, *spéngo*, ‘ I extinguish ’; *spégni*, ‘ thou extinguishest ’; &c., *spénga*, ‘ that I extinguish ’; &c.

Verbs ending in *igere* and *imere*, as *dirigere*, ‘ to direct ’; *esprimere*, ‘ to express ’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle* change the *i* into *e*; and make *diréssi*, ‘ I directed ’; *dirétto*, ‘ directed ’; *espréssi*, ‘ I expelled ’; *expréssso*, ‘ expressed ’; &c.

The verb *redimere*, ‘ to redeem ’; and verbs ending in *umere*, as *assumere*, ‘ to assume ’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle*, change the *m* of their termination into *n*, and make *redénsi*, ‘ I redeemed ’; *assúnsi*, ‘ I assumed ’; *assúnto*, ‘ assumed ’; &c.

The verbs *tráere*, ‘ to draw ’; *pónere*, ‘ to put,’ and their compounds; and all verbs ending in *gliere*, *úcere*, *úggere*; as *cógliere*, ‘ to gather ’; *addúcere*, ‘ to allege ’; *distrúggere*, ‘ to destroy ’; are, in the *infinitive* contracted into *trárre*, *pórre*, *córre*, *addúrre*, *distrúrre*;

and make, in the *future*, — *trarrò*, ‘I will draw’; *porrò*, ‘I will put’; &c., and in the *conditional*, — *trarréi*, ‘I would draw’; &c.

*Rilúcere*, ‘to shine’; *tralúcere*, ‘to shine through’; and *strúggere*, ‘to melt’; are never contracted in any of the above inflexions.

All verbs ending in *ère* (*short*), preceded by the diphthong *uó* (*accented*), as *cuócere*, ‘to cook’; *scuótere*, ‘to shake’; *muóvere*, ‘to move’; *nuócere*, ‘to hurt’; &c., in the *perfect* and *participle*, — and in *all the inflexions* in which the *diphthong loses the accent*, drop the *u*; — and make, *cóssi*, ‘I cooked’; *cótto*, ‘cooked’; *scóssi*, ‘I shook’; &c. — *cociámo*, ‘we cook’; *scotéte*, ‘you shake’; *moverò*, ‘I will move’; *nocerébbe*, ‘it would hurt’; — &c.

## EXAMPLES.

*Ad ambidúe quèsti fini ha qui ALLÚSO pariménte il Signóre con un tal détto.* (Segn. Mann. Nov. 16.) To both these objects has the Lord here equally alluded with such words.

*Non istétte guári, che égli PERDÈ la vísta, e la paróla.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 7.) It was not long before he lost both his sight and speech.

*Quèsta vólta ío dirò, cóme si dice, — D’ éssermi PÉRSA anch’ ío la lasciátúra.* (Buon. Fier. 2. 4.) This time I will say, as we are wont to say, that I have missed the object in view.

*Tagliándo il FENDÈ quási infino á’ dénti.* (Bocc. Filoc. 1.) With a cut he clove him as far as the chin.

*Colúí FÉSSE in grémbo a Dío — Lo cuór che in sul Tamígi ancór si cóla.* (Dant. Inf. 12.) That one smote in the bosom of God the heart which is yet honored on the Thames.

*Che, per l’ effétto dé’ suói má’ pensiéri, — Fidándomi di lui, ío* That, through the effect of his evil thoughts, I, trusting in him,

*fóssi PRÉSO, — E póscia móрто, dír non è mestiéri.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

*Présa la piástra, la RADÉI da tútte e dúe le bándé.* (Benv. Cell. Oref. 85.)

*E séco avére úna procélla AS-SÓRTO — Tánti príncipi illústri.* (Ariost. Fur. 14. 6.)

*Vóì troveréte lo speziále per la vía, che andrà a Córre la misúra dé' confétti.* (Fir. Trin. 1. 2.)

*Nè poéta ne Cólga mái, nè Gióve — La privilégi.* (Petr. s. 46.)

*Se égli [il víno] sáppia di séc-co o ábbia odór cattivo, cáccinvisi déntro fiáccole accése, e vi si SPÉNGANO.* (Sod. Colt. 99.)

*Sémpre la prossimána érba dattórno si svÉlga.* (Cresc. 5. 1.)

*Che Crísto appárve á' dúe ch' é-rano in vía, — Già súrto fuór délla sepulcrál búca.* (Dant. Purg. 21.)

*In onoráre altrúi tenéva la bór-sa STRÉTTA.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

*Dcl bél nído di Lédá mi divélse, — E nel ciél velocíssimo m' IM-PÚLSE.* (Dant. Par. 27.)

*Ch' è di tórbidi nívoli INVO-LÚTO.* (Dant. Inf. 24.)

*Clódio diéde monéta á' giúdice, e fu ASSOLÚTO.* (Sen. Pist. 97.)

*Quésto possénte mío nóbile ar-dóre — Mi solléna da térra, e pórtá il córe — Dov' ír per súa virtù non gli è CONCÉSSO.* (Buon. Rim. 50.)

was taken and afterward put to death, there is no need that I should tell.

Having taken the metal, I shaved it on both sides.

And that along with him one storm had swallowed up so many illustrious princes.

You will find the apothecary on the way, going to take the measure of the confections.

Never may a poet gather of it, nor Jupiter give it any privilege.

If it [the wine] tastes too dry or has a bad odor, let lighted torches be thrown into it, and be extinguished in it.

Let the grass always be pulled up around it.

That Christ appeared unto the two upon their way, new-risen from his vaulted grave.

He kept his purse close in honoring others.

From the fair nest of Leda rapt me forth, and wafted me on into swiftest heaven.

Which is wrapt in turbid mists.

Clodius gave money to the judges and was acquitted.

This powerful ardor of mine elevates me from the earth, and carries my heart, where by its own power it is not permitted to ascend.

*A che, e còme* CONCEDÉTTE  
*Amóre — Che conoscéste i dub-  
biósi desiri?* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

By what and how did Love grant  
that you should know your uncer-  
tain wishes?

REDÉNTO, da Redímere. (Cru-  
sca.)

*Redeemed, from to redeem.*

*M NÍSE déntro álle segréte  
còse* (Dant. Inf. 3.)

He led me on into those seclud-  
ed regions.

*Nè ánche ben capísco l' illa-  
zióne che fa Apéllé, del dovérsi  
concédere quálche lume RIFLÉSSO  
álla térra.* (Gal. Macch. sol. 168.)

Neither can I understand the  
inference which Apelles makes,  
that some reflected light must be  
granted to the earth.

*Quándo Fetónte abbandonò li  
fréni, — Perchè 'l ciél, còme páre  
ancór, si cósse.* (Dant. Inf. 17.)

When Phaëton abandoned the  
reins, whence heaven, as it yet  
appears, was wrapt in flames.

*Dáto che quésta ragióne si  
potésse ADDÚCERE.* (Borg. Rip.  
30.)

Even could this reason be al-  
leged.

*Nói, sémpre che verrà propósi-  
to, ADDURRÉMO símili antíchi e-  
sémpj.* (Dav. Stor. 3.)

Whenever it shall be conven-  
ient, we will always allege similar  
ancient examples.

*E' suóno, che si fa nèle sélve  
dáí cacciatóri, perchè li cáni  
TRÁGGANO al suóno.* (But. Inf.  
31.)

It is a sound, which is made by  
hunters in the woods, that the dogs  
may come to that sound.

*Via còrta e spédita — TRAR-  
RÉBBE a fin quest' áspra péna, e  
dúra.* (Petr. c. 18.)

A short and expeditious way  
would bring to an end this severe  
and hard pain.

*Sóno físo in un límo, che non  
tróva fòndo.* (Vit. SS. Pad.)

I am fixed in a marshy soil  
which has no bottom.

*Lo TRAFÍTTO il mirò, ma nùlla  
dísse.* (Dant. Inf. 25.)

The pierced spirit looked on  
him, but did not speak.

*Líbero spírto od á' suói mém-  
bri AFFÍSSO.* (Petr. s. 113.)

Free spirit or still confined to  
its limbs.

*Tentò di trár dálla profònda  
piága la CONFÍTTA saétta.* (Guar.  
Past. Fid. 5, 7.)

He tried to draw from the deep  
wound the fixed arrow.

*E tánta grázia sóvra me RILÚS-  
SE.* (Dant. Par. 22.)

And so much grace shone over  
me.

*La lúce nèle ténebre RILU-  
CÉTTE.* (Arr. Vang.)

Light shone in the darkness.

ESÁTTO, da Esígere. (Crusca.)

*Exacted, from to exact.*

*Che gli fússe oscuráta la fáma  
de' princípj délla súa milizia da  
un pópolo vivúto in lúnga páce.*  
(Guicc. Stor. 5.)

That the fame of the beginning  
of his military life should be ob-  
scured by a people who had lived  
in long peace.

*Ma il ben vissúto vécchio s' in-  
ggnáva di mostráre la verità dél-  
la cósá.* (Firenz. Asin.)

But the well-lived old man en-  
deavoured to show the truth of  
the thing.

VIVRÒ, com' io son visso.\*  
(Petr. s. 113.)

I shall live as I have lived.

*Allóra dimandò còme si chia-  
máva quell' ísola; fu rispósto per  
li marinári, che per antico si chia-  
máva Jerusaiém.* (Giov. Vill. l.  
4. c. 18.)

Then he asked how that island  
was called; he was answered by  
the sailors, that anciently it was  
called Jerusalem.

*Nè può grázia negár che tu gli  
CHIÉGGIA.* (Alam. Colt. 1. 10.)

Nor can he deny any favor that  
you may ask.

*E se ne vénne a PÓNERE óste a  
Fiésóle.* (Pecor. g. 11. n. 1.)

And came to encamp at Fiesole.

*Per dúo fiammétte, che vedém-  
mo PÓRRE.* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

By two small flames, which we  
saw kindle.

*Chi PORRÀ ben la mēte e  
l' intellétto.* (Franc. Barb. 158.)

He who will reflect well.

*Lo dúca ed ío, per quél cammí-  
no ASCÓSO, — Entrámmo a ritor-  
nár nel chiáro móndo.* (Dant.  
Inf. 34.)

My guide and I entered by that  
hidden way to return to the bright  
world.

*La pietá dé' dúo cognáti, — Che  
di tristizia tútto mi CONFÚSE.*  
(Dant. Inf. 6.)

Pity for the kindred shades,  
whence grief wholly overcame  
me.

*Tútte le campáne che érano in  
quéllo trováronsi quási tútte FON-  
DÚTE, còme fóssero coláte nélla  
fornáce.* (Matt. Vill. 3. 42.)

All the bells which were there,  
were found almost all melted as if  
they had been put in a furnace.

*Il Saladíno CONÓBBE costúi ot-  
timamēte éssere sapúto uscír del  
láccio, il quále davánti á' piédi  
téso gli avéa.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 3.)

Saladin saw that he had known  
how to get out of the snare, which  
he had spread before his feet.

*Ben ti dée ricordár, che non ti  
NÓCQUE.* (Dant. Inf. 20.)

Thou oughtest to remember well,  
for it did thee good service.

\* By contraction for *vissuto*.

*Andónne a Pavia per úna discórdia NÁTA tra quélli di Becchería.* (Din. Comp. 3.)

He went to Pavia on account of a dissension sprung up among the people of Beccheria.

*La cittadinánza, che è or míSTA — Di Cámpe, e di Certáldo, e di Figghíne, — Púra vedéasi nell' último artista.* (Dant. Par. 16.)

The citizens' blood, that now is mixed from Campi, and Certaldo, and Figghine, ran pure through the last mechanic's veins.

*L' un délli quáli, ancór non è molt' ánni — RUPP' ío per un, che déntro v' annegáva.* (Dant. Inf. 13.)

One of which I broke some few years past, to save an infant who was drowning in it.

*E mángia, e BÉE, e dórme, e véste pánni.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

And eats, and drinks, and sleeps, and puts raiment on.

EXERCISE XX.

I. 1. — To gather. to allege. to destroy. to draw.  
*Cógliere. addúcere. distrúggere. tráere.*

to put. to take away. 7. — cloven. taken. shaven.  
*pónere. tógliere. féndere. préndere. rádere.*

kindled. devolved. bound. redeemed. extinguished.  
*accéndere. devólvere. stríngere. redímere. spégnere.*

cooked. answered. born. directed. lived. broken.  
*cuócere. rispóndere. náscere. dirígere. vívere. rómperere.*

alleged. — II. 1. — I gather, thou extinguishest, he  
*addúcere. cógliere, spégnere, ri-*

duces, we ask, you draw, they take away. —  
*dúcere, chiédere, tráere, tógliere.*

I absorb, thou chooseth, he rises, we assume, you  
*assórbere, scégliere, sórgere, assúmere, a-*

compel, they root up. 3. — I offended, thou vilifiedst,  
*stríngere, svéllere. lédere, vilipéndere,*

he ran, we bite, you sprinkled, they kindled. —  
*córrere, mórdere, aspérgere, accéndere.*

I expelled, thou invadedst, he knew, we wiped,  
*espéllere, invádere, conóscere, térgere,*

you shut, they descended. — I cut asunder, thou  
*chiùdere,* *scèndere.* *scìndere,* *con-*

grantedst, he redeemed, we sheared, you chose, they  
*cèdere,* *redimere,* *tòndere,* *scégliere,* *mét-*

put. 4. — I will succour, thou wilt drink, it will occur,  
*tere.* *soccòrrere,* *bèvere,* *occòrrere,*

we will shake, you will draw, they will destroy. —  
*scuòtere,* *tràere,* *distrúggere.*

I will put, thou wilt move, he will turn, we will untie,  
*pònere,* *muòvere,* *vòlvere,* *sciògliere,*

you will reflect, they will melt. — III. 1. — I may  
*rifléttere,* *strúggere.* *dis-*

distinguish, thou mayest milk, he may know, we may  
*tinguere,* *múngere,* *nàscere,* *protég-*

protect, you may cook, they may conquer. — I may  
*gere,* *cuócere,* *víncere.* *scié-*

choose, thou mayest fry, he may request, we may  
*gliere,* *frúggere,* *richièdere,* *contrap-*

oppose, you may hurt, they may drink. — IV. 1. —  
*pònere,* *nuócere,* *bèvere.*

I should drink again, thou wouldst break, he would  
*ribèvere,* *fràngere,* *rilú-*

shine, we would live, you would produce, they would  
*cere,* *vívère,* *prodúcere,* *cré-*

grow. — V. — write thou, let him feign, let us answer,  
*scere.* *scrívere,* *fíngere,* *rispòndere,*

pour ye, let them feed.  
*méscere,* *páscere.*

---



VARIATION OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

The following are the simple irregular verbs of the third conjugation ; viz.

<i>dire,</i>	} to say, or } to tell ;		<i>seguire,</i>	to follow ;
<i>morire,</i>			to die ;	<i>udire,</i>
<i>salire,</i>	to ascend ;		<i>uscire,</i>	to go out ;
			<i>venire,</i>	to come.



*Dire.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

DIRE (*dícere*),\* | to say.

GERUND.

*dicendo,* | saying.

PARTICIPLE.

|| DÉTTO (*dítto*), | said.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>dico,</i>	I say ;	<i>diciámo,</i>	we say ;
2d p. <i>dici</i> or <i>dí,</i>	thou sayest ;	<i>díte,</i>	you say ;
3d p. <i>dice,</i>	he says ;	<i>dicono,</i>	they say.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io dicéva* or *dicéa,* | I said.

---

\* This verb, belongs, properly, to the second conjugation, it being but a contraction of *dícere*, now become *obsolete*, of which it retains many of the forms.

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>díssi</i> ,	I said ;	<i>dicémmo</i> ,	we said ;
2d p. <i>dicésti</i> ,	thou saidest ;	<i>dicéste</i> ,	you said ;
3d p. <i>dísse</i> ,	he said ;	<i>díssero</i> ,	they said.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *dirò* [by contraction for | I shall *or* will say.  
*dicerò*], |

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *io dica*, | that I say *or* may say.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io dicéssi*, | if I said *or* should say.

## IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *diréi* (*diría*) [by contraction | I should, would, *or* could say ; *or*  
 [for *diceréi* (*dicería*)], | [might say.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>dicámo nói</i> ,	let us say ;
2d p. <i>dí' tu</i> ,	say thou ;	<i>díte zói</i> ,	say ye ;
3d p. <i>dica égli</i> ,	let him say ;	<i>dicano églino</i> ,	let them say.

The compounds of *dire*, as *ridire*, 'to say again'; *contradire* or *contraddire*, 'to contradict'; *interdire*, 'to forbid'; *bendire*, 'to speak well of'; *maldire*, 'to speak ill of'; have the same irregularities.

*Benedire*, 'to bless,' and *maladire* or *maledire*, 'to curse,' in the *perfect*, are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *benedii* or *benedíssi*, 'I blessed'; *maledii* or *maledíssi*, 'I cursed.'

*Moríre.*

(Varied with *éssere*.\*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Moríre,* | to die. || MÓRTO, | dead.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. MUÓRO, or [MUÓIO (móio)]	I die ;		<i>moriámo,</i>	we die ;
2d p. MUÓRI,	thou diest ;		<i>moríte,</i>	you die ;
3d p. MUÓRE [( <i>muór</i> )]	he dies ;		MUÓRONO, or MUÓ- [IONO (móio- [NO),	they die.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *morirò* or *morrò*, | I shall or will die.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> MUÓRA, [or MUÓIA (móia)]	that I die, or [may die ;		<i>moriámo,</i>	that we die ;
2d p. <i>tu</i> MUÓRA, [or MUÓIA (móra [or móia, móri)]	that thou die ;		<i>moriáte,</i>	that you die ;
3d p. <i>egli</i> MUÓ- [RA, or MUÓIA [( <i>móra or móia</i> )]	that he die ;		MUÓRANO, or [MUÓIANO (mó- [rano or móiano),	that they die.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *moriréi* or *morréi* (*moriría* | I should, would, or could die ; or  
[or *inorría*), | [might die.

\* *Moríre* may be varied also with *avére*; but then, as we have already observed (p. 219), it takes the nature of an *active* verb, and signifies 'to kill,' and not 'to die.'

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.	Plural.
1st p. . . . .	<i>moriámo nói,</i>   let us die ;
2d p. MUÓRI <i>tu,</i>   die thou ;	<i>moríte vói,</i>   die ye ;
3d p. MUÓRA, or   let him die ;	MUÓRANO, or   let them die.
[MUÓIA (móra [or móia) <i>égli,</i>	[MUÓIANO (mó- [rano or móia- [no) <i>églino,</i>

The compounds of *morire*, as *premorire*, ‘to die before’; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Salire.*

(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

*Salire* (*saglire*\*), | to ascend.      || *salíto,*      | ascended.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## I. — Present.

1st p. SÁLGO, or   I ascend ;	<i>saliámo,</i> or SA-   we ascend ;
[ <i>salisco</i> (ságlío),	[GLIÁMO,
2d p. <i>sáli</i> or sa-   thou ascendest ;	<i>salíte,</i>   you ascend ;
[ <i>liscit</i> (ságlí),	
3d p. <i>sále</i> or sa-   he ascends ;	SÁLGONO, or sa-   they ascend.
[ <i>lisce</i> (ságlie),	[ <i>lisono</i> (sá- [gliono),

\* From this verb, now become *obsolete*, are derived many of the forms of the modern verb *salire*.

† The forms *salisci* and *sagliámo*, of the *present* of the *indicative* and of the *imperative*; and *sagliámo* and *sagliáte*, of the *present* of the *conjunctive* mood, are to be preferred when *sáli*, *saliámo*, *saliáte*, might be confounded with *sáli*, *saliámo*, and *saliáte*, corresponding tenses of the verb *saláre*, ‘to salt.’

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>salii</i> ( <i>sálsi</i> ),	I ascended ;	<i>salímmo</i> ,	we ascended ;
2d p. <i>salísti</i> ,	thou ascendedst ;	<i>salíste</i> ,	you ascended ;
3d p. <i>salì</i> ( <i>sálse</i> ,	he ascended ;	<i>salìrono</i> ( <i>sálsero</i> ,	they ascended.
[ <i>salífo</i> ),		[ <i>salíro</i> , <i>salír</i> ),	

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío</i> <i>sÁLGA</i> , or	that I ascend, or	<i>salíamo</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	that we ascend ;
[ <i>salisca</i> ( <i>ságlia</i> ),	[may ascend ;	[ <i>GLIÁMO</i> ,	
2d p. <i>tu</i> <i>sÁLGA</i> , or	that thou ascend ;	<i>salíate</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	that you ascend ;
[ <i>salisca</i> ( <i>sálghi</i> ),		[ <i>GLIÁTE</i> ,	
3d p. <i>égli</i> <i>sÁLGA</i> ,	that he ascend ;	<i>sÁLGANO</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	that they ascend.
[or <i>salisca</i> ,		[ <i>liscano</i> ( <i>sá-</i>	
		[ <i>gliano</i> ),	

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . .	. . . . .	<i>salíamo</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	let us ascend ;
		[ <i>GLIÁMO</i> <i>nóí</i> ,	
2d p. <i>sáli</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	ascend thou ;	<i>salíte</i> <i>vói</i> ,	ascend ye ;
[ <i>lisci</i> <i>tu</i> ,			
3d p. <i>sÁLGA</i> , or	let him ascend ;	<i>sÁLGANO</i> , or <i>sa-</i>	let them ascend.
[ <i>salisca</i> <i>égli</i> ,		[ <i>liscano</i> <i>églino</i> ,	

The compounds of *salire*, as *risalire*, ‘to reascend’ ; *assalire*, ‘to assail’ ; &c., have the same irregularities.

*Seguire.*(Varied with either *avére* or *éssere*.)

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>Seguire,</i>	to follow.	<i>seguito,</i>	followed.
-----------------	------------	-----------------	-----------

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>séguo,</i> or [SIÉGUO,	I follow ;	<i>seguíamo,</i>	we follow ;
2d p. <i>ségui,</i> or [SIÉGUI,	thou followest ;	<i>segúite,</i>	you follow ;
3d p. <i>ségue,</i> or [SIÉGUE,	he follows ;	<i>séguono,</i> or [SIÉGUONO,	they follow.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io ségua,</i> [or SIÉGUA.	that I follow ; or [may follow ;	<i>seguíamo,</i>	that we follow ;
2d p. <i>tu ségua,</i> [SIÉGUA ( <i>ségui,</i> [siégui),	that thou follow ;	<i>segúite,</i>	that you follow ;
3d p. <i>egli ségua,</i> [or SIÉGUA,	that he follow ;	<i>séguano,</i> or [SIÉGUANO,	that they follow.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	<i>seguíamo nói,</i>	let us follow ;
2d p. <i>ségui,</i> or [SIÉGUI <i>tu,</i>	<i>segúite vói,</i>	follow ye ;
3d p. <i>ségua,</i> o [SIÉGUA <i>égli,</i>	<i>séguano,</i> or SIÉ- [GUANO <i>églino,</i>	let them follow.

The compounds of *seguire*, as *conseguire*, 'to obtain'; *inseguire*, 'to pursue'; *proseguire*, 'to prosecute'; *sussequire*, 'to follow immediately after'; have the same irregularities.

*Udire.*

(Varied with *avére.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Udire* (odire\*), |to hear;                   || *udito*,                   |heard.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. ÓDO,	I hear;	<i>udiamo</i> ,	we hear;
2d p. ÓDI,	thou hearest;	<i>udite</i> ,	you hear;
3d p. ÓDE,	he hears;	ÓDONO,	they hear.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *udirò* or *udrò*, | I shall or will hear.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> ÓDA,	that I hear or	<i>udiamo</i> ,	that we hear;
	[may hear;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> ÓDA	that thou hear;	<i>udiate</i> ,	that you hear;
[(ódi)			
3d p. <i>egli</i> ÓDA,	that he hear;	ÓDANO,	that they hear.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *udiréi* or *údréi* (*udiría* or | I should, would, or could hear;  
[*udiría*], | [or might hear.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>udiamo nói</i> ,	let us hear;
2d p. ÓDI <i>tu</i> ,	hear thou;	<i>udite vói</i> ,	hear ye;
3d p. ÓDA <i>egli</i> ,	let him hear;	ÓDANO <i>églino</i> ,	let them hear.

\* From this form, now *obsolete*, are derived *ódo*, *ódi*, &c., of *udire*.

The compounds of *uñire*, as *riudire*, ‘to hear again’; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Esaudire*, ‘to grant’; is *regular*, and varied like *esibire*.

—

*Uscire.*

(Varied with *éssere*.)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Uscire* (*escire*\*), |to go out;      || *uscito*,      |gone out.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ÉSCO</i> ,	I go out;	<i>usciamo</i> ,	we go out;
2d p. <i>ÉSCI</i> ,	thou goest out;	<i>uscite</i> ,	you go out;
3d p. <i>ÉSCE</i> ,	he goes out;	<i>éscano</i> ,	they go out.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío ÉSCA</i> ,	that I go out, <i>or</i>	<i>usciamo</i> ,	that we go out;
	[may go out;		
2d p. <i>tu ÉSCA</i> ,	that thou go out;	<i>usciate</i> ,	that you go out;
3d p. <i>égli ÉSCA</i> ,	that he go out;	<i>éscano</i> ,	that they go out.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>usciamo nói</i> ,	let us go out;
2d p. <i>ÉSCI tu</i> ,	go thou out;	<i>uscite vói</i> ,	go ye out;
3d p. <i>ÉSCA égli</i> ,	let him go out;	<i>éscano égliño</i> ,	let them go out.

The compound of *uscire*, — *riuscire*, ‘to succeed,’ has the same irregularities.

---

\* From this verb, now become *obsolete*, are derived the forms *éscó*, *éscá*, &c., of the verb *uscíre*.



*Venire.*

(Varied with *éssere.*)

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Venire*, |to come. || VENÚTO, |come.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. VÉNGO [(végno),	I come;	<i>veníamo</i> ( <i>vegná-</i> [ <i>mo</i> ),	we come;
2d p. VIÉNI,	thou comest;	<i>veníte</i> ,	you come;
3d p. VIÉNE,	he comes;	VÉNGONO ( <i>végn-</i> [ <i>no</i> ),	they come.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. VÉNNI,	I came;	<i>venímmo</i> ,	we came;
2d p. <i>venísti</i> ,	thou camest;	<i>veníste</i> ,	you came;
3d p. VÉNNE,	he came;	VÉNNERO ( <i>vení-</i> [ <i>ro</i> ),	they came.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *verrò* [by contraction for | I shall or will come.  
[*venirò*], |

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io</i> VÉNGA [(végna),	that I come or [may come;	<i>veníamo</i> ( <i>vegná-</i> [ <i>mo</i> ),	that we come;
2d p. <i>tu</i> VÉNGA [(végni),	that thou come;	<i>veniáte</i> ( <i>vegná-</i> [ <i>te</i> ),	that you come;
3d p. <i>egli</i> VÉNGA [(végna),	that he come;	VÉNGANO ( <i>vé-</i> [ <i>gnano</i> ),	they they come.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *verréi* (*verría*) [by contraction | I should, would, or could come;  
[for *veniréi* (*veniría*)], | [or might come.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.		Plural.	
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>veniámo nói,</i>	let us come ;
2d p. <i>VIÉNI tu,</i>	come thou ;	<i>veníte vói,</i>	come ye ;
3d p. <i>VÉNGA</i>	let him come ;	<i>VÉNGANO (véngna-</i>	let them come.
[ <i>(véngna) égli,</i>		<i>[no) églino,</i>	

*Venire* is sometimes varied with the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si,* &c. and the particle *ne*; thus, *ME NE véngo*, ‘I am coming thence’; *TE NE viéni*, ‘thou art coming thence’; &c. — *Me, te,* &c., are then mere expletives.

The compounds of *venire*, as *convenire*, ‘to agree’; *divenire*, ‘to become’; *invenire*, ‘to find’; *prevenire*, ‘to anticipate’; *sovvenire*, ‘to assist’; &c. have the same irregularities.

*Variation of the Verb Offerire.*

*Offerire*, ‘to offer,’ is both *regular* and *irregular*; and it has, besides, been so contracted by poets, as to render it important to give here its variation.

*Offerire.*(Varied with *avére.*)

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Offerire* or *offrire*, | to offer.

GERUND.	PARTICIPLE.
<i>offeréndo</i> or offering.	( <i>offeríto</i> ) <i>OFFÉR-</i>   offered.
[ <i>offréndo,</i>	<i>[TO,</i>

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *offerisco* or *óffro*, | I offer.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío offeríva* or *offríva*, or *offería* | I offered.  
[or *offría*,

Singular.

Plural.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>offerú</i> , of- [ <i>frú</i> , or OFFÉRSI, 2d p. <i>offeristi</i> or [ <i>offristi</i> , 3d p. <i>offerì</i> , <i>offrì</i> , [or OFFÉRSE,	I offered ; thou offeredst ; he offered ;	<i>offerimmo</i> or of- [ <i>frimmo</i> , <i>offeriste</i> or <i>offrì-</i> [ <i>ste</i> , <i>offerirono</i> or of- [ <i>frirono</i> (offerí- [ro or <i>offrìro</i> , [offerír or <i>offrír</i> ), [or OFFÉRSERO,	we offered ; you offered ; they offered.
--	---	---	--

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *offerirò* or *offrìrò*, | I shall or will offer.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *ío offerísca*, *offrísca*, or *óffra*, | that I offer, or may offer.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío offeríssi* or *offrissi*, | if I offered, or should offer.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *offeriréi* or *offriréi* (*offeriría* | I should, would, or could offer ;  
[or *offriría*), | [or might offer.

V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . . | . . . . .  
2d p. *offerisci* or *óffri tu*, | offer thou.

The verb *sofferire*, 'to suffer,' has the same irregularities.

*Conferire*, 'to confer'; *differire*, 'to differ'; *inferire*, 'to infer'; *proferire*, 'to proffer'; *riferire*, 'to refer'; *trasferire*, 'to transfer'; are never contracted; and in the *perfect* and *participle* have the terminations in *û* and *ito* only; and make, *conferû*, 'I conferred'; *differû*, 'I differed'; *conferito*, 'conferred'; &c.\*

---

REMARKS ON OTHER VERBS IN *ire*.

The verbs *convertire*, 'to convert'; *sovvertire*, 'to subvert'; are both *regular* and *irregular*, and in the *perfect* make *convertû* or CONVE'RSI, 'I converted'; *sovvertû* or SOVVE'RSI, 'I subverted'; and in the *participle*, *convertito* or CONVE'RSO, 'converted'; *sovvertito* or SOVVE'RSO, 'subverted.'

*Divertire*, 'to divert'; *pervertire*, 'to pervert'; have the terminations in *û* and *ito* only; and make *divertû*, 'I diverted'; *pervertû*, 'I perverted'; *divertito*, 'diverted'; *pervertito*, 'perverted.'

*Apparire* and *comparire*, 'to appear'; and their compounds, are both *regular* and *irregular*, and in the *perfect* make *apparû* or APPA'RVI (*apparsi*); *comparû* or COMPA'RVI (*comparsi*), 'I appeared'; &c., and in the *participle*, *apparito* or APPA'RSO; (*comparito*) COMPA'RSO, 'appeared'; &c.

*Aprire*, 'to open'; *coprire*, 'to cover'; and their compounds, in the *perfect* are both *regular* and *irregular*, and make *apriu* or APE'RSI, 'I opened,' *copriu* or COPE'RSI, 'I covered'; &c., but in the *participle* are *irregular* only; and make APE'ERTO, 'opened'; COPE'ERTO, 'covered'; &c.

---

\* A few instances may be found among the classics in which *risersi*, 'I referred,' and *profersi*, 'I proffered'; *proferto*, 'proffered'; have been used.

## EXAMPLES.

*A cù il fráte dísse: "Dílo sicuráménte."* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

To whom the friar said: "Say it frankly."

*E muóiono in quésta fólle speránza.* (Gr. S. Gir. 2.)

And die with this foolish expectation.

*Déesi inténdere, per lo pádre e per lo figliuólo, tútti colóro, che sÁLGONO, e iscéndono per rétta línea.* (Maestruzz. 2. 28.)

For father and son, must be understood, all those who ascend or descend in a direct line.

*Ond' ío per lo túo mé' pénso, e discérno, — Che tu mi séGUI, ed ío sarò túa guída.* (Dant. Inf. 1.)

Wherefore I, pondering for thy profit, devise, that thou mayest follow me, and I will be thy guide.

*Fiorentíno — Mi sémbri veráménte quand' ío t' óDO.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Florentine thou seemest to me, in truth, when I hear thee.

*Quál éSCE alcúna vólta dí galóppo — Lo cavalíer dí schiéra, che caválchi.* (Dant. Purg. 24.)

As sometimes one knight pricks forth at a gallop from a troop of ranked chivalry.

*Avéndo fáto fáre un grandísimo fuóco in úna súa cammínta, in quélla SE NE VÉNNE.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

Having caused a large fire to be made in one of her halls, there she came.

*Dinánzi ógli ócchi mi si fu OFFÉRTO — Chi per língo silénzio paréa fióco.* (Dant. Inf. 1.)

There presented itself to my sight, the form of one, whose voice seemed faint through long disuse of speech.

*Táli cóse, PROFERÍTE cosí in astrátto, hángo quálche difficoltà all' ésser comprése.* (Gall. 228.)

Such things, spoken so in abstract, are difficult to be comprehended.

*Per lo quál è chi créda — Più vólte 'l móndo in Caós CONVÉRso.* (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Whereby, there are some who deem that the world has often been turned into chaos.

*APPARì úna gran mortalitá, ec. . . . . Stángo costúí nel princípío del súo capitanáto, APFÁRVE un cáso, ec. . . . .* (Franc. Sacch. n. 158.)

There came a great mortality, &c. . . . . He being yet in the beginning of his captaincy, an accident there happened, &c.

*Gli accorgíméti e le COPÉRTE vie — I'o séppi tútte.* (Dant. Inf. 27.)

I knew all subtleties, and covered ways.

## EXERCISE XXI.

I. 1.—To say. *Dire.* 4.—contradict. *contradire.* 7.—blessed. *benedire.* come. *venire.*  
 died. *morire.* advised. *avvertire.* offered. *offerire.* transferred.—II. 1.—I die, *morire,*  
 thou ascendest, *salire,* he follows, *seguire,* we hear, *udire,* you go out, *uscire,*  
 they come. *venire.* 2.—I languished, *languire,* thou saidst again, *ridire,* he  
 anticipated, *venire.* we contradicted, *contradire,* you re-opened, *riaprire,* they re-  
 covered their senses. 3.—I cursed, *maledire,* thou reascendedst, *risalire,*  
 he became, *divenire,* we suffered, *sofferire,* you diverted, *divertire,* they referred.—  
 I appeared, *apparire,* thou finishedst, *finire,* he opened, *aprire,* we heard, *sentire,* you  
 agreed, *venire,* they covered. *coprire.* 4.—I will say, *dire,* thou wilt arrive, *pervenire,*  
 he will die, *morire,* we will differ, *differire,* you will discover, *scoprire,* they will  
 assail.—III. 1.—I may die before, *premorire,* thou mayest obtain, *consequire,*  
 he may hear again, *riudire,* we may convert, *convertire,* you may find, *invenire,*  
 they may succeed. 2.—I might say, *dire,* thou mightest contra-  
 dict, *tradire,* he might bless, *benedire,* we might forbid, *interdire,* you might say again, *ridire,*  
 they might curse.—IV. 1.—I would assist, *sovvenire,* thou wouldst  
 suffer, *ferire,* he would forbid, *interdire,* we would re-assail, *riassalire,* you would come  
 again, *re,* they would hear one thing for another.—V.—con-  
 traudire, *traudire,* pro-

tinue thou, let him grant, let us prevent, proffer ye, let  
*seguire,* *esaudire,* *prevenire,* *proferire,* sov-  
 them subvert.  
*vertire.*

[For a Table of Irregular Verbs, see APPENDIX.]

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### DEFECTIVE VERBS.

Defective verbs ending in *ēre* (*long*):

<i>Calere,</i>	to care for;	<i>pavere,</i>	to fear;
<i>colere</i> or <i>colere,</i>	to adore;	<i>silere,</i>	to be, or keep,
} <i>lecere</i> & <i>licere,</i> or <i>lecere</i> & <i>licere,</i>	} to be lawful;	<i>solere,</i>	[silent;
		<i>stupere,</i>	to be wont;
			to be astonished.

Defective verbs ending in *ēre* (*short*):

<i>Algere,</i>	to be chill;	<i>riedere,</i>	to return;
<i>angere,</i>	to afflict;	<i>serpere,</i>	to creep;
<i>arrigere,</i>	to add;	} <i>soffolcere</i> or <i>soffolgere,</i>	} to support;
<i>capere,</i>	to contain;		
<i>cherere,</i>	to ask;	<i>tollere,</i>	to take away;
<i>convellere,</i>	to convulse;	<i>torpere,</i>	to be benumbed;
<i>federe,</i>	to wound;	<i>urgere,</i>	to urge;
<i>lucere,</i>	to shine;	<i>vigere,</i>	to be vigorous.
<i>molcere,</i>	to assuage;		

Defective verbs ending in *ire*:

} <i>Ire,</i> <i>gire,</i>	} to go;	<i>olire,</i>	to smell.

## VARIATION OF DEFECTIVE VERBS.

[These verbs are *used only* in the tenses and persons, which are *here given*.]

*Calére.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

1. — *Present.*2. — *Past.*

*Calére,* |to care for. || *éssere calúto,* |to have cared for.

## GERUND.

## PARTICIPLE.

*caléndo,* |caring for. || *calúto,* |cared for.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## Singular.

## Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *cále* or *cal,* |he cares for. || |

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *caléva* or |he cared for. || |  
[*caléa,* |

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. *cálse,* |he cared for. || |

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *cáglia,* |that he care for, || |  
[or may care for.] |

4. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. *calésse,* |if he cared for, or || |  
[should care for.] |



Singular.

Plural.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

3d p. CÁGLIA *égli*,\* | let him care for. || . . . . | . . . .

*Calére* is generally used with the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, *gli*; thus, *mi cále*, 'I care for'; *ci caléva*, 'we cared for'; &c.

*Colére* or *cólere*.

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Colére or cólere), | to adore.

## II. INDICATIVE.

## 1. — Present.

1st p. (cólo),	I adore;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. (cóle),	he adores.	. . . . .	. . . . .

*Lecére* & *licére*, or *lécere* & *licere*.

## I. INFINITIVE.

(*Lecére* & *licére*, or | to be lawful. || *éssere lécito* or | to be lawful.  
| *lécere* & *licere*), | [*lécito*, † |

\* As it has been questioned whether *calére* is used in the *imperative*, we cite from the classics the following examples to prove that it is so used:

*Non ve ne CA'GLIA no, to so ben to cid* ' Do not trouble yourselves about it, I  
*che mi fo.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.) know very well what I am doing.

*Del cóme non ti CA'GLIA, il perchè ti* ' Do not trouble thyself about the how,  
*dirò.* (Bocc. Filoc. 6) I will tell thee the why.

*Or se frattánte — Son le nóstre castélla* Now if, in the mean time, our castles  
*oppréssé, e sérve — Non ce ne CA'GLIA.* are oppressed and conquered, let us not  
(Tass. Ger. 6. 11.) care about it.

† From this form are derived *è lécito*, 'it is lawful'; *éra* or *fu lécito*, 'it was lawful'; *sarà lécito*, 'it will be lawful'; &c., which are used to supply the tenses in which *lecére* is defective.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. *léce* or *lice*, | it is lawful.    || : : : :    | : : : :



*Pavére.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Pavére*), | to fear.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (*páve*), | he fears.    || : : : :    | : : : :



*Silére.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Silére*),                      | to be, or keep, silent.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

2d p. ( <i>síli</i> ),	thou art, or keep- [est, silent ;	: : : :      : : : :
3d p. ( <i>síle</i> ),		

*Solére.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Solére,* | to be wont. || *éssere sólito,\** | to be wont.

## GERUND.

*soléndo,* | being wont. ||

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. SÓGLIO,	I am wont ;	SOGLIÁMO (solé-	we are wont ;
2d p. SUÓLI,	thou art wont ;	soléte,	you are wont ;
3d p. SUÓLE (só-	he is wont ;	SÓGLIONO,	they are wont.
[le),			

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío soléva* or *soléa,* | I was wont.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *ío sóglia,* | that I am wont, or may be wont.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío soléssi,* | if I were wont, or should be wont.

*Stupére.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(*Stupére*), | to be astonished.

\* From this form are derived *sóno sólito*, 'I am wont'; *éri sólito*, 'thou wast wont'; &c., which are often used instead of *soglió*; *solevi*; &c.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (stúpe),		he is astonished.		: : : :		: : : :
----------------	--	-------------------	--	---------	--	---------

*Álgere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Álgere), | to be chill.

## II. INDICATIVE.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. (álsi),		I was chill ;		(algémmo),		we were chill ;
2d p. (algésti),		thou wast chill ;		(algéste),		you were chill ;
3d p. (álse),		he was chill ;		(álsero),		they were chill.

*Ángere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Ángere), | to afflict.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (ánge),		it afflicts.		: : : :		: : : :
---------------	--	--------------	--	---------	--	---------

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. (angéva),		it afflicted.		: : : :		: : : :
-----------------	--	---------------	--	---------	--	---------

*Arrógere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

*Arrógere,* | to add.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*arrogéndo,* | adding. || ARRÓTO, or ARRÓSO, | added.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>arrogíamo,</i>	we add ;
3d p. <i>arróge,</i>	he adds ;	<i>arrógono,</i>	they add.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío arrogéva* or *arrogéa,* | I added.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. ARRÓSI,	I added ;	<i>arrogémmo,</i>	we added ;
2d p. <i>arrogésti,</i>	thou addedst ;	<i>arrogéste,</i>	you added ;
3d p. ARRÓSE,	he added ;	ARRÓSERO,	they added.

*Cápere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Cápere*), | to contain.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. ( <i>cápe</i> ),	it contains.	. . . . .	. . . . .
------------------------	--------------	-----------	-----------

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. ( <i>capéva</i> ),	it contained.	. . . . .	. . . . .
--------------------------	---------------	-----------	-----------

*Chérere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Chérere), | to ask.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. (chéro),	I ask ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. (chére),	he asks.	. . . . .	. . . . .

*Convèllere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Convèllere,* | to convulse.

GERUND.

PARTICIPLE.

*convelléndo,* |convulsing. || CONVÚLso, |convulsed.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*3d p. *convèlle,* | he convulses ; || *convèllono,* | they convulse.2. — *Imperfect.*3d p. *convelléva* | he convulsed ; || *convellévano* or | they convulsed.  
[or *convelléa,* [ *convelléano,*4. — *Future.*3d p. *convellerà,* | he shall or will || *convelleránno,* | they shall or will  
[convulse ;] [convulse]

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. <i>convellésse,</i>	if he convulsed, [or should convul- [vulse ;	<i>convelléssero,</i>	if they convuls- [ed.
---------------------------	--	-----------------------	--------------------------

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. <i>convelle- [rébbe,</i>	he should, would, [or could convul- [vulse ; or might [convulse ;	<i>convellerébbero,</i>	they should, [would, or could [convulse.
------------------------------------	--	-------------------------	--

*Fiedere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

GERUND.

<i>Fiedere,*</i>	to wound.	<i>fiedéndo,</i>	wounding.
------------------	-----------	------------------	-----------

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>fiédo,</i>	I wound ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>fiédi,</i>	thou woundest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>fiéde,</i>	he wounds ;	<i>fiédono,</i>	they wound.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>io fiedéva</i> or <i>fiedéa,</i>	I wounded.
--	------------

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. <i>fiedéi,</i>	I wounded.
-----------------------	------------

\* Ancient writers said also *féggere*, 'to wound, to strike'; from which are derived the forms *féggono*, 'they strike'; which we meet in the *Ammastraménti*; and *féggia*, 'it strikes,' in the *Inférno* of Dante.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>io fiéda</i> [(fiéggia),	that I wound ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>egli fiéda</i> [(fiéggia),	that he wound ;	<i>fiédano,</i>	that they wound.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io fiédéssi,* | if I wounded.

*Lúcere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## GERUND.

*Lúcere,* | to shine. || *lucéndo,* | shining.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>lucíamo,</i>	we shine ;
2d p. <i>lúci,</i>	thou shinest ;	<i>lucéte,</i>	you shine.
3d p. <i>lúce,</i>	he shines ;	. . . . .	. . . . .

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *io lucéva,* | I shone.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>lucémmo,</i>	we shone ;
2d p. <i>lucésti,</i>	thou shonest ;	<i>lucéste,</i>	you shone.
3d p. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *lucero,* | I shall or will shine.



III. CONJUNCTIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>luciámo,</i>	that we shine ;
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>luciáte,</i>	that you shine ;
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>lúca</i> ),	that he shine ;	( <i>lúcáno</i> ),	that they shine.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío lucéssi,* | if I shone *or* should shine.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. *lucerei* (*luceria*), | if I should, would, *or* could  
[shine ; *or* might shine.

*Mólcere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Mólcere*), | to assuage.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

2d p. ( <i>mólci</i> ),	thou assuagest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. ( <i>mólce</i> ),	he assuages.	. . . . .	. . . . .

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío</i> ( <i>molcé-</i>	I assuaged ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
[ <i>va</i> ),			
2d . ( <i>molcevi</i> ),	thou assuagest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>mol-</i>	he assuaged.	. . . . .	. . . . .
[ <i>céva</i> ),			

*Riédere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Riédere,* | to return.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>riédo,</i>	I return;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>riédi,</i>	thou returnest;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>riéde,</i>	he returns;	<i>riédono,</i>	they return.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío riédéva</i>	I returned;	. . . . .	. . . . .
[or <i>riedéa,</i>	thou returnedst;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>riedévi,</i>	thou returnedst;	<i>riedévano</i> or <i>rie-</i>	they returned.
3d p. <i>égli riedéva</i>	he returned;	[ <i>déano,</i>	
[or <i>riedéa,</i>			

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío riéda,</i>	that I return; or	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[may return;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>tu riéda,</i>	that thou return;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli riéda,</i>	that he return;	<i>riédano,</i>	that they return.

*Sérpere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## GERUND.

( <i>Sérpere</i> ),	to creep. ]	( <i>sérpéndo</i> ),	creeping.
---------------------	-------------	----------------------	-----------

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. ( <i>sérpo</i> ),	I creep ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. ( <i>sérpi</i> ),	thou creepest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. ( <i>sérpe</i> ),	he creeps ;	( <i>sérpono</i> ),	they creep.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío</i> ( <i>serpé-</i> [ <i>va</i> ]),	I crept ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. ( <i>serpévi</i> ),	thou creptest ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>serpé-</i> [ <i>va</i> ]),	he crept ;	( <i>serpévano</i> ),	they crept.

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ío</i> ( <i>sérpa</i> ),	that I creep ; or	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[may creep ;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> ( <i>sérpa</i> ),	that thou creep ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>sérpa</i> ),	that he creep ;	( <i>sérpano</i> ),	that they creep.

*Soffólcere* or *Soffólgere*.

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

( <i>Soffólcere</i> or [ <i>soffólgere</i> ],	to support.	( <i>soffólto</i> ),	supported.
--	-------------	----------------------	------------

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. ( <i>soffólce</i> or [ <i>soffólge</i> ],	he supports.	. . . . .	. . . . .
--	--------------	-----------	-----------

3. — *Perfect.*

3d p. ( <i>soffólse</i> ),	he supported.	. . . . .	. . . . .
----------------------------	---------------	-----------	-----------

*Tángere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Tángere), | to touch.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. (tánga),	he touches.	: : : :	: : :
----------------	-------------	---------	-------

*Tóllere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

(Tóllere), | to take away.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	: : : :	: : : .
2d p. (tólli),	thou takest away;	: : : .	: : : .
3d p. (tólle),	he takes away.	: : : .	: : : .

## III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

2d p. <i>tu</i> (tólla),	that thou take	: : : .	: : : .
	[away;	. . . . .	: : : .
3d p. <i>égli</i> (tólla),	that he take away.	. . . . .	: : : .

V. IMPERATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

3d p. (tóllo) <i>égli</i> ,	let	him	take	. . . . .	. . . . .
			[away.		

---

*Estóllere*, ‘to lift’; compound of *tóllere*, is not *defective* but in the *participle*, and in all the persons of the *perfect* of the *indicative*.

---

*Tórpere.*

I. INFINITIVE.

(*Tórpere*), | to become numb.

II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. ( <i>tórpo</i> ),	I become numb;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. ( <i>tórpe</i> ),	he becomes numb.	. . . . .	. . . . .

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. <i>ívo</i> ( <i>tórpa</i> ),	that I become	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[numb;		
2d p. <i>tu</i> ( <i>tórpa</i> ),	that thou become	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[numb;		
3d p. <i>égli</i> ( <i>tórpa</i> ),	that he become	. . . . .	. . . . .
	[numb.		

*Úrgere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*Úrgere*, | to urge.

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. <i>úrge</i> ,	he urges.	: : : :	: : : :
---------------------	-----------	---------	---------

2. — *Imperfect.*

3d p. <i>égli urgéva</i>   he urged ;	<i>urgévano</i> or <i>ur-</i>   they urged.
[or <i>urgéa</i> ,	[géano,

*Vígere.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

*(Vígere)*, | to be vigorous.

## II. INDICATIVE.

1. — *Present.*

3d p. <i>(víge)</i> ,	he is vigorous ;	: : : :	: : : :
-----------------------	------------------	---------	---------

4. — *Future.*

3d p. <i>vigerà</i> ),	it will be vigor-	: : : :	: : : :
	[ous.		

*Gíre.*

I. INFINITIVE.

PARTICIPLE.

*Gíre,* | to go. || *gíto,* | gone.

II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gíamo,</i>	we go ;
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gíte,</i>	you go.
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *gíva* or *gía,* | I went.

3. — *Perfect.*

1st p. *to gú,* | I went.

4. — *Future.*

1st p. *gírò,* | I shall or will go.

III. CONJUNCTIVE.

1. — *Present.*

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gíamo,</i>	that we go, or
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gíte,</i>	[may go ;
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	that you go.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. *ío gíssi,* | if I went, or should go.

## V. CONDITIONAL.

1st p. *giréi* (*giría*),| I should, would, *or* could go; *or*  
[might go.

## V. IMPERATIVE.

1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gíamo,</i>	let us go;
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>gíte,</i>	go ye.
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

---

*Íre.*

## I. INFINITIVE.

## PARTICIPLE.

<i>Ire,</i>	to go.	<i>íto,</i>	gone.
-------------	--------	-------------	-------

## II. INDICATIVE.

Singular.

Plural.

1. — *Present.*

. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p.	. . . . .	<i>íte,</i>	you go.
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>íto íva,</i>	I went;	. . . . .	. . . . .
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli íva,</i>	he went.	<i>ívano,</i>	we went.

3. — *Perfect.*

. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>ísti,</i>	thou wentest;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. . . . .	. . . . .	( <i>íro, ír</i> ),	they went.



4. — *Future.*

Singular.			Plural.
1st p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>irémo,</i>	we shall <i>or</i> will
2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>iréte,</i>	you will go ;
3d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>iráno,</i>	they will go.

IV. CONDITIONAL.

3d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>(iriano),</i>	they should,
			[would, <i>or</i> could
			[go ; <i>or</i> might
			[go.

V. IMPERATIVE.

2d p. . . . .	. . . . .	<i>íte,</i>	go ye.
. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .

---

*Olire.*

I. INFINITIVE.

*Olire,* | to smell.

II. INDICATIVE.

2. — *Imperfect.*

1st p. <i>ío olíva,</i>	I smelled ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
2d p. <i>olívi,</i>	thou smelledst ;	. . . . .	. . . . .
3d p. <i>égli olíva,</i>	he smelled.	<i>olívano,</i>	they smelled.

---

## E X A M P L E S .

*CALÉNDUGLI* *vie più la salute*  
*própria che gl' interéssi dé' Semi-*  
*fontési.* (Stor. Semif. 36.)

*Lo cuór che 'n sul Tamígi an-*  
*cór si CÓLA.* Dant. Inf. 12. —  
*CÓLA, cioè CÓLE.* (Buti. Com.  
Dant.)

*Quantúnque álla natúra umá-*  
*na LÉCE — Avér di lúme.* (Dant.  
Par. 13.)

*E dé' nemíci PÁVE e dé' sog-*  
*gétti.* (Tass. Ger. 1. 83.)

*Préso dal nuóvo cánto, STÚPE e*  
*SÍLE.* (Boez. Varch. 3. 12.)

*Io dúbuto che Vossignoría non*  
*abbia occupáto il primo luógo*  
*nélla grázia di Sua Beatitúdine,*  
*il quále SOLÉVA éssere il mío.*  
(Cas. lett. 19.)

*ÁLSI ed ársi gran témpo.*  
(Varch. Rim. 3.)

*Tánta paúra e duól l' álma*  
*trísta ÁNGE.* (Petr. s. 236.)

*ARRÓSERO gente nuóva per séi*  
*Prioráti.* (Giov. Vill. 9. 2.)

*Se di sapér ch' ío sía ti CAL*  
*cotánto.* (Dant. Inf. 19.)

*Chi sa cóme difénde e cóme*  
*fère, — Soccórso á' suói perigli*  
*áltro non CHÉRE.* (Tass. Ger. 2.  
85.)

*Dópo alcúni stráni avvolgimén-*  
*ti cascò mórtá, CONVÚLSA e in-*  
*tirizzíta.* (Red. Vip. 1. 83.)

*“ O figliuól,” disse, “ quál di*  
*quésta gréggia — S' arrésta pun-*  
*to, giáce pói cent' ánni — Sán-*  
*za arrostarsi quándo 'l fóco il*  
*FÉGGIA.”* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

Caring more for his own safety  
than for the interests of the Semi-  
phontians.

That heart which is yet honored  
on the [bank of the] Thames.

Whatever of light is allowed to  
human nature.

And fears both his enemies and  
his subjects.

Transported by the new song,  
he is astonished and keeps silent.

I doubt whether your Lordship  
has not occupied the first place in  
the favor of His Holiness, which  
was wont to be mine.

I was chill and burned for a great  
while.

So much fear and grief afflicts  
my sad soul.

They added new people for six  
successive Priorates.

If it imports thee so much to  
know who I am.

He who knows how it [the hand  
of God] defends, and how it of-  
fends, asks no other assistance in  
his perils.

After some strange whirlings, she  
fell down dead, convulsed and stiff  
with cold.

“ O son,” said he, “ whoever of  
this throng stops one instant, lies  
then a hundred years, without any  
ventilation, when the fire smites  
him.”

LUCÉVAN gli ócchi suói piú  
che la stélla. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

Her eyes were brighter than the  
star [of day].

E già il sóle a mézza térza  
RIÉDE. (Dant. Inf. 34.)

And now the sun returns within  
one hour and a half of noon.

Chi può dir cóme SÉRPA, o  
cóme crésca, — Già da piú láti il  
fóco? (Tass. Ger. 12. 45.)

Who can say how the fire  
creeps, and already increases on  
every side.

Perchè la vísta túa pur si sof-  
FÓLGE — Laggiù tra l' ómbre trí-  
ste smozzicáte? (Dant. Inf. 29.)

Why dost thou fasten thy sight  
below among the maimed and  
miserable shades?

Io son fátta da Dío, súa mercè,  
tále — Che la vóstra miséria non  
mi TANGE. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I am so made by God, thanks  
to his grace, that no sufferance of  
your misery touches me.

Che dóna e TÓLLE ógni áltro  
ben fortuna. (Arios. Fur. 27. 84.)

For fortune gives and takes  
away every other good.

Sì la gran frónte e le gran cór-  
na ESTÓLLE. (Tass. Ger. 4. 7.)

So high he raises his great brow  
and horns.

A' Gréci — Il favellár non TÓR-  
PE ínfra 'le lábbra. (Buon. Fier.  
2. 5. 5.)

To the Greeks the speech does  
not languish in their lips.

Che l' úna parte e l' áltra tira  
ed ÚRGE — Tin tin sonándo con  
sì dólce nóta. (Dant. Par. 10.)

In which the one part draws and  
the other pushes, sending out a  
tinkling sound of note so sweet.

Per mostráre che la carità sém-  
pre VIGERÀ in lóro. (But. Par.  
7.)

To show that charity will al-  
ways be in vigor among them.

E la ingegnósa pécchia al pri-  
mo albóre — GÍVA predándo or  
úno or áltro fióre. (Poliz. St. 1.  
25.)

And the industrious bee, at the  
first dawn, was rifling now this  
and now the other flower.

ÍTE, cáldi sospíri, al fréddo córe.  
(Petr. s. 120.)

Go, warm sighs, to the cold  
heart.

Mescoláto insiême con quéllo  
di mólte áltre cóse, che per lo  
giardíno OLÍVANO. (Bocc. g. 3.)

Mingled with the scent of many  
other things, which through the  
garden spread their fragrance.

As most of the foregoing *defective verbs* are of rare occurrence, and can be used with propriety only in verse, an *Exercise* upon them has been here thought needless.

## GENERAL REMARKS ON ITALIAN VERBS.

Verbs, which in the *infinitive* end in *äre, ère* or *ëre, ire*; as *fa'RE*, 'to make'; *téssERE*, 'to weave'; *udi'RE*, 'to hear'; followed by a word beginning with a consonant, except *z* or *s* followed by another consonant, often drop the last vowel; as,

<i>FAR difésa,</i>	to make defence;
<i>TÉSSER fiscèlle,</i>	to weave baskets;
<i>UDIR novélla,</i>	to hear news.

Those verbs, which, by contraction, end in *árre, órre, úrre*; as, *tra'RRE* from *tráere*, 'to draw'; *impórRE* from *impónere*, 'to impose'; *introdu'RRE* from *introducere*, 'to introduce'; drop the last syllable; as,

<i>TRAR non puòte,</i>	he cannot draw;
<i>IMPÓR Léggi,</i>	to impose laws;
<i>INTRODU'R costume,</i>	to introduce a custom.

The *first* and *third* persons *plural* of tenses of verbs ending in *mo,* and *no, ro*; as, *eraváMO*, 'we were'; *parláVANO*, 'they spoke'; *cáddero* 'they fell'; often drop the last vowel; as,

<i>ERAVÁM partiti,</i>	we had departed;
<i>PARLÁVAN rádo,</i>	they spoke seldom;
<i>CÁDDER nel bollénte stágno,</i>	they fell into the boiling lake.

Those persons which end in *nno*; as, *saráNNO*, 'they will be'; *háNNO*, 'they have'; drop the last syllable; as,

<i>tutti SARÁN serráti,</i>	they shall all be closed;
<i>l' HAN PRÓprio a nóia,</i>	they really hate him.

*Infinitives* of verbs, and the *first* and *third* persons *plural* of their tenses, drop constantly the last vowel

or *syllable*, when they are *followed* by a *conjunctive pronoun*; as,

PARLÁrne,	to speak of it;
ANDIÁmvi,	let us go thither;
AIUTÁRONmi,	they assisted me;
DIÉDERgli,	they gave him.

The *third person singular* of the *present* of the *indicative* of the verbs *calére*, ‘to care for’; *dolére*, ‘to grieve’; *rimanére*, ‘to remain’; *solére*, ‘to be wont’; *tenére*, ‘to hold’; *valére*, ‘to be worth’; *volére*, ‘to be willing’; *venire* ‘to come’; and the *second person singular* of the *imperative* of the verbs *rimanére*, *tenére*, *venire*; drop the *last vowel*, especially when they are followed by a *conjunctive pronoun*; as,

se vi CAL DI me,	if you care for me;
DUÓLti ch’ to ti vinco?	does it grieve thee that I conquer thee?
SUÓLmi abbagliáre,	it is wont to dazzle me;
TIÉN dal Cielo,	she holds from Heaven;
RIMÁnti con nói,	remain with us;
non si VUÓL díre,	it must not be said;
VIÉNne quá,	come [thence] hither.

The *first person singular* of the *present* of the *indicative* of the verb *éssere*, ‘to be’; and the *second person singular* of the *imperative* of the verb *pónere*, ‘to put’; drop the *last vowel*, and when *followed* by the *conjunctive pronoun mi*, they change *n* into *m*; as,

I’ SON coléi,	I am she;
PÓMmi óve ’l Sol uccide i fíori,	put me where the sun kills the flowers.

All forms of verbs followed by a *conjunctive pronoun* (as we have already observed, p. 110, and the foregoing examples clearly show,) are joined to them so as to form one single word. Now, if the form of the verb consists

of one syllable ; as, *è*, ‘ it is ’ ; *ha* or *à*, ‘ it has ’ ; *di*, ‘ tell thou ’ ; *fa*, ‘ make thou ’ ; *sa*, ‘ he or it knows ’ ; *vo*, ‘ I go ’ ; &c. ; or if it bears the accent on the *last syllable* ; as, *dirò*, ‘ I will tell ’ ; *mostrò*, ‘ he showed ’ ; &c. ; in being joined to a conjunctive pronoun, the *consonant* of the pronoun is *doubled*, and the *accent* when marked is *suppressed* ; as,

<i>evvi caduto dalla memoria?</i>	has it escaped from your mind?
<i>hammi a tal condutto,</i>	she has reduced me to such a condition ;
<i>avvi letti,</i>	there are beds ;
<i>dimmi, maestro mio,</i>	tell me, my master ;
<i>fatti ben sentire,</i>	make thyself to be heard well ;
<i>sallo Iddio,</i>	God knows it ;
<i>vommene a guisa d'orbo,</i>	I go on like a blind man ;
<i>dirotti perch' i' venni,</i>	I will tell thee why I came ;
<i>mostrocci un' ombra,</i>	he showed us a spirit.

## EXCEPTION.

The *g* of the pronoun *gli*, is never doubled, although the accent of the verb is always suppressed ; as,

<i>MANDOGLI dicendo,</i>	sent him word.
--------------------------	----------------

The forms *trái*, ‘ thou drawest ’ or ‘ draw thou ’ ; *tráe*, ‘ he or it draws ’ ; of the verb *tráere* or *trárre*, ‘ to draw ’ ; when joined to a conjunctive pronoun, drop the last vowel, and require that the consonant of the pronoun be doubled ; as,

<i>tranne lo Scricca,</i>	except Scricca ;
<i>trammi di mortál letargo,</i>	it draws me from a mortal lethargy.

Finally, *infinitives* of verbs, like *present participles* in English, are often *used* in Italian *as substantives* ; as, *il parláre*, ‘ the speaking ’ ; *l' abbracciáre*, ‘ the embracing ’ ; *il favelláre*, ‘ the manner of speaking ’ ; and then

have a plural, which they form like substantives, by changing *e* into *i*; as,

*li sózzi parlári,*

immodest [speakings or] conversations;

*gli abbracciári,*

the [embracings or] embraces;

*i próprj favellári,*

one's own manners of speaking.

## EXAMPLES.

*Dindanzi a lui non vâle —* Before him it does not avail to  
NASCÓNDER, nè FUGGÍR, nè FAR conceal, to fly, or to make defence.  
DIFÉSA. (Petr. s. 203.)

*E véde un uom canúto all' óm-* And she sees a hoary old man in  
*bre amène — TÉSSER FISCÉLLE* the pleasant shade, weaving bas-  
*àlla sua gréggia accánto.* (Tass. kets by the side of his flock.  
Ger. 7. 6.)

*Ed élla — Di quésta cósâ UDÍR* And she does not wish to hear  
*non vuól NOVÉLLA.* (Bern. Orl. speaking about this thing.  
l. 9.)

*TRAR móto il débil fianco óltra* He cannot draw his feeble frame  
*NON PUÓTE.* (Tass. Ger. 19. 28.) much further.

*E léggi impórre, ed INTRODÚR* And to impose laws, and to in-  
*COSTÚME, — Ed árti e cúlto di* troduce customs, and arts, and the  
*veráce Núme.* (Tass. Ger. 1. 9.) worship of the true God.

*Nói ERAVÁM PARTÍTI già da* We had already departed from  
*éllô.* (Dant. Inf. 32.) him.

*PARLÁVAN RÁDO con vóci soávi.* They spoke seldom, but with me-  
(Dant. Inf. 4.) lodious voices.

*E amendúe — CÁDDEr NEL* And both fell into the middle of  
*mézzo del BOLLÉNTÉ STÁGNO.* the boiling lake.  
(Dant. Inf: 22.)

*TÚTTI SARÁN SERRÁTI—Quán-* They [the sepulchres] shall all  
*do di Josaffà què torneránno.* be closed, when they [the spirits]  
(Dant. Inf. 10.) shall have once more come here,  
returning from Jehosaphat.

*Tánto L' HAN PRÓPRIO i suói* So much his own children hate  
*figliuóli a NÓIA.* (Bern. Rim.) him.

- Égli mi pià:ce di* PARLÁRNE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.) It pleases me to speak of it.
- ANDIÁMVI, *ben mi pià:ce* [di vedérlo]. (Nov. Ant.) Let us go [thither], I should be glad to see it.
- AIUTÁRONMI *élle béne*. (Bocc. g. 4. Proem.) They assisted me well.
- DIÉDERGLI (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.) They gave him.
- SE VI CAL DI ME, *veníte méco sino a palágio*. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.) If you care for me, come with me as far as the palace.
- Chè avésti, Anichíno? DUÓLTI cosí CH' ÍO TI VÍNCO?* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.) What ails thee, Anichíno? Does it grieve thee thus that I conquer thee?
- Mórte ha spénto quel sol, che* ABBAGLIÁR SUÓLMI. (Petr. s. 311.) Death has extinguished that sun, which is wont to dazzle me.
- E 'l nóbile ingégno che DAL CIÉLO — Per grázia TIÉN dell' immortále Apóllo.* (Petr. c. 5.) And the noble mind which he holds from Heaven, through the favor of the immortal Apollo.
- Státti e RIMÁNTI CON NÓI, se ti pià:ce.* (Vit. SS. PP. 2. 317.) Stay and remain with us, if thou likest.
- Comáre, égli NON SI VUÓL DÍRE.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.) Gossip, it must not be said.
- Adriáno disse: "Sì, VIÉNNE QUÀ."* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.) Adrian said: "Yes, come [thence] hither."
- I' SON COLÉI, che ti diè tánta guérra.* (Petr. s. 261.) I am she, who caused you so much grief.
- PÓMMI ÓVE 'L SOL UCCÍDE I FIÓRI e 'l érba.* (Petr. s. 113.) Put me where the sun kills the flowers and the herbage.
- Ora EVVI cosí tósto DÁLLA MEMÓRIA CADÚTO?* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.) Now has it so soon escaped from your mind?
- E' gíta al Cielo; ed HAMMI A TAL CONDÚTTO.* (Petr. s. 247.) She is gone to Heaven; and has reduced me to such a condition.
- Ed AVVI LÉTTI, che vi parréber piú bélli che quélli del Dóge di Vinégia.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) And there are beds, which would appear to you better than those of the Doge of Venice.
- DIMMI, MAÉSTRO MÍO! DIMMI, SIGNÓRE! (Dant. Inf. 4.) Tell me, my master! tell me, my sire!



*Grida fôrte, FATTI BEN SENTIRE.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

Cry out loud, make thyself to be heard well.

*SALLO IDDÍO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

God knows it.

*VOMMENE A GUÍSA D' ÓRBO sênza lúce.* (Petr.)

I go on like a blind man without light.

*DIROTTI PERCH' F' VÈNNI, e quel ch' io 'ntési.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I will tell thee why I came, and what I heard.

*MOSTROCCI UN' ÓMBRA dall' ún canto sóla.* (Dant. Inf. 12.)

He showed us a spirit by itself retired apart.

*E per lèttera MANDOGLI DICÈNDO, che da Brandizio si dovésse leváre.* (Gio. Vill.)

And send him word by letter, that he should depart from Brundisium.

*TRANNE LO SCRÍCCA, — Che sèppe far le moderáte spése.* (Dant. Inf. 29.)

Except Scricca, who knew how to lay out his fortune temperately.

*O' do io la vóce — Di Dávid? . . . TRAMMI DI MORTÁL LETÁRGO.* (Alf. Saul. 3. 4.)

Do I hear the voice of David? . . . . It draws me from a mortal lethargy.

*E 'l sío PARLÁRE, e 'l bel viso, e le chióme — Mi piáquer sí . . . .* (Petr. c. 7.)

And her conversation, and her beautiful countenance, and her hair pleased me so . . . .

*Non hánno paróle nè FAVELLÁRI PRÓPRJ.* (Varch. Ercol. 329.)

They have neither words nor manners of speaking of their own.

*LI SÓZZI PARLÁRI CORRÓMPONO lí buóni costúmi.* (Albert. c. 10.)

Immodest conversations corrupt good morals.

*Le ténere lágrime, GLI ABBRACCIÁRI, e gli onésti báci.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

The affectionate tears, the embraces, and the chaste kisses.

*O elétti di Dío! gli cúi SOFFRÍRI — E giustizia e speránza fán mén dúri, — Drizzáte nói vérsó GLI ÁLTI SALÍRI.* (Dant. Pur. 19.)

O ye elect of God! whose sufferings both justice and hope mitigate, direct our way towards the steep ascents.

## CHAPTER XII.

## PARTICIPLES.

ITALIAN participles may be considered either as *forms of the verbs* from which they are derived, or as *adjectives*.

Considered as adjectives, they *follow the same rules* as adjectives with regard to *gender* and *number*.

Present participles end in *e*, are of the common gender, and form the plural by changing *e* into *i*; as,

trionfante, m. & f. s., triumphing;	{	imperatore trionfante, m. s.,
		[triumphing emperor;
		turba trionfante, f. s., triumph-
		[ing militia;
tempestanti, m. & f. p., tempest-tost;	{	uomini tempestanti, m. p.,
		[tempest-tost men;
		navi tempestanti, f. p., tempest-
		[tost ships.

Present participles are sometimes used substantively, as, *amante*, 'lover'; *ascoltanti*, 'listeners'; they follow however invariably the same rule.

Past participles end in *o*, are masculine, and become feminine by changing *o* into *a*; they form the plural by changing *o* into *i*, and *a* into *e*; as,

forato, } pierced;	{	membro forato, m. s., pierced limb;
forata, }		gola forata, f. s., pierced throat;
accesi, } kindled;	{	cuori accesi, m. p., kindled hearts;
accese, }		fiamme accese, f. p., kindled flames.

Some verbs have a *future participle*; as, *duraturo*, 'to last'; *fatturo*, 'about to do'; *futuro*, 'future', or 'to be'; *perituro*, 'about to perish'; *venturo*, 'about to come'; which follow the same rules as past participles.

Many past participles of verbs of the *first conjugation* are frequently contracted; as, *cérco* for *cercato*, 'search-

ed'; *désto* for *destáto*, 'awakened'; *mózzo* for *mozzáto*, 'cut off'; &c.; these, when contracted, are alike the *first person* of the *present tense* of the *indicative mood*, and are subject to the same inflections as the other participles which are not so; as,

[ <i>io</i> ] <i>cérco</i> , I search;	<i>cérco</i> , searched;
[ <i>io</i> ] <i>désto</i> , I awake;	<i>désto</i> , awoken;
[ <i>io</i> ] <i>mózzo</i> , I cut off;	<i>mózzo</i> , cut off:
<i>désto</i> , awoken;	<i>uómo désto</i> , m. s., man awakened;
<i>mózza</i> , cut off;	<i>máno mózza</i> , f. s., hand cut off;
<i>cérche</i> , searched;	<i>provincia cérche</i> , f. p., provinces [searched.]

Italian participles *agree* with substantives in *gender* and *number*; as,

<i>ménte avvézza</i> ,	mind accustomed;
<i>rággi perdúti</i> ,	rays lost;
<i>cóse sapúte</i> ,	things known;
<i>cóse dette</i> ,	things said.

[For a List of Contracted Participles, see APPENDIX I.]

Italian participles when used as adjectives form their *comparatives* and *superlatives*, according to the rules already given; as,

<i>lucénte</i> , bright;	PIÙ LUCÉNTE, more bright;
<i>nocénte</i> , guilty;	MÉNO NOCÉNTE, less guilty;
<i>amáto</i> , loved;	MÓLTO AMÁTO, very much loved;
<i>riveríto</i> , revered;	IL PIÙ RIVERÍTO, the most revered;
<i>intendénte</i> , versed;	INTENDENTÍSSIMO, very well [versed.]

## EXAMPLES.

*Sicchè 'l túo cuór, quantúnque  
può, giocóndo — S' appresénti  
álla TÚRBA TRIONFÁNTE, — Che  
liéta vién per quèsto étera tóndo.*  
(Dant. Par. 22.)

So that thy heart should present  
itself as joyful as it can to the tri-  
umphant militia [church], which  
joyfully proceeds through this  
round space.

*Una náve portánte UÓMINI TEM-  
PESTÁNTI, PERICOLÁNTI, SOGGIA-  
CÉNTI a tánti marósi.* (Giov. Vill.  
l. 11. c. 3.)

A ship carrying men, wrecked,  
endangered and subject to so many  
storms.

*Quándo leggémmo il disíado  
ríso — Ésser baciáto da cotánto  
AMÁNTE.* (Dant. Inf. 5.)

When we read of those dear lips  
so rapturously kissed by one so  
deep in love.

*Ciò, che avvenúto éra, distinta-  
ménte narrò, con gran maravíglia  
dégli ASCOLTÁNTI.* (Bocc. g. 10.  
n. 4.)

He related distinctly what had  
happened, to the great wonder of  
the listeners.

*... E quál FORÁTO sío MÉM-  
BRO, e quál MÓZZO — Mostrásse,  
d'agguagliár sarébbe nùlla — Il  
módo délla nóna bólgia sózzo.*  
(Dant. Inf. 23.)

... And if some should have a  
limb pierced, and some cut off, they  
could badly equal the vile mode of  
punishment of the ninth bolge.

*Un áltro che FORÁTA avéa la  
GÓLA.* (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Another who had his throat  
pierced.

*Supérbia, invidia, e avarízia  
sóno — Le tre faville c' hánno i  
CUÓRI ACCÉSI.* (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Pride, envy, and avarice are the  
three sparks which have kindled  
their hearts.

*E véde présso a sè le FIÁMME  
ACCÉSE.* (Dant. Inf. 23.)

And sees near her the flames  
kindled.

*E che il príncipe ne nominásse  
dódicí, DURATÚRI cinque ánni.*  
(Dav. Tac. Ann. 2. 40.)

And that the prince should ap-  
point twelve of them, who were to  
last [or remain in office] five years.

*Fátto avéa práma e pói éra  
FATTÚRO.* (Dant. Par. 6.)

He had done [that sign], and  
afterward he was to do again.

*Témpo FUTÚRO m' è già nel  
cospétto.* (Dant. Pur. 23.)

Future time is already in my  
presence.

*Più ardenteménte cercano i se-  
colári le cose PERITÚRE, che nói  
le útili.* (Cavalc. Espos. Simb. 1.)

Men in the world seek with more  
eagerness perishable things, than  
we do useful ones.

*Vigilate d' ógni témpo, sicché  
siáte dégni di fuggíre l' ira VEN-  
TÚRA.* (Cavalc. Frutt. Ling.)

Be always diligent that you  
may deserve to avoid approaching  
wrath.

*Perchè, essendo DESTO, gli par-  
ve sentire scendere nella casa per-  
sone.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

*Un, ch' avèa l' una e l' oltra  
MAN MÓZZA.* (Dant. Inf. 28.)

*Avèndo CÉRCHÉ mólte PROVÍNCIE  
Cristiáne.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

*Lassái quel, ch' i' più brámo;  
ed ho sì AVVÉZZA — La MENTE a  
contemplár sóla costéi.* (Petr. s.  
93.)

*Avèa la lúna PERDÚTI i RÁGGI  
suói.* (Petr. c. 38.)

*Io non ho quèste CÓSE SAPÚTE  
dá' vicíni, élla medésima méle ha  
DÉTTE.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*Ond' élla féssi — LUCÉNTÉ PIÙ  
assái di quel ch' ell' éra.* (Dant.  
Par. 5.)

*E'ssa tánto più impaziénte  
sostenéva quèsta nóia, quánto  
MÉNO si seníva NOCÉNTÉ.* (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 5.)

*O MÓLTO AMÁTO cuóre, ógni  
mío ufficio vérsó te è fornito.*  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

*Tra i quáli il maggióre e IL PIÙ  
RIVERÍTO da tútti, a quèlle stagió-  
ni, éra Jácopo di Caríno.* (Matt.  
Vill. 1. 72.)

*Aristófane è persóna INTEN-  
DENTÍSSIMA — Délla scrittúra.*  
(Cecch. Spir. 5. 5.)

Because, being awake, he seem-  
ed to hear people descend into the  
house.

One who had the one and the  
other hand cut off.

Having searched through many  
Christian provinces.

I left what I desire most, and  
I have my mind so accustomed to  
contemplate her alone.

The moon had lost her rays.

I have not heard these things  
from the neighbours, she herself  
has told them to me.

Whence she became far more  
bright than she had been.

She bore this vexation so much  
the more patiently, the less she felt  
guilty.

O very much loved heart, I have  
done towards thee all that I could.

Amongst whom the greatest and  
the most revered by all, at that  
time, was Jacopo di Carino.

Aristophanes is a person very  
well versed in writing.

## EXERCISE XXII.

Before (to the) his eyes they slew her crying  
*Presénte* *súo*<sup>2</sup> *ócchio*<sup>1</sup> *svenáre*<sup>8</sup> *élla*<sup>3</sup> *gridáre*<sup>4</sup>

for mercy and assistance. To him, residing in Flan-  
 — *mercè*<sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *aiuto*<sup>7</sup>. *égli*, *dimoráre* *Fian-*

ders, came a desire | to | hear. Apollo holding that  
*dra*, *veníre* — *vógliá* | *di* | *sentire*. *tenére* *quéllo*<sup>3</sup>

part of the Heaven, which he now traverses, was embel-  
*párte*<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> *Ciélo*<sup>2</sup>, — *óra* *trascórrere*, *abbel-*

lishing more (the) their works. In a book which I intend  
*lère*<sup>4</sup> *più*<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *lavóro*<sup>3</sup>. *libro* *inténdere*

| to | make, God granting it, on vulgar eloquence.  
 | *di* | *fáre*, *Dío* *concédere* —, *di* *volgáre* *eloquénza*.

It happened that during the war the queen of France  
 — *Arveníre* *duráre* *guérra* *reína* *Francia*

| fell very sick. |  
 | *ammalò* *graveménte*. |

After that the lady had made herself to be  
*Poicchè* *dónna* *avére*<sup>2</sup> *fáre*<sup>4</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup> *pre-*

besought very much. They | had | all their heads  
*gáre*<sup>5</sup> *assái*<sup>3</sup>. *Ésso* | *éssere* | *tutto* — —

surrounded | with | oak leaves — leaves of oak.  
*inghirlandáre*<sup>6</sup> | *di*<sup>1</sup> | — — *fónda*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *quércia*<sup>4</sup>.

(The) my skin is bronzed (on me), and (the)  
*mío* *pélle* *éssere* *abbruníre* *sópra* *di* *io*,

my bones are dried up | on account of | the heat.  
*ósso* *éssere*<sup>4</sup> *diseccáre*<sup>5</sup> | *per*<sup>1</sup> of | <sup>2</sup> *cáldo*<sup>3</sup>.

Nor were the faults of the Vitellians punished, but  
*Né* *éssere* *fálta* *Vitelliano* *puníre*, *ma*

well paid | on | the other side. The jealous man  
*ben* *pagáre* | *da* | *áltro* *párte*. <sup>2</sup> *gelóso*<sup>3</sup> *Messér*<sup>1</sup>

had put some little stones in | his | mouth. There  
*avére*<sup>5</sup> *méttere*<sup>6</sup> *alcúna*<sup>7</sup> *pietra*<sup>8</sup> <sup>9</sup> | *s*<sup>4</sup> | *bócca*. —

is a tree more above, | whose fruit | was bitten  
*éssere*<sup>2</sup> — *Légno*<sup>1</sup> *più* *sù*, | *che* | *éssere* *mórdere*

by Eve. How many verses I have already spread  
*Éva. Quanto verso — avère già spár-*  
 about. All were beaten with (the) rods in the middle  
*gere. Tutto éssere bättere vérga mézzo*  
 of the square, and had (the) their head cut off. They  
*piázza, avère<sup>2</sup> — tésta<sup>3</sup> tagliäre<sup>1</sup>. —*  
 have promised, and sold me to a merchant, who  
*avère<sup>2</sup> prométtere<sup>3</sup>,<sup>4</sup> vîndere<sup>5</sup> M<sup>1</sup> mercante,*  
 | is to carry me | to the Sultan in the Levant.  
*dé<sup>5</sup> portár<sup>3</sup> mi<sup>4</sup> | <sup>1</sup> Soldáno<sup>2</sup> — Levánte.*  
 Let the ages to come judge from this who  
 — <sup>3</sup> età<sup>4</sup> veníre<sup>5</sup> estimáre<sup>2</sup> Quínci<sup>1</sup> <sup>6</sup>  
 Otho was. The present (age shall hear) and the  
*Ottóne<sup>8</sup> éssere<sup>7</sup>. <sup>5</sup> presénte<sup>7</sup> móndo<sup>6</sup> udíre<sup>4</sup> — <sup>9</sup>*  
 future ages shall hear (the) my protestations.  
*éssere<sup>10</sup> — udíre<sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> protésto<sup>3</sup>.*

## CHAPTER XIII.

## ADVERBS.

## SIMPLE ADVERBS IN COMMON USE.

*Adverbs of Time.*

<i>Oggi,</i>	to-day ;	<i>diánzi, †</i>	} before ;
<i>ieri,</i>	yesterday ;	<i>innánzi, †</i>	
<i>dománi,*</i>	to-morrow ;	<i>prima,</i>	} just now ;
<i>óra,</i>	} now ;	<i>lestè,</i>	
<i>adésso,</i>		<i>pói, §</i>	} afterwards ;
<i>mò, †</i>		<i>dópo,   </i>	
		<i>póscia,</i>	

\* From the Latin *de* and *mane*.† From the Latin *modo*.‡ From *di*, *in*, and the Latin *ante* : — the Celtic *ant*, 'opposite.'§ From the Latin *pone* : — the Celtic *buo* or *bon*, changed into *pon*, 'the last.'|| From the Celtic *do*, 'after,' and *pon*, 'the last.'

<i>sémpre,*</i>	always ;	<i>tósto,</i>	soon ;
<i>mái,</i>	never ;	<i>présto,</i>	quick ;
<i>spéssó,</i>	} often ;	<i>adágio,</i>	} slow ;
<i>sovén-te,†</i>		<i>pássó,</i>	
<i>talvólta,</i>	} sometimes ;	<i>per-tém-po,</i>	} early ;
<i>talóra,</i>		<i>tárdi,</i>	
<i>ancóra,‡</i>	} still ;	<i>già,</i>	} already ;
<i>tuttóra,</i>		<i>intánto,</i>	
<i>ognóra,</i>	always ;	<i>frattánto,</i>	} in the mean time ;
<i>allóra,</i>	then ;	<i>méntre,</i>	
<i>súbito,</i>	immediately ;		

### Adverbs of Place.

<i>Qui,</i>	} here, hither ;	<i>altróve,</i>	} elsewhere ;
<i>quà,</i>		<i>altrónde,</i>	
<i>là,§</i>	} there, thither ;	<i>ovúnque,</i>	} wherever ;
<i>là,§</i>		<i>dovúnque,</i>	
<i>colí,</i>	} there, thither ;	<i>sù,</i>	up ;
<i>colà,</i>		<i>giù,</i>	down ;
<i>costí,  </i>	} there near you ;	<i>sópra,**</i>	upon, above ;
<i>costà,  </i>		<i>sóttó,††</i>	under, below ;
<i>ivi,</i>	} there ;	<i>éntro,‡‡</i>	} within ;
<i>quívi,</i>		<i>déntro,</i>	
<i>índi,</i>	thence ;	<i>fuóri,§§</i>	} without ;
<i>quíndi,</i>	from thence ;	<i>fuóra,§§</i>	
<i>quínci,¶¶</i>	from hence ;	<i>avánti,   </i>	before ;
<i>costínci,</i>	} from thence, where you are ;	<i>diétro,¶¶¶</i>	behind ;
		<i>accánto,</i>	aside ;
<i>óve,</i>	} where ;	<i>attórno,***</i>	around ;
<i>dóve,</i>		<i>rimpétto,</i>	opposite ;
<i>ónde,</i>	} whence ;	<i>vicíno,</i>	near ;
<i>dónde,</i>		<i>lúngi,</i>	far ;
		<i>óltre,</i>	beyond.

\* From the Latin *semper* : the Celtic *chemp* or *semp*, 'without,' and *ar* or *er*, 'end.'

† From the Latin *subinde*.

‡ From the Latin *hanc horam*.

§ From the Latin *illic, illac*.

|| From the Latin *quo* and *istic, istac*.

¶ From the Latin *qui* and *hinc*.

\*\* The Latin *super* : — the Celtic *sop*, 'upon.'

†† The Latin *sub, subtus* : — the Celtic *sub*, 'under.'

‡‡ From the Celtic particles *en* and *tre*.

§§ The Latin *foris, foras* : — the Celtic *for*, 'out.'

||| From the Celtic *ab*, 'far,' and *ant*, 'opposite.'

¶¶ From the Celtic *dre*, 'back.'

\*\*\* From the Celtic *tor*, 'circle.'



*Adverbs of Order.*

<i>Prìà,</i>	} first ;	<i>ìndi,</i>	} afterwards ;	
<i>prìma,</i>		<i>quìndi,</i>		
<i>pòì,</i>	} then ;	<i>apprèssò,*</i>		} finally.
<i>dòpo,</i>		<i>ìnfìne,</i>		

*Adverbs of Quantity and Quality.*

<i>Più,</i>	more ;	<i>tròppo,†</i>	too much ;
<i>méno,</i>	} less ;	<i>guàri,‡</i>	not much ;
<i>máncò,</i>		<i>tántò,</i>	so much ;
<i>mólto,</i>	} much ;	<i>póco,</i>	little ;
<i>assái,</i>		<i>affátto,</i>	any at all.

---

<i>Béne,</i>	well ;	<i>mále,</i>	badly.
--------------	--------	--------------	--------

*Adverbs of Affirmation, Negation, and Doubt.*

<i>Sì,</i>	} yes, indeed ; certainly ; well ;	<i>davréro,</i>	} indeed, truly, in truth ; exactly so.
<i>già,</i>		<i>difátti,</i>	
<i>cérto,</i>		<i>appúntò,</i>	
<i>béne,</i>			

---

<i>Nò,</i>	} no, not ; never ;	<i>mìca,</i>	} not at all.
<i>non,</i>		<i>púntò,</i>	
<i>mái,</i>		<i>affátto,</i>	
<i>giammái,</i>			

---

<i>Fórse,</i>	perhaps ;	<i>prèssò,</i>	about ;
<i>círca,</i>	about ;	<i>quási,</i>	almost.

*Adverbs of Comparison and Interrogation.*

<i>Sì,</i>	} so, thus ; as ; so, as ; more ;	<i>méno,</i>	less ;
<i>così,</i>		<i>tántò,</i>	so much, as ;
<i>cóme,</i>		<i>quántò,</i>	as ;
<i>siccóme,</i>		<i>a-guìsa,</i>	} like.
<i>più,</i>	<i>a-módo,</i>		

\* From the Celtic *preu*, 'near.'† From the Celtic *tropa*, 'troop,' 'multitude.'‡ From the Latin *geræ* : — the Celtic *ger*,

<i>Ove?</i>	} where, whither? whence? when?	<i>chè?</i>	} how? why? how much?
<i>dóve?</i>		<i>cóme?</i>	
<i>dónde?</i>		<i>perchè?</i>	
<i>quándo?</i>		<i>quánto?</i>	

*Adverbs of Choice and Demonstration.*

<i>Anzi,</i>	} rather;	<i>piuttósto,</i>	} sooner.
<i>prima,</i>		<i>piuprésto,</i>	
<i>Écco,</i>	} behold; here is; here are;	<i>eccolì,</i>	} there is, there are; when lo.
<i>eccoquí,</i>		<i>eccolà,</i>	
<i>eccoquà,</i>		<i>quand' ecco,</i>	

The adverbs *óggi*, 'to-day'; *iéri*, 'yesterday'; and *dománi*, 'to-morrow'; are often used as substantives; as,

<i>quésto dì d' óGGI,</i>	this day;
<i>il giòrno di IÉRI,</i>	yesterday;
<i>DOMÁNI è Venerdì,</i>	to-morrow is Friday.

*Mái*, 'never,' is sometimes used in the signification of 'ever'; as,

<i>quái bárbare fur MÁI?</i>	what savage women were there ever?
<i>così bello cóme fu MÁI,</i>	as beautiful as ever was.

*Qui*, *quà*, 'here'; and *quínci*, 'from hence'; indicate a place near the person speaking: *costì*, *costà*, 'there near you'; and *costínci*, 'from thence where you are'; indicate a place near the person spoken to: and *lì*, *là*; *colì*, *colà*; *ívi*, *quívi*, 'there'; *índi*, 'thence', and *quíndi*, 'from thence'; indicate a place at a distance from both the person speaking and the person spoken to; as,

<i>così quì mi disse,</i>	so he said to me here;
---------------------------	------------------------

QUINCI non pássa mái ánima buóna,	no good spirit ever passes hence ;
tánte belle giòvani che COSTÀ sóno,	so many beautiful girls as there are there near you ;
dítel COSTINCI,	tell it from where you are ;
nè LÌ guári lontáno,	not far from thence ;
vuólsi così COLÀ dóve si puóte ciò che si vuóle,	so it is willed there, where will is power ;
QUÍVI si piá ngon li spietáti dánni,	here they wail their merci- less wrongs ;
comandólle che ÍNDI non u- scísse,	he ordered her not to go out from thence.

*Sì*, 'yes' ; and *no*, 'no' or 'not' ; are sometimes used as substantives ; as,

il mío NO,	my negative ;
il súo sì,	his affirmative ;
sì e NO nel cápo mi tenzóna,	yes and no struggle in my head.

*Sì* is used sometimes instead of the conjunction *e*, 'and,' and may be rendered in English by the word *both* ; as,

sì per la súa fórma, e sì per la nobiltà del pádre,	both for his personal beauty and for the nobility of his father.
--	---

*No* sometimes takes the place of a whole sentence ; as,

o voléssero, o NO [o non voles- sero],	whether they wished, or not [or they <i>did not wish</i> ] ;
quéllo che ío avrò fáto, e quel che NO [e quel che non avrò fáto],	what I shall have done, and what not [and <i>what I shall not have done</i> ].

*No* is used only in answering a question, or when used absolutely : *non*, in all other instances, and particularly when the negative is *followed* by a *verb* or another *adverb* ; as,

signór, NO,	no, sir ;
-------------	-----------

NON *farnético*, NO,

I do not rave, no;

NO, *per quéllo NON rimarrà il mercáto*,

no, the bargain will not be broken off on this account.

*O've*, 'where,' in poetry, is often changed into *u'*; as,

*U' sÓno i vérsi?*

where are the verses?

*U' son giúnte le rime?*

where are the rhymes gone?

The adverbs *béne*, *già*, *mái*, *míca*, *púnto*, *non*, *écco*, are often used as mere *expletives*; as,

*SI BÉNE*,

yes indeed;

*GIÀ Dio non róglia*,

may God forbid;

*SI GIÁCE Mái sémpré in ghiáccio*,

lies always frozen;

*NON MÍCA di póco affáre*,

not at all of little consequence;

*NON È PÚNTO móрто*,

he is not at all dead;

*APPÉNA ancÓra NON ha*,

he has hardly yet;

*ÉCCO, non so dir di no*,

I cannot say no.

#### EXAMPLES.

QUÉSTO DÌ D' ÓGGI È *státo dáto a re, e a soldáni, e a sí fáta gente*. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

This day has been given to kings, and to sultans, and to similar people.

QUÁnto *mi fu IL GIÓRNO DI IÉRI impÓsto álla súa parténza*. (Red. Lett.)

What was ordered to me yesterday at your departure.

DOMÁNI È VENERDÌ, *e il seguénte di Sábato*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

To-morrow is Friday, and the following day Saturday.

QUÁI BÁRBARE FUR MÁI, *quái Saracíne?* (Dant. Purg. 23.)

What savage women, what Saracens were there ever?

COSÌ È ÓGGI BÉLLO *il ciélo* CÓME FU MÁI. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

The sky is as beautiful to-day as it ever was.

QUÌ FUI *con Pamfílo. e cosÌ* QUÌ MI DÍSSE, *e cosÌ quì facémmo*. (Bocc. Fiamm. 4.)

Here was I with Pamphilus, and so he said to me here, and so we did here.

QUÍNCI NON PÁSSA MÁI ÁNIMA  
BUÓNA. (Dant. Inf. 3.)

Hence no good spirit ever passes.

Veggéndo TÁNTE BÉLLE GIÓ-  
VANI CHE COSTÀ SÓNO. (Bocc.  
Filoc. 2.)

Seeing so many beautiful girls  
as are there near you.

DÍTEL COSTÍNCI, *se non, l' arco*  
tíro. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

Tell it from where you are, or  
else I draw my bow.

NÈ LÌ GUÀRI LONTÁNO *fuór di*  
*via* — *Un suo bel vélo lasciáva*  
*fuggéndo.* (Bocc. Vis. Am. 20.)

Not far from thence flying out of  
the way, she left a beautiful veil.

VUÓLSI COSÌ COLÀ DÓVE SI  
PUÓTE — *Ciò che si vuóle, e più*  
*non dimandáre.* (Dant. Inf. 3.)

So it is willed, there where will  
is power, and ask no more.

QUÍVI SI PIÁNGON LI SPIETÁTI  
DÁNNI : — *Quívi è Alessádro, e*  
*Dionísio féro* — *Che fé' Sicília*  
*avér dolorósi ánni.* (Dant. Inf.  
12.)

Here they wail their merciless  
wrongs : here dwells Alexander  
and the fierce Dionysius, who  
wrought for Sicily many years of  
woe.

COMANDÓLLE CHE ÍNDI NON  
USCÍSSE *infino a tanto, che égli*  
*che l' avéa rinchiúsa, non l' a-*  
*prísse.* (Passav. 78.)

He ordered her not to go out  
from thence until he, who had  
shut her up there, should come to  
open for her.

Tánto válc IL MÍO NO QUÁNTO  
IL SÚO SÌ. (Cecch. Esalt. cr. 2.  
3.)

My negative is as good as his  
affirmative.

Chè sÌ E NO NEL CÁPO MI TEN-  
ZÓNA.\* (Dant. Inf. 8.)

For yes and no struggle in my  
head.

*Era Cimóne, sÌ PER LA SÚA*  
*FÓRMA, e sÌ PER LA NOBILTÀ e*  
*ricchézza del pádre, quási nóto a*  
*ciascúno.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Cimon was, both for his person-  
al beauty, and for the nobility and  
wealth of his father, known to al-  
most every one.

*Io vi dirò QUÉLLO CHE ÍO AVRÒ*  
*FÁTTO, E QUÉI CHE NO.* (Bocc.  
g. 2. n. 1.)

I will tell you what I shall have  
done, and what not.

*Il famigliáre rispóse :* 'SIGNÓR,  
NO.' (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

The domestic replied : ' No, sir.'

*Disse allóra Pírro :* 'NON FAR-  
NÉTICO, NO, SIGNÓRA.' (Bocc.)

Then Pyrrhus said : ' I do not  
rave, Madam, no.'

NO, PER QUÉLLO NON RIMAR-  
RÀ IL MERCÁTO. (Bocc. g. 7. n.  
2.)

No, the bargain will not be brok-  
en off on this account.

\* ' At war 'twixt will and will not.' — SHAKESPEARE, *Measure for Measure.*

U' SÓNO I VÉRSI, U' SON GIÚN-  
TE LE RÍME? (Petr. c. 46.)

Where are the verses, where  
are the rhymes gone?

*Disse Calandrino*: 'SÌ BÉNE.'  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Calandrino replied: 'Yes in-  
deed.'

*Il negromante disse*: 'GIÀ DÍO  
NON VÓGLIA.' (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.)

The necromancer replied: 'May  
God forbid.'

*Una parte del mondo è, che si  
GIÁCE — MÁI SÉMPRE IN GHIÁC-  
CIO.* (Petr. c. 5.)

There is a part of the world  
which lies always frozen.

*Una ne dirò, NON MÍCA d' uó-  
mo DI PÓCO AFFÁRE.* (Bocc. g.  
10. n. 6.)

I will tell you one, not at all of  
a man of little consequence.

*Teddálo NON È PÚNTO MÓRTO.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Tedaldo is not at all dead.

*Quésto nóstro fanciúlló, il quále  
APPÉNA ANCÓRA NON HA quattór-  
dici ánni.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8)

This boy of ours, who is hardly  
fourteen years old yet.

*ÉCCO, íO NON SO ÓRA DIR DI NO.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

I cannot now say no.

#### COMPOUND ADVERBS.

Compound adverbs are formed of an *adjective*, and the substantive *ménte*,\* 'manner.' *Ménte* being of the *feminine* gender requires that the adjective be of the *same* gender; as,

<i>sávia</i> , wise;	SAVIA-MÉNTE, in a wise manner, <i>or</i> wise- [ly;
<i>onésta</i> , honest;	ONESTA-MÉNTE, in an honest manner, <i>or</i> [honestly;
<i>cortése</i> , courteous;	CORTESE-MÉNTE, in a courteous manner, [or courteously;
<i>prudénte</i> , prudent;	PRUDENTE-MÉNTE, in a prudent manner, [or prudently;

\* From the Celtic *ment*, 'manner.' It is from this language that the Latins borrowed their *mens*, and formed such expressions as *forti mente*, *clará mente*, *devotá mente*, &c., which afterwards passed to the Italians, as *sána ménte* in Boccaccio (g. 9. n. 9.); *affettuósa ménte* in Ariosto (*Orl. Fur.*); *etérna ménte* in Monti (*Bassv.*) may prove; although they are now generally written in one word; as, *forteménte*, 'strongly'; *chiaraménte*, 'clearly'; *devotaménte*, 'devoutly'; *sanaménte*, 'wisely'; *affettuosaménte*, 'affectionately'; *eternaménte*, 'eternally'; &c.

If the adjective ends in *le*,\* or *re*, for the sake of euphony the *final e* is dropped in the formation of the adverb ; as,

*festévole*, merry ;                      FESTEVOL-MÉNTE, merrily ;  
*particoláre*, particular ;          PARTICULAR-MÉNTE, particularly.

Sometimes the adverb is an *adjective only*, without the addition of the word *mén*te ; as,

CHIÁRO [for *chiamamente*], clearly ;  
DÓLCE [for *dolcemente*,] sweetly.

The following are the

*Adjectives commonly used as Adverbs.* †

<i>Fórte</i> ,	very strong ;	<i>tánto</i> ,	so much ;
<i>sódo</i> ,	fast, hard ;	<i>ráro</i> ,	rarely ;
<i>álto</i> ,	softly ;	<i>sólo</i> ,	only ;
<i>básso</i> ,	low ;	<i>tútto</i> ,	all ;
<i>cérto</i> ,	certainly ;	<i>póco</i> ,	little ;
<i>triste</i> ,	sadly ;	<i>mólto</i> ,	much ;
<i>liétto</i> ,	merrily ;	<i>tróppo</i> ,	too much ;
<i>dólce</i> ,	sweetly ;	<i>béllto</i> ,	handsomely ;
<i>chiáro</i> ,	clearly ;	<i>buóno</i> ,	very well ;
<i>scúro</i> ,	darkly ;	<i>apérto</i> ,	openly ;
<i>schíétto</i> ,	candidly ;	<i>sicúro</i> ,	surely ;
<i>piáno</i> ,	low, softly ;	<i>diméssó</i> ,	lowly ;
<i>lénto</i> ,	slowly ;	<i>sómméssó</i> ,	humbly ;
<i>prónto</i> ,	readily ;	<i>vicíno</i> ,	near ;
<i>rátto</i> ,	speedily ;	<i>lontáno</i> ,	far.

\* This rule with regard to adjectives ending in *le* is not without exceptions, as may be seen in the following passages :

*Similemènte il mal séme d' Adámo.*                      In like manner Adam's evil brood.  
(Dant. Inf. 3.)

*Po la rivéggio stársi umilémènte.*                      I see her remaining humbly.  
(Petr. s. 211.)

*Umilémènte vi priégo.* (Bocc.)                      I humbly entreat you.

*Cósa ráde nólte usáta per lo comúne, ma utilémente fáta.* (Matt. Vill. 9. 28.)                      A thing seldom used by the community, but usefully done.

† In order to know when these words are *adjectives*, and when *adverbs*, it is sufficient to observe whether, in the discourse, they are added to, or used for, a sub-

Adverbs formed of an *adjective*, and the adverbs *présto*, *sovénte*, *per témpo*, *adágio*, *volentiéri*, *affátto*, may be used in a *comparative* and *superlative* degree, which is formed thus :

<i>tranquillaménte,</i>	tranquilly ;
<i>PIÙ tranquillaménte,</i>	more tranquilly ;
<i>tranquill-ISSIMA-ménte,</i>	very tranquilly :
<i>feliceménte,</i>	happily ;
<i>MÉNO feliceménte,</i>	less happily ;
<i>felic-ISSIMA-ménte,</i>	very happily :
<i>schietto,</i>	candidly ;
<i>PIÙ OR MÉNO schietto,</i>	more or less candidly ;
<i>schiett-ISSIMA-ménte,</i>	very candidly :
<i>liéto,</i>	merrily ;
<i>PIÙ OR MEN liéto,</i>	more or less merrily ;
<i>liet-ISSIMA-ménte,</i>	very merrily :
<i>volentiéri,</i>	willingly ;
<i>PIÙ OR MÉNO volentiéri,</i>	more or less willingly ;
<i>volentier-ISSIMA-ménte,</i>	very willingly.

The adverbs *béne*, ‘well’ ; and *mále*, ‘badly’ ; in their comparative and superlative, make,

<i>MÉGLIO,</i>	better ;
<i>OTTIMAMÉnte OR benÍSSIMO,</i>	very well :
<i>PÉGGIO,</i>	worse ;
<i>PESSIMAMÉnte OR malÍSSIMO,</i>	very badly.

*Assái*, in the superlative makes *assaÍSSIMO*, ‘very much.’

stantive, or not ; for, if so, they are adjectives ; otherwise they are adverbs. Thus, in these examples,

*S' i' meritái di vói assái o póco.* If I deserved of you either much or little.  
(Dant. Inf. 26.)

*Ségno manifestó di póco sénno.* (Bocc. A manifest sign of little wisdom.  
g. 1. n. 1.)

*E per póco, se tu mi dicéssi, che io andássi di quí a Perétola, io crédo ch' io vi andréi.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) However little you should ask me to go to Perctola, I believe that I should go there.

the word *póco* is an *adverb* in the first instance, where it modifies the verb *meritái* ; but it is an *adjective* in the other two, where, in the first, it is added to the substantive *sénno*, and, in the second, stands for a substantive ; being equivalent to *póca cósá*, ‘little thing.’



*Béne, póco, adágio, piáno, tánto*, as we have already observed at p. 86, have also a *diminutive*,

<i>beníno,</i>	} pretty well ;	<i>adagíno,</i>	} very slow ;	
<i>pochíno,</i>		<i>pianíno,</i>		
<i>pocolíno,</i>		} very little ;	<i>tantíno,</i>	} very little.
<i>pochettíno,</i>			<i>tantínetto,</i>	

*Béne*, has also an *augmentative* : *benóne*, ‘very well.’

## ADVERBIAL PHRASES IN COMMON USE.

<i>Di súbito,</i> suddenly ;	} <i>a bello stúdio,</i>	} designedly ;
<i>di bótto,</i> presently ;		
<i>in un baléno,</i> in an instant ;	<i>a méno che,</i> unless ;	
<i>in un bátter d' ócchio,</i> in the	<i>se non che,</i> † except ;	
[twinkling of an eye ;	<i>da per tútto,</i>	} everywhere ;
<i>póco fa,</i> a little while ago ;	<i>per ógni dóve,</i>	
<i>fra póco,</i> in a short time ;	<i>ad un trátto,</i> at once ;	
<i>un pézzo fa,</i> some time ago ;	<i>di rádo,</i>	} seldom, rarely ;
<i>délie vólte,</i> at times ;	<i>di ráro,</i>	
<i>all' improvviso,</i> unexpectedly ;	<i>infátti,</i>	} in fact ;
<i>álla ventúra,</i> at random ;	<i>difátto,</i>	
<i>all' avvenire,</i> in future ;	<i>di gran lúnga,</i> by far ;	
<i>a minúto,</i> in detail ;	<i>a lúngo andáre,</i> in the long	[run, in time ;
<i>a vicénda,</i> by turns ;	<i>a piú potére,</i> with all one's	
<i>a gára,</i> emulously ;		[might ;
<i>a cáso,</i> by chance ;	<i>di mála vóglia,</i> unwillingly ;	
<i>a tórto,</i> wrongly ;	<i>a un di préssó,</i> almost ;	
<i>per accidénte,</i>	<i>d' allóra in quà,</i> since that time ;	
<i>per sórte,</i>	<i>d' óra innánzi,</i> henceforth ;	
<i>per avventúra,</i>	<i>in quel méntre,</i> in or at that time ;	
} by chance ;	<i>di púnto in púnto,</i> exactly ;	
	<i>pur tróppo,*</i> too truly, too well ;	<i>di púnto in biáncó,</i> point blank ;
<i>di frésco,</i> newly ;	<i>di quándo in quándo,</i>	} now
<i>di buón grádo,</i> willingly ;	<i>di trátto in trátto,</i>	
<i>súo malgrádo,</i> against one's will ;	<i>di tánto in tánto,</i>	} and
<i>sénza méno,</i> positively ;	<i>il piú per lo piú,</i> on the whole,	
<i>quánto prima,</i> very soon ;		[at the utmost.
<i>a súa pósia,</i>		
<i>a súo sénno,</i>		
<i>da sénno,</i> seriously ;		

\* An elliptical expression for the phrases *è PUR TRÓPPO véro*, ‘it is too true’; *è PUR TRÓPPO béne*, ‘it is too well.’

† An elliptical expression for the phrase *SE NON FÓSSE*, or *fósse státo, CHE*, ‘were it not,’ or ‘had it not been.’

## EXAMPLES.

- SAVIAMÉNTÉ s'è spuósono lóro ambasciata.* (Gio. Vill. l. 8. c. 1.) Thus wisely they delivered their message.
- Mángiano có' forestiéri FESTE-VOLMÉNTÉ.* (Dav. Gerin.) They eat merrily with strangers.
- L' áltre dónne, udíta Pampinéa, avien già PIÙ PARTICOLARMÉNTÉ tra sè cominciáto a trattár del módo.* (Bocc. Introd.) The other ladies, having heard Pampinea, had already begun more particularly to devise the means.
- Assái la vice lór CHIÁRO l' abbaia.* (Dant. Inf. 7.) Their words reveal their fault too clearly.
- Cóme DÓLCE párla, e DÓLCE ríde.* (Petr. s. 126.) How sweetly she speaks, and how sweetly she smiles.
- Quándo púre mánca delle cose nel luógo, díve nói siámo, ce n' andiámo in un áltro FELICIS-SIMAMÉNTÉ.* (Gell. Circ. l. 31.) Whenever things are wanting in the place where we are, we go to another very happily.
- Nessún vísse giammái piú di me LIÉIO.* (Petr. s. 7.) None ever lived more happy than I.
- Quésta grassézza non impedi-sce il ricevímto del métallo, anzi l' accetta PIÙ VOLENTIÉRI dell' áltra térra.* (Ben. Cell. Oref.) This richness [of this earth] does not prevent the metal being received in it; on the contrary it receives it better than the other earth.
- Io m' asterrí VOLENTIERISSIMAMÉNTÉ da cosí fatta prepara-zíone.* (Red. Cons.) I would abstain very willingly from such preparation.
- Il quále già OTTIMAMÉNTÉ la língua sapéa.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.) Who knew already the language very well.
- Tu ti pnti MALÍSSIMO con colúti al quále tu desidéri che gli Déi nócciano.* (Varch. Sen. Ben. 6.) Thou conductest thyself very badly with him whom thou wishest that the gods should injure.
- Oh, mi rallégro ASSAÍSSIMO — Vedervi vivo e prosperóso.* (Ainbr. Cof. 5. 6.) Oh, I rejoice pretty much to see you alive and prosperous.
- Égli stan pur BENÍN con quélle borse — Di ráso al cóllo.* (Buon. Fier. Introd.) They look pretty well with those bags of satin hung to their necks.



behoves (to) me | to go soon to Florence. Ah! yes,  
*conviene<sup>2</sup>* <sup>1</sup> <sup>9</sup> | *andare* *Firenze.* *Deh!* ,

for the love of God | let it be done | quick. I  
*per* *amor* *Dio* | *facciasi* |

received, a little while ago, letters from Messina.  
*ricevere,* *lettera*

| Go, | and | see | who cries above. How (much)  
*va,* | | *vedi* | *piangere* ,

far are we from (the) our quarters? | See | who  
*essere<sup>1</sup>* <sup>9</sup> | *contrada?* | *Vedete* |

knocks below. He hoped | to | be able to have  
*picchiare* . — *Sperare* | *di* | *poter avere*

the city of Lucca easily. He | goes | running here  
*città* <sup>4</sup> <sup>8</sup> *agevole<sup>1</sup>.* | *va* | *correre*

and there as if he were crazy. The good woman  
*se* — *essere pazzo.* *buona femmina*

returned | after | (the) her chest, and carried it back  
*ritornare* | *per* | <sup>2</sup> *essa<sup>1</sup>,* <sup>2</sup> *riportare<sup>6</sup>* <sup>6</sup> —

there from-whence she had taken it. Tell me, whence  
<sup>4</sup> <sup>7</sup> — *avere<sup>9</sup> levare<sup>10</sup>* <sup>9</sup>. *Di* — ,

art thou, and of what condition art thou?  
*essere* — , *condizione* — — ?

And he | replied | : “I am | from | Syria, and I am  
*rispose* | : “ *essere* | *di* | *Soria,* — *essere*

a king.” He acts carelessly. And | having been  
*re.<sup>11</sup>* *operare trascurato.* | — —

put | in prison, he | was | cruelly treated by them.  
*messo* | *prigione,* — | *fu* | *crudelmente* *trattare<sup>4</sup>* <sup>1</sup> <sup>9</sup>.

Observe it more particularly. And having departed  
*Osservare* — *particolarmente.* — *partito* —

(himself) from thence, he | went | (thence) to Naples,  
*si* , — | *andò<sup>9</sup>* | *ne<sup>1</sup>* *Napoli,*

where he | lived | most tranquilly.  
*visse* | *tranquillo.*

## CHAPTER XIV.

## PREPOSITIONS.

## PREPOSITIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>Di,*</i>	of ;	<i>accánto,</i>	} aside, about,
<i>a,†</i>	to, in, at ;	<i>alláto,</i>	} near, by ;
<i>da,‡</i>	from, by, on, at ;	<i>attórno,</i>	} about, around ;
<i>in,§</i>	in, on, upon ;	<i>dattórno,</i>	} on, upon, about ;
<i>con,</i>	with ;	<i>addóssó,</i>	} near, almost ;
<i>per,</i>	through, by, on ac- [count of, in order [to, for ;	<i>préssó,</i>	} near, almost ;
<i>su,</i>	} on, upon ;	<i>appréssó,</i>	} near, almost ;
<i>sópra,</i>		<i>vicíno,</i>	
<i>sóttó,</i>	under ;	<i>lúngi,</i>	} far, from ;
<i>fra,</i>	} amongst, within ;	<i>lonláno,</i>	} at, with, in com- [parison with ;
<i>tra,</i>		<i>áppo,  </i>	
<i>infra,</i>	} in, in about ;	<i>vérsó,¶</i>	} towards ;
<i>intra,</i>		<i>óltra,</i>	
<i>príma,</i>	before ;	<i>óltre,</i>	} along ;
<i>dópo,</i>	after ;	<i>lúngo,</i>	
<i>ánzi,</i>	} before, in the presence of ;	<i>fíno,</i>	} till, until, as far as ;
<i>innánzi,</i>		<i>síno,</i>	
<i>dinánzi,</i>		<i>ínsíno,**</i>	} against ;
<i>avánti,</i>		<i>cóntra,**</i>	
<i>davánti,</i>	} behind ;	<i>cóntro,</i>	} opposite ;
<i>díttro,</i>		<i>a-frónte,††</i>	
<i>didíttro,</i>	} in, within ;	<i>rímpétto,</i>	} without ;
<i>éntro,</i>		<i>dirímpétto,)</i>	
<i>déntro,</i>	} out of, without, besides ;	<i>sénza,‡‡</i>	} except, excepted ;
<i>fuóra,</i>		<i>sálvo,</i>	
<i>fuóri,</i>	} except, excepted' ;	<i>eccéttó,</i>	
<i>infuóri,</i>		<i>tránne,</i>	

\* From the Celtic *de*, a sign of qualification.† From the Celtic *da*, 'at.'† From the Celtic *a*, 'near,' 'joining with.'§ From the Celtic *en*, 'in.'|| From the Latin *apud* : — Celtic *ap*, 'joint,' 'attached.'¶ From the Latin *versus* : — Celtic *gwero*, 'to turn.'\*\* From the Celtic *con*, a sign of opposition ; and *trach*, 'side.'†† From the Latin *frons* : — Celtic *fron*, 'before.'‡‡ (And *sánza* and *san*, used by old writers,) from the Latin *sine* : — Celtic *sy*, 'want,' 'privation.'

<i>circa,</i> <i>incirca,</i> <i>intórno,</i>	} about, almost;	<i>secóndo,</i> <i>giústa,*</i> <i>giústo,</i> <i>confórme,</i>	} according. †

The nature of most of the foregoing prepositions is such as to admit of no other significations than those which have been given above; there are however some which are made, in Italian, to express so many different relations, that it has been thought indispensable to add the following remarks:

The preposition *di* may express a relation of *possession*, of *extraction*, or of *qualification*; as,

<i>il denáro</i> <b>DI</b> LÚI,	his own money;
<i>figlio</i> <b>DEL</b> FIGLIUÓLO,	son of the son;
<i>la státua</i> <b>DI</b> MÁRMO,	the statue of marble;
<i>uómini</i> <b>di</b> GRÓSSO INGÉGNO;	men of dull understanding.

*A* may express a relation of *attribution*, of *end* or *tendency of action*, or of *proximity* to a *place*, *person*, or *thing*; as,

<b>AL</b> TÉMPO <i>dell'</i> IMPERADÓRE	in the time of the emperor
<b>FEDERÍGO</b> PRÍMO,	Frederic the First;

\* From the Latin *justa*: — Celtic *ajusta*, 'to adjust.'

† Some of the foregoing prepositions are the same as the adverbs; as, *sópra*, *sóto*, *príma*, *appréso*, *dópo*, *déntro*, *difuóri*, &c., which, when they are followed or preceded by a noun, a pronoun, or a verb which they govern, are always prepositions, but otherwise are adverbs. Thus in the following examples,

*Or* *vía* *méttiti* *avánti*, *to* **TI** *verrà* **AP-**  
**PRE'**SSO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

Now go before, I will follow after thee.

*Dálla* *mádre* *délla* *gióvane* *príma*, *e*  
**APPRE'**SSO. *da* *Currádo* *soprapprésí* *fúro-*  
*no*. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

They were first surprised by the mother of the girl, and afterwards by Currado.

the word *appréso*, in the first instance is a *preposition* because it governs the pronoun *ti*; but in the second is an *adverb* because it governs no other word.

VÉNGA A VEDÉRLA,	let him come to see her ;
<i>chè il vóstro lignággio</i> AN-	that your lineage should be-
DÁSSE A POVERTÁDE,	come poor ;
TROVÁNDOSI A PARÍGI,	finding himself in Paris ;
ALLÁTO ÁLLA DÓNNA,	by the side of the lady ;
S' AVVICINÁVA ÁLLE TÉRRE	he approached the land of the
<i>del Dúca,</i>	Duke.

*Da* may express a relation of *derivation*, of *departure*, of *separation*, of *dependence*, of *difference*, of *designation*, of *destination*, of *similitude*, of *fitness*, *aptitude*, or *capability*, of *presence*, of *passage through* or *by*, of *uncertainty of number*, of *time*, of *place*, of *loneliness*, or of *instrumentality* ; as,

Cino DA PISTÓIA,	Cino of Pistoia ;
<i>le grázie</i> VÉNGONO DA DÍO,	favours come from God ;
TORNÁNDO DA PARÍGI,	returning from Paris ;
PÁRTITI DA COTÉSTI,	go away from those spirits ;
m' ALLONTÁNA DAL VÓLGO,	she separates me from the
	common people ;
DIPÉNDE DA QUÉL PÚNTO,	it hangs upon that point ;
ALTR' UÓMO DA QUÉLLO <i>che</i>	a different man from what I
<i>io sóno,</i>	am now ;
Gugliélmo DAL CÓRNO,	William [surnamed] from the
	Horn ;
<i>cóse</i> DA MANGIÁRE,	eatable things ;
uómo DA PÓCO,	a foolish man ;
<i>avánti</i> DA SÈ,	before himself ;
DÁLLA CÁSA <i>délla</i> dónna,	before the house of the lady ;
DA NOVÁNTA MÍLA <i>bócche,</i>	above ninety thousand mouths ;
DA GRÁN TÉMPO,	a long time since ;
DA QUÉSTA PÁRTE,	to this side ;
DA <i>me</i> , DA <i>per vái</i> ,	of me ; by yourself ;
<i>edificáto</i> DA TARQUÍNIO,	built by Tarquin.

Besides the above relations, the preposition *da* is often used to express with brevity *the habitation of a person*; and is equivalent to the words *a casa, a casa di*, 'to one's house';\* as,

DA [or <i>a casa di</i> ] <i>me</i> ,	to me [or to my house];
DA [or <i>a casa di</i> ] <i>lui</i> ,	to his house;
DA [or <i>a casa di</i> ] <i>lei</i> ,	to her house;
DAL [or <i>a casa del</i> ] <i>Cardinale</i> ,	to the Cardinal's.

*In* expresses a relation of *interiority*, or a relation between two objects of which the one *contains*, and the other *is contained*; as,

<i>dormiva</i> IN UN LETTICCIUÓ- LO,	he slept in a little bed;
<i>córsi</i> IN MERCÁTO,	I ran to the market;
<i>éra</i> IN PARÍGI, IN UN ALBÉR- GO,	there were in Paris, in a ho- tel.

The Italians consider as *containing-objects*, the *divisions of time*, the *parts of one's body*, the *apparel we wear*, and sometimes even the *surface of bodies*; as,

<i>cénto novélle raccontáte</i> IN DIÉCI GIÓRNI,	one hundred stories related in ten days;
<i>púdica</i> IN FÁCCIA,	chaste in her countenance;
<i>la coróna</i> IN FRÓNTE,	the crown on the forehead;
IN ÁBITO <i>di peregrini</i> ,	in pilgrim's dress;
<i>gli fúrono stracciáti i pánni</i> IN DÓSSO,	all the clothes he had on were torn;
IN MÁRE, e IN TÉRRA,	on the sea, and on the land.

*Con* expresses a relation of *company*; and the Italians

---

\* The Italian has derived this usage from the Celtic language, in which the word *da* was a synonyme of, and often used for, the word *cae* or *chae*, 'habitation';—the *cása* of the Italian.



generally consider as *companions* the *instruments*, the *means*, or the *manner* in which an action is performed, —

<i>vengo a desinare</i> CON VOI,	I come to dine with you ;
<i>che</i> CON lo STILE, CON la PÉ- NA, O COL PENNÉLLO <i>non</i> <i>dipignesse,</i>	which with his style, with his pen, or with his pencil, he could not paint ;
<i>facéndogli cénno</i> CÓLLA MÁ- NO,	making him a sign with her hand ;
<i>incominciò a dire</i> CON ÚMIL VÓCE,	began to say with a humble voice ;
CON FATÍCA <i>gli rispóse,</i>	with difficulty he replied to him.

*Per* expresses the *way through*, or the *means by*, which a thing is done ; the *reason why*, or the *object for* which, it is done ; it expresses also a relation of *space* with regard to *time* or *place* ; and a relation of *instrumentality*, of *qualification*, of *destination*, or of *distribution* ;

PER ME *si va* *nella città do-* through me you go into the  
*lente,* city of woe ;

PER LI CÚI PRIÉGHI *costúi* at whose entreaties I have  
*sovvénni,* aided this one ;

*non* PER CRUDELTÀ *délla* not on account of the cruelty  
*dónna amáta, ma* PER SO- of the beloved lady, but on  
VÉRCHIO FUÓCO, account of an excessive  
flame ;

VO PÉ' DÓLCI PÓMI, I go for the sweet fruit ;

PER PIÙ DÌ *dimorando,* remaining for several days ;

PER li CÁMPI, PER le VÍE, e through the fields, through  
PER le CÁSE *morteno,* the streets, and in the hous-  
es they died ;

*proméssi a me* PER lo VERÁ- promised to me by my sure  
CE DÚCA, guide ;

è *ripotáto* PER SÁNTO, he is reputed a holy man ;

*faréi* PER *Currádo* *ógni cosa,* I would do for Currado every  
thing ;

*diéci ducáti.* PER *úno,* ten ducats each.

*Per* is also used to *entreat* or to *swear by*; as,

PER *quella páce che per vói* by that peace which is pre-  
*s' aspétti, ditene . . . .*, prepared for you, tell us . . . .;  
 TI GIURO, PER *quello amore* I swear to thee, by that love,  
*che io ti póрто, che . . . .*, which I bear thee, that . . . .

The preposition *a*, as it was mentioned p. 37, followed by a word beginning with *a vowel* takes a *d* after it, and *su* followed by another *u* takes an *r*; *fuora*, *fuori*, and *fino*, *sino*, *infino*, *insino*, followed by a word beginning with *a consonant* often lose the last vowel; and *verso*, loses the last syllable; as,

AD UOMO *d' intellétto*, to a man of sound judgment;  
 SUR UN' *ásse*, upon a board;  
 INFIN DA *óra*, henceforth;  
 VÓLTA VER ME, turned towards me.

#### EXAMPLES.

*E con IL DENARO DI LUI il* And paid him with his own  
*pagò.* (Bocc.) money.

*Fu FIGLIO DEL FIGLIUOLO del* He was son of the son of the  
*Conte d' Artése.* (Gio. Vill. 11. Count of Artois.  
 54.)

LA STÁTUA DI MÁRMO, *o di* The statue of marble, or of  
*légno, o di metálo, rimása per* wood, or of metal, remaining there  
*memória d' alcún valénte uomo.* in memory of some great man.  
 (Dant. Conviv.)

*Érano UOMINI e fémmine DI* They were men and women of  
*GRÓSSO INGÉGNO.* (Bocc. Intr.) dull understanding.

AL TÉMPO DELL' IMPERADÓRE In the time of the emperor  
*FEDERÍGO PRÍMO.* (Bocc. g. 10. Frederic the First.  
 n. 9.)

*Chi nol créde, VÉNGA égli A* He who does not believe it, let  
*VEDÉRLA.* (Petr. s. 210.) him come to see her.

*A vói non vi sarébbè onóre*  
CHE 'L VÓSTRO LIGNÁGGIO ANDÁS-  
SE A POVERTÁDE. (Nov. Ant. 46.)

TROVÁN DOSI *égli úna vólta* A  
PARÍGI *in póvero státo.* (Bocc.)

ALLÁTO ÁLLA DÓNNA *la póse.*  
(Bocc.)

ÁLLE TÉRRE DEL DÚCA S' AV-  
VICINÁVA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

Écco CÍN DA PISTÓIA. (Petr.  
Fr. Am. 4.)

DA DÍO VÉNGONO LE GRÁZIE.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.)

DA PARÍGI *a Génova* TORNÁN-  
DO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)

*E tu che sé' costì, ánima víva,*  
— PÁRTITI DA COTÉSTI *che son*  
*mórti.* (Dant. Inf. 3.)

*Quèsta sóla* DAL VÓLGO M' AL-  
LONTÁNA. (Petr. c. 19.)

DA QUÉL PÚNTO — DIPÉNDE  
*il Ciélo e tútta la natúra.* (Dant.  
Par. 28.)

*Quand' éra in párte* ALTR' UÓM  
DA QUÉL CH' Í SÓNO. (Petr. s.  
1.)

*Il quále avéa nóme* GUGLIÉLMO  
DAL CÓRNO. (Gio. Vill. 9.)

*Le cóse da mangiàre non si*  
*stimano dall' úso o dall' affétto,*  
*ma dálla consuetúdine.* (Varch.)

*Tu sè' più* DA PÓCO *che Máo,*  
*che s' lasciáva fuggíre i pésci*  
*cótti.* (Lasc. Spir. 5. 7.)

PÓCO AVÁNTI DA SÈ, *vide le*  
*cèneri rimáse d' Attila, flagéllo*  
*dí Dio.* (Bocc. Flocc. 4.)

*Dal fráte partúosi, DÁLLA CÁSA*  
*n' andò DÉLLA DÓNNA.* (Bocc.  
g. 3. n. 3.)

It would not be honorable to  
you, that your lineage should be-  
come poor.

Finding himself once in Paris in  
poor circumstances.

By the side of the lady he put it.

He approached the lands of the  
Duke.

Behold Cino of Pistoia.

Favors come from God.

Returning from Paris to Genoa.

And thou who standest there,  
living spirit, go away from those  
spirits who are dead.

She alone separates me from the  
common people.

Heaven and nature hangs upon  
that point.

When I was in part a different  
man from what I am now.

Who was named William [sur-  
named] from the Horn.

Eatable things are not valued  
from their use or their taste, but  
from habit.

Thou art more foolish than Ma-  
so, who let the cooked fish escape  
from him.

At a little distance before him-  
self, he saw the ashes left by  
Attila, the scourge of God.

Leaving the friar, he passed be-  
fore the house of the lady.

*Stimávasi avére in Firenze* DA NOVÁNTA MÍLA BÓCCHÉ, *tra uómini, fèmmine, e fanciulli.* (Gio. Vill. 11. 93.)

*Già* DA GRAN TÈMPO *núllo piú ne conósci.* (Alf. Fil. 4. 2.)

*Si dúra póca fálica a fárlu in-chinare* DA QUÉSTA O DA QUÉLLA PÁRTE. (Mach.)

*Póscia rispóse lúi :* "DA ME *non vénni.*" (Dant. Pur. 1.)

*Vóì ve ne avvedréte* DA PER VÓI *nel léggere quésto framménto.* (Red. lett.)

*Il campidóglio fu* EDIFICÁTO DA TARQUÍNIO, *assedíato* DA Brenno, *e liberáto* DA Camílllo. (Vanz.)

*Tórna quí* DA ME. (Mach.)

*Adúnque, andátevène* DA LÚI. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

*Esséndo Salabaétto* DA LÉI *andáto úna séra.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

DAL CARDINÁL *di Moróne, ap-péna arrivóto, andárono tútti gli ambasciadóri.* (Pall.)

IN UN LETTICCIUÓLO *assái pic-colo si dórmiva.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

*I'o córsi in mércato per dírtelo.* (Mach. Corn.)

ÉRA IN PARÍGI, IN UN ALBÉRGO, *alquánti mercatánti Italiáni.* (Bocc.)

*Inténdo di raccontáre* CÉNTO NOVÉLLE, *raccontáte in diéci giórni.* (Bocc. Intr.)

PUDÍCA IN FÁCCIA, *e nell' andáre onésta.* (Dant. Pur. 3.)

It was thought that there were in Florence about ninety thousand mouths, among men, women, and children.

It is already a long time since thou forgottest them all [thy pangs of remorse].

One meets with very little difficulty in making him lean to this or to that side.

Then he replied to him : " I did not come of myself."

You will perceive it by yourself in reading this fragment.

The capitol was built by Tarquin, besieged by Brennus, and delivered by Camillus.

Return here to me [or to this my house].

Go, then, to his house.

Salabaetto having gone one evening to her house.

All the ambassadors went to the Cardinal of Morone's, as soon as he arrived.

He slept in a very small bed.

I ran to the market to tell it to you.

There were in Paris, in a hotel, a number of Italian merchants.

I intend to relate one hundred stories, to be related in ten days.

Chaste in her countenance, and modest in her carriage.

*Fulgévami già* IN FRÓNTE LA  
CORÓNA. (Dant. Pur. 8.)

The crown shone already on my forehead.

IN ÁBITO DI PEREGRÍNI. (Bocc.)

In pilgrim's dress.

*Tutti i pánni gli fúrono in*  
DÓSSO STRACCIÁTI. (Bocc. g. 1.  
n. 1.)

All the clothes he had on were torn.

*Comandaménto ebbero dal lor*  
*comúne d'abbáttere la fórza dé'*  
*Viniziani* IN MÁRE, E IN TÉRRA.  
(Gio. Vill.)

They were ordered by their community to destroy all the forces, which the Venetians had on the sea, and on the land.

*Signóre, io vÉNGO A DESINÁRE*  
CON VÓI, e CON LA VÓSTRA BRIGÁ-  
TA. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Sir, I come to dine with you, and with your company.

*Niúna cósá fu, che égli con*  
LO STÍLE, CON LA PÉNNNA, O COL  
PENNÉLLO NON DIPIGNÉSSE *simile*  
*a quélla.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.)

There was nothing, that he could not with his style, with his pen, or with his pencil, paint like it.

*E l' invitò ad avvicinarsi, fa-*  
CÉNDUGLI CÉNNO CÓLLA MÁNO.  
(Bocc.)

And she invited him to approach, making him a sign with her hand.

*Incominciò con úmil vóce a*  
DÍRE — *Quél ch' io vó' all' áltro*  
*cánto differire.* (Arios. Fur.)

He began to tell with an humble voice what I choose to leave for the next canto.

*Títo, non restándo di piángere,*  
CON FATICA COSÌ GLI RISPÓSE.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Titus, without ceasing from weeping, with difficulty replied to him thus.

PER ME SI VA NÉLLA CITTÀ  
DOLÉNTE, — PER ME SI VA *nell'*  
*etérrno dolóre,* — PER ME SI VA  
*tra la perdúta gènte.* (Dant.  
Inf. 3.)

Through me you go into the city of woe, through me you go into eternal pain, through me you go amongst the damned spirits.

*Dónna scése dal ciélo,* PER LI  
CÚI PRIÉGHI — *Délla núa com-*  
*pagnúa* COSTÚI SOVVÉNNI. (Dant.  
Purg. 1.)

A dame descended from heaven, at whose entreaties I have aided this one with my guidance.

NON PER CRUDELTA DÉLLA  
DÓNNA AMÁTA, MA PER SOVÉR-  
CHIO FUÓCO *nélla mente* CONCÉT-  
TO *da póco regoláto appetito.*  
(Bocc. Proem.)

Not on account of the cruelty of the beloved lady, but on account of the excessive flame kindled in his mind by an unruled passion.

*Láscio lo féle, e vo fé' dólci*  
PÓMI — PROMÉSSI A ME PER LO  
VERÁCE DÚCA. (Dant. Inf. 16.)

I leave the gall, and go for the sweet fruit promised to me by my sure guide.

*Quívi* PER PIÙ DÌ DIMORÁNDÓ. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

There remaining for several days.

PER LE VÍLLE, e PER LI CÁMPI; PER LE VÍE, e PER LE CÁSE, *dì dè e di nótte, morieno.* (Bocc. Introd.)

(Through the villages, and through the fields; through the streets, and in the houses, both by day and by night, they died.

*Esséndo státo un pèssimo úmo in víta, in móрте è RIPUTÁTO PER SÁNTÓ.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

Having been a very bad man in his life, he is in death reputed a holy man.

*Io FARÉI PER CURRÁDO ÓGNI CÓSA, che ío potéssi.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

I would do for Currado every thing that I could.

*E diè lóro DIÉCI DUCÁTI PER ÚNO.* (Bocc.)

And gave them ten ducats each.

*O spíriti elètti, — PER QUÉLLA PÁCE — Ch' ío crédo CHE PER VÓI tútti s' ASPÉTTI, — DÍTENE dóve la montágná giáce.* (Dant. Pur. 3.)

O chosen spirits, for that peace, which, as I deem, is for all of you prepared, tell us where the mountain low declines.

*Io TI GIÚRO PER QUÉLLO in-dissolúbile AMÓRE CHE ÍO TI PÓRTO, CHE il quáрто mése non uscirà, che tu mi rivedrái.* (Bocc. Fiam. 2.)

I swear to thee by that indissoluble love, which I bear thee, that the fourth month will not pass, ere thou wilt see me again.

*Non páre indégno AD UÓMO D' INTELLÉTTO.* (Dant. Inf. 2.)

It does not seem undeserved to a man of sound judgment.

*Battúti in SUR UN' ÁSSE col collélló.* (Dav. Colt.)

Beaten upon a board with a knife.

*Ogni áltra cósá, sía vóstra liberaménte INFÍN DA ÓRA.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

Let every other thing be freely yours henceforth.

*VÓLTA VER ME, mi dísse.* (Frenz. Asin. 325.)

Turned towards me, she said.

## EXERCISE XXIV.

He gave us the key of his house. This gentle  
 — *dàre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> *chiàve*<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>7</sup> *càsa*.<sup>6</sup> <sup>2</sup> *gentìl*<sup>3</sup>  
 lady being very often urged by the messages and  
*dónna*<sup>3</sup> *Èssere*<sup>1</sup> *stimolàre* *ambasciàta*  
 by the entreaties of each one of them. Both in-  
*priégo* *in*-  
 flamed by a fierce vengeance, turned towards (to) these  
*fiammàre* — *feróce*<sup>2</sup> *vendétta*<sup>1</sup>, *rivólgere*  
 walls (the) their sword still warm | with | civil blood.  
*múro* — *férro* *cáldo* | *di* | *civile*<sup>2</sup> *sàngue*<sup>1</sup>.  
 | It is believed that he is | the richest prelate that  
 | *Si crède* *che* *sía* | *ricco* *prelato*  
 there is in — | has | the church of God (from)  
 — — — | *abbia* | *chièsa* *Dío*  
 the Pope excepted. They were all garlanded | with |  
*Pápa* *èssere* *tutto* *inghirlandàre*<sup>5</sup> | *dì*<sup>1</sup> |  
 leaves of oak. We will give thee so many blows  
*fóglià*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *quercia*<sup>4</sup>. *dàre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> —  
 | with | one of these iron bars — bars of iron  
 | *d'* | — — — *pálo* *férro*  
 upon (the) your head, that we will make thee fall  
 — — — — — *fàre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *cadé*-  
 down dead. I have a farm very near to the bank  
*re* *mórto*. *avére* *podére* *ríva*  
 of the river. Then came the time of going out  
*fúme*. *venire* *témpo* *uscire*  
 against the prince, who was approaching (himself)  
*prénce*, *avvicinàre*<sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup>  
 already to the lands of the Duke. They made him  
<sup>1</sup> *tèrra* *Dúca*. — — —  
 — he was put to sit down just opposite to the  
 — *Èssere* *mèttère* *sedére*  
 door of the room, whence the abbot was obliged  
*úscio* *cámara*, *abàte* *dovére*

to come out into the | dining room |. Here thou  
 — *uscire* | *sála a mangiáre* |.

seest a temple by-the-side | of | the sea. The em-  
*vedére* *témpio* | *a* | *máre.* <sup>2</sup> *im-*

peror being one day between these two sages, the  
*peratóre*<sup>3</sup> *Éssere*<sup>1</sup> *giórno* — *sávio,*

one stood on the right | of him |, and the other  
*stáre*<sup>2</sup> *a*<sup>3</sup> — *déstra*<sup>4</sup> | *gli*<sup>1</sup> |,

on the left. Having gone out from the city they  
*a* — *sinústra.* — *Uscúre* *città* —

put themselves on the way. He put a ring on  
*méttere*<sup>2</sup> *si*<sup>1</sup> — *vía.* — *Méttere*<sup>5</sup> *anéllo*<sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup>

the finger | of | Torello. Looking fixedly in his  
 — *díto*<sup>2</sup> | *a*<sup>3</sup> | <sup>4.</sup> *Guardáre* — — —

face — at him fixedly in the face, in order to  
 — — *fiso* *víso,*

see whether he was speaking seriously. Having  
*vedére* *se* *díre* —

put (himself) on a great black pelisse, he arranged  
*Méttere* — *néro*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1,</sup> — *acconciáre*<sup>4</sup>

himself, in that in such a manner, that he looked like  
<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *guísa,* — *parére*

a bear. With the best harmony in the world all  
*órso.* *migliór páce* *móndo tutto*

(and) four dined together. He began with the  
*quáttro desináre insiéme.* — *incominciáre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup>

piece of wood to give him the greatest blows in  
*stécca*<sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *dáre*<sup>7</sup> *GI*<sup>1</sup> *maggióre cólpo*

the world, now on (the) his head, and then on  
*móndo,* — *tésta,* *e*

(the) his sides. I wish first to go to Rome, and  
 — *fiánco.* *volére* — *andáre* *Róma,*

there to see him (the) whom thou sayest to be —  
 — *vedére* *díre* — —

that he is — vicar of God on earth. There sounded  
*éssere vicário* *Dío* *térra.* — *Suondre*



through the city a wonderful report, that the tombs  
*città mirabile<sup>2</sup> voce<sup>1</sup>,<sup>3</sup> <sup>5</sup> tomba<sup>6</sup>*

of the Scipios | were discovered | . By that steep  
<sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> *Scipione<sup>9</sup> | si fõssero scoperte<sup>4</sup> | . scoscẽso*

way I arrived at the tombs of the valorous race.  
*via — giungere avello valoroso<sup>2</sup> stirpe<sup>1</sup>.*

Neither by letter did she dare | to | let him hear it.  
*Nè lettera — ardere | di | fare<sup>2</sup> sentire<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>.*

Not seeing through the wood any path. You will  
*vedere selva sentiero. ri-*

receive a hundred (of them) for every-one. He went to  
*cevere<sup>2</sup> — cento<sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup> ciascuno<sup>4</sup>. andare*

Ravenna in-order-to speak to the army. No, I never  
*parlare armata. , — —*

will mention it — will not mention it ever. With  
*— — — <sup>1</sup> dire<sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>4</sup>.*

a low voice he replied thus. This ferocious man,  
*— basso voce — rispondere<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>. ferocẽ uomo<sup>1</sup>,*

having usurped with (the) frauds and with (the) | acts of  
*— usurpare frode | . vio-*

violence | a throne not his own, sought | to | pre-  
*lenza | trono —, cercare<sup>3</sup> | di<sup>9</sup> | man-*

serve it with (the) terror and with (the) cruelty.  
*tenere<sup>10</sup> <sup>11</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> terrore<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> crudeltà<sup>7</sup>.*

Without any fail I promise to thee, upon (the) my  
*alcun fallo promettere<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, mio*

faith, that within — among a few days thou wilt  
*fè, — — poco di tro-*

find thyself with me. I wish that we should de-  
*vare<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>3</sup>. volere — scen-*

scend (until) there below.  
*dere giù.*

## CHAPTER XV.

## CONJUNCTIONS.

## CONJUNCTIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>E,</i>	and ;	<i>non già,</i>	{ not at all, not
<i>o,</i>	or, either ;	<i>non sólo,</i>	{ indeed ;
<i>nè,</i>	nor, neither ;	<i>non che,</i>	{ not only,
<i>se,</i>	if, whether ;	<i>purchè,</i>	{ not merely ;
<i>ma,</i>	} but ;	<i>a méno chè,</i>	{ provided ;
<i>però,</i>		{ that ;	{ unless ;
<i>che,</i>	} yet, neverthe- less ;	<i>ánzi che,</i>	{ rather, sooner ;
<i>püre,</i>		{ yet, already ;	<i>ánzi che no,</i>
<i>già,</i>	} nay, rather, on the contrary ;	<i>sì,</i>	{ so, thus ;
<i>ánzi,</i>		} also, even ;	<i>così,</i>
<i>ánche,</i>	} also, even, a- gain ;		<i>cómo,</i>
<i>ánco,</i>		} yet, neverthe- less ;	<i>siccome,</i>
<i>eziandio,</i>	} or, either ;		<i>sicchè,</i>
<i>altresì,</i>		} neither, not even ;	<i>così che,</i>
<i>ancóra,</i>	} if ever,		<i>talchè,</i>
<i>eppüre,</i>		} if indeed ;	<i>giacchè,</i>
<i>ossia,</i>	} if however ;		<i>cioè,</i>
<i>ovvéro,</i>		} unless, except,	<i>cioè a dire,</i>
<i>oppüre,</i>	} but ;		<i>vále a dire,</i>
<i>nemméno,</i>		} then, therefore ;	<i>alméno,</i>
<i>nemnánco,</i>	} therefore, for which reason ;		<i>almánco,</i>
<i>neppure,</i>			<i>di più,</i>
<i>neanche,</i>		<i>inóltre,</i>	
<i>tampóco,</i>		<i>oltrecchè,</i>	
<i>nettampóco,</i>		<i>oltracciò,</i>	
<i>se mái,</i>		<i>d' altrónde,</i>	
<i>se püre,</i>		<i>dúnque,</i>	
<i>se però,</i>		<i>adúnque,</i>	
<i>se non,</i>		<i>ónde,</i>	
<i>se non che,</i>		<i>laónde,</i>	
		<i>quíndi,</i>	
		<i>perciò,</i>	

<p><i>acciò,</i> <i>acciocchè,</i> <i>affine,</i> <i>affinchè,</i> <i>chè,</i> <i>perchè,</i> <i>poichè,</i> <i>posciacchè,</i> <i>perocchè,</i> <i>imperocchè,</i> <i>perciocchè,</i> <i>imperciocchè,</i> <i>conciosiacchè,</i> <i>quantunque,</i> <i>sebbène,</i> <i>benchè,</i> <i>comechè,</i> <i>avvegnachè,</i> <i>ancorchè,</i> <i>contuttochè,</i> <i>nonostánte,</i> <i>nondiméno,</i> <i>nientediméno,</i> <i>con tutto ciò,</i> <i>non per tánto,</i> <i>non per quéstó,</i> <i>ciò non ostánte,</i> <i>ciò non di méno,</i> <i>tuttavía,</i></p>	<p>{ in order that, to the end that;  { for, why? because; because, since, as, after;  { because, whereas, as, since;  { although;  { even that;  { still, nevertheless, notwithstand- ing, for all that;</p>	<p><i>in sómma,</i> <i>in fine,</i> <i>sia che,</i> <i>vuóí,</i> <i>del résto,</i> <i>per áltro,</i> <i>tánto,</i> <i>quánto,</i> <i>quándó,</i> <i>quand' ánche,</i> <i>in guisa che,</i> <i>in módo chè,</i> <i>in maniera che,</i> <i>di módo che,</i> <i>di maniera che,</i>  <i>intánto,</i> <i>frattánto,</i>  <i>méntre,</i> <i>mentrecchè,</i> <i>sálvo,</i> <i>eccétto,</i> <i>tránne,</i> <i>fuorchè,</i> <i>fórsa,</i> <i>óra,</i></p>	<p>{ in short, in conclusion; whether, or, either; otherwise, besides; as; as; when; even when;  { so that, in such a manner;  { in the mean time, mean- while, whilst; whilst, whilst that;  { save, saving, except;  perhaps; now.*</p>
---	---	---	---

Many of these conjunctions, as *nondiméno*, *ciò non ostánte*, &c. contain in themselves a *pronoun*, a *preposition*, an *adverb*, &c.; but, from their office of *joining* sentences together, they are commonly reckoned amongst conjunctions, though in fact they are but *conjunctive phrases*.

\* Some of these conjunctions might be mistaken for *prepositions* or *adverbs*, and the conjunction *CHE*, for the *relative pronoun* *CHE*, 'who,' 'which,' 'that'; their character however will soon be ascertained by considering the office which they perform in a sentence. Thus in the following examples:

*Iddò mi ha fatto tanta grázia, che 'o*  
*l'Nzi la mia mórté ho vedúto alcúni dé'*  
*miéi fratélli.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)

God has granted me such a favor as to enable me to see some of my brothers before my death.

*Attempatélla éra, e l'Nzi supérba che*  
*no.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 1.)

She was a little advanced in years and rather proud.

*Fo éra ben così, ma non per natúra,*  
*l'Nzi per una infermitá.* (Bocc. g. 3.  
n. 1.)

I was indeed not naturally so, but by a disease.

the word *anzi* is a *preposition* in the first instance because it *governs la mia mórté*:

The conjunction *ne* is sometimes used in the signification of *e*, 'and'; as,

<i>dólci NÈ cári,</i>	sweet and dear;
<i>parlái NÈ scríssi,</i>	I spoke and wrote.

---

*Ma* is often used in the signification of *più*, 'more'; as,\*

<i>MA che úno,</i>	more than one;
<i>non MA che di sospíri,</i>	no more than sighs.

---

*Che* is sometimes used in the signification of *fra* or *tra*, 'between'; as,

<i>méglio di diecimíla dóbbre,</i>	more than ten thousand pis-
<i>CHE in giòie, e CHE in</i>	toles between jewels and
<i>denári,</i>	money.

---

*Púre* is often used in the signification of *ancóra*, 'also,' 'even'; *sólo*, *solaménte*, 'only'; as,

<i>è PÚRE peccáto,</i>	it is also a sin;
<i>s' ío avéssi avúto PÚRE un</i>	had I had even the slightest
<i>pensierúzzo,</i>	thought;
<i>nátúra non avéa ívi PUR di-</i>	nature had not only painted
<i>pínto,</i>	there.

---

The conjunctions *quantúnque*, *sebbéne*, *benchè*, *comechè*, *avvegnachè*, *ancorchè*, *contuttochè*, are generally followed by one of the following conjunctions, *púre*,

---

it is an *adverb* in the second because it *modifies* the verb *éra*: and it is a *conjunction* in the last because it *connects* the clause (*éra*) *per natura* with (*éra*) *per úna infermità*.

And in the following:

<i>Cominciárono a díre, CHE quéllo, CHE</i>	They began to say that what he had
<i>égli avéva rispósto, non veníva a díre nùl-</i>	replied was without meaning.
<i>lá. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 9.)</i>	

the *first che* is a *conjunction*, because it *connects* *díre*, with what follows; and the *second* is a *relative pronoun*, because it refers to *quéllo*, its *antecedent*.

\* From these and similar examples it seems as if the Italian *ma* were derived from the Latin *magis*: — the Celtic *mai*, 'great.'

*nonostante, nondiméno, nientediméno, con tutto ciò, ciò non ostánte, ciò non di méno, non pertánto, non per quésto tuttavía ; as their correlatives ; as,*

COMECHÈ *várie cóse gli andasse per lo pensiéro di fare, PÚRE deliberò . . . . ,* although it passed through his mind to do various things, yet he determined . . . .

Often the *correlative* conjunction is suppressed ; as,

Arrigúccio, **CONTUTTOCHÈ** Arriguccio, although a merchant, was a proud man.  
*fósse mercatánte, éra [nondiméno] un fiéro uómo,*

*Non solo, non che,* are followed by *ma, ma ancóra ;* as,

*sta béne di così fatte cóse NON CHE gli amici, MA gli straniéri di ripigliáre,* it is well to reprimand for such things, not only friends, but even strangers ;

*il víno NON SÓLO confórta il naturál calóre, MA ANCÓRA chiarifica il sángue,* wine not only assists the natural heat, but it clears the blood.

*Non che* is often an *elliptical expression* for the phrase *NON solaménte dico CHE, ma,* ‘ I say not only that, but ’ ; as,

*spéro trovár pietà NON CHE perdóno [NON SOLAMÉNTE DÍCO CHE spéro trovár perdóno, MA pietà],* I hope to find not only pardon, but pity ;

*avrèbbero potuto muóver la guérra, NON CHE diféndersi [DÍCO NON SOLAMÉNTE CHE avrèbbero potuto diféndersi, MA muóver la guérra],* they could have not only defended themselves, but even waged war.

*Tánto* is followed by *quánto,* and sometimes by *che ;* corresponding to the English words *both . . . and ;* as,

TÁNTO *crúdi* QUÁNTO *cótti,* both raw and cooked ;

TÁNTO *máschi,* CHE *fèmmine,* both men and women.

The conjunctions *e, o*, followed by a word beginning with a *vowel* often take a *d* after them; and *púre, ep-púre, oppúre, alméno, nemméno, óra, ancóra*, followed by a *consonant* drop the *last vowel*; as,

<i>dúre, ed áspre battáglie,</i>	hard and severe battles;
<i>OD ómbra, OD uómo céрто,</i>	whether a spirit or a living man;
<i>che il cuór mi préme già PUR pensándo,</i>	which to think of oppresses my heart;
<i>ch' ANCÓR lassù vedére spéra,</i>	which he hopes to see also there in heaven.

*Púre, già, óra*, are sometimes mere *expletives*; as,

<i>la cosa andò PUR così,</i>	the thing passed just so;
<i>fóssero éssi pur GIÀ dispósti,</i>	would that they were disposed;
<i>ÓRA le paróle fúrono assái,</i>	now the words were many.

## EXAMPLES.

*Se gli ócchi suói ti fur DÓLCI, NÈ CARL.* (Petr. c. 40.) If her eyes were sweet and dear to thee.

*Quánto di léi PARLÁI, NÈ SCRÍS-SI.* (Petr. s. 296.) How much I spoke and wrote of her.

*Or cúi chiámi tu Iddio? Égli non è MA CHE ÚNO.* (Nov. Ant. 78.) Now whom callest thou God? There is no more than one.

*Qui vi, secóndo che per ascol-táre, — Non avéa piánto, MA CHE DI SOSPÍRI — Che l' áura etérna facévan tremáre.* (Dant. Inf. 4.) There, as well as my ear could note, no other plaints were heard than sighs, which caused the eternal air to tremble.

*Donólle CHE IN GIÓIE, e CHE in vasellaménti d' óro e d' arién-to, E CHE IN DENÁRI, quéllo che vólse méglío d' áltre DIECIMÍLA DÓBBERE.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.) He gave her between jewels, and gold and silver vases, and money, what would be worth more than ten thousand pistoles.

*E pognámo, che non lo facciámo a malizia, púre nientedimé-no È PÚRE PECCÁTO.* (Cavale. Pungil. 195.) And let us suppose, that we do not do it through malice, yet nevertheless it is also a sin.

O, s' ío avéssi avúto púre  
UN PENSIERÚZZO di fáre l' una  
di quelle còse, che vói díte, credéte  
vói, che Iddío m' avésse tánto so-  
stenúta? (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

NON AVÉA PUR NATÚRA ÍVI  
DIPÍNTO, — *Ma di soavità di míl-  
le odóri — Vî facéa un incógnito  
indistínto.* (Dant. Pur. 7.)

COMECHÈ VÁRIE CÓSE GLI AN-  
DÁSSE PER LO PENSÍERO DI FÁ-  
RE, PÚRE, vedéndo il re, DELIBE-  
RÒ . . . . . (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.)

ÉRA ARRIGÚCCIO, CONTUTTO-  
CHÈ FÓSSE MERCATÁNTE, UN FIÉ-  
RO UÓMO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

A vói STA BÉNE DI COSÌ FÁTTE  
CÓSE, NON CHE GLI AMÍCI, MA  
GLI STRANIÉRI DI RIPIGLIÁRE.  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

IL VÍNO NON SÓLO CONFÓRTA  
IL NATURÁL CALÓRE, MA ANCÓRA  
CHIARÍFICA IL SÁNGVE tórbido.  
(Cresc. 4; 48; 2.)

SPÉRO TROVÁR PIETÀ, NON CHE  
PERDÓNO. (Petr. s. 1.)

Tánte miglídia armáti, a piè e  
a caválla, AVRÉBBERO, con áltro  
cápo, POTÚTO MUÓVER LA GUÉR-  
RA, NON CHE DIFÉNDERSI. (Dav.  
Stor.)

I frútti sòno saníssimi TÁNTO  
CRÚDI, QUÁNTO CÓTTI. (Red.  
lett. 2.)

Dimórano salubreménte in  
quell' ária di collína, TÁNTO MÁ-  
CHI, CHE FÉMMINE. (Lib. Cur.  
Malatt.)

Le détte nazióni ébbero DÚRE,  
ED ÁSPRE BATTÁGLIE. (Gio. Vill.  
b. 6. c. 29.)

"Miserére di me," gridái a lúi,  
— "Quál che tu sii, OD ÓMBRA,  
OD UÓMO CÉRTO." (Dant Inf. 1.)

Oh! had I had even the slight-  
est thought of doing one of those  
things which you say, do you be-  
lieve that God would have assisted  
me?

Nature not only had painted there,  
but of the sweetness of a thousand  
smells had made an unknown, un-  
distinguishable fragrance.

Although it passed through his  
mind to do various things, yet,  
seeing the king, he determined  
. . . . .

Arriguccio, although a mer-  
chant, was a proud man.

It is well for you to reprimand  
for such things, not only your  
friends, but even strangers.

Wine not only assists the natu-  
ral heat, but it clears also the  
turbid blood.

I hope to find not only pardon,  
but pity.

So many thousand armed men,  
on foot and on horseback, would  
have, under another captain, not  
only defended themselves, but  
waged war.

Fruits are very wholesome, both  
raw and cooked.

In that mountain air both men  
and women live in very good  
health.

Said nations had hard and se-  
vere battles,

"Take pity upon me," cried I to  
him, "whatever thou be, whether  
a spirit or a living man."

*Tu vuóì ch' ío rinuovélli —  
Disperáto dolór che il cuór mi  
préme — GIÀ PUR PENSÁNDO, pria  
ch' ío ne favélli. (Dant. Inf. 33.)*

Thou wishest that I should re-  
call the desperate grief, which to  
think of oppresses my heart, before  
I tell it.

*Per mirár la sembiánza di Co-  
lúì, — CH' ANCÓR LASSÙ nel ciél  
VEDÉRE SPÉRA. (Petr. s. 14.)*

In order to see the image of  
Him whom he hopes to see also  
there in heaven.

*LA CÓSA ANDÒ PUR COSÌ. (Bocc.  
g. 2. n. 5.)*

The thing happened just so.

*O'ra FÓSSERO ÉSSI PUR GIÀ  
DISPÓSTI a veníre. (Bocc. Int.)*

Now would that were disposed  
to come.

*ÓRA LE PARÓLE FÚRONO AS-  
sÁI, ed il rammarichío délla dón-  
na gránde. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)*

Now the words were many, and  
the sorrow of the lady great.

### EXERCISE XXV.

The waters, and the air, and the branches, and  
*acqua, áura, rámo,*  
 the little birds, and the fishes; and the flowers, and  
*uccéllò, pése, fióre,*  
 the grass speak of love. | I do not go away |  
*érba parláre amóre. | . non<sup>10</sup> mi<sup>11</sup> allontáno<sup>12</sup> |*  
 neither from (the) Mount Parnassus, nor from the  
*1 2 3 Mònte<sup>4</sup> Parnáso,<sup>5</sup> 6 7 8*  
 Muses. And it appears to me to see with-her la-  
*Músa<sup>9</sup>. 1 . parére<sup>4</sup> 5 vedér<sup>2</sup> 3 dón-*  
 dies and damsels, and they are savins and beech-trees.  
*na donzélla, — éssere abéte fággio.*  
 Neither by message, nor by letter did she dare | to |  
*ambašciáta, léttera — ardíre | di |*  
 | let him know it. | Nimrod was the first king, or  
*| fárglielo sapére. | Nembrótte éssere re,*  
 ruler, or collector (of assemblage) of people.\* I will  
*rettóre, ragunatóre congregazione génte. dí-*

\* People, in the plural — peoples.





will say to you. The cranes | have | only one  
*ragiondre*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>1</sup> | *grù* | *non hánno* |  
leg and one foot. I see, that he wishes, that I  
*gámba* | *piè.* | *vedére,* | *volére,*  
| should do | what — that which, I never — not ever,  
| *fáccia* | — , — <sup>1</sup> <sup>3</sup>,  
wished to do, that is, that I | should relate | (the)  
*volére*<sup>2</sup> | *fáre,* | , | *raccónti* | <sup>1</sup>  
his wickedness.  
<sup>3</sup> *cattività*<sup>2</sup>.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## INTERJECTIONS.

## INTERJECTIONS IN COMMON USE.

<i>Ah!</i>	ah! ha! alas!	<i>ahimè! aimè!</i>	} alas (me)!
<i>eh! e!</i>	eh!	<i>ehimè! eimè!</i>	
<i>ih!</i>	ih!	<i>ohimè! oimè!</i>	
<i>oh! o!</i>	oh! ho!	[ <i>omè!</i>	} alas (thee)!
<i>uh!</i>	uh!	<i>oitè!</i>	
<i>áhi!</i>	ah! alas!	<i>oisè!</i>	alas (him or her)!
<i>éhi!</i>	{ here! ho hey!	<i>guái!</i>	woe!
<i>óhi! ói!</i>	{ ho there!	<i>aiúto!</i>	help!
<i>úhi!</i>	ah! oh!	<i>o Dio!</i>	oh Heavens!
	ah! alas!	<i>lásso!</i>	} alas!
<i>deh!</i>	{ ah! alas! pray!	<i>lásso me!</i>	
	{ pritheel	<i>áhi lásso!</i>	
<i>doh!</i>	oh! pshaw!	<i>póvero me!</i>	} wretched that I am! unfortun- ate that I am! wretched me! poor me!
<i>ah, ah!</i>	ah, ah!	<i>mísero me!</i>	
<i>eh, eh!</i>	eh, eh!	<i>meschíno me!</i>	
<i>oh, oh!</i>	oh, oh!	<i>dolénte me!</i>	
<i>poh!</i>	poh!		
<i>puh! pu!</i>	pu! pooh!	<i>o me beáto!</i>	} happy that I am! happy me!
<i>éia!</i>	halloo!	<i>o me felice!</i>	
<i>olà!</i>	holla! ho there!	<i>beáto me!</i>	
		<i>felice me!</i>	

<i>così !</i>	so ! thus !	<i>álto !</i>	halt !
<i>sì !</i>	} yes, certainly !	<i>sta !</i>	stop !
<i>già !</i>		<i>ohè !</i>	} take care !
<i>púre !</i>	yet !	<i>guárda !</i>	} have care !
<i>cóme !</i>	} how ! how then !	<i>lárgo !</i>	} beware !
		why ? why so !	<i>piáno,</i>
<i>su !</i>	} up, up ! come !	<i>adágio,</i>	} slowly !
<i>orsù !</i>		come then !	<i>zì ! zítto !</i>
<i>su, su !</i>		<i>chéto !</i>	quiet ! still !
<i>vía !</i>		<i>non più !</i>	} enough !
<i>vía, vía !</i>	away !	<i>básta !</i>	
<i>eh vía !</i>	fie ! fie upon !	<i>silénzio !</i>	} silence !
<i>vergógna !</i>	for shame !	<i>tacéte !</i>	
<i>oibò !</i>	o fie ! o fough !	<i>andáte !</i>	away !
<i>ánimo !</i>	} courage !	<i>badáte !</i>	} mind !
<i>corággio !</i>		cheer up !	<i>all' értá !</i>
<i>fáte-cuóre !</i>		<i>státe all' értá !</i>	} beware !
<i>béne !</i>	well !	<i>di grázia !</i>	pray !
<i>brávo !</i>	} bravo !	<i>per carità !</i>	for charity's
		very well !	
<i>buóno !</i>	good !	<i>per amór del cié-</i>	for heaven's
<i>viva !</i>	long live !	<i>lo !</i>	[sake !
<i>eh viva ! evvíva !</i>	huzza !	<i>mercè !</i>	} mercy !
<i>cápperi !</i>	} ay ! heyday !	<i>misericórdia !</i>	
<i>cáppita !</i>		marry !	<i>possibile !</i>
<i>poffáre !</i>		<i>appúnto !</i>	exactly ! just !
<i>oh bélla !</i>	fine !	<i>pensáte !</i>	just think ! *
<i>écco !</i>	lo ! behold !		

The interjections *lásso, póvero, mísero, meschino, beáto (me !)*, are mere *adjectives*, and when used by a *female*, take the *feminine* termination : — *lássá, póvera, mísera (me !)*, &c. ; and in the plural make, *lássí, póveri (nói !)*, &c., for the *masculine* ; and *lássé, póvere (nói !)*, &c. for the *feminine* ; as,

LÁSSA ME ! *in che mal' óra* alas ! in what evil hour was I  
*náccui,* born ;

MÍSERI NÓI ! *che siám, se Id-* miserable that we are ! what  
*dio ci láscia ?* becomes of us, if God for-  
sakes us ?

\* It is important to observe, that, as some of these interjections are used to express *different*, and even *contrary*, emotions or affections of the mind, their exact signification can only be determined by the *sense* of the words which accompany them, or give rise to the exclamation.

*Brávo! zítto! chéto!* are also *adjectives*, and, when used in speaking to a *female*, or to *more than one male or female*, follow the same rule; as,

BRÁVA! *cóme quándo?*                      bravo! as when?  
ZÍTTI, *un pó'!*                                      hush, a little!

*Brávo!* is also used in its superlative, and makes *bravíssimo! bravíssima! bravíssimi! bravíssime*, 'bravissimo!'

EXAMPLES.

Oimè! LÁSSA ME! *dolénte me!*                      Alas! unfortunate that I am!  
IN CHE MAL' ÓRA NÁCQUI. (Bocc.                      in what evil hour was I born.  
g. 7. n. 2.)

MÍSERI NÓI! CHE SIÁM, SE ID-                      Miserable that we are! what be-  
DÍO CI LÁSCIA? (Alf. Saul. 1. 1.)                      comes of us, if God forsakes us.

BRÁVA! *CÓME QUÁNDO?* (Manz.                      Bravo! as when?  
Prom. Spos. c. 1.)

ZÍTTI, UN PÓ'! *ch' elle dórmo-*                      Hush a little! for they are sleep-  
no. (Buon. Fier.)                                      ing.

Many of the foregoing interjections are *elliptical expressions* of, and *equivalent* to, *perfect sentences*; as, *olà*, for instance, which stands for O [*tu, che séi*] LÂ, 'O thou, who art there'; *orsù*, for ÓRA [*lévati or levátevi*] SU, 'now rise up'; *vía*, for [*vá' or andáte*] VÍA; *chéto*, for [*sta or siáte*] CHE'TO, 'be still'; *corággio*, for [*abbii or abbiáte*] CORA'GGIO, 'have courage'; *viva*, for VIVA [*égli or élla lungaménte,*] 'may he or she live long'; *béne*, for [*sta or va*] BE'NE, 'it is well'; *brávo, bráva*, for [*séi or siéte*] BRA'VO, BRA'VA; *oh bélla*, for OH [*quéstà è*] BE'LLA, 'oh this is fine'; &c.; to which may be added *máncó mále*, or *méno mále*, 'less evil,' 'not so bad,' 'better so'; which is often used as an *interjection*, and is equivalent to the phrase [*il*] MA'LE [*è*] MA'NCO, or ME'NO, [*che non*

*sarèbbe stàto, se la còsa fòsse andàta altrimènti,]* ‘the evil is less than if the thing had happened otherwise,’ ‘it is not so bad as if it had happened otherwise,’ ‘better so than otherwise.’

## EXERCISE XXVI.

Ah! how many steps thou locest through the forest!  
*pàsso — pèrdere<sup>4</sup> 1 2 sél-est!*

“Ah!” | said he, | “valiant men, ah! companions, ah! brothers, keep (the) your place.” Alas!  
*va<sup>3</sup>! | dicéa —, | “valènte úomo, com-págno, fratèllo, tenére luógo.” com-*

mercy; for heaven’s sake! Alas! blind ungrateful world!  
*órbo ingràto<sup>2</sup> móndo<sup>1</sup>!*

O! happy souls! Wretched that I am! I have  
*felíce<sup>2</sup> ànima<sup>1</sup>! avére<sup>2</sup>*

loved thee more than (the) my own life. Fie! go  
*amàre<sup>3</sup> 1 — víta. andàre*

on. Is it possible, that thou | art | alive? Marry!  
*óltre. | síi | vívo?*

I recant (myself.) How many tears, alas! have I  
*ridíre<sup>2</sup> 1. lágrima, avére —*

already shed! Woe to you, perverse souls! | never  
*spàrgere! práva<sup>2</sup> ànima<sup>1</sup>! | non is-*

hope | to see the heaven again. Hush! hush! other-  
*peràte mái | vedér ciélo — .*

wise we begin again. Holla! where art thou? Come!  
*— éssere da-cápo. éssere ?*

let us see. Up, up! citizens, let every-one arm himself  
*vedére. cittadino, — 3 armàre<sup>2</sup> 1*

speedily to the defence. Oh! thou art in great haste.  
*velóce difésa. avére — gran frétta.*

Alas! how miserable is (the) our fortune! “The cava-  
*quánto mísero<sup>2</sup> éssere<sup>1</sup> fortúna! 2 cava-*

lier said: "I wish to leave thee, and serve God."  
*liére<sup>3</sup> Dúre<sup>1</sup>: " volére — lasciár — servír Dío."*

The demon replied: "Pshaw! why wishest thou to  
<sup>2</sup> *demónio<sup>3</sup> Rispondere<sup>1</sup>: " volére<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> —*

leave me?" O poor me! (*that*) I | shall never be good  
*lasciáre <sup>1</sup> ? " | non sarò mái piú buó-*

again | | for | any thing. Pray! my friend, why wishest  
*no | | a | <sup>2</sup> amíco<sup>1</sup>, volére*

thou | to give thyself | this trouble? "Alas!" said the  
*entráre in | fatíca? " " díre*

other, "what is that which thou sayest?" Come!  
*" éssere díre? "*

go, I will wait for thee in the house. Away! do  
*andáre, aspettáre<sup>2</sup> — <sup>1</sup> — cása.*

not have any fear, I will carry thee to the house  
*avér — paúra, pónere<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> — cása*

safe and sound. Silence, son, do | not make noise | ;  
*sálvo<sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup> sáno<sup>1</sup>. , figliúolo, — | non far romóre | ;*

let (*the*) thy father sleep. Oh! you make me laugh.  
*lasciáre <sup>2</sup> — genitóre<sup>3</sup> dormíre<sup>1</sup>. fáre<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> ridere.*

He cried out: "Oh, oh!" | at | (*the*) which cry the  
*— Gridáre: " | per | (the) grído*

cranes began to fly. Oh, blind! oh, wretched! oh,  
*grù cominciáre fuggíre. ciéca! !*

foolish man! oh, how infirm thou art! Alas (*him*)!  
*mátto — ! quánto inférmo<sup>2</sup> — éssere<sup>1</sup> ! !*

wretched (*him*)! that the hog had been stolen from  
*! ! pórcó éssere<sup>2</sup> imboláre<sup>3</sup> —*

him — to him. Heyday! how well in tune she is!  
*— <sup>1</sup>. — <sup>3</sup> tuóno<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> stáre<sup>2</sup> !*

Courage, young men, let us assault manly, and with  
*, giòvane, assaltáre viríle,*

cheerful front, these drowsy people. Away, stay there  
*allégro frónte dormiglióne. , —*

with the other dogs.  
*cáne.*

## PART III.

# ITALIAN SYNTAX.



## CHAPTER I.

### ORDER AND POSITION OF WORDS.

WORDS may be arranged in Italian either in the *natural order* of the ideas which they are used to convey; as, *io son ricco, e spendo il mio in metter tavola*, 'I am rich, and spend my money in keeping a good table'; or in a somewhat *different order*, in which *euphony* or *emphasis* is consulted; as, *in quella dimorando, poco o niente potrebbe del suo valor dimostrare* [for *potrebbe dimostrare poco o niente del suo valor, dimorando in quella*], 'He could show little or nothing of his valor, remaining there.' Hence there are *two different constructions*, the one called *simple* or *direct*, the other *inverse* or *indirect*.

#### SIMPLE CONSTRUCTION.

In the *simple construction*, the *subjective* is always put *before the verb*. It is generally a *pronoun*, a *noun*, an *adjective* or a *verb used as a noun*, or a *phrase*; as,

IO amo,

PIÉTRO fugge,

IL BÉLLO piáce,

I love;

Peter flies;

the beautiful pleases;

IL SÚO PARLÁRE mi piácqne sì,	[her speaking] her conversation pleased me so;
CHE TU CON NÓI TI RIMÁN- GA, n' è cáro,	we should be very glad, if thou wouldst remain with us.

The *objective* is put *after the verb*. It is generally a *pronoun*, a *noun*, an *adjective*, a *verb*, or a *phrase*; as,

guardáte ME,	look at me;
ámo GUISCÁRDO,	I love Guiscard;
pérdono IL BÉLLO,	they lose [the beautiful] the beauty;
avéndo compiúto IL SÚO CAN- TÁRE,	having finished her singing;
significò IL FÁTTO CÓME STÁ- VA,	declared the fact as it was.

If the *subjective* or *objective* have an *article*, this article is put *before them*; as,

GLI uómini sóno cápo delle fémmine,	[the] men are the head of wo- men;
IL capitáno cádde, e sconciós- si IL piéde,	the captain fell, and sprained [the foot] his foot.

The *adjectives* belonging to the *subjective* and *objective* are put immediately *after them*; as,

gli scolári MORIGERÁTI e DI- LIGÉNTI stúdiáno,	the well-behaved and diligent scholars study;
il maéstro prémia gli scolári ATTÉNTI e STUDIÓSI,	the master rewards the atten- tive and studious scholars.

*Any other word* which is *dependent* on the *subjective* or *objective* is also put immediately *after them*; as,

la virtù DI PÁOLO fu rico- noscíuta,	the virtue of Paul was ac- knowledged;
riconoscéva néi descendéti la virtù DEL PÁDRE,	it acknowledged in the de- scendants the virtue [of the father] of their father.

The *relative pronoun* is put *after its antecedent*; as,



*Lo scoláre, il QUÁLE nascóso* the scholar, *who* had concealed  
*éra,* himself.

The *adverb* is put immediately *after the verb*, which it modifies ; as,

*áma ARDENTEMÉnte la gló-* he loves glory *ardently.*  
*ria,*

The *preposition* is put *before the word*, which it governs ; as,

*DI sélva IN sélva DAL crudél* she flies *from* wood to wood to  
*s' invóla,* avoid the pursuit of the ferocious animal.

The *conjunction* is put *between those parts of a sentence*, which it connects ; as,

*gli augellétti, E i pésci, E i* the little birds, *and* the fishes,  
*fióri, E l' érba,* and the flowers, *and* the  
grass.

The *interjection* has no fixed place, it having no intrinsic relation to the other words ; it is, however, generally put at the beginning of the phrase ; as,

*OHIMÉ! che è quéllo, che tu* alas! what is that you say?  
*dí'?*

## EXAMPLES.

*ÍO SÓNO RÍCCO, E SPÉNDO IL* I am rich, and spend my money  
*MÍO IN MÉTTER TÁVOLA, ed onó-* in keeping a good table to enter-  
*ro i miéi concittadíni.* (Bocc. g. tain my fellow-citizens.  
9. n. 9.)

*IN QUÉLLA DIMORÁNDÓ, POCO* He could show little or nothing  
*O NIÉNTE POTRÉBBE DEL SÚO* of his valor, remaining there.  
*VALÓR DIMOSTRÁRE.* (Bocc. g.  
10. n. 1.)

*ÍO ho amáto, e ÁMO GUISCÁR-* I have loved, and love Guis-  
*DO.* (Bocc. g. n. 1.) card.

*PIÉTRO Boccamázza FÚGGE con* Peter Boccamazza flies away  
*l' Agnolélla, e truóva ladróni.* with Agnolella, and meets with  
(Bocc. 5. n. 3.) thieves.

IL BÉLLO PIÁCE *úgli ócchi*, e si ammíra. (Vas.)

The beautiful pleases the eyes, and is admired.

E' L SÚO PARLÁRE, e' l *bél viso*, e le *chióme* MI PIÁCQUER SÌ, *ch'io l' ho dinánzi úgli ócchi*. (Petr. c. 7.)

And her conversation, and her beautiful face, and her hair pleased me so, that I have her before my eyes.

CHE TU CON NOI TI RIMÁN-GA *per quésta séra*, n' È CÁRO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

We should be very glad, if thou wouldst remain to-night with us.

GUARDÁTE ME, *che son di vísta píva*. (Pign. Fav.)

Look at me, that am deprived of sight.

Le *dónne*, *quándo arrívano a quaránta ánni*, PÉRDONO IL BÉLLO *délla gioventúdi*, e *acquéstano il bello matronále*. (Lib. Adorn. Donn.)

Women, when they arrive to the age of forty, lose the beauty of youth, and acquire that of matrons.

AVÉNDÓ *già compíúto la bella níffa* IL SÚO CANTÁRE. (Bocc. Am.)

The beautiful nymph having finished her singing.

A *lúí* si *raccomandò*, e SIGNIFICÒ IL FÁTTO CÓME STÁVA. (Ser. Giov. Fior. Pecor.)

He recommended himself to him, and declared the fact as it was.

GLI UÓMINI SÓNO DÉLLE FÉM-MINE CÁPO, e *sénza l' órdine lóro ráde vólte riésce alcúna nóstra ópera a laudévol fine*. (Bocc. Intr.)

Men are the head of women, and without their management it seldom happens that any undertaking of ours succeeds well.

IL CAPITÁNO CÁDDE, E SCONCIÓSSI IL PIÉDE *in fórma*, *che non potè stáre in píedi*. (Matt. Vill. 9. 11.)

The captain fell, and sprained his foot in such a manner, that he could stand no more.

GLI SCOLÁRI MORIGERÁTI E DILIGÉNTI STÚDIANO. (Cort. Osserv.)

The well-behaved and diligent scholars study.

IL MAÉSTRO PRÉMIA GLI SCOLÁRI ATTÉNTI E STUDIÓSI. (Buom. Ling. Tosc.)

The master rewards the attentive and studious scholars.

LA VIRTÙ DI PÁOLO FU *debitaménte* RICONOSCIÚTA. (Cavalc.)

The virtue of Paul was duly acknowledged.

Ma la *ricordévol pátria* RICONOSCÉVA NÉ' DISCENDÉNTI LA VIRTÙ DEL PÁDRE. (Bott. Stor. Am. 1. 9.)

But the grateful country acknowledged in the descendants the virtues of their father.

LO SCOLÁRE, IL QUÁLE, *in sul fáre délla nótte, col súo fánte, préssó délla torrétta,* NASCÓSO ÉRA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

The scholar, who, when it grew night, had concealed himself, with his servant, near the small tower.

Piétro ÁMA ARDENTEMÉnte LA GLÓRIA. (Cort. Osserv.)

Peter loves glory ardently.

DI SÉLVA IN SÉLVA DAL CRU- DÉL S' INVÓLA. (Ariost. Fur. 1. 34.)

She flies from wood to wood to avoid the pursuit of the ferocious animal.

L' ácque párlan d' amóre, e l' áura, e i rámi, — E GLI AUGEL- LÉTTI, E I PÉSCI, E I FIÓRI, E L' ÉRBA; — *Tútti insiéme pre- gándo ch' é' sempr' ámi.* (Petr. s. 239.)

The waters speak of love, and the air, and the boughs, and the little birds, and the fishes, and the flowers, and the grass; entreating all together that I should always love.

OIMÈ! CHE È QUELLO, CHE TU DÍ? (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

Alas! what is it you say?

---

#### INVERSE CONSTRUCTION.

With regard to *inverse construction* no certain rules can be established, it *varying* according to the *taste* and *ear* of the speaker or writer. It can only be said, that in this construction the *subjective* may be put *after the verb*; as,

chiése L' IMPERATÓRE álla *the Emperor* asked of the Diet  
Diéta tremila caválli, three thousand horses;

présemi allóra LA MÍA SCÓR- then *my guide* took me by the  
TA per máno, hand.

The *objective* may be put *before the verb*; as,

s'ingégnano IL LÓRO TÉMPÓ they endeavour to pass away  
di consumáre, *their time*;

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE hánnó né' ló- they have *large beasts* in their  
ro bóschi, woods.

The *adjectives* belonging to the *subjective* or the *objective*, may be put *before them*; as,

*quantúnque fósse tÓNDO e* although he was a foolish man.  
GRÓSSO uómo,

The other words dependent on the subjective or objective, may also be put before them ; as,

*il [DI] cúi nóme éra Efige-* whose name was Ephigenia.  
*nia,*

The adverb may be put before the verb, which it modifies ; as,

PIETOSAMÉNTE *il chiamáva,* she did call him with a lamentable voice.

The preposition may be put after the word, which it governs ; as,

*io TI verrò APPRÉSSO,* I will come after thee.

#### EXAMPLES.

CHIÉSE L' IMPERATÓRE ÁLLA  
DIÉTA, *per tále imprésa, TREMÍ-*  
*LA CAVÁLLI, e sedicimila fánti.*  
(Mach. lett.)

The Emperor asked of the Diet, for such an undertaking, three thousand horses, and sixteen thousand foot-soldiers.

PRÉSEMI ALLÓRA LA MÍA SCÓR-  
TA PER MÁNO. (Dant. Inf. 13.)

Then my guide took me by the hand.

S' INGÉGNANO IL LÓRO TÉMPO  
DI CONSUMÁRE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

They endeavour to pass away their time.

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE HÁNNO NÉ' LÓ-  
RO BÓSCI. (Dav. Germ.)

They have large beasts in their woods.

QUANTÚNQUE FÓSSSE TÓNDO E  
GRÓSSO UÓMO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

Although he was a foolish man.

IL CÚI NÓME ÉRA EFIGENÍA.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

Whose name was Ephigenia.

*Assái vólte, la nótte,* PIETOSA-  
MÉNTE IL CHIAMÁVA. (Bocc. g.  
4. n. 5.)

A great many times, during the night, did she call him with a lamentable voice.

*Or vía ! méttiti avánti, io TI*  
VERRÒ APPRÉSSO. (Bocc. g. 2.  
n. 5.)

Come ! walk before, I will come after thee.

These inversions are very common in Italian, and add great expression and beauty to the phrase; but in using them we must always consult euphony. A learner ought never to avail himself of such liberties, until, by a competent knowledge of the language, and a long perusal of the classics, he be able to appreciate their value and to make use of them with propriety.

## EXERCISE XXVII.

Rome was full of funerals, the capitol of victims.  
*Róma piéno mortório; campidóglío víttima.*

I routed three legions, and three lieutenants. This house  
*atterráre legióne, legáto. cása*

is built | on | a high situation; it has gar-  
*fabbricáre | in | eminente<sup>2</sup> síto<sup>1</sup>; — avére giar-*

dens, it has groves, it has plains and hills. The  
*díno, — bósko, — pianúra collína.*

conversation of Montanus pleased so-much the sen-  
*parláre Montáno piacére sená-*

ate, that Elvidius Priscus hoped | to | be able to  
*to; Elvidio Prisco speráre | di | potére ab-*

conquer even Marcellus. Many wives have spoiled  
*báttere Marcélló. <sup>2</sup> móglie<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> guastáre*

(the) their husbands. He made him dress nobly.  
*— maríto. — fáre<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> vestíre<sup>4</sup> nóbile<sup>3</sup>.*

Fulvius, who had been consul, and had already | tri-  
*Fúlvio, — — éssere cónsole, — — tri-*

umphed over the | Gauls, the most illustrious of (the)  
*onfatóre dé<sup>2</sup> | Gállo, illústre*

thy followers, was killed by the Patricians in a bath  
*segúcce, uccídere Pádre bágno*

together with a son | of his | as beautiful as innocent.  
*figliuólo<sup>2</sup> | — <sup>1</sup> | — leggiádرو innocénte.*

There came a merchant | of Cyprus, | much beloved  
 — *Venire mercatante* | *Cipriano*, | <sup>3</sup> *amdre*<sup>4</sup>

by him. Thou seest, that it is useless to pray  
<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *vedere*, — *inútile* — —

and to weep — (the praying and the weeping.)  
 — — — *pregare* *piangere*.

Nothing else has been left to me of the inherit-  
<sup>8</sup> — *essere*<sup>11</sup> — *rimanere*<sup>9</sup> <sup>10</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *eredi-*  
*ance* of (the) my ancestors, except (the) my honor;  
<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>7</sup> <sup>12</sup> <sup>13</sup> — *onestà*;

and that I intend | to | guard, and | to | preserve  
<sup>2</sup> *intendere*<sup>1</sup> | *di* | *guardare*, | *di* | *servare*

as long as I live — (the life will last to me).  
 — — — *durare*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>

To be contented — (the being contented) | with | (the)  
 — — — *essere contento* | *di* |

his own condition, to moderate (the) excessive desires,  
*proprio stato*, *moderare* *sovérchio*<sup>2</sup> *desiderio*<sup>1</sup>,

not to allow himself neither to be transported | by |  
*lasciare* — *trasportare* | *ad* |

excessive joy in (the) prosperities, nor to be overcome  
*eccessivo gioia* *prosperità*, — *abbattere*

| by | (the) misfortunes, form the character of a wise  
 | *in* | *disgrazia*, *formare* *carattere* *saggio*<sup>2</sup>

man. He could not appease the angry mother with  
*uómo*<sup>1</sup>. — *potere*<sup>5</sup> <sup>4</sup> *attutare*<sup>6</sup> <sup>1</sup> *irato*<sup>2</sup> *madre*<sup>3</sup>

any act of generosity. Plato asserts, that in  
*niuno* — — *larghezza*. *Platone*<sup>2</sup> *Affermare*<sup>1</sup>, —

literary disputes — (in (the) disputes of (the) letters)  
 — — — *disputazione* *lettera*

it is more useful to be conquered — (the being  
 — *utile* — — — *essere*

conquered) than to conquer.  
*vincere* *vincere*.

## CHAPTER II.

## CONCORDANCE OR AGREEMENT OF WORDS.

## CONCORDANCE OF ARTICLES.

ARTICLES agree with nouns, in gender and number ;  
as,

IL fratéllo, LA sorélla,	the brother, the sister ;
LI pádri, LE mádri,	the fathers, the mothers ;
LA dóna, IL marito,	the wife, the husband ;
I figliuóli,	the children.

## EXAMPLES.

*L' un fratéllo l' áltro abbandona, e LA SORÉLLA IL FRATÉLLO, e spésse vólte LA DÓNNA IL SÚO MARÍTO.* (Bocc. Intr.) One brother abandoned the other, and the sister the brother, and oftentimes the wife her husband.

*E che maggiór cosa è, LI PÁDRI e LE MÁDRI, I FIGLIUÓLI di visitáre e di servíre schivávano.* (Bocc. Intr.) And what is more, the fathers and the mothers shunned to visit and serve their children.

## CONCORDANCE OF ADJECTIVES.

*Adjectives*, as we have already observed at p. 63, are to agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

uómo DÓTTO, buóNA GÉNTE,	a learned man, good people ;
BÉLLE dónNE, LEGGIÁDRI fanciúlli,	fair women, pretty youths.

Adjectives are also to agree with *personal, conjunctive, and relative pronouns*, in *gender and number* ; as,

IO (fem.) <i>son VIVA,</i>	I am alive ;
VOI (MASC.) <i>siéte LONTÁNI,</i>	you are far ;
VI (fem.) <i>láscio LÍBERA di Nicolúccio,</i>	I leave you at the disposal of Nicoluccio ;
<i>per rendérci (MASC.) FÓRTI ed INVINCÍBILI,</i>	to make us strong and invincible ;
<i>quándo LA vídero SÓLA,</i>	when they saw her alone ;
<i>li QUÁLI érano mótto LÚNGHI,</i>	which were very long.

When *two or more substantives singular* of the *same gender* come together, the *adjectives* belonging to them are put in the *plural*, agreeing with a noun of the *same gender* understood ; as,

LÍCIA e CALLÍMACO [quésti dúe indivídui] <i>sóno RÍCCHI,</i>	Lycias and Callimachus [ <i>these two individuals</i> ] are rich ;
MARÍA e LUCÍA [quéste dúe fanciúlle] <i>sóno PÓVERE,</i>	Mary and Lucy [ <i>these two girls</i> ] are poor.

If the substantives are of *different genders* or *different numbers*, the adjectives are put in the *plural*, agreeing with a *masculine noun* understood ; as,

IL PÁDRE e LA MÁDRE <i>délla Lísa, CONTÉNTI, fécero grandíssima fésta,</i>	the father and the mother of Lisa, both glad, expressed very great joy ;
LA CÓRTE TÚTTA, I SOVRÁNI <i>sóno sommaménte CONTÉNTI,</i>	the whole court, the sovereigns are well satisfied.

#### EXCEPTION.

If, however, one of the substantives is *preceded* by the preposition *con*, 'with,' 'in company with' ; then the *adjective* or *participle* used as an *adjective*, may agree either with the *other substantive*, or with a *noun* in the *plural* understood ; as,

<i>esséndosi DIONÉO con gli álti giovani MÉSSO a giocáre,</i>	Dioneo and the other youths having set themselves to play ;
<i>esséndosi LA DÓNNA COL GIÓVANE PÓSTI a távola,</i>	the lady and the young man having sat down to table.



When there are in a phrase *several substantives* of *different gender* and *different number*, separated from their adjective by a *verb* either *expressed* or *understood*; the *adjective* is put in the *plural*, agreeing with a *masculine* noun understood; as,

LE mie CÁSE ed I LUÓGHI my houses and the public pla-  
púbblíci di Róma, SON PIÉ- ces of Rome are filled with  
NI d' antiche immáginí, ancient images;

IL PÁDRE di léi e LA MÁDRE, both her father and her mother,  
[esséndo] DOLORÓSI di [being] grieved at this acci-  
quésto accidénte, l' alávano, dent, relieved her.

If several *names of inanimate beings* occur in the same phrase, and they are *not separated* from their adjective by a *verb*; this *adjective* agrees with the *nearest* noun;\* as,

onóri e GLÓRIA NUÓVA, new honors and glory;  
con bárba e CRÍNI BAGNÁTI, with a dripping beard and hair;  
l' úna e l' ÁLTRA MAN MÓZZA, both hands cut off.

The adjective agrees also with the *nearest* noun, when there are in the same phrase *several substantives*, and the *quality* expressed by that adjective is *affirmed* or *denied* to belong, *successively* or *alternatively*, to *either* of them; as,

Piétro o MARÍA è MÓRTA, either Peter or Mary is dead;  
nè Francésca, nè GIOVÁNNI neither Frances nor John has  
non è PARTÍTO, gone;  
un tizzo, un carbóne, ÚNA a brand, a coal, a spark might  
FAVÍLLA è ÁTTA ad appic- set fire.  
cár fuóco,

\*. Contrary to this rule is the following example in Boccaccio:

Se cosí gridáto avéste, élla avrébbe cosí If you had cried out so, it (the crane)  
L' A' LTRA CO' SCIA, e l' áltro pié fuór would have likewise put out the other  
MANDA' TA. (G. 6. n. 4.) leg and the other foot.

## EXCEPTIONS.

An adjective accompanied with a substantive *feminine* applicable to a man, is put in the *masculine* gender ; as,

LA PERSÓNA *quándo é* TRIBOLÁ- when a person is afflicted ;  
TO,

QUÉLLA BÉSTIA [di Tófano] *é* that stupid ass [Tofano] was dis-  
*pur* DISPÓSTO, posed.

The adjective *mézzo*, 'half,' when it *precedes* a substantive, *agrees* with it in *gender* ; but when it *follows*, it remains *invariable* ; as,

*in súlla* MÉZZA NÓTTE, about midnight ;

*úna líbbra e* MÉZZO di castróne, one pound and a half of mutton ;

*ventitrè e* MÉZZO caráti, twenty-three carats and a half.

The adjective *sálvo*, signifying 'except' ; remains *invariable* ; as,

SÁLVO la Márca Trivigiána, except the Trevisan March ;

SÁLVO *quéli delle case eccettu- except those of the families ex-  
áte per* Ghibellini, cluded as Ghibellines.

## EXAMPLES.

UÓMO DÓTTO *delle Scrittúre.* A man learned in Holy Writ.  
(Cavalc. Att. Apost. 113.)

NÁTA di BUÓNA e virtuósa BORN of good and virtuous peo-  
GÉNTE. (Ariost. Fur. 18. 82.) ple.

QUÁNTE BÉLLE DÓNNE, *quánti* How many fair women, how  
LEGGIÁDRI FANCIÚLLI, *la séra* many pretty youths, the coming  
*vegnénte, nell' áltro móndo ce-* evening, supped in the other  
*nárono con li lóro passáti!* (Bocc. world with their departed friends !  
Intr.)

ÍO SON VÍVA, *la Dio mercè.* I am alive, thank God.  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 9.)

CONSIDERÁNDO, *che vói siéte* Considering, that you are far  
*dalle vóstre dónne LONTANI.* from your wives.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

MADÓNNA, *omái da ógni pro-* Madam, I free you from all your  
*méssa fáttami ío vi assólvo, e LÍ-* promises to me, and I leave you at  
*BERA VI LÁSCIO DI NICOLÚCCIO.* the disposal of Nicoluccio.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 4.)

*Ègli viène ad unìre la súa pos-  
sánza còlla nòstra debolezza, PER  
RÉNDERCI FÓRTI ED INVINCÍBILI.  
(Gang.)*

He comes to unite his strength  
with our weakness, to make us  
strong and invincible.

*Li quáli, QUÁNDO LA VÍDERO  
SÓLA, dissero. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)*

Who, when they saw her alone,  
said.

*Alessádro, levátosi presta-  
mènte, con tútto che i pánni del  
mórto avésse indósso, LI QUÁLI  
ÉRANO MÓLTO LÚNGHI, pure andò  
via altresì. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)*

Alexander, getting up quickly,  
although he was dressed in the  
clothes of the deceased, which  
were very long, went away like-  
wise.

*Messér LÍCIA E CALLÍMACO  
SON RÍCCHI. (Mach. Com.)*

Messer Lycias and Messer Cal-  
limachus are rich.

*Ma MARÍA E LUCÍA SÓNO PÓ-  
VERE. (Mach. Com.)*

But Mary and Lucy are poor.

*Perdicóne, e 'L PÁDRE E LA  
MÁDRE DÉLLA LÍSA, ed élla al-  
tresì CONTÉNTI, GRANDÍSSIMA  
FÉSTA FÉCERO. (Bocc. g. 10.  
n. 7.)*

Perdicone, and the father and  
the mother of Lisa, and herself, all  
glád, expressed great joy.

*Doveváte dírmì, che LA CÓRTE  
TÚTTA, che I SOVRÁNI SÓNO SOM-  
MAMÉTE CONTÉNTI. (Metast.  
lett.)*

You ought to have told me, that  
the whole court, and the sove-  
reigns are well satisfied.

*ESSÉNDOSI DIONÉO CON GLI ÀL-  
TRI GIÓVANI MÉSSO A GIUCÁRE.  
(Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)*

Dioneo and the other youths  
having set themselves to play.

*ESSÉNDOSI LA DÓNNA COL GIÓ-  
VANE PÓSTI A TÁVOLA per cenàre.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)*

The lady and the young man  
having sat down to supper.

*LE MÍE CÁSE ED I LUÓGHI PÚB-  
BLICI DI RÓMA SON PIÉNI D' AN-  
TÍCHE IMMÁGINI dé' miéi mag-  
gióri. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)*

My houses and the public places  
of Rome are filled with ancient im-  
ages of my ancestors.

*IL PÁDRE DI LÉI E LA MÁDRE,  
DOLORÓSI DI QUÉSTO ACCIDÉNTE,  
in ciò che si potéva, L' ATÁVANO.  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 7.)*

Both her father and her mother,  
grieved at that accident, did all in  
their power to relieve her.

*E còsa manifestíssima, che óg-  
gi non viène in consùlta se ha  
a rifiutàre l' occasione d' acqui-  
stàre ONÓRI E GLÓRIA NUÓVA.  
(Guicc.)*

It is a manifest thing, that none  
comes now to a consultation  
whether he is to refuse the oppor-  
tunity of gaining new honors and  
glory.

*L' Océano si farà d'alla destra,*  
*un omaccione* CON BÀRBA E CRÍ-  
 NI BAGNÁTI. (Ann, Car. lett.)

As for the Ocean, it is to be  
 re;resented on the right, as a  
 large man with a dripping beard  
 and hair.

*Ed un, che avéa l' úNA E*  
*L' ÁLTRA MAN MÓZZA,* — *Disse.*  
 (Dant. Inf. 28.)

And one, who had both hands  
 cut off, said.

PIÉTRO O MARÍA È MÓRTA.  
 (Mach. Com.)

Either Peter or Mary is dead.

NÈ FRANCÉSICA NÈ GIOVÁNNI  
 NON È PARTÍTO. (Buon. Tanc.)

Neither Frances nor John has  
 gone.

UN TÍZZO, UN CARBÓNE, ÚNA  
 FAVÍLLA È ÁTTA AD APPICCÁR  
 FUÓCO. (Cavalc.)

A brand, a coal, a spark might  
 set fire.

LA PERSÓNA QUÁNDO È TRIBO-  
 LÁTO *si dice e pènsa, che Iddio*  
*P' ábbia in ódio.* (Fra. Giord.  
 Pred.)

When a person is afflicted, peo-  
 ple say and believe God hates  
 him.

*Li prièghi non giovavano al-*  
*cuna cosa, perchè* QUÉLLA BÉS-  
 TIA ÉRA PUR DISPÓSTO *a volére*  
 . . . . . (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

Entreaties were of no use, be-  
 cause that stupid ass [Tofano]  
 was disposed to wish . . . . .

Viéntene IN SÚLLA MÉZZA  
 NÓTTE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

Come about midnight.

Tógli ÚNA LÍBBRA E MÉZZO DI  
 CASTRÓNE. (Burch. p. 2. s. 1.)

Take a pound and a half of  
 mutton.

LA monéta di VENTITRÈ E MÉZ-  
 ZO CARÁTI. (Giov. Vill. l. 8.  
 c. 58.)

The coins of twenty-three ca-  
 rats and a half.

*Rendégli la Signoría di Lom-*  
*bardia,* SALVO LA MÁRCA TRIVI-  
 GIÁNA. (Giov. Vill. l. 3. c. 5.)

He restored to him the Signo-  
 ry of Lombardy, except the Tre-  
 visan March.

*Fénero órdine e decreto, che*  
*ciascúno potésse uscìre dal bándo,*  
 SÁLVO QUÉLLI DÉLLE CÁSE EC-  
 CETTUÁTE PER GHIBELLÍNI.  
 (Giov. Vill. l. 6.)

They ordained and decreed, that  
 every one could return from ban-  
 ishment, except those of the fam-  
 ilies excluded as Ghibellines.

CONCORDANCE OF NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

*Numeral* adjectives agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

<i>Platóné vivétte</i> OTTANTÚNO ÁNNO,	Plato lived eighty-one years ;
<i>páre descéndere áltre</i> NOVANTÚNA RUÓTA,	he seems to descend ninety-one more circles ;
<i>il TÉRZO GIÓRNO dall' apparizióne déi sopradétti ségni,</i>	the third day after the appearance of the abovementioned symptoms ;
<i>in quéi PRÍMI GIÓRNI, vi volò sópra la tésta un' áquila,</i>	in those first days, an eagle flew over your head.

EXAMPLES.

*Abbiámo di PLATÓNE, che éssó VIVÉTTE OTTANTÚNO ANNO.* (Dant. Conv.) They say that Plato lived eighty-one years.

*Póì per la medésima vía PÁRE DESCÉNDERE ÁLTRE NOVANTÚNA RUÓTA.* (Dant. Conv.) Then he seems to descend ninety-one more circles by the same way.

*Ánzi quási tútti, ínfrá IL TÉRZO GIÓRNO DALL' APPARIZIÓNE DÉI SOPRADÉTTI SÉGNI, morívano.* (Bocc. Intr.) Nay almost all died the third day after the appearance of the abovementioned symptoms.

*E che IN QUÉI PRÍMI GIÓRNI, di sul mónte délla Trinità, VI VOLÒ SÓPRA LA TÉSTA UN' ÁQUILA.* (Bemb.) And that in those first days, on the mountain of the Trinity, an eagle flew over your head.

CONCORDANCE OF PRONOUNS.

*Adjective pronouns* agree with their *substantives*, in gender and number ; as,

*tenéte QUÉSTO DENÁRO,* take this money ;

*non rimarrébbe a sostenér* there would not remain any  
 NESSÚNA PÉNA, punishment to suffer.

## EXCEPTION.

The pronoun *tutto*, preceded by the preposition *per*, 'through'; remains *invariable*; as,

*per TÚTTO Róma;*

[through all *or*] all over Rome;

*per TÚTTO la cása,*

all over the house.

*Possessive pronouns agree with the thing possessed, and not with the possessor; as,*

*Mónna Giovánna sen' andá-* Monna Giovanna used to go  
*va con quéstó súo FI-* with this son of hers;  
 GLIUÓLO,

*Frescò avéva úna SÚA NEPÓ-* Frescò had a niece.  
 TE,

The *relative pronoun quále*, 'which'; agrees with its *antecedent*, in *gender and number*; as,

*quél CUÓRE, IL QUÁLE la lié-* that heart, which propitious  
*ta fortuna non avéa potúto* fortune had not been able to  
*aprire,* move.

If the antecedent consists of *two or more nouns of different gender or number*, the *relative quále* agrees with the *nearest noun*; as,

*la virtù è l' ONÓRE DEL QUÁ-* the virtue and honor with  
 LE è dotáta, which she is endowed;

*I QUÁLI TÉMPJ e cappéllé ri-* which temples and chapels he  
*empiè di paraménti,* filled with ornaments.

## EXAMPLES.

*Signóra, TENÉTE QUÉSTO DE-*  
 NÁRO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 1.)

Madam, take this money.

*Che NON RIMARRÉBBE A SOS-*  
 TENÉR PÉNA NESSÚNA *nel purga-*  
*tório per gli peccáti.* (Pass.)

That there would not remain  
 in purgatory any punishment to  
 suffer for sins.

SÓNO STÁTO PER TÚTTO RÓMA.  
— L' ho cercáto PER TÚTTO LA  
CÁSA. (Salv. Avvert. vol. 1. l. 3.)

I have been all over Rome. —  
I have looked for it all over the  
house.

MÓNNA GIOVÁNNA CON QUÉSTO  
SÚO. FIGLIUÓLO SEN' ANDÁVA. *in*  
*contádo.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Monna Giovanna used to go  
into the country with this son of  
hers.

Úno, che si chiamò FRESCÒ,  
AVÉVA ÚNA SÚA NEPÓTE. (Bocc.  
g. 6. n. 8.)

A certain man, called Frescò,  
had a niece.

QUÉL CUÓRE, IL QUÁLE LA LIÉ-  
TA FORTÚNA DI GIRÓLAMO NON  
AVÉA POTÚTO APRÍRE, *la miséria*  
*l' apérse.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 8.)

That heart, which the propitious  
fortune of Jerome had not been  
able to open, was opened by his  
misery.

LA VIRTÙ E L' ONÓRE DEL  
QUÁLE È DOTÁTA. (Bocc. g. 5.  
n. 6.)

The virtue and honor with which  
she is endowed.

Óltre di quέsto, féce fáre altári  
*e cappéle splendidissime,* I QUÁLI  
TÉMPJ E CAPPÉLLE RIEMPIÈ DI  
PARAMÉNTI. (Mach. Stor. Fior.  
l. 7.)

Besides that, he caused very  
splendid altars and chapels to be  
built, which temples and chapels  
he filled with ornaments.

---

CONCORDANCE OF VERBS.

*Verbs* are to agree with their *subjectives*, either *expressed* or *understood*, in *number* and *person*; as,

ío ti CONSOLERÒ,

I will gratify thee;

vói non UDÍSTE,

you did not hear;

[ío] BRÁMO *la mórte,*

I desire death.

When the *subjective* consists of *several* nouns, which *all concur* simultaneously to *perform the action* of the verb, the verb *agrees* with a *noun* in the *plural* understood; as,

CONSÍGLIO e RAGIÓNE [quέ-  
ste dúc cóse] CONDÚCONO  
*la vittória,*

advice and reason [*these two*  
*things*] lead to victory;

<p>CALANDRÍNO, BRÚNO, e BUF- FALMÁCCO [questi tre sog- gétti] VÁNNO cercándo di trovár l' elitrópia, nè LA SÚA PARTÍTA, nè LA SÚA LÚNGA DIMÓRA, nè LA SVENTURÁTA-SÚA MÓRTE, me l' HÁNNO POTÚTO trár- re dal cubre,</p>	<p>Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffal- macco [<i>these three persons</i>] go in search of the helio- trope;* neither his departure, nor his long absence, nor his la- mentable death, has been able to take him out of my heart.</p>
--	---

When there are in a phrase *several subjectives*, and these are of two or more *different persons*; as, *io e tu*, 'I and thou'; *tu ed égli*, 'thou and he'; &c., the verb agrees with a *personal pronoun* in the *plural* understood.

Thus, if one of the subjectives is *io*, 'I'; the pronoun understood with which the verb will agree, is *nói*, 'we'; if one of the subjectives is *tu*, and *io* is not one of the others, the pronoun understood is *vói*, 'you'; and if the subjectives are all of the *third* person, the pronoun understood is *églino*, *élleno*, or *éssi*, 'they'; as, †

<p>TU dall' ún láto e STÉCCHI dall' áltro [vói].mi VERRÉTE SOSTENÉNDÓ, cóme sái tu, chi MÍO MARÍTO o ío [nói] ci SIÁMO? ÉGLI e ÉLLA [éssi] CENÁRONO un póco di cárne saláta, TU, ÉGLI, SÍRO, e ÍO [nói] PI- GLIERÁMO úno per . . . . . vorréi che VÓI o ÉGLINO mi DI- CÉSTE,</p>	<p>thou on one side and Stecchi on the other [<i>you</i>] will support me; how dost thou know who my hus- band and I [<i>we</i>] are? he and she [<i>they</i>] supped on a lit- tle salt beef; thou, he, Cyrus, and I [<i>we</i>] will take a man for . . . . . I wish that either you or they would tell me.</p>
--	---

If the subjective consists of *several* nouns, and the *action of the verb* can be performed, either successively or

\* A kind of precious stone, which was believed to possess the virtue of rendering invisible the persons who carried it about them. — See Dant. Inf. 24; Bocc. g. 8. n. 3; Franc. Sacch. Op. Div. 93.

† There are two examples in Dante in which this rule appears to have been disregarded for the sake of rhyme:

*Tósto che IL DU'CA ed ío nel légno*  
FU'Í. (Dant. Inf. 8.)

*Dé' quái nè ío, nè IL DU'CA MÍo*  
s' ACCO'RSE. (Dant. Inf.)

but such licenses are not to be followed.

As soon as my leader and I entered in  
the boat;

Of whom neither I nor my leader was  
aware:



alternatively, by *either of them*, the *verb agrees* with the *nearest noun* ; as,

MUÓVASI LA CAPRÁIA e la Gorgóna,	may Capraia and Gorgona rise from their foundations ;
quál fortúna o DESTÍNO quag- giù ti MÉNA ?	what fortune or destiny brings thee here below ?
non Cinna, non SÍLLA SI- GNOREGGIÒ lungaménte,	neither Cinna nor Sylla ruled long.

Sometimes one of the nouns, which form the subjective of the verb, is a *word* which in itself *includes* the *signification* of all the *others*, and then the verb *agrees* directly with *this word* ; as,

nè vói, nè ÁLTRI mi. POTRÀ più dire ch' io non l' ábbia vedúta,	neither you nor any other one will be able to tell me any longer that I have not seen it ;
nè pióggia cadúta, nè ácqua gittáta, nè ÁLTRO UMIDÓRE gli SPEGNÉVA,	neither the rain which had fal- len, nor the water which they threw on it, nor any other wet thing extinguished them.

If the subjective consists of two nouns, the one of which is, as it were, a *part* of the other which expresses the *whole*, the verb *agrees* with the *whole*, and not with the part ; as,

la maggiór pártte dé' SUÓI só- NO mórti,	the greater part of his friends are dead ;
úna infinitù di STROMÉNTI FÚRONO preparáti,	a great number of instruments were prepared.

Sometimes the noun expressing the *whole* is *understood* ; as,

la maggiór partita [di indi- vidúi] FÚRONO mórti,	the greater part [of the indi- viduals] were killed.
--	---

When the subjective is a *collective* noun, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; \* as,

perchè QUÉL PÓPOLO È sì ém- pio?	why is that people so fell?
m' APPARÌ ÚNA GÉNTE d' á- nime,	a troop of spirits appeared to me ;
VENÌA MAGGIÓR FRÓTTA di Románi,	there came a greater crowd of Romans.

If the subjective is a *verb used as a noun*, or a *phrase*, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; as,

IL VOLÉRE SOTTOMÉTTERE LE MIE FÓRZE A GROSSÍSSIMI PÉSÌ, m' È agiòne di qué- sta infermità,	the wish to oppose my strength to very heavy burdens is the occasion of this weakness.
---	--

Sometimes the subjective of the verb is *represented* by the *relative* pronoun *che*, 'who,' 'which'; and then the verb *agrees* with the *noun* or *pronoun*, *represented* by *che*; either *expressed* or *understood*; † as,

I' son Beatrice che ti FÁCCIO andáre,	I am Beatrice, who bids thee to go ;
--	---

\* Instances may be quoted from the classics, however, in which the *verb* is put in the *plural*; as,

L' ènno che QUE'LLA GE'NTE allór CAN- TA'RO. (Dant. Purg. 32.)	The hymn, which those people then sung.
---	--

Potéte vedére cóme IL COMU'NE PO'POLO E'RANO ignoránti del véro Iddio. (Giov. Vill. l. 1. c. 26.)	You may see how ignorant of the true God the common people were:
---	---

LA SU'A FAMI'GLIA AVE'VANO un dì préso un pentoláio per malleveria. (Nov. Ant. 83.)	One day his family took a potter for bail:
---	---

but this usage is carefully avoided by modern writers.

† Examples may be found, nevertheless, in which the verb *agrees* directly with the *relative pronoun che*, without any reference to the noun or pronoun, which it represents; as,

Io son colei, CHE ti diè tanta guérra, — E COMPIÈ SÚA giornáta innánzi séra. (Petr. s. 361.)	I am she, who caused thee so much trouble, and who closed her day before its evening.
--	---

Or sè' tu quélla Corisca, CHE tradíto m' HA in tanti módi? — Corisca son ben io, — CH' agli ócchi tuói — Un témpo FU sì cára. (Guar. Past. Fid. 2. 6.)	Now art thou that Corisca, who has betrayed me in so many different ways? — I am indeed that Corisca, who was once so dear in your eyes.
---	---

IO SON COLÙI, CHE TÈNNI ùMBO  
le chiàvi,

POÈTA, [tu] CHE MI GUÍDI,

O FRÁTI, [VÓI] CHE SIÈTE  
GIÚNTI ALL' OCCIDÈNTE,

UNO DÈ' SÈTTE RÉGI, CHE ASSÍ-  
SERO TÈBE,

ÙNO DI QUÈGLI, CHE ÌL PÓSERO  
IN CRÓCE,

I am he, who held both the  
keys;

poet! [*thou*] who art my guide;

O brothers! [*you*] who have  
now reached the west;

one of the seven kings, who be-  
sieged Thebes;

one of those, who put him on  
the cross.

EXAMPLES.

IO TI CONSOLERÒ DI COSÌ LÚNGO  
DESTO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)

GRAZIOSÈ DÓNNE, VÓI NON UDÍ-  
STE FÓRSE MÁI DÍRE. (Bocc. g. 3.  
n. 10.)

CHE PER MINÓR MARTÍR LA MÓR-  
TE BRÁMO. (Bocc. g. 4. Canz.)

CONSÍGLIO E RAGIÓNÈ CONDÚ-  
CONO LA VITTÓRIA. (Dav. St.)

CALANDRÍNO, BRÚNO, E BUF-  
FALMÁCCO VÁNNO CERCÁNDO DI  
TROVÁR L' ELITRÓPIA, E CALAN-  
DRÍNO SE LA CRÉDE AVÉR TROVÁTA.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

NÈ LA SÚA PARTÍTA, NÈ LA  
SÚA LÚNGA DIMÓRA, NÈ LA SVEN-  
TURÁTA SÚA MÓRTE, ME L' HÁN-  
NO POTÚTO TRÁRRE DAL CUÓRE.  
(Bocc.)

TU DALL' ÙN LÁTO, E STÉCCHI  
DALL' ÁLTRO, MI VERRÉTE SOS-  
TENÉNDO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

"COME," DÍSSE LA DÓNNA, "SÁI  
TU CHI MÍO MARÍTO O ÍO CI SIÁ-  
MO?"

ÉGLI E ÉLLA CENÁRONO UN  
PÓCO DI CÁRNE SALÁTA. (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 1.)

I will gratify thee in so long a  
desire.

Charming ladies, perhaps you  
never heard say.

I desire death to lessen my suf-  
ferings.

Advice and reason lead to vic-  
tory.

Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffal-  
macco go in search of the *helio-  
trope*, and Calandrino believes he  
has found it.

Neither his departure, nor his  
long absence, nor his lamentable  
death, have been able to take him  
out of my heart.

Thou on one side, and Stecchi  
on the other, will support me.

"How dost thou know," said  
the lady, "who my husband and  
I are?"

He and she supped on a little  
salt beef.

TU, ÉGLI, SÍRO, E ÍO PIGLIERÉMO ÚNO PER . . . . . (Mach. Mandrag.)

Thou, he, Syrus, and I, will take a man for . . . . .

VORRÉI CHE VÓI O ÉGLINO MI DICÉSTE. (Ben. Varch.)

I wish that either you or they would tell me.

MUÓVASI I.A. CAPRÁIA E LA GORGÓNA, — *E fáccian síepe ad A'rno in su la fôce.* (Dant. Inf. c. 33.)

May Capraia and Gorgona rise from their foundations, and dam up the mouth of Arno.

QUÁL FORTÚNA O DESTÍNO, — *A'nzi l' último dì, QUAGGIÙ TI MÉNA?* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

What fortune or destiny brings thee here below, before thy last day?

NON CÍNNA, NON SÍLLA, SIGNOREGGIÒ LUNGAMÉNTE. (Dav. Stor.)

Neither Cinna, nor Sylla ruled long.

“*Fáteci dipíngere la Cortesía.*” — “*I'o cèla farò dipíngere di maniera, che mái NÈ VÓI, NÈ ÁLTRI, con ragióne, MI POTRÀ PIÙ DÍRE, CH' ÍO NON L' ÁBBIA VEDÚTA, nè conosciúta.*” (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)

“Cause Liberality to be painted there.” — “I will cause it to be painted there in such a manner, that neither you nor any other one, will be able to tell me any longer, that I have never seen it, or known it.”

NÈ PIÓGGIA CADÚTA, NÈ ÁCQUA GITTÁTA, NÈ ÁLTRO UMIDÓRE GLI SPEGNÉVA. (Dav. Ann.)

Neither the rain which had fallen, nor the water which they threw on it, nor any other wet thing extinguished them.

*Ciascúna di nói sa che DÉ' SUÓI SÓNO LA MAGGIÓR PÁRTE MÓRTI.* (Bocc. Intr.)

Every one of us knows, that the greater part of our friends are dead.

ÚNA INFINITÀ DI STROMÉNTI *da dar martório* FÚRONO PREPARÁTI. (Fir. As. 71.)

A great number of instruments of torture were prepared.

LA MAGGIÓR PARTÍTA FÚRONO MÓRTI *e tagliáti, e párte prési.* (Giov. Vill. l. 7. c. 19.)

The greater part were killed and cut to pieces, and some taken.

Dímmi, PERCHÈ QUÉL PÓPOLO È SÌ ÉMPIO — *Incóntr' á' miéi in ciascúna súa légge?* (Dant. Inf. 10.)

Tell me, why is that people so fell against my kin in all their laws?

*Da man sinistra* M' APPARÌ ÚNA GÉNTE — D' ÁNIME, *che moviéno i piè ver nói.* (Dant. Purg. 3.)

On the left hand appeared to me a troop of spirits, that moved their steps towards us.

*Pòì, VENÌA MAGGIÓR FRÓTTA*  
DI ROMÁNI. (Franc. Sacch. Rim.)

Then, there came a greater crowd  
of Romans.

*Signór mío, IL VOLÉRE ío LE*  
MÍE FÓRZE SOTTOMÉTTERE A  
GROSSÍSSIMI PÉSI M' È CAGÍONE  
DI QUÉSTA INFERMITÀ. (Bocc. g.  
10. n. 7.)

My lord, the wish to oppose my  
strength to very heavy burdens is  
the occasion of this weakness.

*I' SON BEATRÍCE, CHE TI FÁC-*  
CIO ANDÁRE. (Dant. Inf. 2.)

I am Beatrice, who bids thee  
to go.

*Ío SON COLÚI, CHE TÉNNI ÁM-*  
BO LE CHIÁVI — *Del cuór di Fe-*  
*derígo.* (Dant. Inf. 13.)

I am he, who held both the keys  
of the heart of Frederick.

*Io cominciái: "POÉTA, CHE*  
MI GUÍDI, — *Guárda la mia vir-*  
*tù s' ell' è possénte."* (Dant. Inf.  
2.)

I began: "Poet! thou who art  
my guide, consider well if there is  
sufficient virtue in me."

*"O FRÁTI," díssi, "CHE per*  
*cénto mília — Perígli SIÉTE*  
*GIÚNTI ALL' OCCIDÉNTE."* (Dant.  
Inf. 26.)

"O brothers!" said I, "who  
through perils without number  
have now reached the west."

*Dicéndo: "Quél fu l' UN DÉ'*  
*SÉTTE RÉGI, — CH' ASSÍSER TÉ-*  
*BE."* (Dant. Inf. 14.)

Saying: "That was one of  
the seven kings, who besieged  
Thebes."

*Se tu fòssi státo ÚNO DI QUÉ-*  
*GLI, CHE IL PÓSERO IN CRÓCE.*  
(Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

If thou had been one of those,  
who put him on the cross.

CONCORDANCE OF PARTICIPLES.

*Participles*, as it has been already mentioned p. 345,  
when used as adjectives, agree with *substantives* in *gen-*  
*der* and *number*, and follow in this respect the *rules*  
already given with regard to the *concordance* of that *part*  
*of speech*; as,

*LÉI, in váno mercè ADDO-*  
*MANDÁNTE, uccíse,*

he killed her, while begging  
in vain for mercy;

*álle DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI sí*  
*rivólse,*

he addressed himself to the la-  
dies [who were] waiting;

<i>il cavalière, UDÍTA LA DOMÁNDA e LA PROFÉRTA, propóse,</i>	the gentleman, having heard the request and the proposal, resolved ;
<i>poichè il giardino, e LA CÀSA di Messér Néri ebbe VEDÚTA,</i>	after having viewed the garden and the house of Messer Neri ;
<i>le DÓNNE e i CAVALIÉRI nel palágio RADUNÁTI,</i>	the ladies and gentlemen [that had] collected in the palace ;
<i>L' ANÉLLA e LA CORÓNA AVÚTE dal nuóvo spóso,</i>	the rings and the garland, [which she had] received from her new husband ;
<i>IL RE có' SUÓI COMPÁGNI RIMONTÁTI a cavállo,</i>	the king with his attendants having mounted their horses.

[For Rules how to determine when Participles are used as adjectives and when not, see CHAPTER ON PARTICIPLES.]

## EXAMPLES.

<i>Fólco, da dolor vinto, tiráta fuóri úna spáda, LÉI, IN VÁNO MERCÈ ADDOMANDÁNTE, UCCÍSE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)</i>	Folco, overcome by grief, having drawn a sword, killed her while begging in vain for mercy.
<i>ÁLLE DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI SI RIVÓLSE, e disse. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 10.)</i>	He addressed himself to the ladies who were waiting, and said.
<i>IL CAVALIÉRE, UDÍTA LA DOMÁNDA E LA PROFÉRTA della dónna, séco PROPÓSE. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.)</i>	The gentleman, having heard the request and the proposal of the lady, resolved.
<i>Il quále, POICHÈ IL GIARDÍN tútto, e LA CÀSA DI MESSÉR NÉRI ÉBBE VEDÚTA. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)</i>	Who, after having viewed the garden and the house of Messer Neri.
<i>E senténdo LE DÓNNE E' CAVALIÉRI NEL PALÁGIO del cónTE RADUNÁTI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)</i>	And hearing that the ladies and gentlemen had collected in the palace of the count.
<i>La dónna e L' ANÉLLA E LA CORÓNA AVÚTE DAL NUÓVO SPÓSO <i>quívì lasciò.</i> (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)</i>	The lady left there the rings and the garland which she had received from her new husband.
<i>IL RE có' SUÓI COMPÁGNI, RIMONTÁTI A CAVÁLLO, al reále ostiére se ne tornárono. Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.)</i>	The king with his attendants, having mounted their horses, returned to the royal palace.

## EXERCISE XXVIII.

Then that magnanimous Pompey, who — (the which)  
*magnánimo Pompéo, —*

boasted (himself) continually, that where he | struck |  
*vantáre<sup>2</sup> 1 contínuo, | percuotésse |*

the earth with (the) his foot (the) entire legions  
*térta — piè 4 intiéro<sup>5</sup> legióne<sup>6</sup>*

| would come out | from it |, fled not only from  
*| sarébbéro<sup>2</sup> uscíte<sup>3</sup> | ne<sup>1</sup> |, fuggíre*

Rome, but from (the) Italy also. He is of a won-  
*Róma, — (the) Itália —. — mara-*

derful agreeableness and (of a wonderful) vivacity.  
*viglióso<sup>6</sup> piacevolézza<sup>1</sup> 2 (of a wonderful) brío<sup>5</sup>.*

And the preparation, and the joy, and the other  
*apparcchio, allegrézza, áltro*

things were described to-him beyond (of) the truth.  
*cósa 2 dipingere<sup>3</sup> 1 maggióre véro.*

(The) my guide and I descended the mountain.  
*— dúca scéndere mónte.*

The greatest part of (the) men are ambitious. He  
*maggiór páрте of (the) uómo are ambizióso. —*

commanded that all (the) his family should appear  
*Comandáre tútto famíglia veníre<sup>2</sup>*

before him. Know, that I am Bertrand de Born,  
*3 1. Sapére, Bertrám dal Bórnio,*

he who gave (to the) King John the mischievous  
*dáre re Giovánni málo*

counsels. The filial respect and (the filial) love.  
*confórto. 1 filiale<sup>6</sup> riverénza<sup>2</sup> 3 4 — amór<sup>5</sup>.*

Great,\* small,\* rich,\* and poor,\* no one can escape  
*Gránde, píccolo,<sup>2</sup> ricco,<sup>1</sup> póvero, nessúno potére sottráre*

(himself to the) death. Many were accused this year.  
*mórte. Mólto 3 accusáre<sup>4</sup> 1 áнно<sup>2</sup>.*

\* Great, small, rich, poor, are here used in the plural number.

And she embracing (*the*) her infant. I have looked  
*abbracciare* *figliuolo.* *cercare*

all over the street. Callimachus and Ligurius have  
*tutto<sup>2</sup> per<sup>1</sup>* *strada.* *Callimaco* *Ligúrio* <sup>2</sup>

told me, that the doctor and the ladies are coming  
*dire<sup>2</sup>* <sup>1</sup>, *dottóre* *dónna* *venire*

to (*the*) church. Neither thou nor I am rich. I  
*chiésa.* *ricco.*

am the ghost of Capocchio, who falsified (*the*) metals  
*ómbra* , *falsare* *metálo*

| by the power of | alchemy. He | fell in love |  
*con* | *alchímia.* — | *s' innamorò<sup>4</sup>* |

| with | a noble-lady, held in (*the*) his time \* for  
*D<sup>1</sup>* | <sup>2</sup> *gentildónna,<sup>3</sup> tenere<sup>8</sup>* <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *témpo<sup>7</sup>* —

one of the most beautiful, and of the most amiable  
 — *bélla,* *leggiádra*

that were in Florence. Pride, envy, and avarice  
<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> *Firénze<sup>2</sup>.* *Supérbia, invidia,* *avarizia*

are the three sparks, which have inflamed all  
*favilla,* *accéndere<sup>3</sup>* —

(*the*) hearts. I saw a man, who had both (*the*)  
<sup>1</sup> *cuóre<sup>2</sup>.* — *Vedere* *uómo,* *ámbo*

his hands cut-off, and another who had (*the*) his  
 — *máno* *mózzo,* <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> —

throat pierced. For (*the*) which reasons, (*the*) our  
*góla<sup>4</sup>* *forátó<sup>1</sup>.* *cósa,*

supper having been disturbed, I not only have not  
*céna* — — *sturbare,* <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>

eat it, but not even (*have*) tasted it. Nor  
*trangugiare<sup>4</sup>* <sup>2</sup>, <sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup> *assaggiare<sup>4</sup>* <sup>1</sup>.

the excessive maternal pity and joy permitted it.  
*soprabbondante materna<sup>4</sup> pietá<sup>1</sup>* <sup>2</sup> *allegrezza<sup>3</sup> permettere<sup>6</sup>* <sup>5</sup>.

\* Time, in the plural.



## CHAPTER III.

## REGIMEN OR GOVERNMENT OF WORDS.

## REGIMEN OF SUBSTANTIVES.

A *substantive* may be *dependent on*, or *in relation with*, another substantive; and this dependence or relation, which may be expressed in different manners, forms what is called the *regimen* or the *complement* of the signification of *substantives*.

When of *two substantive* nouns the *second*, which is dependent on the first, conveys an idea of *possession*, *extraction*, or *qualification*, (as when it expresses *property*; *paternity*, or *filiation*; the *material*, the *place*, or the *quantity* of a thing; a *family* name; or similar circumstances;) it requires to be *preceded* by the preposition *di*; as,

<i>l' occhio DEL CUÓRE,</i>	the eye of the heart;
<i>gli ánni délla Incarnazione del Figliuolo DI DÍO,</i>	the years of the Incarnation of the Son of God;
<i>vergógna è mádre DI ONESTÀ,</i>	shame is the mother of modesty;
<i>úna fontána DI MÁRMO bianchissimo,</i>	a fountain of very white marble;
<i>Certáldo è un castélló DI VALDÉLSA,</i>	Certaldo is a castle of Valdelsa;
<i>torchiétti DI LÍBBRA, e torchiétti DI MÉZZA LÍBBRA,</i>	wax-tapers of a pound, and wax-tapers of half a pound each;
<i>fu salváto da cérti di casa DÉ' BÁRDI,</i>	he was saved by some people belonging to the house of the Bardi.

There are some *adjective pronouns*, which when used *substantively* follow the same rule ; as,

*faceva un POCO DI BANCO,* he kept a little bank ;  
*spalancando TANTO DI GOLA,* opening his throat [mouth] wide.

The preposition *di* is often elegantly *suppressed* after the word *casa* followed by a *family name* ; as,

*in CASA [di] Messer GUASPAR-* in the house of Messer Guaspar-  
*RINO,* rino ;  
*in CASA [de] gli ALBIZZI,* in the house of the Albizzi.

When the *second* substantive expresses the *form* or *similitude* of the *first*, it requires to be *preceded* by the preposition *a* ; as,

*denti A BISCHERI,* teeth like pegs ;  
*berettaccia A GRONDA,* a cap like the eaves of a  
house ;  
*barba A LUCIGNOLI,* a beard like two wicks of a  
candle.

When the *second* substantive expresses *suitableness*, *convenience*, or *derivation* as to one's *country*,\* it requires to be *preceded* by the preposition *da* ; as,

*età DA MARITO,* an age suitable for marriage ;  
*témpo DA CONFORTO,* time of consolation ;  
*Guidotto DA CREMONA,* Guidotto of Cremona ;  
*Giacomin DA PAVIA,* James of Pavia.

\* This is limited, however, to the case when the substantive is a *proper name* of a *city, town, village, or castle* ; for, when the substantive is a *proper name* of a *kingdom, province, or island*, it is always *preceded* by the preposition *di* ; as,

*Disse il monaco : " Io sono anche mor-* The monk replied : " I am dead also,  
*to, e fui DI SARDIGNA."* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.) and I was of Sardinia."

Instances are also met with amongst the classics, in which the preposition *di* is used even in the case when, according to the rule, *da* ought to be used ; as,

*Lo primo Podestà fue Messer Pazzino* The first Podesta was Messer Pazzino  
*de' Pazzi DI FIRENZE.* (Stor. Pist. 50.) de' Pazzi of Florence.

*Còlla forza de' detti Orsini DI ROMA.* With the assistance of the said Orsini  
(Gio. Vill. l. 9. c. 39.) of Rome.

*Il Signór Gismóndo Malatèsta DI RÍ-* Gismondo Malatesta of Rimini.  
MINI. (Car. lett. 3.)

## EXAMPLES.

*L' amóre priváto chiúde* L' OC-  
CHIO DEL CUÓRE. (Amm. Ant. d.  
5. r. 3.) Selfishness shuts the eye of the  
heart.

*Già érano* GLI ÁNNI DÉLLA  
*fruttífera* INCARNAZIONE DEL FI-  
GLIUÓLO DI DÍO *al número per-*  
*venúti di* 1348. (Bocc. Intr.) The years of the fruitful Incar-  
nation of the Son of God had  
reached the number of 1348.

*VERGÓGNA È MÁDRE DI ONE-*  
*STÀ, e máestra d' innocénza.*  
(Amm. Ant. d. 5. r. 7.) Shame is the mother of modesty,  
and the mistress of innocence.

*Nel mézzo del quál práto éra*  
ÚNA FONTÁNA DI MÁRMO BIAN-  
CHÍSSIMO. (Bocc. g. 3. Intr.) In the middle of which field  
there was a fountain of very white  
marble.

*CERTÁLDO È UN CASTÉLLO DI*  
*VALDÉLSA, il quále quantúnque*  
*piécioi sía, già di mólti uómini ed*  
*agidáti fu abitató.* (Bocc. g. 7.  
n. 10.) Certaldo is a castle of Valdelsa,  
which, although small, was for-  
merly inhabited by many and  
wealthy people.

*Una grand' árcá tútta forníta*  
*di TORCHIÉTTI DI LÍBBRA, e la*  
*chiésa e le cappélle d' intórno*  
*piéne di TORCHIÉTTI DI MÉZZA*  
*LÍBBRA, e spésso di qué' DI LÍB-*  
*BRA.* (Borgh. Arm. Fam. 23.) A great coffin surrounded with  
wax tapers of a pound, and the  
church and the chapels full of  
wax-tapers of half a pound, and  
often of some of a pound each.

*FU scampáto e salváto DA*  
*CÉRTI DI CÁSA DÉ' BÁRDI.* (Gio.  
Vill. l. 12. c. 17.) He was rescued and saved by  
certain people belonging to the  
house of the Bardi.

*Vi éra un cértó Ludovíco, il*  
*quále avéa di mólti danári, e*  
*FACÉVA UN PÓCO DI BÁNCO.*  
(Firenz. As. d' Or.) There was a certain Ludovico,  
who had a great deal of money,  
and kept a little bank.

*E SPALANCÁNDO pói TÁNTO DI*  
*GÓLA.* (Lip. Malm. 7. 85.) And opening his mouth wide.

*Stéttero piú ánni i dúe giòvani*  
*IN CÁSA MESSÉR GUASPARRÍNO.*  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.) The two youths remained for  
several years in the house of Mes-  
ser Guasparino.

*Con gránde paúra e perícólo*  
*si fuggi* IN CÁSA GLI ALBÍZZI.  
(Gio. Vill. l. 12. c. 17.) In great fear and danger he took  
refuge in the house of the Albizzi.

Con quei suoi DENTI A BIS-  
CHERI. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)

With those teeth of his like  
pegs.

Con quella BERETTACCIA A  
GRONDA, e con quella BARBA A  
LUCIGNOLI. (Buon. Fier. 2. 3.)

With that cap of his like the  
eaves of a house, and that beard  
like two wicks of a candle.

Essendo ella già di ETÀ DA  
MARITO. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

She being already of an age  
suitable for marriage.

La donna a cui più TEMPO DA  
CONFORTO, che DA riprensione  
parèa. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

The lady to whom this appeared  
more a time of consolation, than of  
reprehension.

GUIDOTTO DA CREMONA lascia  
a GIACOMIN DA PAVIA una sua  
fanciulla. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

Guidotto of Cremona leaves a  
daughter of his to James of Pavia.

---

#### RÉGIMEN OF ADJECTIVES.

The *regimen* or *complement* of adjectives is generally a *substantive*, a *pronoun*, a *verb*, or a *phrase* preceded by a *preposition*.

*Adjectives* signifying *knowledge* or *ignorance*, *praise* or *blame*, *possession* or *privation*, *abundance* or *scarcity*, require that their *complement* be *preceded* by the *preposition di*; as,

dótto DÈlle SCRITTÚRE,

learned in the Scriptures;

ignorantissimi DÈlla MEDICÍ-  
NA,

very ignorant of medicine;

gióvine DI ETÀ, bellissima  
DI FÓRMA, chiára DI SÁN-  
GUE e DI COSTÚMI,

of youthful age, of very beau-  
tiful form, and of distinguish-  
ed birth and manners;

próde DÈlle ÁRMI, ma DÉ'  
COSTÚMI vizióso,

brave in arms, but of vicious  
habits;

abbondante DI GRÁNO, DI ÓR-  
ZO, DI BESTIÁME, e DI  
PÉSCI,

abundant in grain, barley, cat-  
tle, and fish.

*Adjectives* signifying *similitude*, *inclination*, *suitableness*, *advantage*, *tendency*, or the *contrary*, require their *complement* to be *preceded* by the *preposition a*; as,

<i>la bárba A' SUÓI CAPÉGLI</i>	the beard like his locks ;
<i>simigliánte,</i>	
<i>cóse più átte A' BEVITÓRI,</i>	things more becoming to
<i>che ÁLLE SÓBRIE DÓNNE,</i>	drunkards, than to sober la-
	dies ;
<i>province dedite ÁLLE ÁRMI,</i>	provinces addicted to arms ;
<i>niúna cósá è cosí contrária</i>	nothing is so unfavorable to a
<i>AL DICITÓRE,</i>	speaker ;
<i>gráve ÁGLI UÓMINI di pervér-</i>	odious to men of wicked habits.
<i>si costúmi,</i>	

*Adjectives* signifying *departure, distance, separation,* require that their *complement* should be *preceded* by the preposition *da* ; as,

<i>ésuli DÁLLE LÓRO PÁTRIE,</i>	exiles from their countries ;
<i>fé' disgiúnto DALL' ÁNIMO il</i>	made the soul disjoined from
<i>passibile intellétto,</i>	his passive intellect ;
<i>úna navicélla di pescatóri</i>	a small fishing boat distant
<i>separáta DÁLL' ÁLTRE NÁ-</i>	from the other vessels.
<i>VI,</i>	

Some *adjectives*, as *conténto*, 'contented,' 'satisfied' ; *présto*, 'prompt,' 'ready' ; *accóncio*, 'disposed,' 'inclined' ; may have a *complement* preceded by either the preposition *di* or *a* ; as,

<i>CONTÉNTO DI QUÉLLO, che</i>	content with what was given
<i>gli éra dáto,</i>	to him ;
<i>státe CONTÉNTI ÁLLA VOLON-</i>	be satisfied with the will of
<i>TÀ di Dio,</i>	God ;
<i>PRÉSTA DI FÁRE FÉSTA al</i>	prompt to greet his fellow-
<i>suo cittadino,</i>	citizen ;
<i>PRÉSTI A MÓRDERE ógni</i>	ready to slander every praise-
<i>laudévol cósá,</i>	worthy thing ;
<i>sóno ACCÓNCIA D' IMPEGNÁR</i>	I am disposed to pawn these
<i>quéste róbe,</i>	garments ;
<i>più ACCÓNCIA A CRÉDERE il</i>	more inclined to believe the
<i>mále,</i>	evil.

## EXAMPLES.

- Esséndo mólto DÓTTO DÉLLE SCRITTÚRE, ed ammaestráto délla féde di Crísto.* (Cav. At. ap. 113.) Being very learned in the Scriptures, and well instructed in the Christian faith.
- Mólti vi sóno DÉLLA MEDICÍNA IGNORANTÍSSIMI.* (Lib. Cur. mal.) There are many very ignorant of medicine.
- Úna di lóro DI ETÀ GIÓVINE, DI FÓRMA BELLÍSSIMA, CHIÁRA DI SÁNGUE E DI COSTÚMI.* (Bocc. Fiam. l. 1.) One of them of youthful age, of most beautiful form, and of distinguished birth and manners.
- Cavaliére PRÓDE DÉLLE ÁRMI, MA DÉ' COSTÚMI VIZIÓSO.* (Pass. Spec. Ver. Penit.) A cavalier brave in arms, but of vicious habits.
- Il paése è grandíssimo, e mólto ABBONDÁNTE DI GRÁNO, DI ÓRZO, DI BESTIÁME, E DI PÉSCI.* (Giamb. l. 5.) The country is very vast, and very abundant in grain, barley, cattle, and fish.
- Lúnga LA BÁRBA, e di pel bíanco místa, — Portáva, Á' SUÓI CAPÉGLI SIMIGLIÁNTE.* (Dant. Pur. 1.) His beard, mixed with hoary white, like his locks, descended low down.
- CÓSE PIÙ ÁTTE Á' BEVITÓRI CHE ÁLLE SÓBRIE ed onéste DÓNNE.* (Bocc. Intr.) Things more becoming to drunkards, than to sober and modest ladies.
- PROVÍNCE naturalménte DÉDITE ÁLLE ÁRMI.* (Giamb. l. 3.) Provinces naturally addicted to arms.
- NIÚNA CÓSA È COSÌ CONTRÁRIA AL DICITÓRE, cóme il manifésto acconciamentó.* (Amm. Ant. d. 11. r. 3.) Nothing is so unfavorable to a speaker as the evident dressing up of language.
- La víta dé' búoni è sémpre GRÁVE ÁGLI UÓMINI DI PERVERSI COSTÚMI.* (Amm. Ant. d. 14. r. 1.) The life of the good is always odious to men of wicked habits.
- Colóro, che sóno ÉSULI DÁLLE LÓRO PÁTRIE, desidérano di tornarví.* (Fra Giord. Pred.) Those, who are exiles from their countries, are desirous to return there.
- Sicchè, per súa dottrína, FÉ' DISGIÚNTO — DALL' ÁNIMO IL PASSÍBILE INTELLÉTO.* (Dant. Pur. 25.) So that, by his wisdom, he made the soul disjoined from his passive intellect.

*Trovò per avventúra, alquánto*  
SEPARÁTA DÁLLE ÁLTRE NÁVI,  
ÚNA NAVICÉLLA DI PESCATÓRI.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

He found by chance, a small  
fishing boat somewhat distant from  
the other vessels.

CONTÉNTO DI QUÉLLO, CHE DÁ-  
TO GLI ÉRA, *più non chiedéa.*  
(Vit. S. Ant.)

Content with what was given  
to him, he asked no more.

*E però, pádre e mádre mía,*  
STÁTE CONTÉNTI ÁLLA VOLONTÀ  
DI DÍO. (Vit. S. Gio. Batt.)

Therefore, my parents, be satis-  
fied with the will of God.

*Quell' ánima gentíl fu cosí*  
PRÉSTA — DI FÁRE AL CITTADÍN  
SÚO *quívi fésta.* (Dant. Pur. 6.)

That gentle spirit was so prompt  
to greet there his fellow-citizen.

*Dar matéria ágl' invidiósi,*  
PRÉSTI A MÓRDERE ÓGNI LAU-  
DÉVOL CÓSA. (Bocc. Intr.)

To give occasion to envious per-  
sons, ready to slander every praise-  
worthy thing.

*Per me sóno accóncia d' im-  
pegnáre per te quéste róbe.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

As for me, I am disposed to  
pawn for thee these garments.

*La gènte è piú accóncia a*  
CRÉDERE IL MÁLE, *che il béne.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

People are more inclined to be-  
lieve the evil, than the good.

---

#### REGIMEN OF VERBS.

Verbs may govern, or have for a complement, a noun, a pronoun, another verb, or a phrase.

The nouns and pronouns governed by the verb may be in the subjective, in the objective, or in any other relation preceded by a preposition.

The verbs governed by another verb may be in the indicative, in the conjunctive, or in the infinitive mood, either in the objective or in any other relation, except the subjective, preceded by a preposition.

The verb *essere* governs a noun in the subjective, and is consequently construed with two subjectives, called, the

one, *the subjective before*, and, the other, *the subjective after, the verb*; as,

io sóno LA SVENTURÁTA I am the unfortunate Giñevra ;  
GINÉVRA,  
i vèri amíci sóno ÚNA CÓSA true friends are one thing  
insième, together.

---

*Active verbs govern a noun or a pronoun in the objective*; as,

to ho amáto ed ámo GUI- I have loved and love Guis-  
CÁRDO, card ;  
mólli sánno MÓLTE CÓSE, e many know many things, and  
non sánno SÈ MEDÉSIMI, do not know themselves.

Many active verbs, besides having a noun or a pronoun in the objective, or, what is the same, a *direct regimen*, may govern a *noun* or a *pronoun* in any *other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by a *preposition*, and thus have also an *indirect regimen*; as,

io non la vendéi LÓRO, ma I did not sell it to them, but  
éssi ME L' avránno imbolá- they must have stolen it  
ta, from me ;  
per premiáre il cavalière in order to reward the gentle-  
DELL' ONÓRE ricevúto, man for the honor received ;  
sè AD ÓGNI SÚO SERVÍGIO of- he offered himself to serve her  
fèrse, in every thing ;  
s' ingegnò di rivólgerla DA he endeavoured to dissuade her  
PROPONIMÉTO si fiéro, from so cruel a proposal.

---

*Passive verbs govern a noun or a pronoun in the relation of derivation* preceded by the preposition *da*; as,

égli DA ME éra egualménte he was equally loved by me ;  
amáto,  
Efígenia DA MÓLTE NÓBILI Iphigenia was received by  
DÓNNE di Ródi fu ricevúta, many noble ladies of Rhodes.



Sometimes instead of *da* we find the preposition *per* used by good writers ; as,

*la più bella cosa, che giammai* the handsomest object that was  
 PER ALCÚNO vedúta fósse, ever seen by anybody ;  
 PER FÁLSA LÓDE di stólto éssere to be deceived by the false praise  
 ingannáto, of fools.

---

*Neuter* verbs, strictly speaking, have *no regimen* ; but as some of them are often *used*, in Italian, *actively*, they follow, when so used, the *same rules* as *active verbs* ; as,

*cenárono UN PÓCO DI CÁRNE* they supped on a little salt  
 SALÁTA, meat ;  
*quantúnque Amóre I LIÉTI* although Love dwells more  
 PALÁGI, *più volentiéri che* willingly in gay palaces,  
 LE PÓVERE CAPÁNNE, *úbiti,* than in poor cottages.

---

*Pronominal* verbs govern the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si*, with which they are varied, in the *objective* ; as,

*io MI levái diritta,* I stood up ;  
*lo scoláre s' esercitáva,* the scholar took exercise.

Many *pronominal* verbs, besides the above, which is their *direct regimen*, may have an *indirect regimen*, or, what is the same, may also *govern* a *noun* in any *other relation*, but the *subjective*, *preceded* by a *preposition* ; as,

*t' attristi DÉLLA MÍA DIMÓ-* thou grievest for my stay ;  
 RA,  
*la città s' arrendéo A CÉ-* the city surrendered to Cæsar.  
 SARE,

---

*Unipersonal* verbs, generally, have *no regimen* ; there are instances, however, in which some of them govern

a word in the relation of attribution, preceded by the preposition *a* ; as,

*cóme accáde á' BUÓNI, così* as it befalls good people, so it  
*accáde á' CATTÍVI,* befalls bad people ;  
*quéstá novélla, la quále A ME* this novel, which I am to re-  
*tócca di dovér dire,* late.

## E X A M P L E S .

*Signór mio, ío sÓNO LA mísera* Sir, I am the unfortunate, wretch-  
 SVENTURÁTA GINÉVRA. (Bocc. ed Ginevra.  
 g. 5. n. 9.)

*I VÉRI AMÍCI SÓNO ÚNA CÓSA* True friends are one thing to-  
 INSIÉME. (Am. Ant. d, 18. r. 1.) together.

*ÍO HO AMÁTO ED ÁMO GUI-* I have loved and love Guiscard,  
 CÁRDO, e quánto viverò ío l' ame- and I shall love him as long as I  
 rò. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.) live.

*MÓLTI MÓLTE CÓSE SÁNNO, SÈ* Many know many things, and do  
 MEDÉSIMI NON SÁNNO. (Am. Ant. not know themselves.  
 d. 5. r. 3.)

*ÍO NON LA VÉNDÉI LÓRO, MA* I did not sell it to them, but  
 ÉSSI quéstá nótte ME L' AVRÁNNO they must have stolen it from me  
 IMBOLÁTA. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.) last night.

*PER PREMIÁRE IL CAVALIÉRE* In order to reward the gentle-  
 DELL' ONÓRE RICEVÚTO da lui. man for the honor he had received  
 (Bocc. g. 10. n. 6.) of him.

*Soddisfèce álla súa dománda,* He complied with her request,  
*e SÈ AD ÓGNI SÚO SERVÍGIO OF-* and offered himself to serve her in  
*FÉRSE.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) every thing.

*Con paróle assái s' INGEGNÒ* With a great many words he  
 DI RIVÓLGERLA DA PROPONIMÉN- endeavoured to dissuade her from  
 TO SÌ FIÉRO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.) so cruel a proposal.

*Così ÉGLI DA ME ÉRA EGUAL-* So he was equally loved by me,  
 MENTE AMÁTO, com' égli me amá- as he loved me.  
 va. (Bocc. Fiam. 1. 6.)

*EFIGENÍA DA MÓLTE NÓBILI* Iphigenia was received by many  
 DÓNNE DI RÓDI FU RICEVÚTA. noble ladies of Rhodes.  
 (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

*Costéi ésser LA PIÙ BÉLLA* She was the handsomest object  
 CÓSA, CHE GIAMMÁI PER ALCÚNO that was ever seen by anybody.  
 VEDÚTA FÓ SSE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

*Méglío è ésser corrétto dal sá-  
vio, che PER FÁLSA LÓDE DI STÓL-  
TO ÉSSER INGANNÁTO. (Amm. Ant.  
d. 3. r. 6.)*

It is better to be corrected by  
the wise, than to be deceived by  
the false praise of fools.

CENÁRONO UN PÓCO DI CÁRNE  
SALÁTA. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)

They supped on a little salt  
meat.

QUANTÚNQUE AMÓRE I LIÉTI,  
PALÁGI e le mórbide càmere, PIÙ  
VOLENTIÉRI CHE LE PÓVERE CA-  
PÁNNE, ÁBITI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 10.)

Although Love dwells in gay  
palaces and sumptuous apartments,  
more willingly than in poor cot-  
tages.

ÍO MI LEVÁI DIRÍTTA. (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 6.)

I stood up.

LO SCOLÁRE S' ESERCITÁVA  
per riscaldársi. (Bocc. g. 8. n.  
7.)

The scholar took exercise to get  
warm.

DÉLLA MÍA lúnga DIMÓRA  
T' ATTRÍSTI. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

Thou grievest for my long stay.

S' ARRENDÉO LA CITTÀ A CÉ-  
SARE. (Gio. Vill.)

The city surrendered to Cæsar.

CÓME ACCÁDE Á' BUÓNI, COSÌ,  
fratéllo, mi páre che accággia  
Á' CATTÍVI. (Fra. Guitt. lett.)

Brother, I think that as it befalls  
good people, so it befalls bad peo-  
ple.

QUÉSTA NOVÉLLA, LA QUÁLE A  
ME TÓCCA DI DOVÉR DÍRE, vóglío  
ve ne rénda ammaestráte. (Bocc.  
g. 1. n. 10.)

I wish, that the novel, which I  
am to relate, may make you wise.

---

GOVERNMENT OF VERBS — *Continued.*

A verb governs another verb that depends upon it, in the infinitive mood, whenever the subject of the principal (governing) verb is the same with that of the dependent (governed) verb; as in the following example of Boccaccio, Proem. :

*assái manifestaménte PÓSSO  
COMPRÉNDERE, quéllo ésser  
véro, che SÓGLIONO I SÁVJ  
DÍRE, CHE SÓLO LA MISÉ-  
RIA è sénza invidia,*

I can easily believe, that that  
is really true, which wise  
men are wont to say, name-  
ly, that poverty alone is not  
envied ;

where *póssó* and *sógliono* govern *compréndere* and *díre*

in the *infinitive*; because, in the first instance, *io*, which is understood, is the subject of *pósson* and at the same time of *compréndere*, that depends upon it; and in the last, *sávj* is the subject of *sógliono* as well as of *díre*, that depends upon it.

The *infinitives*, depending on another verb which governs them, may be either in the *objective*, as in the foregoing example; or in *any other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by a *preposition*; as,

<i>néga</i> D' AVÉR RICEVÚTO <i>il</i>	he denies to have received the
<i>beneficio</i> ,	benefit;
<i>dobbíamo imparáre</i> A TACÉ-	we must learn how to keep
RE,	silent.

If the *subjects* of the two verbs be *different*, then the *principal* verb governs the *dependent* verb in a *tense* of the *indicative* or *conjunctive* mood, preceded by the conjunction *che*; as,

SO <i>ío béne</i> , CHE <i>égli ne</i>	I know well, that he carried
PORTÒ (ind.) <i>l' ánima mía</i> ,	away my soul;
<i>ío CRÉDO</i> , CHE LE SUÓRE	I think, that the nuns are
SÍENO (conj.) <i>a dormíre</i> ,	asleep.

By a peculiarity of language the conjunction *che* is sometimes suppressed; as,

<i>crédo</i> , [che] <i>égli se n' ANDÒ</i>	I believe that he went away.
(ind.),	
<i>teméndo</i> [che] <i>non gli AVVE-</i>	fearing lest it should happen to
<i>NÍSSE</i> (conj.),	him.

The *dependent* verb is put in the *indicative*, when the *principal* verb implies *affirmation*, *knowledge*, or *certainty of action*; as,

<i>vi DÍCO</i> , <i>ch' égli È mórtó</i> ,	I tell you, that he is dead;
<i>so ch' égli È cosí</i> ,	I know that it is so;
<i>égli STA béne</i> , <i>sálvo che gli</i>	he is well, except that he has
<i>DUÓLE il cápo</i> ,	the headache.

The *dependent* verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when the *principal* verb implies *will, desire, entreaty, command, hope, fear, pleasure, displeasure, permission, prohibition, negation, shame, blame, adulation, wonder, surprise, supposition, conjecture, judgment, belief, question, doubt, ignorance, uncertainty, or future action*; as,

to VÓ' <i>che</i> SÁPPI,	I wish that thou shouldst know;
DESÍDERO <i>che</i> SÍA <i>pósto in</i> <i>esecuzióne,</i>	I desire that it should be put in execution;
PREGÁVA <i>che</i> ne VENÍSSE,	she begged him to come;
COMANDÒ <i>ad un dè' suó</i> <i>famigliári che nêlla súa</i> <i>cása il</i> MENÁSSE,	he ordered one of his domes- tics to bring him into his house;
SPÉRI <i>tu che Nicóstrato</i> AN- DÁSSE <i>la lealtà ritrován-</i> <i>do?</i>	dost thou hope [or believe] that Nicostratus would ob- serve loyalty?
TÉMO [che] <i>il sovérchio af-</i> <i>fánno non</i> DISTRÚGGA <i>il</i> <i>cor,</i>	I fear that excessive grief will destroy the heart;
DISPIÁCQUE <i>lóro, che i Peru-</i> <i>gini</i> AVÉSSERO <i>róttá la</i> <i>léga,</i>	it displeased them, that the Perugians should have brok- en the league;
SUPPÓNGASI <i>che Júpiter</i> SÍA <i>ánimo di quêsto móndo,</i>	let us suppose that Jupiter be the soul of this world;
<i>quêllo che l' ánimo</i> GIÚDICA <i>che</i> SÍA <i>ben fátto,</i>	that which the soul judges to be well done;
CRÉDO [che] <i>mi</i> PORTÁSSE <i>amóre,</i>	I believe that he loved me;
DOMANDÁVA, <i>che ciò</i> FÓSSE,	he asked, what that was;
<i>non so che méne</i> PÉNSI, <i>o che</i> <i>mi</i> DÍCA,	I know not what to think, or what to say.

The verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when it is *depend-*  
*ent* upon a *unipersonal* verb, such as *sembráre*, 'to seem';  
*parére*, 'to appear'; *mostráre*, 'to show'; *bisognáre*,  
'must' or 'to be obliged'; &c.; as,

<i>mi</i> SÉMBRAVA, <i>che</i> AVÉSSE <i>vóglia di ridere,</i>	it appeared to me as if he had a wish to laugh;
---	--

- é' PAR che tu sía mórtó,* it seems as if thou wert dead ;  
*MÓSTRA che Róma si REG- it shows that Rome was under  
GÉSSE a signoría di re,* the government of kings ;  
*BISOGNÁVA che PARTÍSSE it was necessary that he should  
l' indománi,* set out the next morning.

The *dependent* verb is put in the *conjunctive*, when preceded by a *comparative* or a *superlative* ; as,

- costéi fu dal pádre TÁNTO this young woman was as dear  
AMÁTA, QUÁNTO alcúna to her father, as any other  
figliuóla da pádre FÓSSE child ever was to a parent ;  
giammái,*  
*éra IL PIÙ SÁVIO ed IL PIÙ he was the wisest and the  
AVVEDÚTO uómo, che al most prudent man that there  
móndo FÓSSE,* ever was in the world.

The *dependent* verb is likewise put in the *conjunctive* when it is preceded by the *relative* pronouns, *chi*, 'who' ; and *quále*, 'which,' 'what' ; as,

- quívi non éra CHI le smarrite there was no one there who  
fórze RIVOCÁSSE,* could restore to her her lost  
spirits ;  
*dicéndoli QUÁLE VOLÉSSE,* asking him which he would  
prefer.

The verb is also put in the *conjunctive* after the conjunction *se*, 'if' ;\* the adverb *quándo*, used in the signification of 'if,' 'provided' ; and the adverbs *óve*, *dóve*, both in the signification of 'if,' 'when,' 'in case that,' and in their proper signification of 'where' ; as,

- SE d' ésser mentováto laggiù if thou dost not disdain to be  
DÉGNI,* mentioned there below ;

\* Instances are, nevertheless, to be found, in which the *verb* is put in the *indicative* after *se* ; as,

*Non so, SE a vói quéllo se ne PARRÀ,* I do not know, whether it will seem  
*chs a me ne PARRE'BBE. (Bocc. Intr.)* to you, as it would seem to me.

<i>io vòglio pórre fine alle tue angòsce</i> QUÁNDO TU VÓGLI,	I wish to put an end to thy suffering, if [or provided] thou wishest it ;
ÓVE <i>così non fósse,</i>	if [or when] it will not prove so ;
DÓVE <i>tu non vógli così fare,</i>	if [or when, or in case that] thou dost not wish to do so ;
<i>vómmene in guisa d' órbo, che non sa óve si váda,</i>	I move along like a blind man, who does not know whither he goes ;
<i>io non so dóve io mi fúgga,</i>	I know not whither I should fly.

[For a List of Verbs governing a noun or another verb, either in the objective, or in any other relation, preceded by a preposition, see APPENDIX K.]

## E X A M P L E S .

<i>Ingráto è chi il beneficio</i> NÉGA D' AVÉR RICEVÚTO. (Am. Ant. d. 17. r. 2.)	He is ungrateful, who denies to have received a benefit.
DOBBIÁMO <i>parlándo</i> IMPARÁRE A TACÉRE. (Am. Ant. d. 7. r. 3.)	We must, in speaking, learn how to keep silent.
So <i>io béne, che stanótte</i> ÉGLI NE PORTÒ L' ÁNIMA MÍA. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)	I know well, that last night he carried away my soul.
<i>Ío mi</i> CRÉDO, CHE LE SUÓRE SIÉN <i>tutte</i> A DORMÍRE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)	I believe that the nuns are all gone to sleep.
<i>I'ò</i> CRÉDO, ÉGLI SE N' ANDÒ <i>disperáto</i> . (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)	I believe, he went away in despair.
TEMÉNDÓ, NON GLI AVVENÍSSE <i>quéllo, che gli avvenne</i> . (Bocc. g. 5. n. 6.)	Fearing, lest it should happen to him, what in fact happened to him.
VI DÍCO, CH' ÉGLI È MÓRTO. (Bocc.)	I tell you, that he is dead.
So CH' ÉGLI È COSÌ, <i>ma non ne compréndo la ragióne</i> . (Class.)	I know it is so, but do not understand the reason.
ÉGLI STA BÉNE, SÁLVO CHE GLI DUÓLE IL CÁPO. (Barb. Gr. Gr.)	He is well, except that he has the headache.

*Sennuccio, io vó' che sáppi in quál maniera — Trattáto sóno.* (Petr. s. 89.)

Sennuccio, I wish that thou shouldst know in what manner I am treated.

*Perciò desídero che sía pósto in esecuzióne.* (Cas. lett. 15.)

Therefore I desire that it should be put in execution.

*Il chiamáva, e pregáva che ne venísse.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)

She called him, and begged him to come.

*Comandò ad un dé' suói famigliári che nélla súa casa il menásse, e gli facésse dar da mangiáre, per Dio.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

He ordered one of his domestics to bring him into his house, and cause something to eat to be given to him, for God's sake.

*Spéri tu, che Nicóstrato andásse la lealtà ritrovándo, che tu servár vuói a lui?* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)

Dost thou believe, that Nicos-tratus will observe the loyalty towards thee, that thou dost towards him?

*Ch' ío témo, lássó! no 'l so-vérchio affánno — Distrúgga il cor.* (Petr. s. 84.)

So that I fear, alas!, that excessive grief will destroy the heart.

*Dispiácque lóro grandeménte, che i perugíni róttá avéssero la léga.* (Gio. Vill.)

It displeased them exceedingly, that the Perugians should have broken the league.

*Suppóngasi però, che Júppiter sía, a módo lóro, ánimo di quéstó móndo.* (St. Aug. Cit. Dio.)

But let us suppose, that Jupiter, as they will have it, be the soul of this world.

*Che tu fácci, quéllo che l' ánimo tí giúdica che ben sía fáttö.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 6.)

That thou shouldst do, what thy soul judges to be well done.

*Crédo mi portásse amóre, e che di me non fósse méno ardénte.* (Ariost.)

I believe that he loved me, and that he was no less ardent in love than I.

*Domandáva, che ciò fósse.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)

He asked, what that was.

*Non so che méne pénsi, o che mi díca.* (Petr.)

I do not know what to think, or what to say of it.

*Mi sembráva, che avésse vóglia di rídere.* (Bocc.)

It appeared to me, as if he had a wish to laugh.

*É' par che tu sía mórtó, che tí sénti tu?* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

It seems as if thou wert dead, what ails thee?



*E così móstra che Róma si reggésse a signoría di re cén- to cinquantaquáttro anni.* (Gio. Vill. 129.)

*E che bisognáva che partísse l' indománi.* (Bocc.)

*Costéi fu dal pádre tanto teneraménte amáta, quánto alcúna áltra figliuóla da pádre fósse giammái.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

*Égli éra il piú sávio ed il piú avvedúto úomo che al món- do fósse.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)

*Quívi non éra chi con acqua frédda o con áltro argoménto le smarríte fórze rivocásse.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

*Dicéndoli quále volésse, o súbito restituíre il súo pórco, o che egli andásse al rettóre.* (Franc. Sacch. 146.)

*Grázie riporterò di te a léi, — Se d' ésser mentováto laggiù dégni.* (Dant. Purg. 1.)

*Ío vóglío álle túe angósce, quándo tu medésimo vógli, pórré fíne.* (Bocc.)

*Óve così non fósse, ío mi ri- marrò giudéo com' ío mi sóno.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

*E dóve tu non vógli così fáre, raccomandánda a Dío l' áni- ma túa.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

*Vómmene in guísa d' órbo senza lúce, — Che non sa óve si váda, e pur si párté.* (Petr. s. 16.)

*Eccoli tútti fuóri; ío non so dóve ío mi fúgga, dóve ío mi nascónda.* (Mach. Com.)

And thus it shows, that Rome was under the government of kings one hundred and fifty-four years.

And that it was necessary that he should set out the next day.

This young woman was as tenderly loved by her father, as any other child ever was by a parent.

He was the wisest and most prudent man that ever there was in the world.

There was no one there who could either with cold water or by any other means, restore to her her lost spirits.

Asking him which he would prefer, either that he should return him immediately his hog, or that he should go to the rector.

I will return thanks to her for thy favor, if thou dost not disdain to be mentioned there below.

I wish to put an end to thy troubles, if thou thyself wishest it.

If it will not prove so, I will remain a Jew as I am.

And if thou dost not wish to do so, recommend thy soul to God.

I move along like a blind man, deprived of light, who does not know where he goes, and yet he departs.

Here they are all out; I know not whither I should fly, where I should conceal myself.

## REGIMEN OF PREPOSITONS.

The *regimen* or *complement* of *prepositions* is generally a *noun*, a *pronoun*, or a *verb*, either in the *objective*, or in any *other relation*, except the *subjective*, preceded by another *preposition*; as,

io non dáva lóco PER LO MÍO CÓRPO al trapassár dé' rág- gi,	I gave no way for the rays to pass through my body;
volgeánsi CÍRCA NÓI le dúe ghirlánde,	the two garlands [of unfad- ing roses] wreathed about us;
un giòrno, DIÉTRO MANGIÁ- RE, laggìù venútone,	one day having come there be- low, after dinner;
cominciò a piágnere SÓPRA DI LÉI,	he began to mourn over her;
assái PRÉSSO A SALÉRNO è úna cósta,	very near Salerno there lies a coast;
LONTÁNO DA ÓGNI UÓMO,	far from every man.

[For a List of Prepositions governing the objective or any other relation preceded by a preposition, see APPENDIX L.]

## EXAMPLES.

Quando s' accorsér ch' io non  
DÁVA LÓCO — PER LO MÍO CÓRPO  
AL TRAPASSÁR DÉ' RÁGGI. (Dant.  
Purg. 5.)

When they perceived, that  
through my body I gave no way  
for the rays to pass.

Così di quelle sempitérne róse  
— VOLGEÁNSI CÍRCA NÓI LE DÚE  
GHIRLÁNDE. (Dant. Parad. 12.)

Thus about us wreathed the  
two garlands of unfading roses.

UN GIÓRNO, DIÉTRO MANGIÁRE,  
LAGGIÙ VENÚTONE, in un cánto  
sópra un curélló si póse a sedére.  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

One day having come there be-  
low, after dinner, he seated himself  
in a corner upon a cushion.

COMINCIÒ A PIÁGNERE SÓPRA  
DI LÉI, non altraménte che se  
mórta fósse. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

He began to mourn over her  
not otherwise than if she had been  
dead.

ASSÁI PRÉSSO A SALÉRNO È  
 ÚNA CÓSTA il máre riguardánte,  
 la quále gli abítánti chiámáno la  
 cósta di Málfi. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)

Very near Salerno there lies a  
 coast looking upon the sea, which  
 the inhabitants call the coast of  
 Amalfi.

Da úna páрте дélla sála, assái  
 LONTÁNO DA ÓGNI UÓMO, cólla dón-  
 na si póse a sedére. (Bocc. g. 5.  
 n. 5.)

In one corner of the hall, very  
 far from every man, he sat down  
 with the lady.

REGIMEN OF CONJUNCTIONS.

There are some *conjunctions*, in Italian, which have a *verb* for their *regimen*, which they require to be put either in the *indicative*, or the *conjunctive* mood.

The *following* are those, which *require* the *verb* to be put in the *conjunctive* mood :

<p>Acciocchè,                  affinchè,                  abbenchè,                  ancorchè,                  avvegnachè,                  benchè,                  comechè,                  contuttochè,                  quantunque,                  sebbéne,                  tuttochè,                  avánti che,                  anzi che,                  innánzi che,                  prima che,                  a méno che,                  a condizióne                  che,                  con pátto che,                  purchè,                  cóme se,</p>	}	<p>in order that ;</p> <p>though,                  although ;</p> <p>before,                  sooner than ;</p> <p>except, unless ;</p> <p>on condition,                  provided that ;</p> <p>as if ;</p>	<p>comunque,                  conciosiacchè,                  caso che,                  in caso che,                  dato che,                  supposto che,                  finchè,                  finlántochè,                  infino che,                  insino che,                  sinchè,                  nonostante che,                  per téma che,                  qualóra,                  quand' ánche,                  se,                  senza che,                  sólo che,</p>	}	<p>however ;                  whereas, since ;</p> <p>in case that ;</p> <p>suppose,                  grant that ;</p> <p>till, until ;</p> <p>notwithstanding                  that ;</p> <p>for fear that,                  lest ;</p> <p>if, when,                  whenever ;</p> <p>even when ;</p> <p>if ;</p> <p>without ;</p> <p>only that.*</p>
--	---	--	--	---	--

\* The following instances are, nevertheless, met with in the classics, in which

To which may be added the conjunction *perchè*, used in the signification of 'although,' and 'in order that': also the conjunctions *che*, 'that'; *se*, 'if'; *quándo*, in the signification of 'if,' 'in case that,' 'provided'; and the adverbs *óve*, *dóve*, both in their own signification and that of the conjunctions 'if,' 'when,' 'provided'; as has been already mentioned at p. 428, in treating of the *regimen of verbs*.

*Se* requires the verb in the *conjunctive*, when it expresses something *contingent* or *doubtful*: but when it expresses a *sure*, *natural*, or *expected circumstance*, or when the *action* of the verb is *entirely past*, the verb is put in the *indicative*; as,

SE tu ti CÁLI ío non ti verrò diétro di galóppo,	if thou do cast thee down, I cannot chase thee on foot;
dímmi SE ío PÓSSO adoperáre alcúna còsa,	tell me whether I can do any thing for thee;
nói gliéto farém fáre, SE tu VORRÁI,	we will make her do it, if thou wishest it;
s' ío MERITÁI di vói méntre ch' ío víssi, non vi movéte,	if, living, I merited aught of you, move ye not;
SE gli ócchi suóti ti FUR DÓLCI nè cári,	if her eyes were dear and sweet to thee;
s' ío DÍSSI fálsò, e tu FALSÁSTI il cónio,	if I spoke false, thou falsely stampedst the coin.

the conjunctions *avvegnachè*, *benchè*, *comechè*, *contuttochè*, *sebbéne*, are used with a verb in the *indicative* mood:

AVVEGNACHÈ quel dì nitúno E'RA AN-  
DA' to a lavoráre. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

BENCHÈ a me non PA'RYE mái che vói  
giúdice fòste. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 10.)

La quále il giòvane fòcosaménte áma,  
COMECHÈ élla non se ne ACCÓRGE, per  
quéllo ch' ío végga. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Si ricominciò la guérra còntro gli Aretíni,  
CONTUTTOCHÈ nel segréto RIMA-  
SERO gli Aretíni in trattáto d' accórdo  
cò' Fiorentini. (Gio. Vill. l. 11. c. 58.)

Perchè SEBBE'NE i giòvani l' AUME'N-  
TANO, é' non sánno di pói mantenérle.  
(Gell.)

Since, that day, no one had gone to work.

Although I never thought you were a judge.

Whom the young man ardently loves, although she does not perceive it, for what I see.

They renewed the war against the Aretines, although in secret the Aretines remained on terms of peace with the Florentines.

For, although young men enlarge them (the cities), they know not how to govern them afterwards.

## EXAMPLES.

ACCIOCCHÈ *più avanti non potesse il prince venire.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

*Perocchè Amór l'avea già ferita,* — *ABBENCHÈ le PARÉSSE ésser tradita.* (Bocc. Ninf. Fies.)

*Alessandro, ANCORCHÈ gran paura AVÉSSE, stette pur chéto.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

*Núno áltro, per QUANTÚNQUE AVÉSSE agúto l'avvediménto, potrébbe chi ío mi fóssi conóscere.* (Bocc. Fiam.)

*TUTTOCHÈ quèsta génte maledétta in véra perfezióñ giammai non váda.* (Dant. Inf. 6.)

*Io non ti concederò quéllo che séguita, perchè, DATOCCHÈ nói ce li DIAMO, non perciò restiámo debitóri.* (Varch. Sen. ben. 5. 9.)

*Dico, che COMÚNQUE si sía, égli ha tante ore la nótte quante il dí.* (Ser. Brun. Tes. 2. 44.)

*La medicína da guarirlo so ío troppo béne fáre, PURCHÈ a vói día il cuóre di segréto tenére ciò che ío vi ragionerò.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)

*NONOSTANTE CHE fósse pregáto da tútti i cittadíni, che gli dovesse perdonáre.* (Zibald. Andr. 3. 3.)

*Or vó' che sappi, INNANZI CHE più ANDI, — Ch' éi non peccáro.* (Dant. Inf. 4.)

*Seguirò l'ómbra di quel dólce láuro, — FINCHÈ l'último dí CHIÚDA quest' ócchi.* (Petr. c. 7.)

*Ch' ío spéro — Fármi immortál, PERCHÈ la cárne MUÓIA.* (Petr. c. 18.)

In order that the prince should not approach any further.

Because Love had already wounded her, although she thought she was betrayed.

Alexander, although he had great fear, remained quiet.

No one else, however acute perception he may have, could know who I am.

Though this accursed race never can reach true perfection.

I will not grant thee what follows, because, suppose we should give them to them, we shall remain no less debtors.

I say, that however it may be, there are as many hours in the day as in the night.

The medicine to cure him, I know well how to apply, provided you have a mind to keep secret what I shall tell you.

Notwithstanding he was begged by all the citizens to pardon him.

Now I wish thou mayst know, before thou passest any farther, that these did not sin.

I will follow the shade of that sweet laurel, until death close these eyes.

So that I hope to make myself immortal, though the body die.

*La 'ncominciò a battersè PER-* He began to beat her in order  
*CHÈ 'l PASSASSE.* (Bocc. g. 9. to cure her.  
n. 9.)

*SE TU TI CÀLI, ÌO NON TI VER-* If thou do cast thee down (into  
*RÒ DIÉTRO DI GALÓPPO.* (Dant. the pitch) I cannot chase thee on  
Inf. 22.) foot.

*Cáccia via la paura, e DÌMMI* Drive away fear, and tell me  
*SE ÌO PÓSSO ADOPERÁRE ALCÚ-* whether I can do any thing for  
*NA CÒSA.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.) thee.

*NÒI GLIÉLO FARÉM FÁRE, o* We will make her do it, whether  
*vóglià élla o no, SE TU VORRÁI.* she is willing or not, if thou wish-  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) est it.

*O vói che siéte due déntro ad* O ye, who dwell two spirits  
*un fuóco, — S' ÌO MERITÁI DI VÓI* within one fire, if living I merited  
*MÉNTRE CH' ÌO VÍSSI, — S' ÌO* aught of you, whatever may have  
*MERITÁI DI VÓI assái o póco, —* been the measure of that desert,  
*Quándo nel móndo gli átti vérsi* when in the world I wrote my  
*scríssi, — NON VI MOVÉTE.* (Dant. lofty verses, move ye not.  
Inf. 26.)

*A'nzi la vóce al súo nóme* Nay let thy voice celebrate her  
*rischiári, — SE GLI ÓCCHI SUÓI TI* name, if her eyes were ever dear  
*FUR DÓLCI NÈ CÀRI.* (Petr. s. 40.) and sweet to thee.

*S' ÌO DÍSSI FÁLSO, E TU FAL-* If I spoke false, thou falsely  
*SÁSTI IL CÓNIO, — Disse Sinóne.* stampedst the coin, said Sinon.  
(Dant. Inf. 30.)

---

### EXERCISE XXIX.

A good man, destitute of money, and of poor mind.  
*buón uómo, póvero*      *monéta,*      <sup>2</sup> *strétto*<sup>1</sup> *ánimo.*

Deprived of every virtue, and full of every pride.  
*Vóto*      *valór,*      *piéno*      *orgóglio.*

Of ancient blood, and (of) noble manners. The  
<sup>2</sup> *Antíco*<sup>1</sup> *sángue,*<sup>3</sup>      <sup>4</sup> <sup>6</sup> *nóbile*<sup>5</sup> *costúme.*

Marquis of Monferrato was a man of great valor.  
*Marchése*      *uómo*      *álto*      *valóre.*

With some good wine, and some preserves she re-  
*alquánto buón víno,*      *alquánto confétto*      — *ricon-*

cruited him. (The) pride is hated by — (is odious  
*fortáre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *supérbia* — — — *odióso*

to) God and by — (to) (the) men. They foment that  
*Dio* — — — *uómo.* — *Fomentáre*

| bad disposition | of theirs, inclined to (the) evil.  
*genidccio* | — , *inclináre* *mále.*

Ready to do virtuously | to | others that, which she  
*Prónto*<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *operáre*<sup>7</sup> *virtuóso*<sup>6</sup> | *in*<sup>4</sup> | <sup>5</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>8</sup> —

would (that) should be done | to | her. In exchange  
*volére*<sup>11</sup> <sup>12</sup> *éssere*<sup>13</sup> *operáre*<sup>14</sup> | *in*<sup>9</sup> | <sup>10</sup> *cámbio*

for that, which I received. She left at liberty  
 , *ricévere.* — *concédere*<sup>9</sup> <sup>10</sup> *libertà*<sup>9</sup>

every-one until (to) the hour of (the) supper. This  
<sup>11</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *óra*<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *céna*<sup>7</sup>.

young-woman is neither from Cremona, nor from Pavia,  
*gióvane* <sup>2</sup> *non*<sup>1</sup> , ,

nay she is from Faenza — (a Faentine). He wished,  
 — — — — *Faentino.* — *Volére,*

that I should see all the holy relics. Show me  
*vedére* *sánto reliquia.* *Mostráre* —

the way, that goes to Rome. I myself know not,  
*cammino,* *andáre* *Róma.* *medésimo sapére*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>,

what — (that which) I wish (for myself). I know  
 — <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> *volére*<sup>7</sup> — <sup>6</sup> *sapére*<sup>2</sup>

not, who thou mayst be, nor by what means thou hast  
<sup>1</sup> , *módo* — *éssere*<sup>2</sup>

come here-below. | Being much pleased | with the  
*veníre*<sup>1</sup> . | *Piacéndogli* *mólto* | —

manners of the boy, he asked who he was.  
*módo* *fanciúlo,* — *domandáre*

He began pleasantly to speak, and to ask who  
 — *Cominciáre piacévole* *ragionáre,* — *domandáre*

he was, whence he came, and where he was-going.  
 — , — *veníre,* — *andáre.*

He was disposed to go wherever it was (to) her  
*dispósto* *andáre* — <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup>

| pleasure | to go. As I arrived | on the other side, |  
 | *a grádo*<sup>4</sup> | — —. *giúngere* | *di là*, |  
 there was one who seemed to know — (that he  
*parére* — —  
 knew) all (the) my sins | by heart |. Do thou  
*sapére*<sup>5</sup> <sub>1</sub> *(the)*<sub>2</sub> *my*<sub>3</sub> *sins*<sub>4</sub> | *a mente* |. — <sub>3</sub>  
 stay (thyself), whom | by | the fashion of thy garb  
*Sostáre*<sup>1</sup> *(thysel)*<sub>2</sub> whom | *a* | the — — — *garb*  
*ábito*  
 we deem to be — (seemest to-us to be) some native  
 — — — *sembráre*<sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> — —  
 — (some one) of our evil land. If I had this  
*práva*<sup>2</sup> *térra*<sup>1</sup>. —  
 money,\* I would lend it\* to thee immediately. Who  
*denáro*, *prestáre*<sup>3</sup> <sub>2</sub> <sub>1</sub> *incontanente*.  
 would fare better than I, if that money † were mine?  
*stáre* , *denáro* ?  
 Whenever you wish, I will take you a great part  
 — *volére*, *portáre*<sup>2</sup> <sub>1</sub> — *gran parte*  
 of the way | on horse-back |. He might govern such  
*via* | *a caválo* |. — *réggere*<sup>6</sup> *quále*<sup>3</sup>  
 a part (of it) as he should wish. He asked of the  
<sub>1</sub> *parte*<sup>2</sup> *(of it)*<sub>5</sub> — — *volére*<sup>4</sup>. — *Domandáre* —  
 host where he could sleep. (The) virtue will not  
*óste* *éssó potére dormire*. *virtù*  
 be conquered by (the) misery. Many novels  
*éssere vincere* by *(the)* *miséria*. Many *novélla*  
 | come into my mind | | to be | related by me.  
 | *mi si páran d' avánti*<sup>5</sup> | | *per dovére ésser*<sup>1</sup> | *raccontáre*<sup>4</sup> <sub>2</sub> <sub>3</sub>.  
 God feeds the angels and (the) his servants | with |  
*Iddio páscere* *ángelo* and *(the)*<sub>2</sub> *servo*<sup>1</sup> | *di* |  
 love and | (with) | eternal joy. Let there be this  
*amóre* | *di* | *sempitérno*<sup>2</sup> *gáudio*<sup>1</sup>. — <sub>6</sub> <sub>1</sub>  
 law in (the) friendship, that | of | (the) friends we  
*légge*<sup>2</sup> <sub>3</sub> *(the)*<sub>4</sub> *amicizia*<sup>5</sup>, <sub>7</sub> | *da*<sup>8</sup> | *(the)*<sub>9</sub> *amíco*<sup>10</sup> —

\* This money — it, — to be used in the plural.

† That money, in the plural.



should ask but an honest thing. Deliberate all (the) thy  
*domandáre*<sup>13</sup> — — *onésto*<sup>11</sup> *cósa*<sup>12</sup>. *Deliberáre*<sup>7</sup> 1 2 —

things with (the) thy friend, but always before (of) him.  
*cósa*<sup>3</sup> 4 5 — *amíco*<sup>6</sup>, —

| A | friend who is a time-server — (according to  
 | L' | *amíco* — — — —

the time) will not be constant in the day of (the)  
*témpo* — *stáre* *férmo* *dì*

tribulations. I refrained (myself) | from | speaking  
*tribolazióne*. — *trárre*<sup>8</sup> 7 | *dì*<sup>5</sup> | *parlár*<sup>6</sup>

until we reached (to) the river. The flatterer is  
 1 — — 2 3 *fiúme*<sup>4</sup>. *adulatóre*

| (even) | like that voice, which replies | from | the  
 | *anco* | *vóce*, — *rispóndere* | *dópo* |

mountains and the walls to him-who cries-out. In  
*mónte* — *múro* *gridáre*.

order that the world should know her and love her.  
*móndo* *conóscere*<sup>2</sup> 1 *amáre* —.

Although positively it displeases her. And what dif-  
*strétto* — *dispiacére*<sup>2</sup> 1. *dif-*

ference there is between these and the other visions,  
*ferénza* — *avére* *visióne*,

since the learned men speak of it, I will not write  
 — *dottóre* *parláre*<sup>2</sup> 1, — — 3 *scrívere*<sup>5</sup>

it here. In order to prevent, I say, in case that  
 4 — *salváre*, — *díre*,

we | should do | otherwise, that this | should be | the  
 — | *facéndo*<sup>2</sup> | *altraménte*<sup>1</sup>, — — | *fóra*<sup>6</sup> | —

cause of blame and ignominy to us. Whereupon he  
 — — *biásimo*<sup>3</sup> 4 *ignomínia*<sup>5</sup> — —.

said to me: “Although thou rendest away all my  
 — : “ *dischiomáre*<sup>2</sup> *mí*<sup>1</sup>

hair, I will neither tell (thee), nor show (it to)  
 — — 3 *díre*<sup>5</sup> 4, 9 *mostráre*<sup>10</sup> 11 —

thee, who I am.”  
 12, 6 7 8.”

## CHAPTER IV.

## USE OF ARTICLES.

*Articles* are used, in Italian, before all common nouns employed in a *determinate* sense.

*Nouns* may be employed in a determinate sense in *three* different ways :

First, when, in naming an object, we intend to designate the *whole species* or *kind*, to which that object belongs ; as, *gli uómini*, ‘ [the] men ’ ; the noun *uómini* being taken in the *whole extent* of its signification, the article *gli* shows that all the individuals composing the human kind are here spoken of.

Secondly, when we intend to designate a *class of objects* of any kind ; as, *gli uómini virtuósi*, ‘ [the] virtuous men ’ ; here the noun *uómini*, expresses only a certain number of men, its *signification* being *restricted* by the adjective *virtuósi*.

Thirdly, when we intend to designate *one particular object* of a kind or of a class ; as, *l’ uómo di cui vi párlo*, ‘ the man of whom I speak to you ’ ; the noun *uómo* being taken, in this case, individually, and the article used to express the man spoken of :

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| <p>GLI UÓMINI sóno DÉLLE FÉM-<br/>MINE cápo,</p> <p>GLI UÓMINI di quèsta térra<br/>si leveránno a romóre,</p> <p>se L’ UÓM [con cui tu párli]<br/>ti fáccia liberaménte ciò,<br/>che ’l túo dir préga, ancór<br/>ti piáccia di dirne,</p> | <p>men are the head of women ;</p> <p>the people of this land will rise<br/>in an uproar ;</p> <p>if the man [with whom thou<br/>speakest] will do for thee<br/>freely, what thou entreatest,<br/>do thou further be pleased<br/>to declare to us.</p> |
|---|--|

When the noun is sufficiently *determined* by the nature of the thing, or by the circumstances of the case, the *article* is generally *suppressed*; as,

<i>così</i> CAVÁLLI, UÓMINI <i>fur</i> <i>vittime</i> ,	thus horses and men were vic- tims;
<i>quìvi</i> SOSPÍRI, PIÁNTI, <i>ed</i> ÁLTI GUÁI <i>risonávan</i> ,	there sighs, lamentations, and loud moans resounded;
SÓNI, CÁNTI, VESTÍR, GIUÓ- CHI, VIVÁNDE, <i>quánto può</i> <i>cuór pensár, può chiêder</i> <i>bócca</i> ,	music, singing, dresses, games, viands, all that the heart can think of, and all that the pal- ate can desire.

The article is also suppressed when the noun is used as a *mere sign of qualification* of the objects expressed. This is generally the case,

First, when the noun is *preceded* by the verb *essere*, 'to be'; as,

ÉRANO UÓMINI <i>e</i> FÉMMINE <i>di gróssó ingégno</i> ,	they were men and women of dull understanding;
<i>tu, che sé' UÓMO, dovrésti sa-</i> <i>pére délle cose del móndo</i> ,	thou, who art a man, ought to be acquainted with the af- fairs of the world.

Secondly, when the noun is *preceded* by one of the prepositions, *a, di, da, con, in, per, senza*; as,

<i>uscirono fuóchi di sottérra,</i> <i>che si appréséro A CÁMPI,</i> <i>VILLE, CASÁLI,</i>	there issued flames from under the earth, which set fields, villas, and hamlets on fire;
<i>si nutrisce DI PÁNE e D' ÁC-</i> <i>QUA,</i>	he feeds on bread and water;
<i>mórsi DA PÚLCI, DA MÓSCHE,</i> <i>O DA TAFÁNI,</i>	bitten by fleas, by flies, or gadflies;
CON BÉ' MÓTTI, <i>e</i> CON RI- SPÓSTE PRÓNTE,	with witty sayings, and prompt replies;
<i>vénne crescéndo IN ÁNNI, IN</i> <i>PERSÓNA, ed IN BELLÉZZA,</i>	grew up in years, in stature, and in beauty;
PER PAÚRA <i>d' altrúì, e per</i> <i>serváre la mía fáma,</i>	for fear of other people, and also to preserve my fame;

*così penserò di fare, SENZA* I shall do so, without fail.  
FÁLLO,

Thirdly, in *comparisons of equality*, when the noun is preceded by the adverb *cóme*, 'as,' 'like'; as,

*non CÓME UÓMINI, ma quasi* they died not like men, but  
*CÓME BÉSTIE morivano,* almost like beasts;  
*paréva che ruggísse CÓME* he appeared to roar like a lion,  
*LEÓNE, e belásse CÓME PÉ-* to bleat like a sheep, and to  
*CORA, e ragghiásse CÓME* bray like an ass.  
*ÁSINO,*

When a noun is employed in an *indeterminate* sense the *article* is never used; as,

*quál che tu sii, od ÓMBRA od* whatever thou art, whether a  
*UÓMO CÉRTO,* shadow or a living man;  
*non UÓM, UÓMO già fúí,* now I am not a man, man I was  
formerly;  
*páirmi vedére DÓNNE e DON-* I seem to see ladies and dam-  
*ZÉLLE, e sóno ABÉTI e* sels, and they are firs and  
*FÁGGI,* beeches.

The *article* is also never used when a noun is preceded by a *demonstrative* or *indefinite pronoun*; as,

*QUÉSTO GARZONCÉLLO s' in-* this little boy began to be fa-  
*cominciò a dimeslicáre,* miliar;  
*cóme dite vói COTÉSTE PA-* how do you say those words?  
*RÓLE?*  
*paréva quélla COTÁLE INFER-* it appeared to communicate  
*MITÀ trasportáre,* that same sickness;  
*con ÓGNI SOLLECITÚDINE,* they strive with all their zeal,  
*con ÓGNI INGÉGNO, e con* and their power, and their  
*ÓGNI ÁRTE si proccácciano* skill, to overthrow the Chris-  
*di ridúcere a nùlla la Cri-* tian religion.  
*stiána religióne,*

## EXCEPTION.

When a noun is preceded by the indefinite pronoun *tutto*, the article is used after the pronoun; as,

TÚTTI I PENSIÉRI, TÚTTO LO all the thoughts, all the attentions,  
STÚDIO, e TÚTTE LE ÓPERE, and all the actions.

The article, however, is omitted when *tutto* is used as a mere sign of qualification; as,

nói siám TÚTTE FÉMMINE, we are all women;  
ténne il pónite cóntra TÚTTA kept possession of the bridge  
TOSCANA, against all Tuscany.

When several nouns come together before or after the verb, and the article is used or omitted before the first of them, this article is to be repeated or omitted before every other noun in the sentence; \* as,

Lúcio Silla vinse LA VIRTÙ, Lucius Sylla surpassed Caius  
e I TRIÓNFI, e I SÉTTE Marius in courage and in the  
CONSOLÁTI di Cáio Mário, number of his triumphs and  
consulships;

nè VECCHIÉZZA, nè INFER- neither age, nor sickness, nor  
MITÀ, nè PAÚRA di móрте, the fear of death, could deter  
dálła sua malvagità l' hán- him from his wicked course.  
no potúto rimuóvere,

\* Examples are found in the classics, nevertheless, in which this rule is not rigorously observed; as,

AMÓRE, e L' ÍRA del re. (Bocc. g. 5. The love and anger of the king.  
n. 6.)

Crepáta per LO LU'NGO e per TRAVE'R- Broken lengthwise and breadthwise.  
so. (Dant. Pur. 9.)

Fra FÓLTI BÓSCI, e LE RÍGIDE A'LPI, In the thick woods, and among the  
e DISE'RTI SPELÓNCHÉ. (Bocc. g. 3. rugged Alps, and in lonely caves.  
n. 10.)

In the following examples :

Sopravvénnero i CONFÓRTI ed OFFE'R- There arrived the encouragements and  
TE dé' Venezíani. (Guicc. Stor. Ital.) the offers of the Venitians.

Se, col NÓME su' o e RIPUTAZIO'NE del Whether, with his name and the rep-  
pádre, ritornáre négli státi suóí di Pe- utation of his father, he could not return  
rugia potéva. (Mach. Stor. Fior.) to his own estates at Perugia:

the omission of *le* before *offérte*, and of *la* or *cólla* before *ripütazione*, are manifest errors of grammatical concordance.

## EXAMPLES.

GLI UÓMINI SÓNO DÉLLE FÉM-  
MINE CÁPO, e *sénza l' órdine lóro*  
*ráde vólte riésce alcúna nóstra*  
*ópera a laudévol fine.* (Bocc.  
Intr.)

GLI UÓMINI DI QUÉSTA TÉRRÁ,  
*vedéndo ciò, SI LEVERÁNNO A RU-*  
*MÓRE.* (Bocc.)

SE L' UÓM TI FÁCCIA — LIBE-  
RAMÉNTÉ CIÒ, CHE 'L TÚO DIR  
PRÉGA, — *Spirito 'ncarceráto, AN-*  
*CÓR TI PIÁCCIA — DI DÍRNE CÓME*  
*l' ánima si léga — In quèsti nóc-*  
*chi.* (Dant. Inf. 13.)

COSÌ CAVÁLLI, UÓMINI FUR  
VÍTTIME. (Dav. Ann.)

QUÍVI SOSPÍRI, PIÁNTI, ED ÁLTI  
GUÁI — *RISONÁVAN per l' áere*  
*sénza stéllé.* (Dant. Inf. 3.)

SÓNI, CÁNTI, VESTÍR, GIUÓCHI,  
VIVÁNDE, — QUÁNTO PUÒ CUÓR  
PENSÁR, PUÒ CHIÉDER BÓCCA.  
(Ariost. Fur. 4. 32.)

ÉRANO UÓMINI E FÉMINE DI  
GRÓSSO INGÉGNO. (Bocc. Intr.)

TU, CHE SÉ' UÓMO, DOVRÉSTI  
SAPÉRE DÉLLE CÓSE DEL MÓNDO.  
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)

USCÍRON FUÓCHI DI SOTTÉRRÁ,  
CHE SI APPRÉSERO A CÁMPI, VÍL-  
LE, CASÁLI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

SI NUTRÍSCE DI PÁNE E D' ÁC-  
QUA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*Non altriménti fan di státe i*  
*cani — Or col céffo or có' piè,*  
*quándo son MÓRSI — O DA PÚLCI,*  
*o DA MÓSCHE, o DA TAFÁNI.*  
(Dant. Inf. 17.)

CON BÉ' MÓTTI, E CON RISPÓSTE  
PRÓNTE. (Bocc. g. 5. fin.)

Men are the head of women,  
and without their management it  
seldom happens that any under-  
taking of ours succeeds well.

The people of this land, seeing  
this, will rise in an uproar.

If he [this man] will do for  
thee freely, what thou entreatest,  
O imprisoned spirit! do thou fur-  
ther be pleased to declare to us,  
how in these gnarled joints the  
soul is tied.

Thus horses and men were vic-  
tims.

There sighs, lamentations, and  
loud moans resounded through the  
starless air.

Music, singing, dresses, games,  
viands, all that the heart can think  
of, and all that the palate can de-  
sire.

They were men and women of  
dull understanding.

Thou, who art a man, ought to  
be acquainted with the things of  
the world.

There issued flames from under  
the earth, which set fields, villas,  
and hamlets on fire.

He feeds on bread and water.

Thus use the dogs in summer  
to ply now with their jaws and  
now with their feet, when bitten  
by fleas, or flies, or gadflies.

With witty sayings, and prompt  
replies.

*La Violante* VÉNNE CRESCÉNDO *ed* IN ÁNNI, *ed* IN PERSÓNA, ED IN BELLÉZZA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

Violante grew up in years, in stature, and in beauty.

*Così m' è convenúto fáre, e PER PAÚRA D' ALTRÚI, E PER SERVÁRE LA FÁMA délla mia onestà.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

I have been obliged to do so, for fear of other people, and also to preserve my character.

*Sol tánto vi díro, che cóme impósto m' avéte, COSÌ PENSERÒ DI FÁRE SÉNZA FÁLLO.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

I only tell you that I shall, without fail, do what you have ordered.

NON CÓME UÓMINI, MA QUÁSI CÓME BÉSTIE MORÍVANO. (Bocc. Intr.)

They died not like men, but almost like beasts.

PARÉVA CHE RUGGÍSSE CÓME LEÓNE, E BELÁSSE CÓME PÉCORA, E RAGGHÍASSE CÓME ÁSINO. (Dial. S. Greg. m.)

He appeared to roar like a lion, and to bleat like a sheep, and to bray like an ass.

*"Miserére di me," gridái a lui,* — "QUÁL CHE TU SÍI, OD ÓMBRA OD UÓMO CÉRTO." — *Rispósemi :* "NON UÓM, UÓMO GIÀ FÚI." (Dant. Inf. 1.)

"Have mercy on me," cried I to him, "whatever thou art, whether a shadow, or a living man." He answered me: "Now I am not a man, man I was formerly."

*Ch' io l' ho négli ócchi, e VEDÉR seco PÁRMI — DÓNNE E DONZÉLLE, e SÓNO ABÉTI E FÁGGI.* (Petr. s. 143.)

Whom I have before my eyes, and I seem to see ladies and damsels with her, and they are firs and beeches.

QUÉSTO GARZONCÉLLO S' INCOMINCIÒ A DIMESTICÁRE *con* *quésto Federíco.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

This little boy began to be familiar with this Frederic.

*Vói mi paréte uómo di Dío, CÓME DÍTE VÓI COTÉSTE PARÓLE?* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)

You appear to me to be a man of God, how do you say those words?

*Ma ancóra il toccáre i pánni dagli inférmi adoperáti PARÉVA séco QUÉLLA COTÁLE INFERMITÀ nel toccatór TRASPORTÁRE.* (Bocc. Intr.)

But even to touch the clothes used by the sick appeared to communicate with it the same sickness to the one who had touched them.

*E per quéllo che io estími, CON*  
 ÓGNI SOLLECITÚDINE, CON ÓGNI  
 INGÉGNO, E CON ÓGNI ÁRTE, *mi*  
*páre che si PROCÁCCIANO DI RIDÚ-*  
*CERE A NÚLLA, e di cacciáre del*  
*móndo LA CRISTIÁNA RELIGIONE.*  
 (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

TÚTTI I PENSIÉRI *delle fém-*  
*mine, TÚTTO LO STÚDIO, TÚTTE*  
*LE ÓPERE, a niúna áltra cósá*  
*tirano, se non a signoreggiáre*  
*glí uómini.* (Bocc. Lab.)

*Ricórdivi che NÓI SIÁM TÚTTE*  
 FÉMMINE. (Bocc. Intr.)

*E quel, che, sólo, — CÓNTRA*  
 TÚTTA TOSCÁNA TÉNNE IL PÓNTE.  
 (Petr. Trionf. Fam. c. 1.)

*O'nde LÚCIO SÍLLA, che VÍNSE*  
 LA VIRTÙ, E I TRIÓNFI, E I SÉTTE  
 CONSOLÁTI DI CÁIO MÁRIO, *si*  
*fè chiamáre il Felíce.* (Davan.)

*Che uómo è costúí, il quále NÈ*  
 VECCHIÉZZA, NÈ INFERMITÀ, NÈ  
 PAÚRA DI MÓRTE DÁLLA SÚA  
 MALVAGITÀ L' HÁNNO POTÚTO  
 RIMUÓVERE ?

And by what I can judge, it  
 seems that they strive with all  
 their zeal, and their power, and  
 their skill to overthrow the Chris-  
 tian religion, and to drive it from  
 the face of the earth.

All the thoughts, all the atten-  
 tion, and all the actions of women  
 tend to nothing but to rule over  
 men.

Remember that we are all wo-  
 men.

And he, who alone kept pos-  
 session of the bridge against all  
 Tuscany.

Therefore Lucius Sylla, who  
 surpassed Caius Marius in cour-  
 age, and in the number of his  
 triumphs and consulships, made  
 himself to be called the Happy.

What a man is this, whom nei-  
 ther age, sickness, nor the fear of  
 death, could deter from his wicked  
 course.

It has been said, that articles are used before *nouns*  
 employed in a *determined sense*; *adjectives, verbs, ad-*  
*verbs,* and *prepositions,* therefore, when used as *nouns,*  
 in *that sense,* require the *article* before them; as,

*sol d' úna chiára fónte muó-*  
*ve IL DÓLCE e L' AMÁRO,*

IL NÁSCER *gránde è caso e*  
*non virtú,*

*saréi conténto di sapére IL*  
 QUÁNDO,

IL DÓVE *io ho già pensáto,*

IL CÓME *ho io ben vedúto,*

from the same clear fountain  
 springs the bitter and the  
 sweet;

to be born in high life is a  
 chance and not merit;

I should be happy to know  
 [the] when;

I have already thought [of the]  
 where;

I have already seen [the] how;



IL PERCHÈ *ti dirò*,  
 ci è IL PRÒ, e 'L CÓNTRÒ,

I will tell you [the] why ;  
 there is something to say for  
 and against ;

*son certa del sì*,  
*ciascuno rispóse del no*,

I am certain of the affirmative ;  
 every one answered in the  
 negative.

## EXAMPLES.

*Così sol d' úna chiára fón-  
 te víva — Muóve il dólce e  
 l' amáro.* (Petr. s. 131.)

Thus, from the same clear, living  
 fount, springs the bitter and the  
 sweet.

IL NÁSCER GRÁNDE È CÁSO  
 E NON VIRTÙ. (Metast. Artas.  
 1. 1.)

To be born in high life is a  
 chance and not merit.

SARÉI CONTÉNTO DI SAPÉRE IL  
 QUÁNDO. (Petr. s. 306.)

I should be happy to know [the]  
 when.

IL DÓVE ÍO HO GIÀ PENSÁTO.  
 (Bocc. g. 2.)

I have already thought [of the]  
 where.

IL CÓME HO ÍO BEN VEDÚTO.  
 (Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

I have already seen [the] how.

*Del cómo non ti cáglia, il  
 perchè ti dirò.* (Bocc. Filoc.  
 6.)

Do not trouble thyself about  
 [the] how, I will tell you [the]  
 why.

*Sicchè ci è il prò e 'l cón-  
 tro.* (Gio. Vill.)

So that there is something to  
 say for and against.

SON CÉRTA DEL SÌ. (Bocc.  
 g. 7. n. 7.)

I am certain of the affirmative.

CIASCÚNO RISPÓSE DEL NO.  
 (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

Every one answered in the  
 negative.

The names of *abstract substances*, and those of *gems*, *metals*, *liquids*, and *provisions*, require the *article* before them; when used in a *generic sense*; as,

*laudévol còsa è né' principi* prudence is praiseworthy in  
 LA PRUDÉNTZA, rulers;

*l' óro, e le pérle, e i fiór* the gold, and the pearls, and  
*vermigli e bianchi,* the red and white flowers;

*vièppiù dólce si tróva L' ÁC- water and bread are sweeter*  
*QUA e 'L PÁNE, che LE than gems and gold.*  
*GÉMME e L' ÓRO,*

## EXAMPLES.

*LAUDÉVOL CÓSA, e necessária Prudence is praiseworthy, and*  
*mólto È NÉ' PRÍNCIPI LA PRU- very necessary to rulers.*  
*DÉNZA. (Bocc. Filoc.)*

*L' ÓRO, E LE PÉRLE, E I FIÓR The gold, and the pearls, and*  
*VERMÍGLI E BIÁNCHI, — Son per the red and white flowers, are to*  
*me acérbi e velenósi stécchi. me sharp and poisonous thorns.*  
*(Petr. s. 38.)*

*VIEPPIÙ DÓLCE SI TRÓVA L' ÁC- Water and bread are sweeter*  
*QUA E 'L PÁNE, — CHE LE GÉM- than gems and gold.*  
*ME E L' ÓRO. (Petr. Trionf. c. 6.)*

The names of *heaven*, the *earth*, and the *sea*; of the *cardinal points*; of the *four quarters of the world*; also of *kingdoms*, *provinces*, *mountains*, and *rivers*, when, in speaking of them, we consider their *whole extent*, take the *article*; — but when we speak of any indeterminate part of them, they *refuse* it; as,

*éra státo tánto témpo sénza he had been so long without*  
*vedére IL CIÉLO, seeing the heavens [the sky];*

*LA TÉRRA è frédda e sécca, the earth is cold and dry;*  
*andávi su per LO MÀRE, thou didst walk on the sea;*

*éra già L' ORIÉNTE tútto the east was already bright;*  
*biáncó,*

*non solaménte IL LEVÁNTE, not only the east, but also the*  
*ma quási tútto IL PONÉNTE, greatest part of the west,*  
*il conoscéva, knew him;*

*tútta L' EURÓPA è riputáta all Europe is considered to be*  
*strétto confine, a narrow limit;*

*L' ITÁLIA è státa piú vólte Italy has been several times*  
*soggiogáta dá' bárbari, subdued by barbarians;*

*sálvo LA MÁRCA TRIVIGIÁ- except the March of Trevigi;*  
*NA,*

*inghiottita da úna eruzióne overwhelmed by an eruption*  
*del VESÚVIO, of Mount Vesuvius;*

*ella è tagliata dall' ÁDIGE,* it is intersected by the Adige :

---

*Visse santo in TERRA ed ora* He lived a saint on earth and  
*è in CIÉLO,* now is in heaven ;  
*il campo Cristiano passò in* the Christian camp passed to  
*ORIENTE,* the east ;  
*le glorie d' ITÁLIA,* the glories of Italy ;  
*cóme fálde di néve in ÁLPE* like flakes of snow on the  
*sénza vénto,* summit of the Alps, when  
the wind is hushed ;  
*mi dissetái con ácqua di SÉN-* I quenched my thirst with the  
*NA,* water of the Seine.

## EXCEPT

*Il Lázio,* ' [the] Latium ' ; which always *takes* the *article* : and  
*Ida,* ' Ida ' ; *O'ssa,* ' Ossa ' ; which always *refuse* it.

---

Names of *seas* take the *article* ; as,

IL MEDITERRÁNEO, L' ADRI- the Mediterranean, the Adri-  
ÁTICO, atic ;  
L' EGÉO, the Egean ;  
L' ATLÁNTICO, IL PACÍFICO, the Atlantic, the Pacific.

Names of *cities, islands, and lakes* take *no article* ; as,

FIRÉNZE, RÓMA, MARSÍ- Florence, Rome, Marseilles ;  
GLIA,  
CÍPRO, SCÍO, CRÉTA, Cyprus, Scio, Crete ;  
*lago MAGGIÓRE, di LUGÁNO,* lake Maggiore, of Lugano, of  
*di CÓMO,* Como.

## EXCEPTIONS.

The following names of *cities and islands, however, take the article* ; viz. IL *Cáiro,* ' Cairo ' ; LA *Mirándola,* ' Mirandola ' ; LA *Roccella,* ' Rochelles ' ; L' *Alia,* ' Aix ' ; — IL *Giglio,* ' Giglio ' ; LA *Capráia,* ' Capraia ' ; LA *Gorgóna,* ' Gorgona ' ; and perhaps a few more : also the *names of those islands* which are *spoken of in the plural* ; as, LE *Baledri,* ' the Balearic islands ' ; LE *Filippíne,* ' the Philippine islands ' ; LE *Molúcche,* ' the Molucca islands ' ; &c.

The *names of the following islands, may or may not take the article* ; viz. *Élba* or L' *Élba,* ' Elba ' ; *Sardégna* or LA *Sardégna,*

'Sardinia'; *Córsica* or *LA Córscica*, 'Corsica'; *Sicilia* or *LA Sicília*, 'Sicily'; *Inghiltèrra* or *L' Inghiltèrra*, 'England'; *Irlánda* or *L' Irlánda*, 'Ireland.'

Names of *cities*, &c., always *take the article* when *preceded* by an *adjective*; as, *la bella Firenze*, '[the] beautiful Florence'; &c.

## EXAMPLES.

TÁNTO TÉMPO ÉRA STÁTO SÉN-      He had been so long without  
ZA VEDÉRE IL CIÉLO. (Bocc.      seeing the sky.  
g. 3. n. 8.)

LA TÉRRA È FRÉDDA E SÉC-      The earth is cold and dry, and  
CA, — *L' aere è cálido e úmido.*      the air warm and damp.  
(Brun. Tes. 1.)

*Per la quál tu su per lo máre*      By which thou didst walk on  
ANDÁVI. (Dant. Par. 24.)      the sea.

ÉRA GIÀ L' ORIÉNTE TÚTTO      The east was already bright.  
BIÁNCO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

NON SOLAMÉNTE IL LEVÁNTE,      Not only the east, but also the  
MA GIÀ QUÁSI TÚTTO IL PONÉNTE      greatest part of the west, knew  
*per fâma* IL CONOSCÉVA. (Bocc.      him by reputation.  
g. 10. n. 3.)

TÚTTA L' EURÓPA È RIPUTÁTA      All Europe is considered to be  
STRÉTTO CONFÍNE. (Buom.)      a narrow limit.

*Vói sapéte che L' ITÁLIA È*      You know that Italy has been  
STÁTA PIÙ VÓLTE SUGGIOGÁTA      several times subdued by many  
DA MÓLTI BÁRBARI. (Buom.)      barbarians.

*Rendégli la Signoría di Lom-*      He restored to him the signiory  
*bardia, sálvo la MÁRCA TRIVI-*      of Lombardy, except the March  
*GIANA.* (Gio. Vill. l. 3. c. 5.)      of Trevig.

*O've restò un témpo INGHIO-*      Where the city of Herculaneum  
*TÍTA la città d' Ercoláno* DA ÚNA      was overwhelmed by an eruption  
ERUZIÓNE DEL VESÚVIO. (Gang.      of Mount Vesuvius.  
lett.)

ÉLLA È TAGLIÁTA DÁLL' ÁDI-      It is intersected by the Adige,  
GE, *fiúme, cóme sái, ameníssimo.*      a very pleasant river, as thou  
(Algar. lett.)      knowest.

VÍSSE SÁNTO IN TÉRRA, ED ÓRA      He lived a saint on earth, and  
È IN CIÉLO. (Tass. Ger.)      now is in heaven.

*Già 'l sèsto áнно volgèa che 'N*      It was already six years since  
ORIÉNTE — PASSÒ IL CÁMPO      the Christian camp passed to the  
CRISTIÁNO *all' álta imprèsa.*      East on their great undertaking.  
(Tass. Ger.)

LE *sómme* GLÓRIE D' ITÁLIA.  
(Buom.)

The very great glories of Italy.

*Piovéan di fúcco dilatáte fálde,*  
— CÓME DI NÉVE IN ÁLPE SÉNZA  
VÉNTO. (Dant. Inf. 14.)

There fell down dilated flakes  
of fire, as flakes of snow on the  
summit of the Alps, when the  
wind is hushed.

MI DISSETÁI CON ÁCQUA DI  
SÉNNA. (Vanz.)

I quenched my thirst with the  
water of the Seine.

Ma L' EGÉO, ma L' ATLÁN-  
TICO, non *cérca di comprénde-*  
*re, e sa béne che éi non può.*  
(Davan.)

But he does not try to compre-  
hend the Egean sea, and the  
Atlantic ocean, and he knows he  
cannot.

*Perchè FIRÉNZE è città domi-*  
*nánte, e imitatrice di RÓMA.*  
(Davan.)

Because Florence is a powerful  
city, and the rival of Rome.

MARSEILLES [MARSÍGLIA], sic-  
*cóme vói sapéte, è antica e nobi-*  
*líssima città.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)

Marseilles is, as you know, an  
ancient and very noble city.

*Guiscárdo, re di CÍPRO.* (Eriz.  
Giorn.)

Guiscard, king of Cyprus.

*Che le biáde — Ogn' ísola di*  
*Grécia a lui sol miéta, — E Scío*  
*pietrósa gli vendémmi e CRÉTA.*  
(Tass. Ger. 1. 78.)

That every island of Greece  
should reap corn, and stony Scio  
and Crete should make wine for  
him alone.

*Viaggio á' tre lághi: MAG-*  
*GIÓRE, DI LUGÁNO, e DI CÓMO.*  
(Amor.)

A journey to the three lakes:  
Maggiore, of Lugano, and of Co-  
mo.

*Il cónte Guido déLLA MIRÁN-*  
*DOLA, móssó dálla munificénza*  
*di Lorénzo, póse la sua abita-*  
*zióne in Firénze.* (Mach. Stor.  
Fior. 1. 8.)

Count Guido of Mirandola,  
pleased with the munificence of  
Lorenzo, fixed his residence in  
Florence.

*Múovasi LA CAPRÁIA e LA*  
*GORGÓNA.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

May Capraia and Gorgona rise  
from their foundations.

*Dio* or *Iddío*, 'God'; and *names of persons*, when  
used in their *full meaning*, never take the *article*; but,  
when we *limit* their *signification* to designate a particu-  
lar object, they *always take* the *article*; as,

*Dío ci mándi béne,*

God help us;

IDDÍO <i>dispóse altraménte,</i>	God ordained otherwise ;
APÓLLO <i>fu vedúto saettáre il Pitóne,</i>	Apollo was seen shooting the serpent Python ;
ov' ÉRCOLE <i>segnò li suói riguárdi,</i>	where Hercules fixed his boundaries ;
OMÉRO, VIRGÍLIO, e DÁNTE,	Homer, Virgil, and Dante :

---

IL DÍO <i>délla guérra,</i>	The God of war ;
L' APÓLLO <i>del Belvedére,</i>	the Apollo of Belvedere ;
L' ÉRCOLE <i>Farnése,</i>	the Farnese Hercules ;
L' OMÉRO <i>Ferrarése,</i>	the Ferrarese Homer [Ariosto].

Agreeably to this principle the nouns *Dío, Iddío*, in the *plural*, when speaking of the deities of the heathens, *take the article* ; as,

<i>se fósse piaciúto áGLI DÉI,</i>	if it had pleased the Gods ;
GL' IDDÍI, <i>li quáli govérnano le nóstre cóse,</i>	the Gods, who govern our affairs.

They *take* also the *article*, when they are *preceded* by an *adjective* ; as,

L' <i>onnipoténte</i> DÍO,	the almighty God ;
IL <i>gránde</i> ACHÍLLE,	the great Achilles ;
L' <i>infelíce</i> PRÍAMO,	the unhappy Priamus.

They *take* the *article* when they are used to designate persons *familiarly* or *publicly* known ; as,

<i>chiamáto</i> IL GERBÍNO,	having called Gerbino ;
<i>avéva amáta</i> LA NINÉTTA,	he had loved Ninetta ;
LA MADDALÉNA, LA MARI- ÁNNA,	Magdalen, Marianna.

But when *names* of *persons* are *preceded* by one of the nouns *Sére*, ' Sir ' ; *Messére*, ' Master ' ; *maéstro*, ' master ' ; *Don*, ' Don ' ; *Dónna*, ' Donna ' ; *Fráte*, ' Friar or Brother ' ; *Sánto* or *Sánta*, ' Saint ' ; they *refuse* the *article* ; as,

SER <i>Brunétto,</i>	Sir Brunetto ;
----------------------	----------------

MESSÉR <i>Gugliélmo</i> ,	Mr. William ;
MAÉSTRO <i>Adámo</i> ,	master Adamo ;
DON <i>Piétro</i> ,	Don Pedro ;
FRÁTE <i>Albéto</i> ,	Friar Albert ;
SAN <i>Maurizio</i> ,	Saint Maurice ;
SÁNTA <i>Veridiána</i> ,	Saint Veridiana.

*Names of persons, preceded by the nouns Pápa, 'Pope'; Re, 'King,' are better used without the article ; as,*

*Pápa Giovánni, Re Cárlo,* Pope John, King Charles.

*Surnames or family names take no article, when preceded by names of persons ; but when they are used to specify a person of such a family, also when we speak of celebrated men, and when they are preceded by a title, the article is used ; as,*

<i>Gugliélmo Rossiglione, Gugliélmo Guardastagno,</i>	William Rossiglione, William Guardastagno ;
IL GUARDASTAGNO, IL ROSSIGLIÓNE,	Guardastagno, Rossiglione ;
IL PETRÁRCA, IL BOCCÁCCIO,	Petrarch, Boccaccio ;
IL cardínal MAZZARÍNI,	cardinal Mazzarini.

*Names of the months take no article ; as,*

<i>il sesto di GENNAIO fu l'ásce,</i>	the sixth of January was for the axe ;
<i>il primo e 'l secóndo di AGÓSTO fúron le martélla,</i>	the first and second of August were for the hammers.

*Names of the days may be used with or without the article ; as,*

MERCOLEDÌ, dópo desinare,	Wednesday, after dinner ;
IL SÁBATO mattina si partì di Firénze,	on Saturday morning he left Florence.

## EXAMPLES.

*Entrándo déntro disse: "DÍO  
CI MÁNDI BÉNE; chi è quà?"*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 2.)

On entering said: "God help  
us; who is here?"

*IDDÍO, giústo riguardátore dé-  
gli altrui mériti, ALTRAMÉNTE  
DISPÓSE.* (Bocc. g. 2 n. 8.)

God, the just rewarder of peo-  
ple's merit, ordained otherwise.

*Chè FU veraménte VEDÚTO  
APÓLLO SAETTÁRE IL velenóso  
PITÓNE.* (Davan.)

For Apollo was really seen  
shooting the venomous serpent  
Python.

*Io e i compágni eravam vécchi  
e tårdi, — Quándo venímmo a  
quélle fóce strétta, — OV' ÉRCO-  
LE SEGNÒ LI SUÓI RIGUÁRDI.*  
(Dant. Inf. 26.)

I and my companions were tar-  
dy with age, when we came to  
the strait pass where Hercules  
fixed his boundaries.

*OMÉRO, VIRGÍLIO, E DÁNTE  
han lasciáto nélle pittúre lóro  
mólto di che fáre all' immagina-  
tíva del leggitóre.* (Fosc.)

Homer, Virgil, and Dante have  
left in their pictures much to do  
for the imagination of the reader.

*IL DÍO DÉLLA GUÉRRA.* (Ce-  
sar.)

The God of War.

*L' APÓLLO DEL BELVEDÉRE.*  
(Miliz. Art. Dis.)

The Apollo of Belvedere.

*L' OMÉRO FERRARÉSE.* (Me-  
tast. lett.)

The Ferrarese Homer [Ariosto].

*SE ÁGLI DÉI FÓSSE PIACIÚTO.*  
(Bocc. Filoc.)

If it had pleased the Gods.

*GL' IDDÍI, LI QUÁLI dispóngo-  
no e GOVÉRNAN nói, e LE NÓSTRE  
CÓSE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

The Gods, who dispose of, and  
govern, us and our affairs.

*L' ONNIPOTÉNTE DÍO, e mise-  
ricordióso giúdice, nascónde dal  
súo giudicio i nóstri fálli.* (Pass.  
Ver. Pen.)

The almighty God, and merciful  
judge, conceals our sins from his  
judgment.

*E vídi 'L GRÁNDE ACHÍLLE, —  
Che con amóre al fine combattéo.*  
(Dant. Inf. 5.)

And I saw the great Achilles  
who fought with love to the end.

*Il quále mólto AMÁTA AVÉVA  
LA NINÉTTA.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)

Who had ardently loved Ninet-  
ta.



*E chinando la mano alla sua faccia — Risposi: "Siete voi qui, SER BRUNETTO?"* (Dant. Inf. 15.)

And inclining my hand towards his face, I answered: "Sir Brunetto, are you here?"

*MESSÉR GUGLIÉLMO Rossiglióne dà a mangiàre àlla móglie sua il cuóre di MESSÉR GUGLIÉLMO Guardastagno.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 9.)

Mr. William Rossiglione gives to his wife the heart of Mr. William Guardastagno to eat.

*Diss' egli a noi: "Guardáte, ed attendéte — Àlla miséria del MAÉSTRO ADÁMO."* (Dant. Inf. 30.)

And he said to us: "Regard attentively the woe of master Adamo."

*Tórto faréi àlla infiníta virtù dell' eccelléntissimo DON PIÉTRO de Tolédo.* (Bern. Tass. lett.)

I should do wrong to the immense merit of the most excellent Don Pedro de Toledo.

*FRÁTE ALBÉRTO dà a vedére ad úna dónna, che l' ágnolo Gabriéle . . . . .* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.)

Friar Albert gives a woman to understand, that the angel Gabriel . . . . .

*Con úna bólla istituì l' órdine di SAN MAURÍZIO.* (Den. Riv. Ital.)

With a bull he instituted the order of Saint Maurice.

*Paréva pur SÁNTA VERIDIÁNA, che dà a beccàre àlle sérpi.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.)

She seemed Saint Veridiana, feeding the serpents.

*Mórto PÁPA GIOVÁNNI, e non avéndo potúto RE CÁRLO ottenére che si fósse rifátto un Pápa Franzése.* (Gian. Stor. Giv. Nap. l. 20. c. 5.)

Pope John having died, and King Charles having not been able to obtain that a French Pope should be re-elected.

*IL GUARDASTÁGNO rispóse, che sénza fállò il dì seguénte andrébbe a cenár con lui. IL ROSSIGLIÓNE, udéndo quésto, pensò il témpo ésser venúto di potérlo uccidere.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5)

Guardastagno answered, that he would without fail sup with him the following night. Rossiglione, hearing this, thought the time of murdering him was come.

*L' esquisitézza del PETRÁRCA, áltro nùme délla nóstra volgár poesía.* (Buom.)

The exquisite elegance of Petrarch, another god of our Italian poetry.

*Il Decamerón del BOCCÁCCIO è di grán lúnga il migliór líbro, che abbíamo in fátto d' eloquénza Italiána.* (Den. Sag. Letter.)

The Decameron of Boccaccio is by far the best book which we have in point of Italian eloquence.

IL CARDINÁL MAZZARÍNÍ, *Italiano ancór éssò*. (Den. Riv. Ital. l. 23. c. 12.)

Cardinal Mazzarini, an Italian also.

SE IL SÉSTO DI GENNÁIO FU L' ÁSCE, E IL PRÍMO E IL SECÓNDO D' AGÓSTO FÚRONO LE MARTÉLLA. (Davan. Stor.)

If the sixth of January was for the axe, and the first and second of August were for the hammers.

MERCOLEDÌ, DÓPO DESINÁRE, *assàlirono da più párti quégli del láto dégli Adimári*. (Gio. Vill. c. 20.)

Wednesday, after dinner, they assailed from different quarters those who sided with the Adimari.

*Venúta in Firénze la novélla il Venerdì séra*, IL SÁBATO MAT-TÍNA Messér Giambertáldo SI PARTÌ DI FIRÉNZE. (Gio. Vill. l. 7. c. 31.)

The news having reached Florence on Friday evening, Messer Giambertaldo left Florence on Saturday morning.

A noun preceded by an adjective takes the article before this adjective; as,

IL GRAN *mále*, IL GRAN *pec-  
cáto*, IL GRAN *fátto adope-  
ráti da Gisippo*,

the great evil, the great sin,  
the great crime committed  
by Gisippus.

Nouns also take the article when preceded by an ordinal number, or a possessive pronoun; \* but they

\* This rule with regard to possessive pronouns has not been strictly followed by the early writers, as may be seen by the following examples:

*Com' é' vedránno quel voláme apérto,*  
— *Nel qual si scrivon tutti suóí dispre-  
gi*. (Dant. Par. 19.)

As soon as they shall see that book open, in which all their sins are written.

*Pássan vóstri triónfi e vóstre  
fómpe*. (Petr. Trionf. Temp.)

Your triumphs and your pomp pass away.

*Quésta ira di Dio a nóstra correzi-  
óne mandáta sópra i mortáli*. (Bocc. Intr.)

This wrath of God sent down upon mortals for our correction.

Besides there are in Italian several modes of expression, such as *a mia pósta*, 'at my pleasure'; *in suo nóme*, 'in his name'; *contra sua vóglia*, 'against his will'; &c., in which, by a peculiarity of language, the article is elegantly suppressed; as,

*Io non póssò far cáldo e frédò a mía  
pósta*. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

I cannot make warm and cold weather at my pleasure.

*Quésti sgrida, in suo nóme, il tróppo  
ardire*. (Tass. Ger. 3. 53.)

This one blames, in his (Godfrey's) name, their excessive daring.

*Ed io, contra su'a vóglia, altrónde 'l  
méno*. (Petr. s. 39.)

And I guide him elsewhere against his will.

refuse it when they are preceded by a demonstrative, interrogative, or indefinite pronoun ; as,

IL VENTÉSIMO Cánto,	the twentieth Canto ;
LA PRÍMA canzóne,	the first song ;
LA MÍA pátria,	my country ;
IL VÓSTRO amíco,	your friend :

---

QUÉSTI sospiri,	these sighs ;
QUÁL paúra ?	what fear ;
QUALÚNQUE ÁLTRA fánte,	any other woman ;
ÚNA COTÁL mezzanità,	such a middling course.

## EXCEPTIONS.

When the nouns are preceded by the *indefinite* pronouns, *úno*, 'one' ; *áltro*, 'other' ; *stésso* or *medésimo*, 'same' ; they are used with the *article* ; as,

L' ÚNA e L' ÁLTRA máno,	the one and the other hand ;
NÉLLA MEDÉSIMA città, NEL MEDÉSIMO giòrno,	in the same city, in the same day.

Sometimes the *noun*, which is preceded by an *ordinal number* or a *possessive pronoun*, is *understood* ; as,

non stringéndosi nelle vívande quánto I PRÍMI, nè nel bére quánto I SECÓNDI,	not confining themselves in eating like the former, nor in drinking like the latter ;
sóma d' áltri ómeri che dáí TUÓI,	a burden for stronger shoulders than thine.

When the *noun*, which is preceded by a *possessive pronoun*, is one of those which express *kindred* or *relation*, *quality* or *rank*, and this noun is in the *singular number*, the *article* is *suppressed* ; \* but, if the noun is in the *plural*, the *article* is always used ; as,

---

\* Notwithstanding this, instances are often found in excellent writers, in which

MÍO FÍGLIO ov' è ?	where is my son?
SÚO PÁDRE <i>ci fèce mólti dání,</i>	his father did us many injuries ;
MÍA MÁDRE, <i>un fratéllo minóre, ed io,</i>	my mother, a younger brother, and I ;
<i>ména léco TÚA MÓGLIE,</i>	take thy wife with thee ;
<i>il nóbile átto di Filippo, usáto a salúte di súo MARÍTO,</i>	the noble action which Philip had done for the safety of her husband ;
<i>il dirò a MÍO FRATÉLLO,</i>	I will tell it to my brother ;
VÓSTRA SORÉLLA, VÓSTRA ZÍA,	your sister, your aunt ;
SÚA ECCELLÉNZA <i>le baciò la máno,</i>	His Excellency kissed her hand ;
<i>stiámo assái béne con SÚA ALTÉZZA,</i>	we stand very well with His Highness ;
<i>gl' interéssi di SÚA MAESTÀ,</i>	His Majesty's interests :

---

<i>Guardái nel viso ái MIÉI FIGLIUÓLI,</i>	I looked upon the countenance of my sons ;
<i>ringrázio LE LÓRO SIGNORÍE,</i>	I thank your Lordships.

## EXCEPT

When the *noun* is separated from the *pronoun* by an *adjective*

---

the article is used before nouns of *kindred* and *quality* in the singular, preceded by *possessive pronouns* ; as,

<i>E'cco IL TU'O FÍGLIO.</i> (Guar. Past. Fid. 1.)	Behold thy son.
<i>Aréte Cirenáica, che dópo la móрте del su'o PA'DRE, résse la scuóla.</i> (Firenz. lett.)	Arete of Cyrene, who, after her father's death, directed the school.
<i>Vedér puóì con quánto affétto, — La vite s' avviticchia al su'o MARÍTO.</i> (Tass. Amint. 1. 1.)	Thou mightest see with what affection the vine entwines itself round her husband [the oak].
<i>Acéndo riguárdo áLLA VÓSTRA ECCELLE'NZA.</i> (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)	Paying regard to your Excellency.
<i>Ardirò di pórgerè i priégghi miéi áLLA VÓSTRA ALTE'ZZA.</i> (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)	I will take the liberty of advancing my prayers to your Highness.
<i>LA SU'A MAESTÀ.</i> (Dav.)	His Majesty.

placed between them; and when it is *preceded* by the pronoun *lóro*, 'their'; in which cases the *article* is *used* even in the *singular*; as,

AL *mío* DISPIETÁTO *pádre*, to my cruel father;  
 LA *LÓRO* *figlia*, LA *LÓRO* *so-* their daughter, their sister.  
*rélla*,

The *article* is also *suppressed*, when the noun, preceded by a possessive pronoun, is also *preceded* by a *numeral adjective*, or a *demonstrative* or *indefinite pronoun*; as,

con QUÉSTO *súo* *figliuólo*, with this son of hers;  
 QUÁLCHE *súo* *amico*, some of his friends;  
 ÓGNI *mío* *ufficio*, all my obligations;  
 NIÚN *vóstro* *fátto*, none of your business;  
 CÉRTI *suó* *amíci*, certain friends of his.

The *relative* pronoun *quále*, 'which,' when *preceded* by its *antecedent*, *requires* the *article*;\* but it *refuses* the *article* when it is used in the signification of *chi*, 'he who'; when it expresses *doubt*, or when it expresses *similitude*; as,

SÉTTE *GIÓVANI* *DÓNNE*, *i* *nó-* seven young women, whose  
*mi* *dÉLLE* *QUÁLI* *raccon-* names I would relate;  
*teréi*,  
 QUÁL *più* *gènte* *possiede*, he who has most people [sol-  
 diers];  
 QUÁL *guerriéro* *Cristiáno*, like a Christian warrior;  
 QUÁL *più* *vi* *piáce* *délle* *dúe*, which of the two you like best.

The words *signóre* or *signóra*, when used *substantively* in the signification of the *master* or *mistress* of a

\* In poetry, however, the *article* is often *suppressed*; as,

O DÍVA LU'CE, QU'LE, *in tre persóne*  
 —Ed *una* *essénza*, *il* *Ciel* *govérni* *e* 'l  
*móndo*. (Bocc. *Amet.* 98.)

O divine light, who, one substance in  
 three persons, governest Heaven and the  
 world.

E *quái*: "Di *rádo* — *Incóntra*," *mi*  
*rispóse*, "che *dí* *núi* — *Fáccia* 'L *CAMMÍ-*  
*no* *alcún*, *per* *QU'LE* *io* *vádo*." (Dant.  
*Inf.* 9.)

And he replied to me: "It seldom  
 happens, that any one of us makes the  
 journey which I am going."

thing, *take* the *article*; but when used *adjectively* as *titles* or *epithets*, they *take* the *article*, when we *speak of*, and they *refuse* it, when we *speak to*, a person; as,

IL SIGNÓRE [di quèsta cása] è uscito,	the master [ <i>of this house</i> ] is gone out;
LA SIGNÓRA è occupáta, vói quì sítte IL SIGNÓRE,	the mistress is engaged; you are the master here;
IL SIGNÓR Cárlo Dáti ed IL SIGNÓR Andréa Cavalcánti,	Mr. Charles Dati and Mr. An- drew Cavalcanti;
IL SIGNÓR Cardinále Spí- nola,	Cardinal Spinola;
IL SIGNÓR marchése e LA SIGNÓRA contéssa,	the marquis and the countess:

---

O SIGNÓR Achille!	O Mr. Achilles!
vedéte, SIGNÓRI, com' égli m' avéa lasciáto,	see, sirs, how he had left me;
SIGNÓRI e dónne, vói dovéte sapére,	gentlemen and ladies, you must know.

Agreeably to this rule, the words *signóre* and *signóra*, *take* the *article*, when used to *express* 'our Lord' [God], and 'our Lady' [the Virgin];\* and *refuse* it, when used *with* the adverbs *sì*, 'yes'; and *no* or *non*, 'no'; in *affirmative* and *negative* phrases; as,

IL SIGNÓRE, Jesù,	our Lord, Jesus;
LA SIGNÓRA délle Grázie,	our Lady of the Graces;
SIGNÓR SÌ,	yes, Sir;
NON SIGNÓRA,	no, Madam.

---

\* In the following instances the article is suppressed before the word *signóre*, preceded by the *possessive* pronoun *nóstro*:

*A cùi NÓSTRO SIGNÓRE lasciò le chiávi.*  
(Dant. Par. 24.)

*Quánto tesóro vólle—NÓSTRO SIGNÓ-  
RE in prima da San Piétro—Che ponés-  
se le chiávi in sua balia?* (Dant. Inf. 19.)

*Si dée éssere lo cavaliére astinente, e  
digiunáre il Venerdì, in rimembránza di  
NÓSTRO SIGNÓRE.* (Nov. Ant. 51.)

To whom our Lord [Christ] left the  
keys.

What treasures did our Lord demand  
of St. Peter, before he put the keys into  
his charge?

A knight ought to be abstinent, and  
ought to fast on Friday, in commemora-  
tion of [the death of] our Lord.

Finally, there are several expressions in Italian, in which the *article* is always *suppressed*; as,

<i>andáre</i> A CÁSA, A PALÁGIO or A CÓRTE, A NÓZZE, A FÉSTA, A CHIÉSA,	to go home, to court, to a wedding, to a feast, to church;
<i>stáre</i> or <i>éssere</i> IN CÁSA, IN BOTTÉGA, IN PIÁZZA, IN CITTÀ, IN CAMPÁGNA or CONTÁDO,	to live or to be at home, in the shop, in the square, in the city, in the country;
<i>uscíre</i> DI CÁSA, DI CITTÀ, DI CONTÁDO,	to go out of the house, of the city, of the country;
<i>avér</i> FÁME, SÉTE, CÁLDO, FRÉDDO,	to be hungry, thirsty, warm, cold;
<i>avére</i> IN MÁNO, <i>méttere</i> IN BÓCCA,	to have in hand, to put into one's mouth;
<i>menáre</i> A SPÁSSO, <i>tenér</i> TÁ- VOLA,	to take one to walk, to give a dinner;
<i>córrer</i> RÍSCHIO, <i>réndér</i> CÓNTO, <i>dáre</i> ÓRDINE, <i>prestár</i> FÉDE,	to run a risk, to give account; to give orders, to give credit.

## EXAMPLES.

*Quésto è dúnque* IL GRAN  
MÁLE, IL GRAN PECCÁTO, IL GRAN  
FÁTTO ADOPERÁTO DA GISÍPPO?  
(Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Is this, then, the great evil, the  
great sin, the great crime com-  
mitted by Gisippus?

*Di nuóva péna mi convièn far  
vérsi, — E dar matéria* AL VEN-  
TÉSIMO CÁNTO — *DÉLLA PRÍMA  
CANZÓNE, ch' è dé' sommérsi.*  
(Dant. Inf. 20.)

I must write verses respecting  
new torments, to be the subject of  
the twentieth canto of the first  
song, which treats of those who  
are sunk in woe.

*LA MÍA PÁTRIA mi ha nutri-  
cáto saviáménte.* (Am. Ant. d.  
2. r. 6.)

My country has brought me up  
wisely.

*Io vi vóglío dire ciocchè* IL  
VÓSTRO AMÍCO *mi féce stamáne.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I wish to tell you what your  
friend did to me this morning.

*Che fánno omái méco QUÉSTI  
SOSPÍRI?* (Petr. c. 33.)

What do these sighs do with  
me?

*Quáli léggi, quáli mináce,*  
*QUÁL PAÚRA?* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

What laws, what threats, what  
fear?

*Sé' tu più che QUALÚNQUE* Art thou more than any other  
*ÁLTRA dolorosétta FÁNTE.* (Bocc. weeping woman.  
g. 8. n. 7.)

*Per ÚNA COTÁL MEZZANITÀ, e* To observe such a middling  
*per contentáre il pópolo, eléssero* course, and to satisfy the people,  
*dúe cavaliéri Fráti Gaudénti.* they elected two knights [of the  
(Gio. Vill. l. 7. c. 13.) order of] Joyous Friars.

*Ed un, ch' avéa L' ÚNA E L' ÁL-* And one, who had the one and  
*TRA MAN mózza.* (Dant. Inf.) the other hand cut off.

*E NÉLLA MEDÉSIMA CITTÀ, nel* And in the same city, in the  
*mése medésimo di Apríle, NEL* same month of April, on the same  
*MEDÉSIMO GIÓRNO séi, nell' áнно* sixth day, in the year one thou-  
*mílle trecénto quarantótto, da* sand three hundred and forty-  
*quéstá lúce quélla lúce fu tólta.* eight, that light (Laura) was  
(Peti. lett.) taken from this light.

*Mólti áltrí servávano úna mez-* Many others chose a method  
*zána vía, NON STRINGÉNDOSI NÉL-* between the two, not confining  
*LE VIVÁNDE QUÁNTO I PRÍMI, NÈ* themselves in eating like the for-  
*NEL BÉRE QUÁNTO I SECÓNDI.* mer, nor in drinking like the latter.  
(Bocc. Intr.)

*Chè fárlé onóre — È D' ÁLTRI* For to do her honor is a burden  
*ÓMERI SÓMA, CHE DÁ' TUÓI.* (Petr. for stronger shoulders than thine.  
s. 5.)

*Mío fíglío ov' è, e perché* Where is my son, and why is he  
*non è téco?* (Dant. Inf. 10.) not with thee?

*SÚO PÁDRE CI FÉCE MÓLTI* His father did us many inju-  
*DÁNNI.* (Dav. Stor. 4.) rias.

*MÍA MÁDRE, UN FRATÉLLO* My mother, a younger brother,  
*MINÓRE, ED ÍO, síamo restáti* and I, have remained in extreme  
*nell' estréma miséria.* (Soav. misery.  
Nov.)

*I'o vóglío che tu ti váda, e* I wish that thou shouldst go,  
*MÉNI TÉCO TÚA MÓGLIE.* (Bocc.) and take thy wife with thee.

*Intéso IL NÓBILE ÁTTO DI* Having heard of the noble ac-  
*FILÍPPO, USÁTO A SALÚTE DI SÚO* tion, which Phillip had done for  
*MARÍTO.* (Giral. lett.) the safety of her husband.

*I'o IL DIRÒ A MÍO FRATÉLLO.* I will tell it to my brother.  
(Bocc.)

*VÓSTRA SORÉLLA mi mandò* Your sister sent me to Monna  
*a cása Mónna Lessándra, vó-* Lessandra's, your aunt.  
*STRA ZÍA.* (Cecch. Dot. 2. 2.)

*E SÚA ECCELLÉNZA LE BACIÒ* And His Excellency kissed her  
*LA MÁNO.* (Car. lett.) hand.



*Nói due, secondo che a me pare, STIÀMO ASSÁI BÉNE CON SÚA ALTÉZZA.* (Firenz. disc. an. 14.)

We two, as it seems to me, stand very well with His Highness.

GL' INTERÉSSI DI SÚA MAESTÀ. (Bent. lett.)

His Majesty's interests.

*OND' IO GUARDÁI — NEL VÍSO Á' MIÉ' FIGLIUÓLI sènza far mótto.* (Dant. Inf. 33.)

Whence I looked upon the countenances of my sons without saying a word.

*A che rispóndo, prima che io RINGRÁZII LE LÓRO SIGNORÍE.* (Bemb. lett.)

To which I reply, before thanking your Lordships.

*PÓSE Iddío nell' ánimo AL MÍO DISPIETÁTO PÁDRE.* (Bocc.)

God put into the mind of my cruel father.

*SENTÉNDÓ GLI Amidéi, che Messer Buondelmónte avéva tólta un' áltra móglie, e non voléva LA LÓRO [FÍGLIA, SORÉLLA], fúrono insiême.* (Gio. Fior. Pecor.)

The Amidei hearing, that Messer Buondelmonte had taken another wife, and wished no longer for their [daughter, sister] met together.

*Mónna Giovánna CON QUÉSTO SÚO FIGLIUÓLO sen' andáva in contádo.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

Monna Giovanna used to go into the country with this son of hers.

*PER consíglío di QUÁLCHÉ SÚO AMÍCO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.)

By the advice of some friend of his.

*O móltó amáto cuóre, ÓGNI MÍO UFFÍCIO vérsó te è fornúto.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

O beloved heart [object], all my obligations towards thee are satisfied.

*Éssi di NIÚN VÓSTRO FÁTTO s' impácciano.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

They do not meddle with any of your business.

*GLI vénne un méssó da CÉRTI SUÓI grandíssimi AMÍCI.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)

He received a message from certain very great friends of his.

*SÉTTE GIÓVANI DÓNNE, I NÓMI DÉLLE QUÁLI IO in própria fórma RACCONTERÉI.* (Bocc. Intr.)

Seven young women, whose names I would relate in due form.

*QUÁL PIÙ GÉNTE POSSIÉDE, — Colúì è piú dá' subí nemíci avólto.* (Petr. c. 29.)

He who has most people [soldiers], is surrounded by most enemies.

*VIVÉSTI QUÁL GUERRIÉRO CRISTIÁNO, e sánto.* (Tass. Ger. 3. 68.)

Thou livedst like a Christian and holy warrior.

- Nélla vóstra elezióne stà di tórre QUÁL PIÙ VI PIÁCE DÉLLE DÚE, o, se voléte, amendúe.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 2.)
- It is at your option to take which of the two you like best, or, if you wish, both of them.
- IL SIGNÓRE È USCÍTO. (Gram. Gram.)
- The master is gone out.
- LA SIGNÓRA È OCCUPÁTA. (Vanz.)
- The mistress is engaged.
- VÓI QUÌ SIÉTE IL SIGNÓRE. (Bocc.)
- You are the master here.
- IL SIGNÓR CÁRLO DÁTI, IL SIGNÓR AGOSTÍNO NÉLLI, ED IL SIGNÓR ANDRÉA CAVALCÁNTI *vi salútano caraménte.* (Red. lett.)
- Mr Charles Dati, Mr. Augustine Nelli, and Mr. Andrew Cavalcanti salute you affectionately.
- IL SIGNÓR CARDINÁLE SPÍNO-LA, *nóstro legáto.* (Bent. lett. 1.)
- Cardinal Spinola, our legate.
- IL SIGNÓR *maéstro*, IL SIGNÓR MARCHÉSE, E LA SIGNÓRA CON-TÉSSA. (Gram. Gram.)
- The master, the marquis, and the countess.
- O SIGNÓR ACHÍLLE! (Guid.)
- O Mr. Achilles!
- E á' villáni rivólto, disse: "VEDÉTE, SIGNÓRI, COM' ÉGLI M' AVÉA LASCIÁTO nell' albérgo in arnése."* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 4.)
- And turning to the rustics, he said: "See, sirs, in what condition he had left me at the inn."
- SIGNÓRI E DÓNNE, VÓI DOVÉTE SAPÉRE, *che . . . .* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)
- Gentlemen and ladies, you must know, that . . . .
- Andárono, e pénsomi che trovarono IL SIGNÓRE, GESÙ.* (Vit. S. G. Bat.)
- They went, and I imagine that they found our Lord, Jesus.
- E dal buón úomo fúrono ÁLLA SIGNÓRA DÉLLE GRÁZIE raccomandáte.* (Vit. S. Cater.)
- And by that good man they were recommended to our Lady of the Graces.
- "SIGNÓR sì, *da cavaliére,*" *gridò il cónte.* (Manz. Prom. Spos.)
- "Yes, sir, [it is the act] of a nobleman," cried out the count.
- NON SIGNÓRA; *è in compagnia d' un forestiére.* (Gold. Avvent.)
- No, madam; she is accompanied by a stranger.
- Giúnti a CÁSA del pádre délla fanciúlla.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 10.)
- Having arrived at the house of the father of the girl.

*Benchè i cittadini non abbiano a far còsa del mòndo a PALÀGIO, pur talvòlta vi vånno.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 5.)

The citizens sometimes go to court, though they have nothing in the world to do there.

*Nè già arèsti amíco sù càro, per cù mallevadóre tu andàssi a CÒRTE.* (Senec. Pist.)

You would not have so dear a friend, for whom you would go into court as bail.

*Che a NÓZZE, o a FÉSTA, o a CHIÉSA andár potésse.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

That she might go to wedding, or to a feast, or to church.

*Gli sbanditi uscirono quási tútti DI CITTÀ, e DI CONTÁDO.* (Gio. Vill.)

Almost all the outlaws went out of the city, and out of the country.

When we wish to designate a *portion* or a *number* of the *objects* in a *class*, this may be done in four different ways :

First, by *naming* only the *objects* of the class ; as, *ho buón víno*, or *buóni víni*, ‘I have good wine,’ or ‘good wines.’

Secondly, by *using* the preposition *di*, ‘of’ ; as, *ho DI buón víno*, or *DI buóni víni*, ‘I have [of] good wine,’ or ‘[of] good wines.’

Thirdly, by *using* the same *preposition* and the *article* ; as, *ho DEL buón víno*, or *DÉI buóni víni*, ‘I have [of the] good wine,’ or ‘[of the] good wines.’

Fourthly, by *using* the indefinite pronoun *úno*, *úna*, ‘a’ or ‘an,’ in the singular ; *alcúni*, *alcúne*, ‘some,’ in the plural ; as, *ho UN buón víno*, or *ALCÚNI buóni víni*, ‘I have a good wine, or ‘some good wines.’ Thus,

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE,

great beasts ;

VÍE AMPÍSSIME,

very extensive walks ;

DI *bélli gioiéli*,

[of] beautiful jewels ;

DI *buóne merénde*,

[of] good luncheons ;

DÉLLE *canzóni*, e DÉ’ *sonétti*,

[of the] songs and [of the] sonnets ;

DÉGLI <i>amíci</i> , e DÉ' <i>servidóri</i> ,	some [of the] friends, and some [of the] servants ;
ÚNA <i>lor sorélla</i> ,	a sister of theirs ;
ALCÚNI <i>suói vicíni</i> ,	some of his neighbours.

## EXAMPLES.

GRÁNDI BÉSTIE <i>hánno né' lóro bóschi</i> . (Dav. Ann.)	They have great beasts in their woods.
Ésso <i>avéa víe ampíssime</i> . (Bocc.)	It had very extensive walks.
<i>I'o ho di bélli gioiélli</i> . (Bocc.)	I have beautiful jewels.
<i>Avévan da lúi di buóne merénde</i> . (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)	They had from him good luncheons.
<i>Cominciò a fáre délle canzóni, e dé' sonétti</i> . (Bocc. g. 7. n. 3.)	He began to write songs and sonnets.
<i>Fátti prestaménte chiamáre, dégli amíci, e dé' servidóri</i> , (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)	Having caused some friends and some servants immediately to be called.
<i>Avévano úna lor sorélla, chiamáta Lisabétta</i> . (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)	They had a sister of theirs, called Elizabeth.
<i>Trovóllo con alcúni suói vicíni</i> . (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.)	He found him with some of his neighbours.

The English make *use* of the *article* before an *ordinal number* joined to a *proper name* ; as, *Leo THE Tenth*, &c. ; before a *noun* in *apposition*, or immediately following another, of which it *expresses a quality* ; as, *Mr. Grant, THE son of John*, &c. ; also in speaking of *quotations*, or of the *division* of a book ; *book THE first, chapter THE second*, &c. : in Italian, however, the *article* is *suppressed* ; as,

<i>il cardinale Richelieu, primo ministro di Luígi Decimotérzo</i> ,	cardinal Richelieu, THE prime minister of Louis THE Thirteenth ;
--	--

*giornáta nóna, novélla ottáva,* the ninth day, novel the eighth.

In speaking of *buying* and *selling* any thing, the English article *a* or *an*, used with nouns of *number*, *measure*, or *weight*, is expressed in Italian by the articles *il, lo, la* ; as,

*il fruménto si vendéva ad ottánta lire* IL *móggio,* the wheat was sold at eighty livres A bushel.

The same article, *a* or *an*, in Italian is *suppressed* :

First, after the verbs *to be*, *to become*, with a noun expressing the *country*, *profession*, *dignity*, or any *other quality* of the *subject* of the verb ; as,

<i>Vittório Siri, Italiáno,</i>	Vittorio Siri, AN Italian;
<i>füi poéta,</i>	I was A poet;
<i>saréte capitáno,</i>	you will be A captain;
<i>diverrà cardinále,</i>	he will become A cardinal.

Secondly, with a noun of the same kind after the verbs *to make*, *to create*, *to appoint*, *to elect*, *to choose*, *to declare*, *to proclaim*, whatever may be the *subject* of the verb ; as,

<i>fécelo maliscálcó,</i>	he made him A marshal;
<i>lo dichiarò máttö,</i>	she declared him A madman.

Thirdly, before a noun in *apposition*, or *qualifying another* which *precedes* it ; as,

<i>il Tamígi, fiúme d' Inghil-térra,</i>	the Thames, A river in Eng-land.
--	----------------------------------

Fourthly, before the *title* of a *work* ; as,

<i>discórso di Luígi Guicciar-dini,</i>	A discourse of Luigi Guicciar-dini.
---	-------------------------------------

## EXAMPLES.

IL CARDINÁLE RICHELIEU, PRÍMO MINÍSTRO DI LUÍGI DECI- MOTÉRZO. (Den. Letter.)	Cardinal Richelieu, the prime minister of Louis the Thirteenth.
---	--

GIORNÁTA NÓNA, NOVÉLLA OT-  
TÁVA. (Bocc.)

The ninth day, novel the eighth.

*Fissò la méta del páne al  
prézzo che il páne avrèbbe avúto,  
se IL FRUMÁNTO si fósse vendúto  
a LÍRE trentatrè IL MÓGGIO; e  
SI VENDÉVA FÍNO AD OTTÁNTÀ.*  
(Manz. Prom. Spos.)

He fixed the price of bread, as  
if the wheat were sold at thirty-  
three livres a bushel; and it was  
selling as high as eighty.

VITTÓRIO SÍRI, ITALIÁNO, fu  
storiógráfo délla córte di Fráncia.  
(Den. Letter.)

Vittorio Siri, an Italian, was  
historian to the court of France.

POÉTA FÚI, e contái di quel  
giústo — Figliuól d' Anchíse, che  
venne da Tróia. (Dant. Inf. 1.)

I was a poet, and sang of that  
just son of Anchises, who came  
from Troy.

*In luógo di quello che mórtó  
éra, il sostitù, e FÉCELO SÚO  
MALISCÁLCO.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

He substituted him for the one  
who had died, and made him his  
marshal.

SUL TAMÍGI, FIÚME D' INGHIL-  
TÉRRÁ. (Bocc. Com. Dant.)

On the Thames, a river in Eng-  
land.

DISCÓRSO DI LUÍGI GUICCIAR-  
DÍNI ái magistráti. (Mach.)

A discourse of Luigi Guiccardini  
to the magistrates.

### EXERCISE XXX.

The good, which man can derive from a thing,  
*giovaménto, uómo potére cavár cósá,*  
consists either in (the) its utility, or (in the) pleasure.  
*consistere — útile, piacére.*  
He advised the king to wish for peace, and not war.  
— *Confortáre re volére — páce, guérra.*  
I know (of) many fine things, and (of) beautiful little-  
*sapére móltó bello cósá, bello can-*  
songs, and I | wish | to tell thee one\* of them.  
*zóné, — | vó' — | díre<sup>3</sup> 1 — 4 2.*

\* One, in the feminine gender.

The queen having turned (*herself*) to Filomena, or-  
*regína* — *tornáre* *im-*

dered her | to | continue. Now you say, that if,  
*pórre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> | | *seguitáre*. <sup>2</sup> *díre*<sup>1</sup>,

| of | all things created for man, the faculty of  
*fra* | *tútto* *cósa* *create* — —, — —

speech — (speaking) is that which properly and par-  
*parláre*, *próprio* *par-*

ticularly belongs to — (is for) man, speaking | may  
*ticoláre* — — *uómo*, *parláre* | *si*

be said | with reason to be an excellent thing.  
*può díre* | *ragióne* — — — *óttimo*<sup>2</sup> *cósa*<sup>1</sup>.

And being asked by her (*of*) the reason — (why), he  
 — *domandáre* — — — — —

related to her | word for word | his whole dream.  
*raccontáre*<sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup> | *ordinataménte*<sup>1</sup> | — *sógno*.

I | can | not say how, nor if the effect is true; but  
 — | *so*<sup>2</sup> | <sup>1</sup> *díre* , *effétto* *véro* ;

I believe it for certain. I hope, (*that*) you will  
*crédere*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *cérto*. — *Speráre*,

not permit, that I, for | the great | love I bear  
*sofferíre*, , | *tánto e tále* | *amóre* — —

you, should receive death | as | a reward. It ap-  
 —, *ricévere*<sup>2</sup> *mórte*<sup>1</sup> | *per* | — *guiderdóne*. — *pa-*

peared to him, that he gave away, now to one,  
*rére*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, <sup>3</sup> *éssó*<sup>4</sup> *donáre*<sup>12</sup>, <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> <sup>7</sup>,

and then — (now) to another, castles, cities, and  
<sup>8</sup> — <sup>9</sup> <sup>10</sup> <sup>11</sup>, *castéllo*, *città*,

baronies. We have arms, men, and | well-fortified |  
*baronía*. *árme*, *uómo*, | *ben muníti* |

quarters, and provisions for a long war. Speak to  
*alloggiaménto*, *vettuágliá* — *lúngo guérra*. *Ricordáre* —

him of past and present things, and of new fears.  
 — *passáto*<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> *presénte*<sup>4</sup> *cósa*<sup>1</sup>, <sup>5</sup> — *nuóvo*<sup>7</sup> *paúra*<sup>6</sup>.

Weakness, fear, melancholy, and ignorance are the  
*Debolézza*, *timóre*, *malinconía*, *ignoránza*

sources of superstition. The Romans were inured  
*sorgénte* *superstizióne.* *Románo* *assuefare*

to hardship, fatigue, and a military life. Italy is  
*disággio,* *fatíca,* — *militáre<sup>2</sup> víta<sup>1</sup>.* *Itália*

situated between two seas. Cane della Scala was  
*situdre* *máre.*

one of the greatest lords, that from the time of  
*più notábile* *signóre,* — —

the emperor Frederic the Second | to this | | has  
 — *imperadóre* *Federigo* | *in quà* | | *si*

been known | in Italy. The Tiber washes a great  
*sapése* | *Itália.* *Tévere* *bagnáre* — *gran*

portion of the state | of the Pope | . King Charles  
*parte* *Státo* | *Pontificio* | . *Re* *Cárló*

died, when (the) his son | was | still in Burgundy  
*moríre,* — <sup>3</sup> — *figliuólo<sup>4</sup>* | *esséndo<sup>1</sup>* | <sup>2</sup> *Borgógna*

| under the care of | the Duke Philip. The Arno  
 | *apprésso a* | *Dúca* *Filippo.* <sup>3</sup> *Arno* <sup>4</sup>

separates it,\* which, as you know, flows from east  
*dividere<sup>2</sup>* <sup>1</sup>, — *sapére,* *córrere* *oriénte*

to west. Rinieri king of Cyprus. Three young  
*ponénte.* *re* *Cípro.* *gió-*

men love three sisters, and elope (themselves) with  
*vane amáre* *sorélla,* *fuggíre<sup>4</sup>* <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup>

them to Crete. I see Fracastoro, Bevazzano, Trifon  
*élleno<sup>2</sup>* *Créta.* *vedére*

Gabriel, and farther on — (more far) I see Tasso.  
 — — <sup>2</sup> *lontáno<sup>3</sup>* — — <sup>1</sup>.

The Greeks attributed them to their Gods, and to  
*Gréco* *attribuíre<sup>2</sup>* <sup>1</sup> *Iddío,*

those who performed those great deeds, which are  
*colúi* *fáre* *gran* *cósa,*

recorded of Hercules and Theseus, of Hector and  
*scrívere* *Ercóle* *Teséo,* *Éttore*

\* It, in the feminine gender.



Achilles. He has thy sister for his wife. Thou wilt  
*Achille.* *sorélla* — *móglie.* — *Ri-*

remember (thyself) | to | tell to thy father, that thy  
*cordáre* — | *di* | *díre* *pádre,*

children, and his and my nephews, are not descendants  
*figliuólo,* *nepóte,* <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *náscere*<sup>5</sup>

| on their mother's side | | of | a paltry-fellow. She  
*per*<sup>3</sup> *mádre*<sup>4</sup> | | *da* | — *paltoniére.* —

made (to) her brother, and (to) her sisters, and (to)  
*Fáre* *fratélló,* *sorélla,*

every other person, believe, that by the power of de-  
*persóna,* *crédere,* — *indozzaménto de-*

mons this had appeared to them. Have you heard  
*mónio* *éssere accadére*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> — *udíre*

how your good brother-in-law treats your sister. This  
*buóno* *cognáto* *trattáre* <sup>2</sup> *sorélla*<sup>1</sup>.

is my master. Without preserving faith to his friend  
*signóre.* — *serbáre* *féde*<sup>8</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> *amíco*<sup>3</sup>

and to his master. Gentlemen, it is well to taste  
<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *signóre*<sup>7</sup>. *Signóre,* *égli* *buóno* — —

— (that we should taste) (some of) the wine of this  
*assaggiáre* *víno*

able man. Shall I tell it to the master or to  
*valent' uómo.* — *díre*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *signóre*

the mistress? O, my Lord, when shall I ever  
*signóra?* *O,* <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, *quándo*<sup>3</sup> — <sup>5</sup>

be happy? A treatise | on | painting and | on |  
<sup>4</sup> *liéto?* *Trattáto* | *di* | *pittúra* and | *di* |

sculpture | by | Leon-Battista Alberti. Guided by —  
*scultúra* | *di* | — — — —

(with the guidance of) Ulamane, a Persian. Having  
*guída* , *Persiano.*

left Tauris, a royal city. In the times of the  
*abbandonáre Táuride,* *reále*<sup>2</sup> *città*<sup>1</sup>. *témpo*

emperor Frederic the Second. Under the pontificate  
*imperatóre Federígo* . *pontificáto*

of Pope Clement the Seventh. Tasso, Jerusalem  
*Pápa Cleménte* , *Gerusalémme*  
 Delivered, Canto the fourth, stanza the third, the  
*Liberáta,* , ,  
 first verse.  
<sup>2</sup> *verso*<sup>1</sup>.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.

ADJECTIVES in Italian, as we have already observed at pp. 390 and 393, may be *placed* either *before* or *after* the *substantives*, which they are to qualify ; as,

NUÓVA <i>spósa,</i>	}	[new spouse] bride ;
<i>spósa</i> NUÓVA,		
<i>víni</i> BUÓNI,		good wines ;
BUÓNE <i>vivánde,</i>		good meats.

The adjective is often separated from its substantive by another word ; as,

<i>un monastéro</i> di <i>dónne</i> <i>assái</i>	a convent of nuns very much re-
FAMÓSO,	nowned ;
<i>dúe cóse</i> móltó <i>ái</i> <i>miéi</i> <i>costúmi</i>	two things very much contrary to
CONTRÁRIE,	my habits.

There are, however, *some* adjectives which are to be *placed after* their substantives, and *others* which are to be *placed before* them ; as,

<i>fiéra</i> CRUDÉLE,	cruel monster ;
<i>inclinazíone</i> BISBÉTICA,	extravagant disposition ;
BÉGLI <i>óocchi,</i>	beautiful eyes ;
GRAN <i>mále,</i>	great evil.

Adjectives of *nations*; adjectives expressing *taste*, *smell*, or *hearing*; denoting *shape* or *form*; expressing *colors*,\* the *state of the elements*, and *physical* or *mental qualities*; adjectives that may be used as *substantives*; that are *formed of participles*; that *govern*, or are *connected with, any other part of speech*; are to be *placed after* the substantives; as,

<i>ábito</i> ARABÉSCO,	Arabian dress;
<i>favélla</i> LATÍNA,	Latin tongue;
<i>vino</i> DÓLCE,	sweet wine;
<i>érbe</i> ODORÍFERE,	sweet herbs;
<i>vóci</i> SOÁVI,	sweet voices;
<i>tórri</i> RITÓNDE,	round towers;
<i>rosái</i> BIÁNCHE,	white rose-bushes;
<i>témpo</i> TEMPESTÓSO,	stormy weather;
<i>vécchio</i> INFERMÍCCIO,	sieky old man;
<i>persóne</i> DÓTTE,	wise persons;
[ <i>un góbbó</i> ], <i>sárto</i> GÓBBO,	[ <i>a hunchback</i> ], a hunchbacked tailor;
[ <i>accésó, da accéndere</i> ], <i>lám- pada</i> ACCÉSA,	[ <i>lighted, from to light</i> ], a light- ed lamp;
<i>tázze</i> PIÉNE di VÍNO,	cups filled with wine:

To which may be added the *following* adjectives, which, *generally*, are put *after* the *substantives*; viz.

<i>lúngo,</i>	long;	<i>lánguido,</i>	languid;
<i>córtó,</i>	short;	<i>importúno,</i>	importunate;
<i>pígro,</i>	lazy;	<i>vizióso,</i>	vicious;
<i>lénto,</i>	slow;	<i>virtuóso,</i>	virtuous;
<i>néutro,</i>	neuter;	<i>pauróso,</i>	fearful;
<i>intióro,</i>	entire;	<i>coraggióso,</i>	courageous:

\* Instances are found, notwithstanding, among the poets, in which adjectives of *colors* are put before the substantives; as,

*Cold diritto sopra 'l ve'rde sma'lto,—  
Mi fur mostráti gli spiriti mágni.* (Dant.  
Inf. 4.)

There on the green enamel [verdure]  
were soon shown me the great spirits.

*L' ésser covérto pói di BIA'NCHE PIU'-  
ME.* (Petr. c. 4.)

To be then covered with white feathers.

And adjectives ending in *ele*, and *ile* ; as,

*crudÉLE*,           cruel ;           | *civÍLE*,           civil.

*Numeral* adjectives, both *cardinal* and *ordinal*, and the adjective pronouns *quésto*, ‘this’ ; *quéllo*, ‘that’ ; *cotésto* or *codésto*, ‘that near you’ ; are to be *placed before* the substantives ; as,

<i>DÚE ánni</i> ,	two years ;
<i>ÓTTO míglia</i> ,	eight miles ;
<i>ìl TÉRZO giòrno</i> ,	the third day ;
<i>la SÉTTIMA CÓSA</i> ,	the seventh thing ;
<i>QUÉSTO castéllo</i> ,	this castle ;
<i>QUELL’ áнно</i> ,	that year ;
<i>COTÉSTE lágrime</i> ,	those tears.

#### EXCEPT

When the *ordinal* numeral adjectives are *joined* to a *proper name*, or are *used* in speaking of the *division* of a *work* ; in which case they are put *after* the substantives ; \* as,

<i>Urbáno OTTÁVO</i> ,	Urban the Eighth ;
<i>LEÓNE DÉ-CIMO</i> ,	Leo the Tenth ;
<i>párte PRÍMA</i> ,	part the first ;
<i>canzóne QUÁRTA</i> ,	song the fourth :

And the *cardinal* numeral adjectives *ventúno*, ‘twenty-one’ ; *trentúno*, ‘thirty-one’ ; *quarantúno*, ‘forty-one’ ; &c. ; which may be put either *before* or *after* the substantives.

*Numeral adjectives*, as we have already observed at p. 403, *agree* with their *substantives* in *gender* and *number*. Now, by a peculiarity of language, if the numeral adjectives *ventúno*, *trentúno*, &c., *precede* the *substantive*, this substantive is put in the *singular* ; but if the

---

\* But, when, in speaking of books, the article is used, we find them, in good writers, both *before* and *after* the substantives ; as,

*NEL VENTE'SIMO CA'NTO del Purgatório, égli ricórda la genealogia dé' Capetíngi.* (Fosc.)

*Machiavélli, nel LIBRO PRÍMO délle Istórie Fiorentíne.* (Den.)

In the twentieth canto of the Purgatory, he [Dante] traces the genealogy of the Capets.

Machiavel, in the first book of the History of Florence.

numeral adjectives *follow* the *substantive*, then the substantive is put in the *plural*; as,

*novantúna* RUÓTA, ninety-one circles;  
*ÁNNI ventúno*, twenty-one years.

If there is any other *word* connected with the substantive, and this word *precedes* the adjectives *ventúno*, &c., it is put in the *plural*, though the substantive following the adjectives be in the singular; but, if the word *follows* the adjectives, it is put in the *plural* if it comes *after* the *substantive*, and in the *singular* if it comes *before*; as,

*ÁLTRE novantúna* ruóta, ninety-one circles more;  
*ánni trentúno* INTÉRI, thirty-one whole years;  
*ventúna PÍCCOLA STÉLLA*, VICINÍSSIME *tra di lóro*,\* twenty-one small stars, very near to each other.

To which may be added the *following* adjectives, which, *generally*, are put *before* the substantives; viz.

<i>buóno</i> ,	good;	}	handsome,						
<i>cattivo</i> ,	bad;			}	fine;				
<i>gránde</i> ,	great;					}	ugly, bad;		
<i>picciolo</i> or	} small;							}	rich;
<i>piccolo</i> ,									

There are some adjectives which may be placed either before or after the substantives, but whose *posi-*

\* This usage may appear contrary to reason; but it is to be observed that these and similar expressions are elliptical and stand for,—*ÁLTRE NOVA'NTA ruóte, e U'NA RUÓTA*, 'ninety circles and one circle more'; *VE'NTI piccole stéllé, ed U'NA PÍCCOLA STE'LLA*, 'twenty small stars, and one small star, all very near to each other'; &c., which sentences were first abbreviated into,—*ÁLTRE NOVA'NTA, e U'NA RUÓTA*, 'ninety and one circle more': *VE'NTI ed U'NA PÍCCOLA STE'LLA, VICINÍSSIME, &c.*, 'twenty and one small stars, very near, &c.' and afterwards into,—*ÁLTRE NOVANTU'NA RUÓTA*; — *VENTU'NA PÍCCOLA STE'LLA, VICINÍSSIME, &c.*

Notwithstanding this, there are instances of some writers using the *substantive* in the *plural*, even when *preceded* by the numeral adjectives *ventúno*, &c.; as,

*Enéa, ed Ascánio, suo figliuólo, e tútta sua génte* DE' LLE VENTU'NA NA'VI, *la détta reina accólse con gránde onóre.* (Vill.)

*Æneas, and Ascanius his son, and all the crews of the twenty-one ships, were received by the said queen with great honors.*

*Troveréte l' O'pera dell' Alessádro nell' l'ndie piú córta di quéllo, che finóra è státa, di 561 VE'RSI.* (Metast. lett.)

You will find the Opera of *Alexander in India* 561 lines shorter, than it has been hitherto.

tion affects the signification ; as, *galante, gentile, sólo, certo, dóppio, sémplice*. Thus,

<i>un GALÁNT' uómo,</i>	a good, an honorable man ;
<i>un uómo GALÁNTE,</i>	a courteous, a galant man ;
<i>un GENTIL' uómo,</i>	a gentleman, a nobleman ;
<i>un uómo GENTÍLE,</i>	a civil, gentle, courteous, kind man ;
<i>un SÓLO uómo,</i>	a single man [one only] ;
<i>un uómo SÓLO,</i>	a single man [not married, without family] ;
<i>úna CÉRTA notizia,</i>	certain [not well ascertained] news ;
<i>úna notizia CÉRTA,</i>	certain [undoubted] news ;
<i>un DÓPPIO amico,</i>	a double friend [two or equal to two friends] ;
<i>un amico DÓPPIO,</i>	a double [false] friend ;
<i>un SÉMPlice contadino,</i>	a single [no more than one] countryman ;
<i>un contadino SÉMPlice,</i>	a simple [inexperienced] countryman.

Two or more adjectives, qualifying the same substantive, may be placéd before or after the substantive ; as,

<i>VÁRIE e DIVÉRSE novità,</i>	various and different new things ;
<i>con pánni LÁRGI e LÚNGHI,</i>	with garments full and long,
<i>e vóci ÚMILI e MANSUÉTE,</i>	and language humble and meek.

Sometimes they are separated by putting one of them before, and the other or others after the substantives, which adds grace and elegance to the phrase ; as,

<i>NÓBILE gióvane e BÉLLA,</i>	a noble and beautiful young woman ;
<i>NÓBILI vestiménti e RÍCCHI,</i>	rich and elegant clothes.

## EXAMPLES.

*Dì da mia parte álla NUÓVA SPÓSA, che nèle mie contráde s' úsa, quándo alcun forestiére mángia al convito délla SPÓSA NUÓVA . . . .* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Tell the bride from me, that it is a custom in my country, when any foreigner goes to the banquet of the bride . . . .

*Ma l' óra del mangiáre venúta, l' abáte e tútti gli áltri e di BUÓNE VIVÁNDE e di VÍNI BUÓNI servíti fúrono.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

But when the hour of dinner was come, the abbot and all the others were helped to good meats and good wines.

*In quése nóstre contráde fu, ed è ancóra, UN MONASTÉRO DI DÓNNE ASSÁI FAMÓSO di santità.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

In this neighbourhood of ours there was, and there is still, a convent of nuns very much renowned for sanctity.

*Mi converrà far DÚE CÓSE MÓLTO ÁI MIÉI COSTÚMI CONTRÁRIE.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

I shall be obliged to do two things very much contrary to my habits.

*Cérbero, FIÉRA CRUDÉLE e divérsa, — Con tre góle caninaménte látra — Sóvra la génte, che quívi è sommérsa.* (Dant. Inf. 6.)

Cerberus, cruel and strange monster, through his threefold throat barks as a dog over the multitude which is immersed there.

*Gli storpiáti caprícci délla súa naturále INCLINAZIÓNE BISBÉTICA.* (Alleg. 157.)

The lame caprices of his natural extravagant disposition.

*Ell' è dé' suói BÉGLI ÓCCHI vedér vága.* (Dant. Purg. 27.)

She is charmed to behold [in the glass] her beautiful eyes.

*Quése è dúnque il GRAN MÁLE, il GRAN peccáto, il GRAN fáttö adoperáto da Gisippo?* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 8.)

Is this, then, the great evil, the great sin, the great crime committed by Gisippus?

*L' abáte, con tútto che égli in ÁBITO ARABÉSCO fósse, dópo alquánto il raffigurò.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Although he had on an Arabian dress, the abbot soon recognised him.

*La giòvane udéndo la FAVÉLLA LATÍNA, dubitò, non forse áltro vénto l' avésse a Lápari ritornáta.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

The young woman, hearing the Latin [Italian] tongue, feared, lest a contrary wind had brought her back to Lapari.

*L' úve tróppo matúre fáanno il VÍNO piú DÓLCE, ma méno potén-te.* (Gr. 4. 22.)

Grapes, when too ripe, make more sweet wine, but less powerful.

*Molti andavano attórno, portando nelle máni, chi fióri, chi ÉRBE ODORÍFERE, e chi díverse maniere di spezierie.* (Bocc. Intr.)

*Parlávan rádo con vóci soÁVI.* (Dant. Inf. 4.)

*Sópra le múra délla città edificò TÓRRI RITÓNDE mólto spésse.* (Gio. Vill. l. 1. c. 38.)

*I láti délle quáli vie, tútti di ROSÁI BIÁNCHE e vermígli, e di gelsomíni érano chiúsi.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)

*Con éssa súrse un TÉMPO fieríssimo e TEMPESTÓSO.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

*Io non vorréi, che nói pigliássimo un gránchio, e ch' é' fósse quálche VÉCCHIO débile o INFERMÍCCIO.* (Mach. Mandr. 4. 9.)

*Ma dópo sè fa le PERSÓNE DÓTTE.* (Dant. Pur. 22.)

*Costúi fu úno dé' piú infámi móstri di quélla córte, alliévo di un SÁRTO GÓBBO.* (Dav. Ann. 15.)

*Nélle máni le si pónga úna LÁMPADA ACCÉSA.* (Ann. Car. lett.)

*Con alcúne TÁZZE in máno PIÉNE DI VÍNO.* (Car. lett.)

*La VÉSTA, chi vuól che sia LÚNGA fino á' piédi, chi CÓRTA fino alle ginóccia.* (Car. lett.)

*Del lúngo ÓDIO CIVÍL ti prégan fine.* (Petr. c. 41.)

*Nel détto ánno si cominciò, e fu DÚE ÁNNI seguénti, gránde cáro di gráno in Firénze.* (Gio. Vill.)

Many went about carrying in their hands, some, flowers, some, sweet herbs, and others, different kinds of spices.

They spoke seldom, but their words were sweet.

Upon the walls of the city he built round towers very frequent.

The sides of which ways were all lined with white and red rose-bushes, and jasmine.

With it [the night] arose stormy and very severe weather.

I should not wish, that we make a mistake, and that he is some feeble and sickly old man.

But make the persons, that follow them, wise.

This one was one of the most infamous monsters in that court, and a pupil of a hunchbacked tailor.

Let a lighted lamp be put into her hands.

Holding some cups filled with wine.

As for her dress, some will have it to reach to her feet, others to her knees.

They beg that you will put an end to the long civil hatred.

In the said year, began in Florence a great scarcity of corn, which lasted for the two following years.



*E QUÉSTO CASTÉLLO pósto pro-  
pinquo a Firenze ad óTTO MÍGLIA.*  
(Mach. Stor.)

This castle is situated eight miles from Florence.

*Quási tutti, infra il TÉRZO  
GIÓRNO, morivano.* (Bocc. Intr.)

Almost all died within the third day.

*LA SÉTTIMA CÓSA che c' induce  
a far peniténza, è . . . .* (Pass.)

The seventh thing which induces us to do penance, is . . . .

*Le víti facévano gran vísta di  
dovére QUELL' ÁNNO assái úve  
fáre.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

The vines seemed as if they would produce an abundance of grapes that year.

*Al quále la dóнна disse: "Tan-  
credi, sérba COTÉSTE LÁGRIME a  
méno desideráta fortuna."* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

To whom the lady said: "Tancred, save those tears against worse fortune than this."

*I pittóri, gli scultóri, e gli  
architétti del témpo di Páolo  
QUÍNTO, e di URBÁNO OTTÁVO,  
non cedévano quási per áltro ri-  
guardó a quèlli che víssero sótto  
LEÓNE DÉCIMO, e Páolo TÉRZO,  
fuorchè nel mérito di avére apér-  
ta e disegnáta la stráda.* (Den. Riv. Ital. l. 23. c. 12.)

The painters, the sculptors, and the architects of the times of Paul the Fifth and Urban the Eighth, were not inferior, perhaps, to those who lived under Leo the Tenth, and Paul the third, in any other respect than the merit of having opened and marked the way.

*Petrárca, PARTE PRÍMA, CAN-  
ZÓNE QUÁRTA.* (Crus.)

Petrarch, part the first, song the fourth.

*Pói per la medésima vía páre  
descéndere ÁLTRE NOVANTÚNA  
RUÓTA.* (Dant. Conv.)

Then he seemed to descend ninety-one more circles by the same way.

*Ténnemi amór ÁNNI VENTÚNO  
ardéndo.* (Petr. s. 312.)

Love kept me in a flame twenty-one years.

*Cantándo ÁNNI TRENTÚNO IN-  
TÉRI spési.* (Petr.)

I consumed thirty-one years in the study of the Muses.

*La nubilósa d' Orióne gli ap-  
parì formáta da VENTÚNA PÍC-  
COLA STÉLLA, VICINÍSSIME TRA  
DI LÓRO.* (Tris. Elog. Galil.)

The nebula of Orion showed itself to him to be formed of twenty-one small stars, very near to each other.

*Il Signór Giovánni Corvino  
richi-déa d' ésser fáto GENTÍLE  
UÓMO Viniziáno.* (Bemb. Stor. 4.)

Mr. John Corvino, asked to be made a Venetian nobleman.

*DÓNNA è GENTÍL nel ciél, che  
si compiange — Di quésto im-  
pediménto.*

There is a courteous lady in Heaven who mourns this hindrance.

*Avéndo séco Tancredi* VÁRIE E  
DIVERSE NOVITÀ pensáte. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 1.)

*Il quäle ámpia matéria mi  
présta a dimostráre quánta e  
quále sia la ipocresía dé' religiósi,  
cò' PÁNNI LÁRGI E LÚNGHI, e  
cò' vísi artificialmente pállidi, e  
còlle VÓCI ÚMILI E MANSUÉTE  
nel domandár l' altrú. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 2.)*

*Ormísda, státo in lúngo trat-  
táto di dovér torré per móglie  
úna NÓBILE GIÓVANE E BÉLLA,  
chiamáta Cassánda. (Bocc. g.  
5. n. 1.)*

*Maéstro Mazzéo, avéndo présa  
per móglie úna bélla e gentíl  
gióvane, di NÓBILI VESTIMENTI E  
RÍCCHI la tenéva forníta. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 10.)*

Tancred having revolved in his  
mind various and different new  
things.

Which [proverb] affords me am-  
ple matter to show how great is  
the hypocrisy of the religious,  
who have garments full and long,  
and faces made pale artificially,  
and language humble and meek  
for the purpose of getting men's  
property from them.

Ormisda, who had been long  
talked of as about to marry a  
noble and beautiful young woman,  
called Cassandra.

Master Mazzeo, having married  
a beautiful and noble woman, kept  
her well provided with rich and  
elegant clothes.

---

EXERCISE XXXI.

There was once — (one time) a man of a ben-  
— *Essere* — *vólta* *uómo* *be-*  
eficent heart. This courtier had the misfortune —  
*néfico*<sup>2</sup> *cuóre*<sup>1</sup>. <sup>2</sup> *cortigiáno*<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> —  
(bad fortune) of losing the favor — (falling in dis-  
*fortúna* — — — *cadére* *dis-*  
grace) of his master. The astrologer of the Caliph,  
*grázia* *signóre.* *astrólogo* *Calíffo,*  
after various observations, said. I have been writing  
*vário* *osservazióne,* *díre.* — — —  
so long — (it is so long that I write), that my  
— — — *témpo* *scrívére,*  
hand | ought to be | accustomed to it. The affairs  
*máno* | *dovrébbe éssere* | *avvézza*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1.</sup> <sup>2</sup> *cóse*<sup>3</sup>

of the Lombards being prosperous. No\* sinful woman  
<sup>4</sup> *Lombárdo*<sup>5</sup> <sup>1</sup> *próspero.* *véno* *fémmina*

was ever more deserving (of) the fire than I — (as  
 — *dégno*<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> *fuócco*<sup>2</sup> — — <sup>4</sup>

I should be). People really pious, are wise. Although  
<sup>6</sup> *Persóna véno* *pío,* *sávio.*

he had a very long beard — (the beard great).  
 — — — — *barba gránde.*

Having, | from | a very rich and great merchant,  
*Éssere,* | *di* | *ricco* *gran mercatánte,*

become a nobleman. He showed to him a noble-  
*divenire*<sup>2</sup> *cavaliére*<sup>1</sup>. — *Mostráre* *cava-*

man, called Philip Argenti, a man large and robust,  
*liére, chiamáre Filippo* , *uóm gránde nerborúto,*

and very disdainful, irascible, and passionate. She  
*fórté sdegnóso, iracóndo, bizzárro.* —

| is to hold | | her | hands up, and | in | (the) one  
*Ténga* | | *la* | *máno álto,* | *da* |

hand a white child asleep — (that sleeps), | to |  
 — *biáncó fanciúlló* — *dormíre,* | *per* |

represent sleep; | in | the other a black one† seemingly  
*significáre sónno;* | *da* | *néro* —

asleep — (that seems to be asleep), | to represent |  
 — *parére* — — *dormíre,* | *signífichi* |

death. Immediately he collected a large, fine, and  
*mórte. Préstó* — *congregáre gránde, bello,*

powerful army. Some (of the) cherries are sweet,  
*poderóso óste. cértó*<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> *ciriégia*<sup>2</sup> *dólce,*

and some sour. I have many valuable precious stones.  
 — *cérto ágro. móltó ricco prezíoso piétra.*

The Pope had kept in the college of Pisa — (Pisan  
<sup>2</sup> *Pápa*<sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> *tenére* — — — *Pisáno*

college), to learn Divine letters, Raphael of Riario,  
*stúdio, imparáre Pontificio léttera, Raffaélo* ,

a nephew of Count Jerome. The first and most  
*nipóte* *Cónte Girólamo.*

\* No, for no one.

† One, for another.

essential advantage, which | ought to have been de-  
*essenziále frútto,* | *si<sup>5</sup> dovéra<sup>6</sup> ricaváre<sup>7</sup>*  
 rived | | from | the new studies, was the knowledge  
*di<sup>1</sup> | <sup>2</sup> nuóvo<sup>3</sup> stúdio<sup>4</sup>,* *cognizióne*  
 of the ancient Latin and Greek authors. The Academy  
*antico Latíno Gréco autóre. Accadémia*  
 of (the) Inscriptions and Belles Lettres is posterior  
*Iscrizióne Bélla Léttera posterióre*  
 to the Florentine Academy, and that of the Crusca.  
*Fiorentíno Accadémia, —*  
 Lulli was the father and creator of the French music.  
*pádre creatóre Francése música.*  
 A certain kind and charitable little-woman. Com-  
*cérto compassionévole caritativo dóнна. Com-*  
 punction does a great good, and renders man humble,  
*punzióne fáre gran béne, réndere uómo úmile,*  
 and charitable. He was tall, and of very pleasing  
*caritativo. gránde, piacévole*  
 and graceful deportment, and (a young man) of a middle  
*grazióso maniéra, giováne mézzo*  
 age. (The) their conversation\* having been long, and  
*età. <sup>3</sup> ragionaménto<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> lúngo,*  
 the heat excessive. Giving her to eat some roots  
*cáldo gránde. Dáre da mangiáre radíce*  
 of herbs, and wild fruits, and dates.  
*érba, salvático pémo, dáttero.*

---

\* Conversation in the plural.

## CHAPTER VI.

## USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN PRONOUNS.

## PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

ITALIAN *personal pronouns*, as it has been already mentioned at pp. 105, 164, 165, when they form the *subject* of the verb *may be either expressed or understood*; as,

io vidi un' arca non tróppo grande, I saw a good-sized chest ;

Marsilia, cóme vóí sapéte, è antica e nobilissima città, Marseilles, as you know, is an ancient and famous city :

Nè a negáre, nè a pregáre [io] son dispósta, I am neither inclined to deny, nor to pray ;

il che lietaménte [vóí] porteréte, which thing you will take in good part.

When personal pronouns are expressed, they are *generally put before* the verb ; but they *may also be placed after* it ; as,

ÉGLI avéa l' anéllo assái cáro, he held the ring very dear :

Nè vóglío [io] quí tralasciár di dire úna cósá, nor do I wish to omit saying one thing.

When, however, a *command* is given, or a *question* is asked, or when, in *narrations*, the *sayings* or *doings* of a person are *mentioned*, the pronouns are *always put after* the verb ; as,

mángi [ÉGLI] del súo, s' égli ne ha, let him eat of his own property, if he has any.

che vái [TU] facéndo per quéstá contráda ? what art thou doing in this street ?

“ dimmi il perchè, diss” io, “ tell me the cause,” said I.

io non piangéva ; piangévan ÉLLI, I wept not ; they wept.

When personal pronouns are *preceded* by the adverbs *cóme*, *siccóme*, ‘as’; *quánto*, ‘so much’, ‘as’; they are put in the *objective*; and consequently *io*, ‘I’; *tu*, ‘thou’; *égli*, ‘he’; *élla*, ‘she’; *églino*, *élleno*, ‘they’; are changed into *me*, ‘me’; *te*, ‘thee’; *lúi*, ‘him’; *léi*, ‘her’; *lóro*, ‘them’; if the *verb* of which they are *subjects* is *not expressed*; — but they remain in the *subjective*, and are never changed, if the *verb* of which they are *subjects* is *expressed*; as,

*erano siccóme lúi maliziósi*, they were as malicious as he;  
*quánto me, puóte éssere al-* any one may be as afflicted as  
*cún dolénte,* I:

---

*Se io fóssi nélla vía cóme è* If I were in the street as he  
*égli,* is;  
*se égli fósse in cása cóme* if he were within the house as  
*sóno io,* I am.

When two of these pronouns *cóme*, *one before*, and the *other after*, the verb *éssere*, ‘to be’; or *crédere*, ‘to believe’; and these verbs imply an *idea of transmutation* from one to the other of the two pronouns; that which *precedes* the verb, is put in the *subjective*, and that which *follows* it, is put in the *objective*; as,

*credéndo, ch’ io fóssi te,* believing me to be thee;  
*maraviglióssi, che [égli]* wondered much that he should  
*fósse credúto lúi,* be taken for him.

If the pronouns *io*, *tu*, *égli*, *élla*, *églino*, *élleno* occur with an *infinitive*, and this *infinitive follows* the pronouns, the pronouns are put in the *objective*; but if the *infinitive precedes* the pronouns, the pronouns remain in the *subjective*; as,

*udéndo lúi con gli áltri és-* hearing that he and his com-  
*ser mórtó,* panions were dead;  
*conoscéndo léi non éssere* knowing that she was not of a  
*di buón legnággio,* good condition:

---

*Non bastándogli d' ésser  
ÉGLI divenúto ricchíssimo,  
dispóse di ANDÁRE ÉLLA me-  
désima per éssó,*

He not being satisfied with  
having become very rich ;  
she determined to go herself  
after him.

## EXAMPLES.

*Madónna, ío vídi quéstá séra  
al tárđi UN' ÁRCA NON TRÓPPO  
GRÁNDE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 10.)*

Madam, I saw late in the even-  
ing a good-sized chest.

*MARSÍLIA, CÓME VÓI SAPÉTE,  
È in Provenza sópra la marína  
situáta, ANTICA E NOBILÍSSIMA  
CITTÀ. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 3.)*

Marseilles, as you know, is an  
ancient and famous city in Pro-  
vence, situated on the sea coast.

*Tancrédi, NÈ A NEGÁRE NÈ A  
PREGÁRE SON DISPÓSTA. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 1.)*

Tancred, I am neither inclined  
to deny nor to pray.

*IL CHE, se sárvi siéte, LIETA-  
MÉNTE COMPORTERÉTE. (Bocc.  
g. 10. n. 8.)*

Which thing, if you be wise,  
you will take in good part.

*ÉGLI AVÉA L' ANÉLLO ASSÁI  
CÁRO per alcúna virtù, che státo  
gli éra dáto ad inténdere, che  
égli avía. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)*

He held the ring very dear, on  
account of some virtue, which  
they had made him believe it pos-  
sessed.

*NÈ VÓGLIO QUÍ TRALASCIÁR DI  
DÍRE ÚNA CÓSA, la quále mi par  
mólto véra. (Bott. Stor. Amer.  
l. 6.)*

Nor do I wish to omit mention-  
ing here one thing, which appears  
to me to be very true.

*Or MÁNGI DEL SÚO, s' ÉGLI NE  
HA, che del nóstro non mangerà  
égli. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)*

Let him eat of his own prop-  
erty, if he has any, for he will not  
eat of ours.

*O figliuóla, CHE VÁI TU a  
quest' óra, cosí sóla, FACÉNDO PER  
QUÉSTA CONTRÁDA ?*

Daughter, what art thou doing  
in this street, alone, at this hour ?

*"DÍMMI 'L FERCHÈ," DISS' ÍO ;  
"per tal convégno, — Che se tu  
a ragión di lui ti piángi, — Sap-  
piéndo chi vói siéte, e la súa pec-  
ca, — Nel móndo súso ancór ío te  
ne cángi." (Dant. Inf. 32.)*

"Tell me the cause," said I,  
"on such condition, that if right-  
fully thou grievest for him, know-  
ing who you are, and his sins, I  
may repay thee in the world  
above."

*ÍO NON PIANGÉVA, sì déntro  
impietráí : — PIANGÉVAN ÉLLI ;  
ed Anselmúccio mío — Disse :  
"Tu guárdi sù, pádre ! che hái ?"  
(Dant. Inf. 33.)*

I wept not ; so petrified was I  
within : they wept ; and my little  
Anselm cried : "Thou lookest so,  
father ! what ails thee ?"

*Costoro, che dall' áltra párt*  
 ÉRANO SICCOMÉ LÚI MALIZIOSI.  
 (Bocc. g. 1. n. 4.)

These, who, on the other side,  
 were as malicious as he.

*Sicchè, QUÁNTO ME, PUÓTE ÉS-*  
 SERE ALCÚN DOLÉNTE. (Bocc.  
 Filoc.)

So that, anybody may be as  
 afflicted as I.

*Che diréste vói, SE ÍO FÓSSI*  
 NÉLLA VÍA CÓME È ÉGLI, *od*  
 ÉGLI FÓSSE IN CÁSA CÓME SÓNO  
 ÍO?

What would you say if I were  
 in the street as he is, or he within  
 the house as I am?

CREDÉNDÓ ÉSSO, CH' ÍO FÓSSI  
 TE, *m' ha con un bastóne tútto*  
 róttó. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)

Believing me to be thee, he  
 has broken all my bones with a  
 cudgel.

MARAVIGLIÓSSI fòrte *Tedáldo,*  
*che alcúno in tánto il somigliásse,*  
 CHE FÓSSE CREDÚTO LÚI. (Bocc.  
 g. 3. n. 7.)

Tedaldo wondered much, that  
 any one should be so much like  
 himself, as to be taken for him.

*La giòvane, UDÉNDÓ LÚI CON*  
 GLI ÁLTRI ÉSSER MÓRTO, *lunga-*  
*mente piánse.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2.)

The young woman, hearing,  
 that he and his companions were  
 dead, was very much grieved.

CONOSCÉNDÓ LÉI NON ÉSSERE  
 DI LEGNÁGGIO *che álla sua no-*  
*biltà béne stésse, tútto sdegnóso*  
*disse.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)

Knowing that she was of a  
 condition that did not well com-  
 port with his nobility, he said with  
 disdain.

*Ma NON BASTÁNDOGLI D' ÉS-*  
 SER ÉGLI *é' subí compágni in*  
*bríeve tempo DIVENÚTI RICCHÍ-*  
*SIMI.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 2)

But he and his friends not being  
 satisfied with their having become  
 very rich in a short time.

*Séco DISPÓSE di non mandáre,*  
*ma D' ANDÁRE ÉLLA MEDÉSIMA*  
 PER ÉSSO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

She determined not to send,  
 but to go herself after him.

---

#### CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

We observed (p. 109), that *conjunctive pronouns* are used instead of *personal pronouns*, when these pronouns are in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution*, and are closely connected with a verb, of which they are the *direct* or *indirect regimen*.



This is always the case when there is but *one* personal pronoun in the phrase in the *abovementioned relations*, when the *emphasis* does *not fall* upon this pronoun, and when this pronoun is *not in apposition* with the *subject* of the verb ; as,

MI potéte tórre quánto téngo [for, A ME potéte tórre, &c.],	you can take away from me all I have ;
pietosaménte IL chiamáva [for, chiamáva LÚI],	she called him with a piteous voice ;
CI facéste la béffa [for, A NÓI facéste, &c.],	you should put a trick upon us ;
LE VI donerò [for, A VÓI do- nerò LÓRO],	I will give them to you.

But, if there are *more than one* personal pronoun in the phrase, in the *objective* or in the *relation of attribution* ; if the *emphasis falls* upon the pronouns ; and if the pronouns are in *apposition* with the *subject* of the verb, or in *apposition* with *each other* ; the *conjunctive pronouns* are *not used* and the *personal pronouns retain their places* ; as,

ME non ucciderá tu,	thou shalt not murder <i>me</i> ;
úso dire, che é' sia un áltro ME,	I am wont to say that he is another self ;
potréste vÓI e ME consoláre,	you might console both your- self and me ;
offési ME per non offénder LÚI,	I injured myself not to injure him ;
ne fu, ed A LÉI ed A ME, per péna dato, A LÉI di fug- girmi davánti, ed A ME di seguitarla,	it was, to both her and me, given as a punishment, to her to flee before me, and to me to pursue her.

Conjunctive pronouns are *commonly* put *before* the verb, but *may* also be placed *after* it. When *before* the verb, they are placed *immediately after* the personal pronouns ; and when *after*, they are, as it has been

already stated at p. 110, always *joined* to the verb, so as to form a *single word*; as,

<i>égli</i> VI ama,	he loves you ;
<i>diédeGLI</i> la <i>súa</i> benedizióne,	he gave him his benediction ;
<i>correrránnoci</i> álle <i>cáse</i> , e l' <i>avére</i> CI <i>ruberánnno</i> ,	they will run to our houses, and rob us of our property ;
<i>il</i> <i>mandárLO</i> <i>fuór</i> di <i>cása</i> NE SARÉBBE <i>gran</i> <i>biásimo</i> ,	to send him out of our house would be in us a great fault ;
<i>ajutáronMI</i> <i>béne</i> ,	they assisted me well ;
<i>éTTI</i> <i>uscito</i> di <i>ménite</i> ?	has it escaped thy mind ?
<i>mostróCCI</i> un' <i>ómbra</i> ,	he showed us a spirit.

We have already observed (pp. 338 - 340), that *infinitives* and some *other forms* of verbs, when *joined* to *conjunctive pronouns*, drop their *last vowel*; and that the *consonant* of *conjunctive pronouns* (*gli* only excepted) must be *doubled* when *joined* to *those forms* of verbs, which either consist of *one syllable*, or end with an *accented vowel*.

When the verb is in the *infinitive*, in the *gerund*, in the *participle*, or in the *imperative mood*,\* the *conjunctive pronouns* are *always* to be put *after* the verb; as,

<i>ricominciò</i> a <i>fárgLI</i> i <i>maggiór</i> <i>piacéri</i> ,	she began to do him again the greatest kindnesses ;
<i>trovándosi</i> <i>égli</i> <i>úna</i> <i>vólta</i> a <i>Parigi</i> ,	he finding himself once in Paris ;
<i>son</i> <i>venúta</i> a <i>ristorárTI</i> <i>dé'</i> <i>dánni</i> <i>avúti</i> ,	I am come to make thee some amends for the evils sus- tained ;

\* Notwithstanding this rule the following examples may be cited from the classics, in which the *conjunctive pronoun* is put *before* the *imperative*:

*Fámmi* *ritornáre* álla *prigióne*, e *quívi*  
*quánto* ti *piáce* MI *fa* *affliggere*. (Bocc.  
g. 2. n. 6.)

Cause me to be carried back to my  
prison, and there cause me to be tor-  
mented as much as thou pleasest.

*Andáte* *vói* e *Siro* a *trovár* *Callimaco*,  
e *GLI* *dite* che la *cósa* è *procedúta* *béne*.  
(Mach. Comm.)

Go you and Syrus to find Callimachus,  
and tell him that the affair went on  
well.

*Ed* io a *lui*: “ *Con* *piángere* e *con* *lutto*,  
— *Spirito* *maldétto*, *TI* *rimáni*.” (Dant.  
Inf. 8.)

And I said to him: “ In mourning and  
in woe, cursed spirit, do thou remain.”

<i>ricordándoti délla túa pre- térta víta,</i>	bringing to thy mind thy past life;
<i>muóvati quéstó sólo míó álto,</i>	let this act of mine alone move thee ;
<i>salutatolo, il domandò se égli sì sentisse niénte,</i>	after he had saluted him, he asked him, whether any thing ailed him ;
<i>siálemi buón amíco,</i>	be my good friend ;
<i>fáltala préndere,</i>	having caused her to be taken.

## EXCEPTIONS.

When the adverb *non*, 'no,' or 'not' ; *precedes* the verb in the *im-  
perative*, the conjunctive pronouns must be put *before* the verb ; as,

<i>non si rénda ridícóla,</i>	do not make yourself ridiculous ;
<i>non le dáte rétta,</i>	do not mind her.

Conjunctive pronouns are sometimes put *before*, even when the  
verb is in the *infinitive* and in the *gerund*, *preceded* by the adverb  
*non* ; as,

<i>mi aréa promésso di non s' al- lontanáre,</i>	she had promised me, that she would not depart ;
<i>non mi vedéndo giúngere,</i>	not seeing me arrive.

The conjunctive pronoun *loro*, 'to them,' or 'them' ;  
is always to be put *after* the verb ; as,

<i>vedúti LÓRO in sì póvera con- dizióne,</i>	having seen them in so mis- erable a condition ;
<i>mandò LÓRO dicéndo . . . . ,</i>	sent to them, saying . . . . .

When *loro* is in the *objective*, the pronouns *gli* or *li*, for the *mascu-  
line* gender, and *le* for the *feminine*, sometimes take its place, but then  
they follow the *general rule* ; as,

<i>facéndoGLI [or, facéndo LÓRO (i suói figli)] da buóni maé- stri insegnáre,</i>	causing them [ <i>her children</i> ] to be instructed by good masters ;
<i>GLI féce [or, féce LÓRO] im- paráre tútte le buóne árti,</i>	she made them learn all good arts.

When *more than one* conjunctive pronoun occur with

the *same verb*, they follow the *same rules*, as when they occur with it *singly*; as,

<i>có' compágni subí ségli</i>	he ate them with his com-
<i>mangiò,</i>	panions;
<i>deliberárono di dárgliela</i>	they determined to give her to
<i>per móglie,</i>	him as his wife.

Conjunctive pronouns occurring in the *same sentence* with *two verbs*, one of which is in the *infinitive*, are generally put *before* the *other verb*; as,

<i>io TI vóglío dire,</i>	I wish to tell thee;
<i>non GLIÉLO voléva dire,</i>	she would not tell it to him.

## EXCEPT

When the *other verb* is in the *imperative*, for then they must be put *after it*; as,

<i>fáTTI sentíre,</i>	make thyself heard;
<i>lásciamITI vedére,</i>	let me look at thee.

When conjunctive pronouns occur with the indefinite pronoun *si*, this is always put *after*, and sometimes *joined* to them; as,

<i>il bel che mi si móstra,</i>	the good which shows itself to me;
<i>quánte cose gli si proméllono,</i>	how many things they promise to him;
<i>attribuiscecISI a nóstro fálló,</i>	it is attributed to our fault.

Conjunctive pronouns occurring with the adverb *écco*; and the pronoun *lo* occurring with the adverb *non*; are put *after* them; and, as it has been already stated at p. 116, form with them *one single word*; as,

<i>éccomi,</i>	here I am;
<i>noL niégo,</i>	I do not deny it.

The particles *ne*, 'of him,' 'of her,' 'of it'; 'of them'; and *ci*, 'here, hither'; *vi*, 'there, thither'; follow the same rules as the *conjunctive pronouns*. They may be put either *before* or *after* the verb, *except* when the verb is in the *infinitive*, in the *gerund*, in the *participle*, and in the *imperative*; in which cases they are always put *after* it; as,

<i>mi piáce di parlárNE,</i>	it pleases me to speak of it;
<i>núno veggéDNE,</i>	seeing no one of them;
<i>tráttANE la sua bélla róba,</i>	having taken out her beautiful robe;
<i>gettóNNE i fondaménti il re Tarquínio,</i>	King Tarquin laid the foundations of it;
<i>son dispósto ad andárvI,</i>	I am disposed to go there;
<i>il cuóco póstovI tútta l' árte,</i>	the cook having employed there [or in it] all his art;
<i>fáteci dipíngere la Cortesía,</i>	cause Liberality to be painted there.

If the particles *ci*, *vi*, occur with one of the *conjunctive pronouns* *mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, usage *strictly* requires that the particles should be *placed after* the pronouns; but they are *sometimes* put *before* them, particularly if *euphony* demands it; as,

<i>costóro mi CI fánno entráre,</i>	they make me enter there [or into it];
<i>to ti CI védo sémpre,</i>	I see you here always:
<i>VI ti porrò úna tavolúccia,</i>	I shall place for thee there a small table;
<i>dirò che VI CI ábbia fátta veníre per denári,</i>	I will say that he has caused you to come here for money.

When the particles *ci*, *vi*, occur with the pronouns, *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, they are generally put *before* the pronouns, and, as has been mentioned at p. 160, form with them a *single word*; but they may be placed also after them, *separately*; as,

<i>ingégnati di ritenérCELO,</i>	contrive to keep him there;
----------------------------------	-----------------------------

*ringraziando Iddio che con-*  
*dóto VEL' aréva,*

thanking God that he had con-  
ducted him there :

*Nélla sua cámara il míse, e*  
*déntro IL VI serrò,*

she put him in her room, and  
there she locked him in.

EXAMPLES.

*Vói MI POTÉTE TÓRRE QUÁNTO*  
*TÉNGO, e donármí, siccóme vóstro*  
*uómo, a chi vi piáce. (Bocc. g.*  
*3. n. 9.)*

You can take away from me  
all I have, and give me, like one  
of your men, to whomsoever it  
pleases you.

*Assái vólte, la nítte, PIETOSA-*  
*MÉNTE IL CHIAMÁVA. (Bocc. g.*  
*4. n. 5.)*

A great many times, during the  
night, did she call him with a  
piteous voice.

*Ma guardáte che vói non CI*  
*FACÉSTE LA BÉFFA. (Bocc. g.*  
*8. n. 1.)*

But beware putting a trick upon  
us.

*S' elle vi piácciono, io LE VI*  
*DONERÒ. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)*

If you like them, I will give  
them to you.

*E udéndo che égli avéa mórti*  
*dúe confessóri, disse fra sè me-*  
*désimo : " ME NON UCCIDERÁI*  
*TU." (Pass.)*

And hearing that he had mur-  
dered two confessors, he said to  
himself : " Thou shalt not murder  
me."

*Tánto pósso dispórre di lui,*  
*che io úso DÍRE, CHE CÉRTO É'*  
*SÍA UN ÁLTRO ME. (Firenz.)*

I can so much depend on him,  
that I am wont to say, that he  
is certainly another self.

*Ma, dóve vói voléste, per av-*  
*ventúra, vói POTRÉSTE VÓI E ME*  
*CONSOLÁRE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)*

But, if you wished, you might  
perhaps console both yourself and  
me.

*OFFÉSI ME PER NON OFFÉNDER*  
*LÚI. (Petr.)*

I injured myself not to injure  
him.

*Così NE FU, ED A LÉI ED A*  
*ME, PER PÉNA DÁTO, A LÉI DI*  
*FUGGÍRMI DAVÁNTI, ED A ME,*  
*che già cotánto l' amái, DI SE-*  
*GUITÁRLA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)*

Thus it was, to both her and  
me, given as a punishment, to her  
to flee before me, and to me, who  
loved her so much, to pursue her.

*Io so che ÉGLI VI ÁMA. (Bocc.*  
*g. 3. n. 7)*

I know that he loves you.

*DIÉDEGLI LA SÚA BENEDIZI-*  
*ÓNE. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)*

He gave him his benediction.

*CORRERÁNNOCI ÁLLE CÁSE, E*  
*L' AVÉRE CI RUBERÁNNO. (Bocc.*  
*g. 1. n. 1.)*

They will run to our houses, and  
rob us of our property.

IL MANDÁRLO FUÓR DI CÁSA  
*nóstra, così inférmo*, NE SARÉB-  
BE GRAN BIÁSIMO. (Bocc. g. 1.  
n. 1.)

AJUTÁRONMI *élla* BÉNE. (Bocc.  
g. 4. Proem.)

ÉTTI *égli da stamáne* USCÍTO  
DI MÉNTE? (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

MOSTRÓCCI UN' ÓMBRA *dall' ún*  
*cánto sóla*. (Dant. Inf. 12.)

RICOMINCIÒ A FÁRGLI I MAG-  
GIÓR PIACÉRI. (Bocc. g. 8. n.  
10.)

TROVÁNDOSI ÉGLI ÚNA VÓLTA  
A PARÍGI. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 7.)

*Io* SON VENÚTA A RISTORÁRTI  
DÉ' DÁNNI, *li quáli tu hái già*  
*avúti per me*. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

*Federigo*, RICORDÁNDOTI DÉL-  
LA TÚA PRETÉRITA VÍTA. (Bocc.  
g. 5. n. 9.)

MUÓVATI *alquánto* QUÉSTO SÓ-  
LO MÍO ÁTTO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

SALUTÁTOLO, IL DOMANDÒ SE  
SI SENTÍSSE NIÉNTE. (Bocc.)

SIÁTEMI, *adúnque, sémpr* BUÓN  
AMÍCO. (Gang. lett.)

FÁTTALA *prestaménte* PRÉN-  
DERE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)

NON SI RÉNDA RIDÍCOLA *círca*  
*le usánze del móndo*. (Gang.  
lett.)

NON LE DÁTE RÉTTA, *nè più*  
*la frequentáte*. (Vanz.)

NON MI VEDÉNDO GIÚNGERE  
*in témpo, se ne ritornò, benchè*  
*mi avésse proméss* DI NON S' AL-  
LONTANÁRE *fino al mío arrívo*.  
(Vanz.)

To send him out of our house,  
so sick as he is, would be in us  
a great fault.

They assisted me well.

Has it, since this morning, es-  
caped thy mind?

He showed us a spirit by itself  
apart.

She began to do him again the  
greatest kindnesses.

He finding himself once in  
Paris.

I am come to make thee some  
amends for the evils thou hast  
sustained on my account.

Frederic, bringing to thy mind  
thy past life.

Let this act of mine alone move  
thee at least.

After he had saluted him, he  
asked him, whether any thing  
ailed him.

Be, then, always my good  
friend.

Having caused her immediately  
to be taken.

Do not make yourself ridicu-  
lous respecting the customs of the  
world.

Do not mind her, nor visit her  
any longer.

Not seeing me arrive in time,  
she went back, although she had  
promised me, that she would not  
depart before my arrival.

VEDÚTI LÓRO IN SÌ PÓVERA  
CONDIZIÓNE *ridótti*. (Pecor.)

Having seen them reduced to  
so miserable a condition.

E MANDÒ LÓRO DICÉNDÒ . . . .  
(Bott. Stor. Amer.)

And sent to them, saying . . . .

*I quáli* [i suói figli] *facevano*  
*stupire* - *chì* GLI *conoscéva*, e la  
*mádre* FACÉNDÒGLI DA BUÓNI  
MAÉSTRI INSEGNÁRE, GLI FÉCE  
IMPARÁRE TÚTTE LE BUÓNE ÁRTI.  
(Pecor. g. 10. n. 1.)

Who [her children] astonished  
all those, who knew them; and  
their mother, causing them to be  
instructed by good masters, made  
them learn all good arts.

*Compráti i cappóni insiéme*  
CÓ' COMPÁGNI SUÓI SÉGLI MAN-  
GIÒ. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

Having bought the capons, he  
ate them with his companions.

DELIBERÁRONO DI DÁRGLIE-  
LA PER MÓGLIE. (Bocc. g. 2.  
n. 8.)

They determined to give her to  
him as his wife.

*Atténdi quéllo che ío ti VÓGLIO*  
DÍRE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

Listen to what I wish to tell  
thee.

*La dóna rispóse, che NON*  
GLIÉLO VOLÉVA DÍRE. (Bocc.  
g. 7. n. 5.)

The lady replied, that she would  
not tell it to him.

*Grída fórte, FÁTTI ben SENTÍRE.*  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 6.)

Speak loud, make thyself heard.

LÁSCIAMITI VEDÉRE *a mío*  
*sénno*. (Bocc.)

Let me look at thee at my plea-  
sure.

IL BEN, CHE MI SI MÓSTRA *in-*  
*tórno*. (Petr. c. 7.)

The good, which shows itself  
about me.

QUÁNTE CÓSE GLI SI PROMÉT-  
TONO *tútto 'l dì*. (Bocc. g. 3.  
n. 1.)

How many things they promise  
to him all day.

ATTRIBUÍSCESI A NÓSTRO FÁL-  
LO. (Cavalc.)

It is attributed to our fault.

*Lo scoláre, accostátosi all' ú-*  
*scio, disse: 'ÉCCOMI quì, Madón-*  
*na.'* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

The scholar, coming to the  
door, said: 'Here I am, Madam.'

*In ármi égli éra próde, — Nol*  
*NIÉGO ío, no*. (Alf. Saul. 2. 1.)

He was brave in arms, I do not  
deny it, no.

*Égli MI PIÁCE DI PARLÁRNE.*  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

It pleases me to speak of it.

NIÚNO VEGGÉNDONE. (Bocc.  
g. 2. n. 2.)

Seeing no one of them.



TRÀTTANE <i>celataménte</i> LA SÚA BÉLLA RÓBA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.)	Having taken out secretly her beautiful robe.
GETTÓNNE I FONDAMÉNTI IL RE TARQUÍNIO. (Dav. Stor. l. 3.)	King Tarquin laid the founda- tions of it.
<i>Io son del tútto</i> DÍSPOSTO AD ANDÁRVI. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)	I am entirely disposed to go there.
IL CUÓCO <i>présolo</i> , e PÓSTOVI TÚTTA L' ÁRTE . . . . (Bocc. g. 4. n. 5.)	The cook having taken it, and having employed in it all his art, . . . .
FÁTECI DIPÍNGERE LA CORTE- SÍA. (Bocc. g. 1. n. 8.)	Cause Liberality to be painted there.
COSTÓRO MI CI FÁNNO ENTRÁRE <i>per ingannármì</i> . (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)	They make me enter into it [the chest] in order to play some trick upon me.
ÍO TI CI VÉDO SÉMPRE. (Nov. Ant. 67.)	I see thee here always.
<i>Io vi ti porrò</i> ÚNA TAVOLÚC- CIA. (Bocc. g. 8.)	I shall place for thee there a small table.
<i>Io dirò che vi ci ábbia</i> FÁT- TA VENÍRE PER DENÁRI. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)	I will say that he has caused you to come here for money.
INGÉGNATI DI RITENÉRCELO. (Bocc. n. 5.)	Contrive to keep him there.
RINGRAZIÁNDO IDDÍO CHE CON- DÓTTO VEL' AVÉVA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 4.)	Thanking God that he had con- ducted him there.
NÉLLA SÚA CÁMERA IL MÍSE, E DÉNTRO IL VI SERRÒ. (Bocc.)	She put him in her room, and there she locked him in.

## POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

*Possessive pronouns* may be *placed* either *before* or *after* the nouns expressing the things possessed ; as,

<i>la mía persóna, i miéi máli,</i>	my person, my misfortunes ;
<i>le mêmbra míe, il sângue</i> súo,	my limbs, my blood ; <i>his</i>
<i>gli ócchi suói, l' órdine LÓRO,</i>	her eyes, their management.

In *addressing* a person, however, and in *exclamations*, possessive pronouns *are* to be *put after* the nouns ; as,

*pádre* MÍO, *figliuol* MÍO !            my father, my son !  
*Itália* MÍA, *Signór* MÍO !            my Italy, my Lord !

Possessive pronouns are always to be *repeated* before nouns of *different gender* and *number* ; as,

*la* LOR *virtù*, *i* LOR *costúmi*,    their virtue, their customs, and  
*e le* LÓRO *maniére*,                    their manners.

But if the nouns are of the *same gender* and *number*, they *may be used only once*, *after* the said nouns ; as,

*le siróccie e le mógli* LÓRO,    their sisters and their wives.

We have already observed (p. 132), that *possessive onouns* may be *expressed* in Italian, by the *conjunctive pronouns* of that *person* to which the *possessor* belongs. This is always the case when they are *accompanied* by a *noun* expressing the *limbs of the body* or denoting a *part of one's dress* ; as,

*se* MI *cacciásser gli ócchi* if they should tear out my  
 [for, *se cacciásser i MIÉI* eyes ;  
*ócchi*],

*non* VI *fiaccáte il CÓLLO* [for, do not break your neck.  
*non fiaccáte il VÓSTRO*  
*CÓLLO*],

The English possessive pronouns *his, her, their*, when they *refer* to *one's own* limbs or parts of dress, are *expressed* in Italian by the *conjunctive pronoun si* ; but when they *refer* to *another person's* limbs or parts of dress, they are *expressed* by the *conjunctive pronouns gli, le, lóro*, according to the *gender* and *number* of the *possessor* ; as,

*si* levò l' *anéllo di DÍTO* [for, he took off the ring from his  
*levò l' anéllo del SÚO DÍTO*],            [own] finger ;

*risólve di levársi le SCÁRPE* he resolved to take off his [own]  
 [for, *di leváre le SÚE SCÁR-* shoes :  
*PE*],

GLI *rúppe tútto il víso* [for, he disfigured all his [another per-  
*rúppe tútto il SÚO (or, il di* son's] face ;  
*lúí) víso*],

*stracciatale la CUFFIA* [for, having torn her [another per-  
stracciata la SUA (or, la di lei) son's] headdress.  
CUFFIA],

Often the personal pronouns accompanying a noun expressing the limbs of the body, or denoting the parts of one's dress, are *entirely suppressed* when they relate to the *principal subject* of the proposition ; as,

*corsi a cercarmi il lato colla* I laid immediately my hand on  
*mano* [for, colla MIA ma- my side ;  
no],

*asciugandosi gli occhi col bel* drying her eyes with her beau-  
*velo*, [for, col suo bel vé- tiful veil.  
lo],

## EXAMPLES.

*E siccome LA MIA PERSONA* And as [my person or] I grew  
*cresceva, così le MIE bellezze, de'* up, my beauty, the first cause of  
*MIEI MALI special cagione, multi-* all my misfortunes, increased.  
*plicavano.* (Bocc. Fiam.)

*Non son rimase acerbe nè ma-* I have not left yonder my limbs,  
*tura — LE MEMBRA MIE di là, ma* either crude or in mature age ; but  
*son qui meco — COL SANGUE SUO,* they bear me here, fed with blood  
*e con le SUE giunture.* (Dant. and sinew-strung.  
Purg. 26.)

*Ed erano GLI OCCHI SUOI di* And his [Cæsar's] eyes were  
*quel colore che lo grifone.* (Buti. as black as those of a raven.  
com. Inf. 4.)

*Senza L' ORDINE LORO rade* Without their management it  
*volte riesce alcuna NOSTRA opera* seldom happens that any under-  
*a laudevol fine.* (Bocc. Intr.) taking of ours succeeds.

*Gaddo mi si gittò disteso d'* Gaddo stretched himself at my  
*pièdi, — Dicendo : " PADRE mio,* feet, saying : " My father, why  
*che non m' aiuti ? "* (Dant. Inf. dost thou not assist me ? "  
33.)

*O FIGLIUOL MIO ! non ti dis-* O my son ! do not disdain that  
*piaccia, — Se Brunetto Latini un* Brunetto Latini should turn back  
*poco teo — Ritorna indietro.* a little, and go with you.  
(Dant. Inf. 15.)

ITÁLIA MÍA, benchè il parlàr  
sia indárno — Alle piághe mor-  
táli, — Che nel bel córpo túo s'ì  
spésse véggio. (Petr.)

My Italy, although words will  
have no power to heal the mortal  
wounds which I see, in so great  
a number, in your beautiful body.

O SIGNÓR MÍO! quándo sarò  
io lièto — A vedèr la vendètta,  
che, nascósa, — Fa dólce l' íra  
túa nel túo segréto? (Dant. Purg.  
20.)

O my Lord! when shall I re-  
joice to see the vengeance, which  
thy wrath, well pleased, broods in  
secret silence?

Riguárda tra tútti i tuóvi nó-  
bili uómini, ed esómina LA LOR  
VIRTÙ, I LOR COSTÚMI, E LE LÓRO  
MANIÈRE. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

Look among all your noblemen,  
and examine their virtue, their  
customs, and their manners.

Apprésso costóro, LE SIRÓC-  
CHIE E LE MÓGLI LÓRO vénnero.  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

After these, came their sisters  
and their wives.

O SE ÉSSI MI CACCIÁSSER GLI  
ÓCCHI O MI TRAÉSSERO I DÉNTI, O  
MOZZÁSSERMI LE MÁNI, a che saré'  
io? (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

If they should tear out my  
eyes, or draw out my teeth, or  
lop off my hands, to what should  
I be reduced?

Égli è gran peccáto che vói  
NON VI FIACCÁTE IL CÓLLO.  
(Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)

It is a great pity you do not  
break your neck.

E così SI LEVÒ L' ANÉLLO DI  
DÍTO, e dièllo al giúdice. (Pecor.)

And thus he took off the ring  
from his finger, and gave it to the  
judge.

Guárda se áltri lo scórge, ed  
alfine si RISÓLVE DI LEVÁRSI LE  
SCÁRPE. (Lod. Nov.)

He looked around lest he should  
be seen, and at last he resolved to  
take off his shoes.

E così dicéndo con le púgna  
TÚTTO IL VÍSO GLI RÚPPE. (Bocc.  
g. 9. n. 8.)

And thus saying he disfigured  
all his face with blows.

E STRACCIÁTALE LA CÚFFIA,  
dicéva. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 8.)

And having torn her headdress,  
he said.

Di che io sentíva s'ì fáttö doló-  
re, che, désto, CÓLLA MÁNO CÓRSI  
subitaménte A CERCÁRMI IL LÁ-  
TO. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 6.)

Which gave me such a pain,  
that, having awaked, I laid imme-  
diately my hand on my side.

E fáccia fórza al Ciélo, —  
ASCIUGÁNDOSI GLI ÓCCHI COL  
BEL VÉLO. (Petr. c. 11.)

And should compel Heaven [to  
have pity upon me], drying her  
eyes with her beautiful veil.

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

The *indefinite pronouns*, *stésso*, *medésimo*, ‘same’; and sometimes *tútto*, ‘all,’ ‘every’; are put either before or after the noun; as,

quél dì STÉSSO ; in quel	ME-	that same day ; in that same
DÉSIMO ábito,		dress ;
TÚTTE le nótti ; le quáli cöse		every night ; all which things.
TÚTTE,		

*Tútto*, followed by a *numeral adjective*, takes the particle *e* after it; as,

tútti E trè,	all three.
--------------	------------

The indefinite pronouns *verúno*, *nessúno* or *nissúno*, *neúno* or *niúno*, *núllo*, ‘no one,’ ‘nobody’; and *núlla*, *niénte*, ‘nothing’; as we have already mentioned at p. 147, may have also the signification of ‘any one,’ ‘anybody’; and ‘some or any thing’; according to their respective position in the sentence.

They have the *first* signification,— (of ‘no one,’ ‘nobody’; and ‘nothing’), when they are placed before the verb, or when they are placed after a verb preceded by the adverb *non*; as,

per VERÚN módo potéva,	she could do it in <i>no</i> manner ;
NON fa cáldo VERÚNO,	it is <i>not</i> at all warm :
NESSÚN si dólse di servitù,	<i>no</i> one complained of servi- tude ;
NON si può fare NISSÚNA cò- sa,	<i>no-thing</i> can be done :
NEÚNO ebbe gli Déi sì favoré- voli,	<i>no</i> one had the Gods so favora- ble ;
NON ve n' è NIÚNO sì cattivo,	there is <i>no</i> one so bad :
NÚLLO martirio sarèbbe do- lór compító,	no torment were a well-pro- portioned pain ;

NON <i>gli manca</i> NÚLLA,	he wants <i>nothing</i> :
<i>di</i> NÚLLA <i>si dispési,</i>	let him despair of <i>nothing</i> ;
NON <i>ne farò</i> NÚLLA,	I will do <i>nothing</i> about it :
NIÉNTÉ <i>dico del tuo státo,</i>	I say <i>nothing</i> about thy condition ;
NON <i>gli parrébbe</i> NIÉNTÉ,	it would seem to him <i>nothing</i> .

But when they are placed after a verb not preceded by the adverb *non*, and when the phrase in which they occur implies a *question*, or expresses a *doubt*, the abovementioned pronouns have the *last* signification, — (of ‘any one,’ ‘anybody’; and ‘some or any thing’);\* as,

<i>sénza fáre a vói</i> VERÚN <i>prò,</i>	without doing <i>any</i> good to yourself ;
<i>se</i> VERÚNO <i>véde la péna mía,</i>	whether <i>any one</i> observes my sorrow ;
<i>quándo s’ accámpano in</i> NES- SÚNO <i>luógo,</i>	when they encamp in <i>any</i> place ;
<i>trovóssi</i> NIÚNO <i>che contradi- ásse álla podestáde?</i>	was there found <i>any one</i> who opposed public power ?
<i>le dirái se vuol</i> NÚLLA,	thou wilt ask her, whether she wants <i>any thing</i> ;

\* There are instances, however, in good writers, which seem in contradiction with these rules ; as may be seen by the following examples :

*E* *quándo* NESSU'NO *n’ éra préso, súbito éra impiccáto per la góla.* (Stor. Pistol.)

And when *any one* was taken, he was directly hung by the neck.

*Che* NON *rimarrébbe a sostenére péna* NESSU'NA *nel purgatório per gli peccáti.* (Pass.)

That there would not remain in purgatory *any* punishment to suffer for sins.

NON *c’ é ragióne* NESSU'NA *per la quále é’ débba entráre in un tal determináto grádo di velocità.* (Gal. Sist.)

There is no [or not *any*] reason why it should enter in such a determinate degree of velocity.

Mái NON *méne fará piú* NIU'NA. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

He will never do me an- [or, *any*] other [thing like this.]

*Cóme élla véde un giovinétto di fórma* NIE'NTE *riguardévole, élla s’ accénde del-  
le sue bellézze.* (Fir. Asin. 40.)

As soon as she sees a youth somewhat handsome, she falls in love with his beauty :

In which the pronouns *nessuno*, *nessuna*, *nituna* are used instead of *alcuno*, *alcuna*, ‘any,’ ‘any person,’ ‘any thing’; and *niente* instead of *un poco*, *alquanto*, ‘a little,’ ‘somewhat.’

*il domandò se si sentísse* he asked him whether he felt  
NIÉNTE, any thing.

## EXAMPLES.

*Credito abbiámo che costéi* We supposed, that she had been  
*nélla casa, che mi fu QUÉL DÌ* burnt that same day along with  
*STÉSSO ársa, ardésse.* (Bocc. g. the house.  
5. n. 5.)

*Guardándo tra mólte, che quí-* Looking among so many wo-  
*vi n' érano IN QUÉL MEDÉSIMO* man, who were there, clad in that  
*ÁBITO.* (Bocc. Lab.) same dress.

*E 'l rossignuól — TÚTTE LE* And the nightingale every night  
*NÓTTI si laménta e piánge.* laments and weeps.  
(Petr.)

*LE QUÁLI CÓSE TÚTTE sÓno da* All which things ought to be  
*ésser diligénteménte consideráte.* carefully considered.  
(Cresc. 12. 2.)

*Fratélli míci, che andáte vói* Brothers, what are you looking  
*cercándo, a quest' óra, TÚTTI E* for, all three, at such an hour?  
*TRÈ?* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.)

*Quándo vénne il témpo, quélla* When the time arrived, that un-  
*mísera PER VERÚN MÓDO POTÉ-* fortunate one could not do it in  
*VA.* (Vit. SS. PP. 2. 21.) any manner.

*Ánzi NON FA égli CÁLDO VE-* Nay it is not at all warm.  
*RÚNO.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

*NESSÚN DI SERVITÙ giammái* No one ever complained of  
*SI DÓLSE, — Nè di móрте, quant'* servitude or death, as much as I  
*ío di libertáте.* (Petr. Tr. Mort. 1.) do of liberty.

*NON SI PUÒ CÓSA NISSÚNA FÁRE* Nothing can be done in their  
*a lor módo.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) manner.

*NEÚNO ÉBBE mái GLI DÉI sí* No one even had the Gods so  
*FAVORÉVOLI, che nel futúro gli* favorablè as to oblige them to  
*potésse obbligáre.* — (Bocc. Fiam. favor him in future.  
5. 84.)

*Égli NON VE N' È NIÚNO sí CAT-* There is no one so bad, that  
*TÍVO, che non vi parésse úno im-* you would not take him for an  
*peratóre.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) emperor.

*NÚLLO MARTÍRIO, fuorchè la* No torment, save thy rage, were  
*túa rábbia, — SARÉBBE al túo* to thy fury a well-proportioned  
*furór DOLÓR COMPÍTO.* (Dant. pain.  
Inf. 14.)

*O'nde felice dicono ésser colú,*  
che NON GLI MÁNCA NÚLLA.  
(Fr. Giord. 20.)

Whence they call him happy  
who wants nothing.

*Chi in alcuna cosa può spe-  
râre, DI NÚLLA SI DISPÉRI.*  
(Bocc. Fiam. 5. 85.)

Let him, who can hope in any  
thing, despair of nothing.

*Altriménti mái NON NE FARÒ  
NÚLLA.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 2.)

Otherwise I will never do any  
thing about it.

DEL TÚO presénte STÁTO  
NIÉNTE DÍCO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 6.)

I say nothing about thy pres-  
ent condition.

*Se l' uómo magnánimo désse  
ógni cosa per amóre, NON GLI  
PARRÉBBE AVÉR DÁTO NIÉNTE.*  
(Cavalc. Specch. Cr.)

If the magnanimous man should  
give every thing for love, it would  
not seem to him that he had given  
any thing.

*Faréste danno a nói, SÉNZA  
FÁRE A VOI PRÒ VERÚNO.* (Bocc.  
g. 8. n. 9.)

You would injure us without  
doing any good to yourself.

*Allóra guárdo intórno, SE VE-  
RÚNO — VÉDE LA PÉNA MÍA,  
che m' ha conquíso.* (Rim. Ant.  
96.)

Then I look around me to see  
whether any one observes that  
sorrow, which has subdued me.

QUÁNDO s' ACCÁMPANO IN NES-  
SÚNO LUÓGO per cagióne di guér-  
ra. (Buti. Purg. 7.)

When they encamp in any  
place on account of war.

TROVÓSSI in Miláno NIÚNO,  
CHE CONTRADIÁSSE ÁLLA PO-  
DESTÁDE? (Nov. Ant. 21.)

Was there found any one in  
Milan, who opposed the public  
power?

*Tu LE DIRÁI s' élla vuÓL NÚL-  
LÁ.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.)

Thou wilt ask her whether she  
wants any thing.

IL DOMANDÒ SE égli si SENTÍS-  
SE NIÉNTE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 3.)

He asked him whether he felt  
any thing.

---

### EXERCISE XXXII.

They rob you.	Have pity	on	the afflicted.
<i>rubâre</i>	<i>compassióne</i>	di	<i>afflitto.</i>
Dost thou know the	daughter of Cidippe?		May you
<i>conoscere<sup>3</sup> 1</i>	<i>figliuóla<sup>2</sup></i>		?



be pleased to bless (the) my soul. Let him call  
*Volére benedire* <sup>2</sup> *ánima*<sup>1</sup>. *Chiamáre*

the leaders to a council. What thou wishest that  
*dúca — consìglio. volére*

I should say. She said: "How can that be"?  
*díre. Díre: " potére quèsto<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> " ?*

He replied: "Thou wilt see it, if thou comest im-  
*Díre: " vedére veníre tó-*

mediately." I am here with one, who, | having |  
*sto."* , | *per avére* |

my name, wishes to be | myself | in every thing  
*nóme, volére — | ío | ógni cósa*

he does, or rather, that I should be he. He  
 — — ,

saw himself | deprived | of the hope of having her  
*vedére | priváre | speránza — —*

for his wife — ( | to have to have | her himself),  
 — — — | *dovére avére | égli,*

if Ormisda did not marry her.  
*préndere*

The Turk then said: "If I were thou, I should  
*Túrco díre: " ,*

perhaps infringe the law; but as I am myself and  
*fórsa violáre légge; perchè ío*

not thou, I will never do it."  
*non<sup>1</sup> mái<sup>4</sup> fáre<sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup>."*

I will tell thee the truth, companion, I like  
*volére díre véro, sózio, — —*

her — (she pleases me) so much, that I could not  
 — *piacére , potére*

tell it to thee. He sent her | word | that, with-  
*díre . — Mandáre | a díre | ,*

out any more delay, she should do what — (that  
 — *indúgio, — dovére fáre —*

which) he had told her. I order thee to go —  
 — *avére<sup>3</sup> díre<sup>1</sup> <sup>2</sup> . — Comandáre — —*

(that thou go) immediately | after | thy father. You  
*andáre*<sup>2</sup> *incontanénte*<sup>1</sup> | *per* | *pádre.*

promised me | to | make me speak with (the) your  
*prométtere* | *di* | *fáre* *parláre* <sup>2</sup>

wife. | Pray, | leave me in peace. Why dost thou  
*dónna*<sup>1</sup>. | *In grázia,* | *lasciáre* *páce.* *Chè* —

not reply, wicked man? Art thou become dumb  
*rispóndere,* *réo* *uómo?* *Art thou* *divenire* *mútolo*

in hearing me? Having raised (herself | upon | her  
 — *udire* ? — *Leváre* | *in* | —

feet), she said: "Brother, you are (the) welcome."  
*piè,* — *díre:* "*Fratélló,* *benvenúto.*"

No, she would not believe it, and would turn me  
 , *crédere* , — *scacciáre*

out of her house. He begged him that he would  
 — — *cása.* — *Pregáre* — *inse-*

show him how they did. "Then," said he, "let  
*gnáre* — *fáre.* " " , " *díre* , "

us do it." Say it frankly. (I), as for me, do  
*fáre* " *Díre* *sicúro.* , — ,

not remember (myself of) it. Having caused a purse  
*ricordáre* ( *myself of* ) *it.* *Having* *caused* *a* *purse*  
*Fáre* <sup>2</sup> *bórsa*<sup>2</sup>

to be brought to her- (self), she put it (to him) | into |  
*veníre*<sup>1</sup> , — *méttere* | *in* |

his hand, and said: "Count if they are five-hun-  
 — *máno,* *díre:* "*Annoveráre* —

dred." He conquered Scotland, and was crowned  
 . " *conquistáre* *Scózia,* *coronáre*

king of it. I did not discern there any thing.  
*re* . *discérnere* *cósa.*

There is Minos | who | grins horribly. I will  
*stáre* | *e*<sup>2</sup> | *ringhiáre*<sup>3</sup> *orribile.*<sup>1</sup> *fá-*

cause it to be painted there. Where art thou, good  
*re* *dipíngere* . — , *buóna*

woman? Here I am — (behold me), what dost  
*dónna?* — — — ,

thou wish? We are — (behold us) ready to obey  
<sup>2</sup> *domandáre*<sup>1</sup>? — — *prónto ubbidíre*  
 you.

My friend and not the friend of fortune. My  
*amíco* — — *fortúna*.

father told (it to) me, that I should take care (my-  
<sup>4</sup> *díre*<sup>3</sup> <sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup>, *guardáre*

self) of ever setting foot in Messenia. O Samuel,  
*giammá*<sup>2</sup> *pórré*<sup>1</sup> *piéde*<sup>5</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup>.

once my true father, dost thou command it? | As  
*véro pádre*, *impónere* ? | *Per*

much as | thou | valuest | my affection. | In order |  
*quánto* | *ábbi cáro* | *amór*. | *Per* |

to die as your daughter, and not as your enemy.  
*moríre* — *figlia*, — *nemíca*.

He let fall his hook at his (own) feet. Weeping  
 — *Lasciáre cascár uncíno* — *piéde*. *Piángere*

he threw himself | on | his (another person's) neck.  
 — *gittáre* | *a* | — — *cóllo*.

The unfortunate ones wept, scratched their (own) faces,\*  
*meschína* — *piángere*, *sgraffiáre* — *víso*,

tore their (own) hair.† In thinking of it I shud-  
*strappáre* — *capéllo*. *pensáre* — — *racca-*

der (myself all† over) and my heart melts (itself).  
*pricciáre* *tútto* — *cuóre strúggere*

He remained there all the night with certain  
 — *Stáre* — — *nótte* *cérto*

snares of his | to | catch a bat. No person per-  
*artifizio*<sup>2</sup> — <sup>1</sup> | *per* | *piagliáre pipistrélló*. *persóna* *ac-*

ceived (himself) of it. There is no one|| of them  
*córgere*

so young, who could not know well how women  
*fanciúlla*, *potére* *conúscere*<sup>2</sup> *ben*<sup>1</sup> *femmine*

\* Faces to be put, in the Italian, in the singular.

† Hair, in the plural.

‡ all, in the feminine.

§ No, for no one.

|| No one, for not any one, in the feminine.

are. I have not slept any last night. Let no  
 — — *dormire* *passáto* *nótte*.

one move himself, or say a word, if he does not  
*muóvere* , *fáre* *mótto*,

wish to die. There it seemed to me to see no\*  
*volére* *moríre*. <sup>1</sup> — *parére*<sup>15</sup> <sup>14</sup> *vedére*<sup>13</sup> <sup>2</sup>

sanctity, no\* devotion, no\* good work, or example  
*santità*<sup>3</sup>, <sup>4</sup> *divozióne*<sup>5</sup>, <sup>6</sup> *buóno*<sup>7</sup> *ópera*<sup>8</sup>, <sup>9</sup> *esémpio*<sup>10</sup>

of life. Has any one been here? If there is  
<sup>11</sup> *víta*<sup>12</sup>. <sup>2</sup> *Has* <sup>4</sup> *any* <sup>3</sup> *one* <sup>1</sup> *been* <sup>?</sup> *here?* *If* *there* *is*

any one, who wishes | to bet | a supper, I will  
 , *volére* | *métter su* | *céna*, *mét-*

do it willingly. If Philip goes any where — (in  
*tere* *volentiéri*. *Filippo* *andáre* — —

any place), follow him — (approach thyself to him)  
*luógo*, — — *accostáre*

in some manner. I have nothing | to | fear now.  
*quálche* *módo*. *I* *have* *nothing* | *to* | *fear* *now*.  
*da* | *temére* *omái*.

Thou knowest nothing then.  
*sapére* *dúnque*.

## CHAPTER VII.

## VERBS.

## POSITION OF VERBS.

*Verbs* are generally placed after their *subjectives*; but if a *command* is given, or a *question* is asked, or a *wish* or *imprecation* is expressed; the verb is to be put before the *subjective*; as,

---

† *No*, for *no one*.

SPÉNGASI <i>néi vóstri pèlli</i> ÓGNI SCINTÍLLA <i>di pesti-</i> <i>féro sdégno,</i>	let every spark of venomous d disdain be extinguished in your hearts ;
ACCÉNDASI <i>in quèlli</i> ARDÉN- TE FIÁMMA <i>di sincéro</i> <i>amóre,</i>	let there [in your hearts] be kindled a fervent flame of sincere affection ;
che VUÓL <i>dir</i> QUÉSTO ?	what can this mean ?
VOLÉSSE IDDÍO <i>che il gua-</i> <i>tármí gli fósse bastáto,</i>	would to Heaven that his gaz- ing at me had satisfied him ;
MALADÉTTA SÍA LA CRUDEL- TÀ <i>di colúí, che mi ti fa</i> <i>vedére,</i>	cursed be the cruelty of him, who causes that I should see thee.

The *verb* is likewise put *before* the *subjective*, when it is *neuter* and is *preceded* by a *sentence* or *part of it* ; when it is *preceded* by a *negative* ; and when an *emphatical adjective* introduces the sentence ; as,

stándosi COSÌ, VÉNNE <i>àlla vól-</i> <i>ta sua</i> UN GÁMBERO,	[the bird] being so, a crab came up to him ;
nè <i>me ne</i> HA <i>mái</i> PARLÁTO ALCÚNO,	nor has any one ever spoken to me of her ;
dólce È IL BENEFÍCIO,	to do good is pleasing.

Finally, the *verb* is put *before* the *subjective*, when in *narrations* the *sayings* or *doings* of a person are *re-*  
*lated* ; when in *exclamations* it is accompanied by the word *cóme* or *quánto* ; and when one of the following words *ci*, *vi*, *quí*, *quà*, *ívi*, *quívi*, *dóve*, *quíndi*, *quánto*, *così*, — *begins* a sentence or phrase ; as,

DÍSSE LA DÓNNA : “ <i>Cóme</i> <i>può ésser quèsto ?</i> ”	the lady said : “ How can that be ? ”
oh ! <i>cóme spèssó</i> CÁSCANO I VÉCCHI <i>in quèsto erróre !</i>	oh ! how often do old men fall into this error !
se <i>ce ne</i> VENÍSSE ALCÚNA,	if some one should come here ;
quí SÓNO GIARDÍNI,	here are gardens ;
<i>chi è quèllo che non sáppia</i> <i>quánto SÍA ÉGLI infe-</i> <i>rióre ?</i>	who does not know how in- ferior he is ?

## EXAMPLES.

SPÉNGASI, SPÉNGASI NÉI VÓ-  
STRI PÉTTI ÓGNI SCINTÍLLA DI  
PESTÍFERO SDÉGNO ; ACCÉNDASI  
IN QUÉLLI ARDÉNTE FIÁMMA DI  
SINCÉRO AMÓRE. (Cavalcanti.)

CHE VUÓL DIR QUÉSTO ?  
(Bocc.)

E VOLÉSSE IDDIÓ, *che il pas-  
sàrvi o IL GUATÁRMI GLI FÓSSE*  
BASTÁTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

MALADÉTTA SÍA LA CRUDELTA'  
DI COLÚI, *che con gli ócchi dél-  
la frónte or MI TI FA VEDÉRE.*  
(Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

E STÁNDOSI COSÌ *di mála vó-  
glia VÉNNE ÁLLA VÓLTA SÚA UN*  
GÁMBERO. (Firenz.)

NÈ ME NE HA MÁI PARLÁTO AL-  
CÚNO, *che non mel' ábbia dipín-  
ta eguale álla mía Costánza.*  
(Gell.)

DÓLCE *in ógni témpo* È IL  
BENEFÍCIO. (Soave, Nov.)

DÍSSE LA DÓNNA : " CÓME PUÒ  
ÉSSER QUÉSTO ? " — " DÍSSE Mes-  
sér Lízio : " *Tu il vedrà, se tu*  
*viéni préstó.*" (Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

OH ! CÓME SPÉSSO CÁSCANO I  
VÉCCHI IN QUÉSTO ERRÓRE !  
(Gell.)

E se per isciagúra CE NE VE-  
NÍSSE ALCÚNA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)

QUÌ SÓNO GIARDÍNI, *quà dltri*  
*luóghi dilettevoli.* (Bocc. Intr.)

Perchè, CHI È QUÉLLO CHE  
NON SÁPPIA QUÁNTO SÍA ÉGLI  
INFERIÓRE *di fórze?* (Tolom.)

Let every spark of venomous  
diedain be extinguished in your  
heart ; let there be kindled a fer-  
vent flame of sincere affection.

What can this mean ?

And would to Heaven, that his  
passing by, and gazing at me, had  
satisfied him.

Cursed be the cruelty of him,  
who causes that my eyes should  
see thee now.

And being [the bird] so mel-  
ancholy, a crab came up to him.

Nor any one has ever spoken  
to me of her, without describing  
her to me as equal to my Con-  
stanza.

To do good is pleasing at all  
times.

The lady said : " How can that  
be ? " — Mr. Lizio said : " Thou  
wilt see it thyself if thou comest  
immediately."

Oh ! how often do old men fall  
into this error !

And if, for our misfortune, some  
one should come here.

Here are gardens, there pleasant  
places.

Because, who does not know  
how inferior he is in strength ?

## USE OF THE IMPERFECT AND FIRST AND SECOND-PERFECT.

The *preterite* of English verbs answers to the *imperfect* as well as to the *first* and *second-perfect*. In Italian these three tenses are rendered in three different forms; *I loved*, for instance, may be rendered by *io amava*, *io amai*, or *io ho amato*; but these forms are not indifferently used.

We make use of the first, the *imperfect*, when the *action* of which we speak was *present* in respect to another action *past* at the same time;—CANTA'VA *quándo* *vói veníste*, 'I was singing when you came'; E' RANO *a távola* *quándo* *nói entrámmo*, 'they were at table when we entered'; as,

méntré	STÁVAN	CENÁNDO,	while they were at supper, her
	<i>venne il maríto,</i>		husband came;
incontrò	la Catélla,	che VENÍ-	he met Catella, who was com-
	VA,		ing.

The *imperfect* is also used when we *speak* of an *action* become *habitual*, or *continued*, or *repeated* several times; as,

io	LAVORÁVA	un loro giar-	I had the care of their garden;
	<i>díno,</i>		
ANDÁVA	al bóscó	per le lé-	I used to go to the forest for
	<i>gne,</i>		wood;
ATTIGNÉVA	acqua,	e FACÉVA	I drew water, and did other
	<i>áltri servigétti,</i>		services;
le donne	mi DÁVAN	sì póco,	the ladies gave me so little,
	<i>che io non ne POTÉVA ap-</i>		that with it I could scarcely
	<i>péna pagáre i calzári,</i>		pay for my shoes.

Finally, we use the *imperfect* in speaking of the *age*, *name*, *actions*, *dispositions*, and *good* or *bad qualities* of persons and things that exist no more; as,

nè pur	tre lústri	AVÉA	forniti,	he [Rinaldo] had scarcely fin-
				ished his third lustrum;

<i>la móglie, che Isabélla</i>	AVÉA	his wife, who was called Isa-
<i>nóme,</i>		bella ;
<i>ÉRA di buóna ménte, e di fe-</i>		he [Joseph Warren] was of
<i>lice ingégno dotáto, e bel-</i>		good mind, endowed with a
<i>lissimo favellátore,</i>		happy genius, and a very
		fine speaker ;
<i>PARÉVA Sánta Veridiána,</i>		she appeared Saint Veridiana
<i>che dà beccúre álle sérpi,</i>		feeding the serpents ;
<i>ÉRA quéstó giardíno vágo</i>		this garden was very pleasant.
<i>mólto,</i>		

It may, perhaps, assist the learner in making a proper use of this tense, to observe further, that whenever the *preterite* in English may be turned into *was* or *were* and the *present participle* of the same verb, or into *used* and the *infinitive* of the same verb ; it is to be rendered by the *imperfect* tense in Italian : thus, if, without altering the meaning, *I* or *we* LOOKED *for*, may be changed into *I WAS* or *we WERE* LOOKING *for*, or into *I* or *we* USED TO LOOK *for*, it must be rendered by *io CERCÁVA*, or *nói CERCÁVÁMO*.

The *first-perfect* is used to denote an action done in a period of time completely past ; as,

<i>poichè a mórte mi</i>	SENTÍI fe-	after I found myself mortally
<i>rito,</i>		wounded ;
<i>AVVÉNNE che il re di Fráncia</i>		it happened that the king of
<i>MORÌ,</i>		France died ;
<i>Colómbó PARTÌ per la sco-</i>		Columbus departed for the dis-
<i>pérta del nuóvo móndo</i>		covery of the new world the
<i>l' áнно 1492,</i>		year 1492 ;
<i>io altresì quéstá nótte passáta</i>		I also had a dream last night.
<i>FÉCI un sógno,</i>		

The *second-perfect* is used to express an action done in a period of time not specified ; or, if specified, not completely past ; as,

<i>ánzi t' HO sémpre</i>	AMÁTO, e	nay, I always loved thee, and
<i>AVÚTO cáro,</i>		held thee dear ;
<i>vói l' AVÉTE</i>	COMPERÁTO,	you have obtained it by pur-
<i>ed io non l' HO VENDÚTO,</i>		chase, without my selling it
		to you ;



- m' AVÉTE FÁTTO parláre con una státua di mármò,* you have made me speak with a marble statue ;
- già sóno ótto ánni, l' HO piú che la mia víta AMÁTO,* for these eight years have I loved thee more than my very life ;
- mólte útili scopérte sÓNOSI FÁTTE nel presénte sécolo,* many useful discoveries have been made within the present century.

The phrase *I saw him this morning*, if used in the *forenoon*, when the morning is not yet elapsed, is rendered by *l' HO VEDÚTO stamattína* ; but, if used in the *afternoon*, when the morning is already elapsed, it must be rendered by *lo vídi stamattína*.

## EXAMPLES.

*MÉNTRE STÁVAN CENÁNDÒ,* While they were at supper, her  
*VÉNNE IL MARÍTO.* (Bocc. g. 1. husband came.  
n. 3.)

*Égli INCONTRÒ LA CATÉLLA,* He met Catella, who was com-  
*CHE VENÍVA.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) ing.

*ÍO LAVORÁVA UN LÓRO GIARDÍ- I I had the care of a large and  
NO bello e gránde, e, óltre a qué- beautiful garden of theirs, and be-  
sto, ANDÁVA alcuna vólta AL BÓ- sides this I used sometimes to go  
SCO PER LE LÉGNE, ATTIGNÉVA to the forest for wood ; I drew wa-  
ÁCQUA, E FACÉVA cotáli ÁLTRI ter, and did other like services for  
SERVIGÉTTI ; ma le DÓNNE MI them ; but the ladies gave me so  
DÁVANO SÌ PÓCO, CHE ÍO NON NE little, that with it I could hardly  
POTÉVA APPÉNA PAGÁRE I CAL- pay for my shoes.  
ZÁRI.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

*Allór NÈ PUR TRE LÚSTRI AVÉA Then he [Rinaldo] had scarcely  
FORNÍTI.* (Tass. Ger. 1. 60.) finished his third lustrum.

*LA MÓGLIE, CHE ISABÉLLA His wife, who was called Isa-  
AVÉA NÓME.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.) bella.

*ÉRA DI BUÓNA MÉNTE, E DI He [Joseph Warren] was of  
FELÍCE INGÉGNO DOTÁTO, E BEL- good mind, endowed with a happy  
LÍSSIMO FAVELLATÓRE.* (Bott. genius, and a very fine speaker.  
Stor. Amer. l. 5.)

*U'na vécchia, che PARÉVA SÁN- An old woman, who appeared  
TA VERIDIÁNA, CHE DÀ BECCÁRE Saint Veridiana feeding the ser-  
ÁLLE SÉRPI.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.) pents.

*ÉRA QUÉSTO GIARDÍNO VÁGO This garden was very pleasant.  
MÓLTO.* (Bemb.)

POICCHÈ A MÓRTE MI SENTÍ  
FERÍTO. (Petr.)

After I found myself mortally  
wounded.

AVVÉNNE CHE IL RE DI FRÁN-  
CIA MORÌ, ed in sùo luógo fu  
coronáto il figliuólo. (Bocc.)

It happened that the king of  
France died, and his son was  
crowned in his stead.

COLÓMBO PARTÌ PER LA SCO-  
PÉRTA DEL NUÓVO MÓNDO L' ÁN-  
NO 1492. (Vanz.)

Columbus departed for the dis-  
covery of the new world the year  
1492.

Se ío fossi volúto andáre dié-  
tro á' sógni, ío non ci saréi venú-  
to, non lánto per lo túo, quánto  
per úno, che ío ALTRESÌ QUÉSTA  
NÓTTE PASSÁTA NE FÉCI. (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 6.)

If I had any faith in dreams, I  
should not have come here; and  
not so much for the sake of yours,  
as of one I also had last night.

ÁNZI T' HO SÉMPRE AMÁTO, E  
AVÚTO CÁRO innánzi ad ógni  
áltro. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

Nay I always loved thee, and  
held thee dear beyond every other  
person.

Ed or volésse Iddío che ío fáttö  
l' avéssi, perciò che vói L' AVÉTE  
COMPERÁTO, ED ÍO NON L' HO  
VENDÚTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

And now would to Heaven that  
I had done so, because you have  
obtained it by purchase, without  
my selling it to you.

“Che ti páre? Hott' ío béne  
la proméssa serváta?” —“Mes-  
sér, no; vói m' AVÉTE FÁTTO  
PARLÁRE CON ÚNA STÁTUA DI  
MÁRMO.” (Bocc. g. 3. n. 5.)

“What dost thou think of it?  
Have I not kept my promise?”  
—“No, sir; you have made me  
speak to a marble statue.”

Ío, mísera me! GIÀ SÓNO ÓTTO  
ÁNNI, T' HO PIÙ CHE LA MÍA  
VÍTA AMÁTO. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

Alas! for these eight years have  
I loved thee more than my very  
life.

MÓLTE ÚTILI SCOPÉRTE SÓNSI  
FÁTTE NEL PRÉSENTE SÉCOLO.  
(Vanz.)

Many useful discoveries have  
been made within the present cen-  
tury.

---

USE OF CERTAIN TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE FOR SOME OTHER  
TENSES OF THE SAME MOOD; AND OF THE INFINITIVE FOR  
CERTAIN TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE, AND FOR THE CON-  
JUNCTIVE AND IMPERATIVE MOODS.

The *present* of the *indicative* is sometimes used, in  
narrations, for the *first-perfect*; as,

ÉSCE [for, USCÌ] *velóce da* he went quickly out of that  
*quélta tómba,* tomb;

CÓRRE [for, CÓRSE] *al palágio*, he ran to his palace ;  
*non è* [for, ÉRA] *più dúbbia* the way was no longer doubt-  
*là via,* ful ;  
*non è più oscúra la nótte,* the night was no longer dark.

*It is also used for the future ; as,*

*dománe è* [for, SARÀ] *l' últi-* to-morrow will be the last day ;  
*mo dè,*  
*che farái tu, se élla il DÍCE* what wilt thou do, if she will  
*[for, DIRÀ] á' fratélli ?* tell it to her brothers ;  
*se io infra ótto giòrni non vi* if I shall not cure you in eight  
*GUARISCO [for, GUARIRÒ],* days, have me burnt ;  
*fátemi brugiàre,*  
*se tu ti CÁLI [for, CALERÁI],* if thou wilt cast thee down, I  
*io non ti verrò diétro di* cannot chase thee on foot.  
*galóppo,*

The *first-perfect* may be used for the *present* ; as,

*or che AVÉSTI [for, che HÁI],* now what ails thee, that thou  
*che fáì cotál viso,* makest such a face ;  
*Anichino gittò un gran so-* Anichino gave a deep sigh.  
*spiro. La dónna disse :* The woman said : " What  
*" Che avésti, Anichino ? "* ails thee, Anichino ? "

The *first-perfect* may be used, also, for the *second-*  
*perfect* ; as,

*ónde FÓSTI tu [for, SÉI STÁTO* where hast thou been this  
*tu] stamáne ? — Non so* morning ? — I know not  
*óve io mi FÚI [for, SÓNO* where I have been ;  
*STÁTO],*  
*scegliésti ? [for, HÁI SCÉLTO ?]* hast thou chesen ? — I have.  
*Ho scélto. — Emón ? —* — Æmon ? — Death. — Thou  
*Mórte. — L' avrái,* shalt have it.

The *second-pluperfect* may be used for the *first-per-*  
*fect* ; as,

*il re FU GIÚNTO [for, GIÚNSE]* the king arrived and said :  
*c disse : " Cavalière, a quál* " Knight, what lady dost  
*dónna sé' tu ? "* thou belong to ? "  
*alzàta la lanterna, ÉBBER VE-* having raised the lantern, they  
*DÚTO [for, VÍDERO] il cat-* saw that rogue Andreuccio.  
*tivél di Andreuccio,*

The *future* is used for the *present*, in *doubtful actions*; as,

- PARRÀ [for, *forse* PÀRE] a perhaps it seems to you, that  
 vói, che non vi vóglia béne, she does not like you;  
 génte si apprésa: Elvíra people approach: perhaps it  
 SARÀ [for, *forse* È Elvíra], is Elvira.

The *future-anterior* is used for the *second-perfect*, in *doubtful cases*; as,

- AVRÒ DÉTTO [for, *forse* HO perhaps I have said, that I am  
 DÉTTO], che ho da andàre to go to Venice.  
 a Venézia,

The *infinitive* may be used for the *third person singular* of the *present* and of the *imperfect* of the *indicative*, and their *compounds*, depending on another verb of the same mood; as,

- conósko lui ÉSSERE [for, che I know that he is a wicked  
 égli È] un malvágio uómo; man;  
 udéndo il re il maliscálco ÉSSER [for, che il maliscálco the king hearing that his far-  
 ERA] mérito, rier was dead;  
 ti converrà avére nélla memó- thou must keep in thy mind,  
 ria, Iddío ÉSSERE STÁTO that God has been the crea-  
 [for, che Iddío È STÁTO] tor of heaven and earth;  
 creatóre del ciélo, e délla  
 térra,  
 s' accórse l' abáte AVÉR MAN- he found out, that the abbot  
 GIÁTO [for, che l' abáte AVÉA had eaten dry beans.  
 MANGIÁTO] fáve sécche,

It may likewise be used for the *third person singular* of the *present* and of the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*, and their *compounds*; as,

- si créde ÉSSERE [for, che égli he is thought to be one of the  
 síA] úno dé' piú ricchi pre- richest prelates in the world;  
 láti del móndo,  
 élla, credéndo lui ÉSSER [for, she, believing that he was  
 che égli FÓSSE] Gisippo, Gisippus, answered yes;  
 rispóse di sí,

*di Guiscárdo ho io già méco* I have already determined  
*préso partíto che FÁRNE* within myself what to do  
 [for, *che ne DÉBBA FÁRE*], with Guiscard;  
*credéndo lui ÉSSER TORNÁTO* believing that he had returned  
 [for, *che Égli FÓSSE TOR-* from the wood.  
*NÁTO*] *dal bósko,*

Finally, the *infinitive* is used for the *second* person *singular* of the *imperative* mood, when *preceded* by the *negative*; as,

*ciò NON TEMÉR,\** do not fear that;  
*NON mi TOCCÁRE,* do not touch me.

EXAMPLES.

*ÉSCE VELÓCE DA QUÉLLA TÓM-* He went quickly out of that  
*BA, CÓRRE AL PALÁGIO; non È* tomb, ran to his palace; his steps  
*più incérto il sío pássò, NON È* were no longer uncertain, the way  
*PIÙ DÚBBIA LA VÍA, NON È PIÙ* was no longer doubtful, the night  
*OSCÚRA LA NÓTTE. (Alberg. Nov.)* was no longer dark.

*Quéllò che mi díte di fáre, si* What is to be done, let it be  
*fáccia tósto, perciocchè DOMÁNE* done immediately, for to-morrow  
*È L' ÚLTIMO DÌ che io débbo és-* will be the last day of my being  
*sere aspettáto. (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)* expected.

*CHE FARÁI TU, SE ÉLLA IL* What wilt thou do, if she tells it  
*DÍCE Á' FRATÉLLI? (Bocc. g. 3.* to her brothers?  
*n. 3.)*

*SE IO ÍNFRA ÓTTO GIÓRNI NON* If I shall not cure you in eight  
*VI GUARÍSCO, FÁTEMI BRUCIÁRE.* days, have me burnt.  
*(Bocc. g. 3. n. 9.)*

*SE TÙ TI CÁLI, IO NON TI VER-* If thou wilt cast thee down  
*RÒ DIÉTRO DI GALÓPPO. (Dant.* [into the pitch], I cannot chase  
*Inf. 22.)* thee on foot.

*OR CHE AVÉSTI, CHE FÁI* Now what ails thee, that thou  
*COTÁL VÍSO. (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)* makest such a face.

*ANICHÍNO GITTÒ UN GRANDÍ-* Anichino gave a very deep  
*SÍMO SOSPIRO. LA DÓNNA, guar-* sigh. The lady, having looked at  
*DÁTOLO, DÍSE: "CHE AVÉSTI,* him, said: "What ails thee, Ani-  
*ANICHÍNO? Duólti cosí, che io tí* chino? Art thou sorry, that I con-  
*vínco." (Bocc. g. 7. n. 7.)* quer thee?"

\* These and similar expressions ought to be regarded, however, as equivalent to the phrases (*ti comandò, — ti esórtò, — ti consìglio a*) *ciò NON TEMERE, (a) NON MI TOCCA'RE, &c.*, '(1) do (command, — exhort, — counsel thee) not (to) fear that, not (to) touch me'; &c.; in which the words contained within parentheses are generally suppressed by *ellipsis*.

ÓNDE FOSTI TU STAMÁNE? —  
NON SO ÓVE MI FÚI. (Bocc. g.  
3. n. 3.)

Where hast thou been this  
morning? — I know not where I  
have been.

SCegliésti? — Ho scélto.  
— Emon? — Mórte. — L' avrái.  
(Alf. Antig. 4. 1.)

Hast thou chosen? — I have  
— Æmon? — Death. — Thou shalt  
have it.

*Io andáva per gránde bisógno  
in servigio délla mia dónna, il  
re fu giúnto, e dísse: "CA-  
VALIÉRE, A QUAL DÓNNA SÉ'  
TU?"* (Nov. ant. 35.)

I was going on an important  
errand in the service of my lady,  
when the king arrived, and said:  
"Knight, what lady dost thou be-  
long to?"

ALZÁTA alquánto LA LANTÉ-  
NA, ÉBBER VEDÚTO IL CATTIVÉL  
DI ANDREÚCCIO. (Bocc. g. 2. n.  
5.)

Having raised the lantern a  
little, they saw that rogue An-  
dreuccio.

*Eh via! cáro amíco, PARRÀ A  
VÓI, CHE NON VI VÓGLIA BÉNE.*  
(Gold. Ver. Am.)

Come! dear friend, perhaps it  
seems to you, that she does not  
like you

GÉnte si appréssa: ELVÍRA  
sarà. (Alf. Fil. 4. 1.)

People approach: perhaps it is  
Elvira.

AVRÒ DÉtto, CHE HO DA AN-  
DÁRE [A VENÉZIA], *per úna lét-  
tera che trátta di mio zío.* (Gold.)

Perhaps I have said, that I am  
to go to Venice on account of a  
letter which concerns my uncle.

CONÓSCO LÚI ÉSSERE UN MAL-  
VÁGIO ÚMO. (Gr. Gr.)

I know that he is a wicked  
man.

UDÉndo IL RE d' *Inghiltérta*  
IL MALISCÁLCO ÉSSER MÓRTO.  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

The king of England hearing  
that his farrier was dead.

TI CONVERRÀ *sémpre* AVÉRE  
NÉLLA MEMÓRIA, IDDIÓ ÉSSERE  
STÁTO CREATOR DEL CIÉLO, E  
DÉLLA TÉrrA. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.)

Thou must keep always in thy  
mind that God has been the crea-  
tor of heaven and earth.

Égli s' accórse L' abÁte avÉR  
MANGIÁTO FÁVE SÉCche. (Bocc.  
g. 10. n. 2.)

He found out, that the abbot  
had eaten dry beans.

*Vénne a córte l' abÁte di Cli-  
gni, il quále si CRÉDE ÉSSERE ÚNO  
DÉ' PIÙ RÍCCHI PRELÁTI DEL  
MÓNDO.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 2.)

There came to court the abbot  
of Cluny, who is thought to be  
one of the richest prelates in the  
world.

ÉLLA, CRÉDÉndo LÚI ÉSSER  
GISÍppo, RISPÓSE DI SÌ.

She, believing that he was  
Gisippus, answered yes.

DI GUISCÁRDO HO ÍO GIÀ  
MÉCO PRÉSO PARTÍTO CHE FÁRNE;  
*ma di te sállo Iddío, chè ío non  
so che FÁRMI.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 1.)

I have already determined with-  
in myself what to do with Guis-  
card; but God knows what to do  
with thee, for I do not.

CREDÉNDÓ LÚI ÉSSER TORNÁ-  
TO DAL BÓSCO, *avvisò di riprén-  
derlo fòrte.* (Bocc. g. 1.-n. 4.)

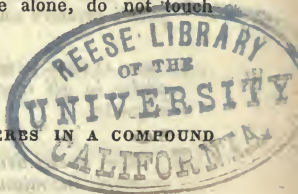
Believing that he had returned  
from the wood, he thought of  
reprimanding him severely.

CIÒ NON TEMÉR, *chè in cru-  
deltà son pári — I tuóí minístri  
a te.* (Alf. Filip. 4. 2.)

Do not fear that, for thy min-  
isters are not inferior to thee in  
cruelty.

Lásciami, NON MI TOCCÁRE.  
(Bocc.)

Let me alone, do not touch  
me.



OF THE TENSES OF THE DEPENDENT VERBS IN A COMPOUND SENTENCE.

When, in a compound sentence, the *principal verb* is in the *present* of the *indicative*, or in the *future*, the *dependent verb* must be put in the *present* of the *conjunctive*, if we mean to imply the *present* or *future* time; and in the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*, if we mean to imply the *past*; as,

ÍO CRÉDO *omdi che mónti e  
piágge SÁPPIAN di che tém-  
pre SÍA la mía víta,*

I believe that, by this time,  
mountains and plains know  
what is the condition of my  
life;

CONVERRÀ *che tu GÓDA di tal  
desto,*

it is proper that this wish of  
thine should be gratified;

CRÉDO *mi PORTÁ SSE amóre,  
GIUDICHERÀ *facilménte quán-  
to mi FÓSSI rallegráto,**

I believe that he loved me;  
you will easily imagine how  
much I rejoiced at it.

When the principal verb is in the *imperfect* or the *perfect* of the *indicative*, or in the *conditional*, the *dependent verb* is generally put in the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*; as,

appéna SAPÉVA *che far si  
DOVÉSSE,*

he hardly knew what to do;

DOMANDÒ *quál* FÓ SSE *la cagione del loro romóre,* she asked what was the cause of their noise ;  
*chi* STARÉBBE *méglio di me,* who would be happier than I,  
*se quèlli denári* FÓ S S E R O if that money were mine ?  
*miti?*

In *suppositive* or *conditional* phrases, the *imperfect* of the *indicative* in English, — *had, was, or were,* is rendered in Italian by the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive* ; as,

*se così non* FÓ SSE, *io non vi* [if it *was* not so] were it not  
*potréi prestáre un gró sso,* so, I could not lend you a  
farthing ;

*se non* AVÉ S S I *paúra di mio* [if I *had* not the fear — if I  
*pádre, io gli insegnerei la* *was* not afraid] were I not  
*rispósta,* afraid of my father, I would  
teach him how to reply ;

*se* AVÉ S S I *quèsti denári, tégli* if I *had* this money, I would  
*presteréi incontanente,* lend it to thee immediately.

## E X A M P L E S .

SÌ *ch' io mi* CRÉDO *omái, che* So that I believe, that, by this  
MÓNTI, E PIÁGGE, — *E fiumi, e* time, mountains, and plains, and  
*sélve sáppian di che témpre —* rivers, and woods know what is  
SÍ A LA MÍA VÍTA. (Petr. s. 22.) the condition of my life.

DI TAL DESÍO CONVERRÀ CHE It is proper that this wish of  
TU GÓDA. (Dant. Inf. 8.) thine should be gratified.

CRÉDO MI PORTÁ SSE AMÓRE, *e* I believe that he loved me, and  
*che di me non* FÓ SSE *méno* ar- that he was no less ardent in love  
*dénte.* (Ariost.) than I.

GIUDICHERÀ FACILMÉ NTE You will easily imagine how  
QUÁNTO *io mi* FÓ S S I RALLEGRÁ- much I rejoiced at it.  
TO. (Bent. lett.)

APPÉNA SAPÉVA CHE FAR SI He hardly knew what to do.  
DOVÉSSE. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.)

DOMANDÒ LA REGÍNA QUÁL The queen asked what was the  
FÓ SSE LA CAGIÓN E DEL LÓ RO cause of their noise.  
MÓRE. (Bocc. g. 6.)

CHI STARÉBBE MÉGLIO DI ME, Who would be more happier  
SE QUÉLLI DENÁRI FÓ S S E R O MIÉ I, if that money were mine ?  
(Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.)



SE COSÌ NON FOSSE, IO NON VI POTREI PRESTARÉ UN GRÓSSO. Were it not so, I could not lend you a farthing.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

SE IO NON AVÉSSI PAÚRA DI MÍO PÁDRE, IO GLI INSEGNERÉI LA RISPÓSTA. Were I not afraid of my father, I would teach him how to reply.  
(Mach. Com.)

SE IO AVÉSSI QUÉSTI DENÁRI, IO TÉGLI PRESTERÉI INCONTANÉTE. If I had this money, I would lend it to thee immediately.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.)

OF THE MANNER OF EXPRESSING THE ENGLISH PRESENT-PARTICIPLE IN ITALIAN.

The English *present-participle* may be expressed in Italian :

First, by the *gerund* of the corresponding verb ; as,

VEGGÉNDOLO consumáre cóme seeing him waste away like  
*la néve al sóle,* snow in the sun ;

DORMÉNDÓ gli párve di ve- [sleeping or] whilst he was  
*dére la dónna súa,* asleep, it seemed to him  
that he saw his lady.

Secondly, by the conjunction *che*, or the adverb *quándo*, and a *tense* of the *indicative* mood ; as,

póí CH' ÉBBI RIPOSÁTO il having rested my weary body  
*córpo lássó,*

QUAND' ÉBBE DÉTTO ciò, ri- having said this, he took up  
*prése il téschio mísero có'* once more that miserable  
*dénti,* skull with his teeth.

Thirdly, by a *preposition* and the verb in the *infinitive* ; as,

consumò quélla mattína IN he spent that morning in look-  
CERCÁRLI, ing after them ;

crédo che le suóre sién tútte A I believe that the nuns are all  
DORMÍRE, [sleeping or] asleep.

When the English present-participle has before it a preposition, such as *of, from, with, on, in, for, without, before, after, &c.*, it is always rendered in Italian by the corresponding verb in the *infinitive* with a *preposition*.

If the participle is preceded by the prepositions *of, from, with*, they are expressed in Italian by the preposition *di*, attended by the infinitive ; as,

<i>ébbi il piacere</i> DI VEDÉRlo,	I had the pleasure <i>of</i> seeing him ;
<i>ella m' impedisce</i> DI FÁRlo,	you prevent me <i>from</i> doing so ;
<i>conténto d' AVÉRla trováta,</i>	being content <i>with</i> having found her.

The preposition *on*, before the participle, may be expressed by the prepositions *di*, or *in* ; as,

<i>si vanta</i> D' AVÉR la lóro co- noscénza,	he values himself <i>on</i> being acquainted with them ;
NEL PARTÍRE <i>gli sovvenne</i> di léi,	<i>on</i> his departure he recollected her.

The preposition *in* is rendered by *a*, or *in* ; as,

<i>che a FAR ciò volésse</i> aiárló,	that he would assist him <i>in</i> doing that ;
<i>avéa</i> NEL QUETÁR <i>pópolo au-</i> <i>torità ed áрте,</i>	<i>in</i> appeasing the people he had both authority and art.

The prepositions *for, without, before, after, &c.*, are literally translated.

If the participle is preceded by the preposition *by*, this *preposition* is generally *omitted* in Italian, and the *participle* rendered by the *gerund* of the corresponding verb ; as,

<i>gli scolári impáranó</i> le régóle di úna língua STUDIÁNDÓ- le,	scholars learn the rules of a language <i>by</i> studying them.
--	---

But if we wish to *express the preposition*, then the verb must be put in the *infinitive*, and *by* rendered by *con*; as,

*il divino Giulio rintuzzò la sedizione del suo esercito* the divine Julius checked the sedition of his army *by* only  
*col dir sólo: "Ah Quiriti!"* saying: "Ah Romans!"

## EXAMPLES.

VEGGÉNDOLO *io* CONSUMÁRE I seeing him waste away as the  
 CÔME *si fa* LA NÉVE AL SÓLE. snow does in the sun.  
 (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)

DORMÉNDO GLI PÁRVE *in só-* Whilst he was asleep, it seemed  
*gno* DI VEDÉRE LA DÓNNA SÚA to him that he saw, in a dream, his  
*andar per un bósco assái bello.* lady going through a very beautiful  
 (Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.) wood.

POICH' ÉBBI RIPOSÁTO IL CÔR- Having rested my wearied body,  
 PO LÁSSO, — *Riprésì via per la* I made my way through the de-  
*piaggia disérta.* (Dant. Inf. 1.) serted shore.

QUAND' ÉBBE DÉTTO CIÒ, *cógli* Having said this, with looks  
*occhi tórti,* — RIPRÉSE IL TÉS- askanse he took up once more that  
 CHIO MÍSERO CÔ' DÉNTI — *Che* miserable skull with his teeth,  
*fúro all' ósso, còme d' un can,* which were as strong upon the  
*fórti.* (Dant. Inf. 33.) bone as those of a dog.

*Tútto il rimanén-te di* QUÉLLA He spent all the rest of that  
 MATTÍNA CONSUMÒ IN CERCÁRLI. morning in looking after them.  
 (Bocc. g. 8. n. 3.)

*Io mi* CRÉDO CHE LE SUÓRE I believe that the nuns are all  
 SIÉN TÚTTE A DORMÍRE. (Bocc. asleep.  
 g. 3. n. 1.)

*Non prima di ieri* ÉBBI IL PIA- Not before yesterday did I have  
 CÈRE DI VEDÉRE, *in casa dell'* the pleasure of seeing, at the house  
*ambasciadóre del re di Fráncia,* of the ambassador of the king of  
 . . . . (Bent.) France, . . . .

*Se non ch'* ÉLLA M' IMPEDÍSCE Except that you prevent me  
 DI FÁRLO. (Metast. lett.) from doing so.

CONTÉNTO DI AVÉR TROVÁTA Being content with having found  
 Filoména. (Bocc.) Philomena.

*Égli si vánta d' avér la* He values himself on being ac-  
 LÓRO CONOSCÉNZA. (Gold.) quainted with them.

- NEL PARTIRE GLI SOVVÉNNE      On his departure he recollected  
DI LÉI, *che mísera rimása éra.* her, whom he had left so misera-  
(Nov. Ant.)      ble.
- Pregándolo CHE A FAR CIÒ      Begging that he would assist  
VOLÉSSE AITÁRLO. (Bocc. g. 6.)      him in doing that.
- AVÉA NEL QUETÁR PÓPOLO AÚ-      In appeasing the people, he had  
TORITÀ ED ÁRTE. (Dav. St. 3.)      both authority and art.
- GLI SCOLÁRI IMPÁRANO LE RÉ-      Scholars learn the rules of a  
GOLE DI ÚNA LÍNGUA STUDIÁN-      language by studying them.  
DOLE. (Rosasco.)
- IL DIVÍNO GIÚLIO RINTUZZÒ      The divine Julius checked the  
LA SEDIZIÓNE DEL SÚO ESÉRCITO      sedition of his army by only say-  
COL DÍR SÓLO: "AH QUIRÍTI!"      ing: "Ah Romans!"  
(Dav. Ann.)

—

OF THE WAY OF RENDERING INTO ITALIAN THE ENGLISH  
PARTICLE *to*, BEFORE THE INFINITIVE OF VERBS.

The particle *to* prefixed to English verbs is used sometimes as a mere *sign* of the *infinitive*, and sometimes as a *preposition*. When it is a mere *sign*, it is *never rendered* in Italian, *except* when the infinitive is *used as a noun*, and then it is *expressed* by the article *il* or *lo*. When *to* has the force of a *preposition*, it is *rendered* by the prepositions *di*, *a*, *per*.

When the infinitive of verbs *can* be expressed in Italian by a *noun*; as, — ‘*to read* is useful,’ *la lettúra è útile*; — ‘*always to study* is fatiguing,’ *lo stúdio continuo è faticoso*; — the particle *to* is rendered by the article *il* or *lo*; — *il léggere è útile*, ‘*to read* is useful’; — *lo studiár sémpre è faticoso*, ‘*always to study* is fatiguing’; as,

- le impóse* IL SEGUITÁRE [OR, she ordered her to continue;  
IL PROSEGUIMÉNTO],
- L’ ASTENÉRSI [OR, L’ ASTI- to abstain from what pleases,  
NÉENZA] *da quel che piáce,* is true virtue;  
*è véra virtù,*

*la donna veggéndo che IL* the woman, seeing that to  
*PREGÁRE non le valéva* [or, pray was useless, had re-  
*che LE PREGHIÉRE non le* course to threats :  
*valévano*], *ricórse AL MI-*  
*NACCIÁRE* [or, *ÁLLE MI-*  
*NÁCCE*],

But if the infinitive *cannot* be expressed by a *noun*, the particle *to* is rendered by a *preposition*.

If the particle *to* is preceded by a verb signifying *remembering* or *forgetting*, *pleasing* or *displeasing*, *rejoicing* or *grieving*, *owning* or *denying*, *permitting* or *prohibiting*, *telling*, *declaring*, *affirming*, *supposing*, *suspecting*, *fearing*, *commanding*, *asking*, *entreating*, *doubting*, *promising*, *advising*, *concluding*, *finishing*, *proposing* ; or by any verb implying *desire* or *aversion*, it is rendered in Italian by the preposition *di* ; as,

*a me piáce DI dirvi úna no-* it pleases me to tell you a  
*vélla,* story ;

*m' è cadúto nell' ánimo DI* it has occurred to my mind to  
*dimostrárví,* show you ;

*a me appartíene DI ragioná-* it belongs to me to speak ;  
*re,*

*ama D' éssere svegliáto a* he likes to be awakened by  
*suón di trómbe,* the sound of trumpets.

The particle *to* is translated by the preposition *a*, when it comes after verbs signifying *beginning*, *teaching*, *learning*, *attaining*, *insisting*, *persisting*, *proceeding*, *remaining*, *continuing*, *opposing*, *contributing*, *engaging*, *liking*, *accustoming*, *encouraging*, *obliging* ; after verbs implying *inclination*, *difficulty*, *application*, *thought*, *reluctance*, *fitness* ; and after verbs signifying *motion* ; as,

*cominciò A chiédere perdóno,* he began to ask pardon ;

*égli è brútto A vedére,* he is ugly to look at ;

*quánto m' éra ciò cáro AD* how pleasing it was to me to  
*udíre !* hear this !

*chi nol créde, vénga A ve-* let him who does not believe it,  
*dérta,* come and see her.

And whenever for the particle *to*, joined with the infinitive of English verbs, can be substituted the phrases *in order to*, — *with the design of*; it is rendered in Italian by the preposition *per*; as,

PER MOSTRÁRE d' *avere a* to show how agreeable his  
*grádo la sua venúta,* visit was to him;  
*l' agrícola, che Cristo elésse* the husbandman, whom Christ  
*all' órto suo* PER AIUTÁR- chose to assist him [to be his  
*lo,* helpmate] in his own garden.

## EXAMPLES.

*La regína, a Filoména voltáta,* The queen, having turned to  
 LE IMPÓSE IL SEGUITÁRE. (Bocc. Philomena, ordered her to con-  
 g. 3. n. 3.) tinue.

E VÉRA VIRTÚTE, — IL SAPÉR- To know how to abstain from  
 SI ASTENÉR DA QUÉL CHE PIÁCE, what pleases, when that which  
 — *Se quel che piáce offénde.* pleases is injurious, is true vir-  
 (Past. Fid. 3. 3.) tue.

LA DÓNNA VEGGÉNDÓ CHE IL The woman, seeing that to  
 PREGÁRE NON LE VALÉVA, RI- pray was useless, had recourse to  
 CÓRSE AL MINACCIÁRE. (Bocc. g. threats.  
 7. n. 4.)

A ME PIÁCE DI DÍRVI ÚNA NO- It pleases me to tell you a story.  
 VÉLLA. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 8.)

M' È CADÚTO NELL' ÁNIMO DI It has occurred to my mind to  
 DIMOSTRÁRVI *nélla novélla, che* show to you, in the story which I  
*a me tócca di dire . . . . .* (Bocc. am to tell you, . . . . .  
 g. 1. n. 5.)

A ME *omái* APPARTIÉNE DI RA- Now it belongs to me to speak.  
 GIONÁRE. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

ÁMA *méglio* d' ÉSSERE SVE- He likes better to be awakened  
 GLIÁTO A SUÓN DI TRÓMBE, e ro- by the sound of trumpets, and the  
*mór d' árme, che a suón di cétra,* noise of arms, than by the sound  
*o di vivóla.* (Dav. Stor.) of citherns or viols.

Il *médico* COMINCÍÒ A CHIÉDE- The physician began to ask  
 RE PERDÓNO. (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) pardon.

ÉGLI È *defórme di córpo,* BRÚT- He is deformed in his person,  
 TO A VEDÉRE. (Varch.) and ugly to look at.

O QUÁNTÓ M' ÉRA CIÒ CÁRO O how pleasing it was to me to  
 AD UDÍRE! (Bocc.) hear this!

CHI NOL CRÉDE, VÉNGA ÉGLI  
A VEDÉRLA. (Petr. s. 210.)

Let him, who does not believe  
it, come and see her himself.

*Credéndo costúí éssere un gran  
barbassóro, PER MOSTRÁRE DI  
AVÉRE A GRÁDO LA SÚA VENÚTA,  
úna gran cóppa doráta, la quále  
davánti avéva, comandò, che fcs-  
se empiúta di víno, e portáta al  
gentiluómo.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 9.)

Believing that he was a great  
man, to show how agreeable his  
visit was to him, he ordered that  
a large gilded cup, which he had  
before him, should be filled up  
with wine and given to the gentle-  
man.

*Doménico fu détto, ed io ne  
párlo, — Siccóme dell' AGRÍCOLA,  
CHE CRÍSTO — ELÉSSE ALL' ÓR-  
TO SÚO PER AIUTÁRLO.* (Dant.  
Par. 12.)

He was called Dominic, and  
I speak of him, as of the husband-  
man whom Christ chose to be his  
helpmate in his own garden.

EXERCISE XXXIII.

| Would to Heaven | that my fortune would allow me  
*Fáccia il Cielo* | *fortuna* *dáre*

| to | put them in execution. They came in sight  
*di* | *mèttete* *ópera.* — — —

of — (saw themselves near to) a small-castle | from |  
*vedére* *vicino* *castello* | *di* |

which, having been seen, | about | twelve men suddenly  
*vedére,* | *da*<sup>3</sup> | *fánte*<sup>4</sup> *súbito*<sup>5</sup>

rushed out upon them. Finally, no — (not any) virtue  
*uscíre*<sup>2</sup> — — *finalménte*<sup>3</sup> — *Nè*<sup>1</sup> *virtù*<sup>4</sup>

| can be found | in those, who have given themselves  
*si tróva*<sup>2</sup> | *éssere dáre*

| up | to gluttony. Oh! how true these things  
*in préda* | *góla.* *cóme véro* *cósa*

are. It was the castle of one of the family of the  
— *castello* — — —

Orsini, and by | good fortune | his lady — (a lady of  
*per* | *ventúra* | — — —

his) was there. Words | are not necessary | in this  
*Paróla* | *non* *bisógnano* | — —

business — (here). The mother said: “(O my) daughter,  
 — — — — — *mádre Dire: “ (O my) figliuóla,*

what warm | are you talking about?” |  
*cáldo | fa “égli?” |*

The father, | on account of | the love (that) he bore  
*pádre, | per | amóre. portáre*

her, took no care — (gave himself little care) | to |  
 , — — — — — *dáre<sup>3</sup> póco<sup>1</sup> cúra<sup>2</sup> | di<sup>4</sup> |*

marry her again, and it seemed not modest (thing) | in |  
*maritáre<sup>6</sup> piú<sup>5</sup>, — — parére<sup>12</sup> nè<sup>7</sup> onésto<sup>10</sup> cósa<sup>11</sup> | a<sup>8</sup> |*

her | to | ask it (of him). Who was a very young  
<sup>9</sup> | *il<sup>13</sup> | richiédere<sup>14</sup> . — assái giòvane*

and handsome | man . | . And he saw a knight  
*bélló | délla persóna | . <sup>1</sup> — vedére<sup>4</sup> <sup>6</sup> cavalíer<sup>7</sup>*

dressed in black following — (to come after) her. But  
 — — *brúno<sup>8</sup> — — — — — veníre<sup>5</sup> diétro-a<sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup>.*

the knight who saw this cried | from afar | to him.  
*cavalíere vedére<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> gridáre | di lontáno | .*

The following day the Saladin caused a most beautiful  
*següente di <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> fáre<sup>1</sup> <sup>9</sup> bélló<sup>10</sup>*

and rich bed | to be put up | in a large hall.  
<sup>11</sup> *ricco<sup>12</sup> létto<sup>13</sup> | fáre<sup>4</sup> | <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> gran<sup>7</sup> sála<sup>8</sup>.*

Yesterday | at | this hour we were in Mugello. He  
*Iéri | a | óra — — — — —*

was one of those men, who are more attached to liberty,  
*uómo, <sup>3</sup> <sup>1</sup> affezionáto<sup>2</sup> libertà,*

than to life. Three months ago there was a conflagration.  
*vita. mése fa incéndio.*

A noisy event happened this year. Ferondo was  
*strepitóso<sup>2</sup> avveniménto<sup>1</sup> accadére áнно. <sup>2</sup> Éssere<sup>1</sup>*

quite pale.  
*tútto pállido.*

To-morrow will be a holy-day. If thou wilt touch  
*Dománi — fésta. toccáre*

her with this | written paper, | she will follow thee  
*scrítta, | venir diétro*



immediately. He said he was perfidious and vile. He  
*incontanente.* — *Dire* *pérfido* *víle.* —

took a leap, and threw himself down from the other  
*Préndere* *sálto,* *gittáre* —

side. He thought that | this man | was such as  
*párte.* — *Pensáre* — | *costui* | *dovére éssere*

the wickedness of the Burgundians required (it). From  
*malvagità* *Borgognóne* *richiédere*

these | it was heard | in the neighbouring fields, that  
*si sèppe* | *vicíno* *cámpo,* —

Terni was guarded by four-hundred horsemen. If he  
*guardáre* *quattrocénto* *cavállo.*

thinks that the republic needs — (has need) that the  
*crédere* — *república* — *bisógno*

senators should speak freely, why does he enter into so  
*senatóre* *parláre* *libero,* *entráre* <sup>2</sup>

trifling details? Do not make a noise. She saw  
*débole*<sup>3</sup> *cósa*<sup>1</sup>? *fáre* — *strépito.* — *conóscere*<sup>2</sup>

clearly that her vision had been true. She, who was  
*Manifésto*<sup>1</sup> — <sup>5</sup> *visióne*<sup>6</sup> <sup>3</sup> *véro*<sup>4</sup>.

not a physician, believed without any doubt, that he was  
<sup>2</sup> — *médica*<sup>1</sup>, *crédere*<sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> *fállo*<sup>6</sup>, — <sup>7</sup>

dead. Do not flatter thyself.  
*mórto.* *lusingáre*

Come into the house, for I believe (that) it is  
*Veníre* *cása,* *crédere*

| better | that she should not see thee. What dost  
*béne* | *vedére*

thou wish that I should say to her, if I should happen  
*volére* *díre* , — — —

to — (it happens that I should) speak to her? He  
<sup>—</sup> *avveníre* *favelláre* ? —

asked him what had become of the other leg of the  
*Domandáre* *diveníre* — *cóscia*

crane. He was disposed | to | go wherever she  
*grù.* *dispónere* | *di* | *andáre dovúnque* —

pleased — (it was agreeable to her). I never should  
 — — *a grádo* —

have believed, that he would act so — (was capable of  
*crédere,* — — — *capáce*

doing this). Who would have been the one — (that),  
*far* — —

that would not have — (set himself to) run-away.  
*éssere* *méttere* *fuggire.*

The king having ordered. Setting fire | to |  
*re* *ordináre.* *Appiccáre* | *per* |

every place. I met them riding post. That day  
*luógo.* — *Incontráre* *correre pósta.* *giórno*

having passed. Having done writing. When she  
*passáre.* *finire* *scrivere.* —

began to sing.  
*cominciáre* *cantáre.*

He forbids him to produce the proofs of his  
 — *vietáre* — *prodúrre* *prúova*

innocence. I am very glad to see you — (I re-  
*innocénza.* — — — — — — — — — — *ral-*

joice myself much at seeing you). It is a crime in  
*legráre* *vedére* — *delitto*

Tyre to have a great fortune.\* It begins to rain.  
*Tiro* *gran béne.* — *Cominciáre pióvere.*

I beseech you to grant me that favor. If it was  
 — *pregáre* *accordáre* *favóre.* —

a fault to leave thee, behold I make amends for  
*cólpa* *lasciáre* , *écco* — — — —

it — (I amend it). He likes to play. I did  
 — *ammendáre* . *amáre* *giuocáre.* — *fáre*

so — (it) to oblige you. She speaks thus to  
 — *obbligáre* . — *Parláre*

vex me.  
*torméntáre* .

\* Fortune, in the plural.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## PARTICIPLES, AND USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN ADVERBS.

## AGREEMENT OF PARTICIPLES.

IT has already been observed (p. 344) that *participles* in Italian are *considered* and often *used* as *adjectives*, and that, when so used, (pp. 345, 411) they *agree* with *substantives* in *gender* and *number*.

This is always the case with *present-participles*, which constantly *agree* in *gender* and *number* with their *subject*; as,

*una nave portante uomini* a ship carrying men tempest-  
*ni tempestanti, pericolanti,* tossed, endangered, and sub-  
*soggiacenti a tanti* subject to so many storms ;  
*marosi,*

*presente agli occhi suoi lei* before his eyes they slew her  
*gridante mercè svenarono,* [who was] crying out for  
mercy ;

*alle donne aspettanti si rivolse, e disse,* he addressed himself to the la-  
dies [who were] waiting, and  
said.

By a peculiarity of language, and in imitation of the *ablative absolute* of the Latin, we often find in good writers a *present-participle* with its *noun* or *pronoun*, *independent* of any verb, and *standing*, as it were, *alone* in a discourse ; as,

*quando, sopravvegnente* when, night coming on, there  
*la notte, surse un tempo* came very severe and tem-  
*fierissimo e tempestoso,* pestuous weather ;

*Cesare parlò assettatamente,* Cæsar spoke much to the point,  
*udenti noi, della vita e* [whilst] we [were] hearing  
*della morte,* him, about life and death.

With regard to the *agreement of past-participles*, the following are the most sure rules :

When the *past-participle* is *joined* to the verb *éssere*, ‘to be’; or to such verbs as *venire*, *restare* or *rimanere*, *vedersi*, &c., used in the signification of ‘to be’; it is to *agree* with the *subject* of the verb, with which it is joined, in *gender* and *number*; as,

ÉSSI éran di frón-di di quér- cia INGHIRLANDÁTI,	they were garlanded with oak- leaves;
nè ÉRANO LE fáLTe dé' Vitel- liáni PUNÍTE, ma ben PA- GÁTE,	nor were the faults of Vitel- lius' troops punished, but well paid;
ménTre ch' ÉLLA [LA línguA] non VÉNGA [for, non SÍA] USÁTA da famósi scrittéri,	whilst it [the language] is not adopted by celebrated writ- ters;
proccurerò che [ÉGLI] RÉSTI [for, SÍI] IMPIEGÁTO in quéstá città,	I shall endeavour that he may be employed in this city;
ÉGLI RIMÁSE [for, FU] MA- RAVIGLIÁTO,	he was astonished;
il giòvane infelice SI VÍDE [for, FU] tòsto TRÁTTO in prigióné,	the unhappy youth was soon taken to prison.

But when the *past-participle* is *joined* to the verb *avere*, ‘to have’; — if this verb is used, instead of *éssere*, in the signification of ‘to be’; or is used in the signification of ‘to hold,’ ‘to possess’; &c., as an *active* and *not* an *auxiliary* verb; the participle *agrees* with the *object* of the verb in *gender* and *number*; as,

per non potérti vedére l' A- VRÉSTI [for, tí SARÉSTI] CAVÁTI gli ócchi,	thou wouldst have torn out thy eyes, not to see thyself;
s' AVÉA [for, s' ÉRA] MÉSSE alcúne petrúzze in bócca,	he had put some small stones in his mouth;
úno che FORÁTA AVÉA [for, TENÉA, POSSEDÉA] LA góLA,	one who had his throat pierc- ed;

HO [for, TÉNGO] SÌ AVVÉZZA la mēte a contemplár só- la costèi,	I have a mind so accus- tomed to contemplate this lady alone ;
benchè AVÉSSERO [for, TE- NÉSSERO] LE SPÁDE ISGUAÍ- NÁTE,	although they had unsheathed their swords ;
non HO quēste cōse SAPÚTE dá' vicini,	I did not hear these things from the neighbours ;
AVÉA la lúna PERDÚTI I suoi rággi,	the moon had lost her rays.

If the verb *avére*, to which the *past-participle* is joined, is used as an *auxiliary* verb, in order to represent the idea of *past time*, which *could be* equally expressed by a *single form* of the verb, which the participle belongs to ; then this *participle* remains *invariable* ; as,

cóme io AVRÒ DÁTO [OR, DA- RÒ] lóro ógni cōsa,	as soon as I shall have given to them every thing ;
CERCÁTO HO [OR, CERCÁI] sēmpre solitária vía,	I have always sought a solitary way ;
m' HÁ DIMOSTRÁTO [OR, mi DIMOSTRÒ] la cagiónē del tuo mále,	he has manifested to me the cause of thy evil ;
chi quēste cōse HA MANIFE- STÁTO [OR, MANIFESTÒ] al maéstro ?	who has told these things to the master ?

When the *past-participle* is preceded by one of the pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi, si, il, lo, la, li, gli, le, ne, che, cùi, quále, quáli, quánti*, as *objects* of the verb, the participle agrees with the *pronouns*, or the *objects represented* by them, in *gender* and *number* ; as,

élla medésima me le ha DÉT- TE [OR, mi ha DÉTTE QUÉ- STE CÓSE],	she herself has told them to me ;
il libérto dicéva avérLA éssO UCCÍSA [OR, avére éssO UC- CÍSA LA DÓNNA],	the freed-man said that he had killed her himself ;

<i>tu</i> CI HÁI ÓGGI TÁNTO DILITICÁTE [OR, HÁI DILITICÁTE NÓI],	thou hast delighted us so much to-day ;
<i>la quále</i> IO RACCONTERÒ PER FÁRVI ACCÓRTE [OR, FÁRE ACCÓRTE VÓI],	which I will relate to show you ;
<i>si</i> FÉ DÁRE L' ÁQUA, CHE IL DÌ DAVÁNTI AVÉVA FÁTTA,	she caused the water to be given to her, which she had prepared the day before ;
<i>vedéndo</i> COSÌ FÁTTA DÓNNA, E CÚI ÉGLI COLÁNTO AMÁTA AVÉA,	seeing such a lady, and one whom he had loved so much ;
LI DÁNNI, LI QUÁLI TU HÁI AVÚTI PER ME,	the evils which thou hast sustained on my account.

The *participle*, however, remains *invariable* if it is accompanied by an *infinitive*, and the abovementioned pronouns are the *objects* of this infinitive ; as,

<i>le cose</i> CHE GIÀ AVÉVA UDÍTO DIRE, CHE ÉRANO INTERVENÚTE,	the things which he had heard of as having happened ;
TÚTTI V' AVRÀ FÁTTO MORÍRE,	he will have put you all to death ;
<i>la donna</i> , LA QUÁLE IL LÚNGO VAGHEGGIÁRE NON AVÉVA POTÚTO MUÓVERÈ,	the lady, whom his long admiration had not been able to move.

Finally, *past-participles* may be used, like present-participles, *absolutely* ; the gerund of the verb *essere*, or *avere*, being generally understood ; and *then*, if the gerund understood is *esséndo*, they *agree* with the *subject*, and if *avéndo*, with the *object* of the proposition ; as,

IL FAMIGLIÁRE GIÚNTO [FOR, ESSÉNDÓ GIÚNTO], E DÁTE [FOR, AVÉNDÓ DÁTE] LE LÉTTERE, E FÁTTA [FOR, AVÉNDÓ FÁTTA] L' AMBASCIÁTA, FU CON GRAN FÉSTA RICEVÚTO,	the domestic having arrived, and having consigned the the letters and delivered the message, was received with great joy.
--	---

EXAMPLES.

ÚNA NÁVE PÒRTANTE UÓMINI  
TEMPESTÁNTI, PERICOLÁNTI, SOG-  
GIACÉNTI A TÁNTI MARÓSI. (Giov.  
Vill. 11. 3.)

A ship carrying men tempest-  
tossed, endangered, and subject to  
so many storms.

PRESENTÉ ÁGLI ÓCCHI SUÓI  
LÉI GRIDÁNTE MERCÈ *e aiúto*  
SVENÁRONO. (Bocc. g. 4. n. 4.)

Before his eyes they slew her  
[who was] crying out for mercy  
and assistance.

ÁLLE DÓNNE ASPETTÁNTI SI  
RIVÓLSE, E DÍSSE. (Bocc. g. 9.  
n. 10.)

He addressed himself to the  
ladies who were waiting, and said.

QUÁNDO, SOPRAVVEGNÉNTÉ LA  
NÓTTE, *con éssa insiéme* SÚRSE  
UN TÉMPO FIERÍSSIMO E TEMPE-  
STÓSO. (Bocc. g. 5. n. 1.)

When, night coming on, there  
came with it very severe and tem-  
pestuous weather.

CÉSARE PARLÒ *bélló e asset-*  
TATAMÉNTÉ, UDÉNTI NÓI, DÉLLA  
VÍTA E DÉLLA MÓRTE, *quándo*  
*dísse . . . .* (Brun. Tes. 8. 34.)

Cæsar spoke finely and much  
to the point, we hearing him,  
about life and death, when he  
said . . . .

ÉSSI ÉRAN *tútti* DI FRÓNDI  
QUÉRCIA INGHIRLANDÁTI. (Bocc.  
g. 9. n. 1.)

They were all garlanded with  
oak-leaves.

NÈ ÉRANO LE FÁLTE DÉ' VI-  
TELLIÁNI PUNÍTE, MA BEN PA-  
GÁTE. (Dav. Stor. 3.)

Nor were the faults of Vitellius'  
troops punished, but well paid.

*Ma stasi úna* LÍNGUA NÓBILE,  
*póco le gioverà* MÉNTRE CH' ÉLLA  
NON VÉNGA USÁTA DA FAMÓSI  
SCRITTÓRI. (Buom.)

But however noble a language  
may be, this will be of little use to  
it, whilst it is not adopted by cele-  
brated writers.

*Se non mi sarà lécito di spo-*  
*sárlo,* PROCCURERÒ *alméno* CHE  
RÉSTI IMPIEGÁTO IN QUÉSTA CIT-  
TÀ. (Gold. Avv.)

If I am not allowed to marry  
him, I shall at least endeavour  
that he may be employed in this  
city.

ÉGLI RIMÁSE MARAVIGLIÁTO  
*délla brútta invenzióne.* (Boccal.)

He was astonished at the bad  
invention.

E IL GIÓVANE INFELÍCE SI  
VÍDE TÓSTO *da úna squádra di*  
*satélliti* CIRCONDÁTO E TRÁTTO  
IN PRIGIÓNÉ. (Soav. Nov.)

And the unhappy youth was  
soon surrounded by a band of  
satellites and taken to prison.

*Di te stéssa vergognándoti,*  
PER NON POTÉRTI VEDÉRE, T'  
AVRÉSTI CAVÁTI GLI ÓCCHI.  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.)

Being ashamed of thyself, thou  
wouldst have torn out thy eyes,  
not to see thyself.

*Mésser lo gelóso s' avéa mésse*  
ALCÚNE PETRÚZZE IN BÓCCA.  
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 5.)

The jealous man had put some  
small stones in his mouth.

UN ÁLTRO CHE FORÁTA AVÉA LA  
GÓLA. (Dant. Inf. 28.)

Another who had his throat  
pierced.

*Lassáí quel, ch' i' più brámo :*  
ed HO SÌ AVVÉZZA — LA MÉNTE  
A CONTEMPLÁR SÓLA costéi, — Ch'  
áltro-non véde (Petr. s. 80.)

I have forgotten what I most  
desire : and my mind is so ac-  
customed to contemplate this lady  
alone, that it perceives nothing  
else.

BENCHÈ églino AVÉSSERO già  
LE SPÁDE ISGUAINÁTE e mendáte.  
(Amm. Ant 11. 1. 12.)

Although they had unsheathed  
and used their swords.

Ío NON HO QUÉSTE CÓSE SA-  
PÚTE DA' VICÍNI ; ÉLLA MEDÉSI-  
MA, fórte di te doléndosi, ME LE  
HA DÉTTE. (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

I did not hear these things  
from the neighbours ; she herself,  
complaining bitterly of thee, has  
told them to me.

AVÉA LA LÚNA, esséndo nel  
mézzo del ciélo, PERDÚTI I RÁG-  
GI SUÓI. (Bocc. g. 6. Intr.)

The moon, although in the  
middle of heaven, had lost her  
rays.

CÓME ÍO AVRÒ LÓRO ÓGNI CÓSA  
DÁTO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.)

As I shall have given to them  
every thing.

CERCÁTO HO SÉMPRE SOLITÁ-  
RIA VÍA — Per fuggír quest' in-  
gégni sórdi e lóschi. (Petr. s.  
222.)

I have always sought a solitary  
way, in order to avoid these deaf  
and blind minds.

Domeneddío m' HA DIMOSTRÁ-  
TO LA CAGIÓNÉ DEL TÚO MÁLE.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 4.)

God has manifested to me the  
cause of thy evil.

·CHI ÁLTRI che tu, HA QUÉSTE  
CÓSE MANIFESTÁTO AL MAÉSTRO ?  
(Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.)

Who else but thou has told  
these things to the master ?

IL LIBÉRTO DICÉVA AVÉRLA  
ÉSSO UCCÍSA, e vendicáta l' in-  
giúria del padrón súo. (Dav.)

The freed-man said that he had  
killed her himself, and thus avenged  
the offence done to his master.

Se tu iéri ci affliggéstí, TU CI  
HÁI ÓGGI TÁNTO DILITICÁTE che  
niúna di te si dée rammaricáre.  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 5.)

If thou didst afflict us yesterday,  
thou hast delighted us so much  
to-day that none of us can com-  
plain of thee.



LA QUÁLE, *piacevóli dónne*, fo  
RACCONTERÒ PER FÁRVI ACCÓRTE  
..... (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.)

*E quésto détto, si fé' dáre  
l' orciuolétto, nel quále éra l' ác-  
qua, che il di davánti avéva  
fátta, e tútta la bévve.* (Bocc.  
g. 4. n. 1.)

*Il quále cosí fátta dónna,  
e cúí égli cotánto amáta  
avéa, per móglie vedandosi.*  
(Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

*Io sóno venúta a ristoráti dé'  
danni, li quáli tu hái già  
avúti per me.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

LE CÓSE CHE GIÀ AVÉVA UDÍTO  
DÍRE, CHE *di nótte* ÉRANO INTER-  
VENÚTE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.)

*Dínque, un uom sólo — Si  
partirà, che non l' avréte offéso,  
— Quándo tútti v' avrà fát-  
to moríre?* (Ariost. Fur. 17. 8.)

LA DÓNNA, LA QUÁLE IL LÚN-  
GO VAGHEGGIÁRE, *l' armeggiáre,*  
*le mattináte* MUÓVERE NON AVÉ-  
VANO POTÚTO, *móssero le affet-  
tuóse paróle.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 9.)

GIÚNTO *adúnque* IL FAMIGLIÁ-  
RE a Génova, E DA'TE LE LÉT-  
TERE, E FA'TTA L' AMBASCIA'TA,  
FU *dálla dónna* CON GRAN FÉSTA  
RICEVÚTO. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.)

Which, kind ladies, I will re-  
late to show you . . . .

And, having said this, she caus-  
ed the vessel of water to be given  
to her, which she had prepared the  
day before, and drank it all off.

Who seeing himself united in  
marriage with such a lady, and one  
whom he had loved so much.

I am come to make thee amends  
for the injuries thou hast sustained  
on my account.

The things which he had heard  
of as having happened by night.

Then, shall a single man depart  
from hence, when he will have put  
all of you to death, without having  
been at all hurt by you?

The lady, whom his long admi-  
ration, tournaments, serenades,  
were not able to move, was mov-  
ed by his tender words.

The domestic, having arrived at  
Genoa, and having consigned the  
letters and delivered the message,  
was received by the lady with  
great joy.

#### USE AND POSITION OF CERTAIN ADVERBS.

*Adverbs*, as we mentioned at pp. 391, 394, may be  
put *before* or *after* the *verb*; they may be put, also,  
*between* the *auxiliary* and the *participle*, and *between*  
two *participles*; as,

tu SÁI BÉNE *cóme* io sóno  
agiáto,

thou knowest well how I am  
situated;

PRESTAMÉNTE S' AVVENTA'- VA <i>àlla góla di costéi,</i>	quickly [a wolf] seized her by the throat ;
non HO mái PÓSCIA POTÚTO <i>dormíre,</i>	I could sleep no longer after that ;
éra STA'TA MÓLTO MA'LE CONSIGLIA'TA,	she had been very badly ad- vised.

The adverb *non*, 'no or not' ; is *always* put *before* the *verb* ; as,

NON FARNÉTICO, <i>madónna,</i>	I do not rave, Madam ;
NON v' ACCORGÉTE <i>che noi</i> <i>siám vérmí ?</i>	do you not perceive that we are worms.

When the adverb *non* is employed to deny several *objects*, and these *precede* the *verb*, the adverb is put *before* the *nouns*, and not before the verb ; as,

NON PIÓGGIA, NON GRA'NDO, NON NÉVE, NON RUGIA'DA, NON BRÍNA <i>più su cáde,</i>	neither rain, nor hail, nor snow, nor dew, nor frost falls a- bove.
---	---

The adverb *mái*, which in itself strictly means 'at any time,' may be put either *before* or *after* the *verb* ; when, however, it is put *before*, it takes the signification of *never*, and when *after*, it takes that of *ever* ; as,

<i>ti priégo che</i> MA'I DÍCHI <i>d' avérmí vedúta,</i>	I beseech thee never to tell, that thou hast seen me ;
<i>i Perugini</i> MA'I <i>si VÓLLERO</i> <i>dichináre ad alcún accórdo,</i>	the Perugians never wished to condescend to come to any agreement ;
<i>quái bárbare</i> FUR MA'I !	what barbarians were ever !
<i>il ciélo è óggi così bello cóme</i> FU MA'I,	the sky is as beautiful to-day as ever it was.

The adverbs *non mái*, 'not ever,' 'never' ; occurring in the same phrase, are generally *separated* by the *verb* ; and then *non*, 'no or not' ; *always precedes*, and *mái*, 'ever' ; *always follows* that verb ; as,

<i>io</i> NON <i>mángio</i> MA'I,	I never eat ;
<i>l' árti</i> NON <i>istétter</i> MA'I <i>pég-</i> <i>gio,</i>	the arts never fared worse ;

NON SPERÁR di vedérmi in *never hope to see me again on*  
*térra MÁI,* *earth.*

But they may be used, also, united ; and then, if *mái* precedes *non*, they are to be put both *before* the verb ; if it follows *non*, they may be put *after* it ; as,

*io MÁI NON DÓRMO,* I never sleep ;  
*che férro MÁI NON STRÍNGE,* who never knew how to use  
 arms ;  
*giurógli di MÁI NON DÍRLO,* she swore to him never to tell  
 it ;  
*amíci fedéli PÓSSON DIVEN-* they can, indeed, become faith-  
*TÁR béne, súdditi NON* ful friends, but subjects never.  
*MÁI,*

## EXAMPLES.

*Pinuccio, TU SÁI BÉNE CÓME* Pinuccio, thou knowest well  
*IO SÓNO AGIÁTO. (Bocc. g. 9. n.* how I am situated.  
*6.)*

*Il quále PRESTAMÉNTE S' AV-* Which [wolf] quickly seized her  
*VENTÁVA ÁLLA GÓLA DI COSTÉL.* by the throat.  
*(Bocc. g. 9. n. 7.)*

*Io NON HO MÁI PÓSCIA POTÚTO* I could sleep no longer after  
*DORMÍRE. (Bocc. g. 9. n. 6.)* that.

*E ch' ell' ÉRA STÁTA MÓLTO* And that she had been very  
*MÁLE CONSIGLIÁTA. (Bocc.)* badly advised.

*Dissè allóra Pirro : "NON* Then Pyrrhus said : " I do not  
*FARNÉTICO, no, MADÓNNA."* rave, Madam, no."  
*(Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.)*

*NON V' ACCORGÉTE VÓI, CHE* Do you not perceive, that we  
*NÓI SIÁM VÉRMI, — NÁti a for-* are worms, made to form the  
*már l' angélica forfálla. (Dant.* winged insect impeded with angel  
*Purg. 10.)* plumes.

*Perchè NON PIÓGGIA, NON* Because neither rain, nor hail,  
*GRÁNDO, NON NÉVE, — NON RU-* nor snow, nor dew, nor frost, ever  
*GIÁDA, NON BRÍNA PIÙ SU CÁDE,* falls above that short ladder of  
*— Che la scalétta dé' tre grádi* three steps.  
*brève. (Dant. Purg. 21.)*

*TI PRIÉGO CHE MÁI ad alcúna* I beseech thee never to tell to  
*persóna DÍCHI D' AVÉRMI VEDÚ-* any one that thou hast seen me.  
*TA. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)*

I PERUGÍNI, *per lóro alterìgia*,  
MÁI VÓLLERO DICHINÁRE AD AL-  
CÚN ACCÓRDO. (Matt. Vill. 8. 39.)

QUÀI BÁRBARE FUR MÁI, *quái*  
*Saracíne!* (Dant. Purg. 23.)

COSÌ È ÓGGI BÉLLO IL CIÉLO  
CÓME FU MÁI. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.)

*Se tu digiúni*, ÍO NON MÁNGIO  
MÁI; *se tu véggi*, ÍO MÁI NON  
DÓRMO. (Passav.)

*In quésto mézzo*, L' ÁRTI *e la*  
*mercanzia* NON ISTÉTTER MÁI  
PÉGGIO *in Firénze*. (Giov. Vill.  
9. 12.)

NON SPERÁR DI VEDÉRMI IN  
TÉRRA MÁI. (Petr. s. 212.)

*Pópolo ignúdo*, *pavéntoso*, *e*  
*lénto*, — CHE FÉRRO MÁI NON  
STRÍNGE. (Petr. c. 5.)

E GIURÓGLI DI MÁI NON DÍRLO.  
(Bocc. g. 3. n. 6.)

AMÍCI FEDÉLI PÓSSON DIVEN-  
TÁR BÉNF *gli Americóni agl' In-*  
*glési*, SÚDDITI NON MÁI. (Bott.  
Stor. Amer. l. 6.)

The Perugians, through pride,  
never wished to condescend to  
come to any agreement.

What barbarians, what Saracens  
were ever!

The sky is as beautiful to-day  
as ever it was.

If thou fastest, I never eat; if  
thou art watching, I never sleep.

During this time, the arts and  
commerce never fared worse in  
Florence.

Never hope to see me again on  
earth.

A race poor, fearful, and indo-  
lent, who never knew how to use  
arms.

And she swore to him never to  
tell it.

The Americans can indeed be-  
come the faithful friends of the  
English, but subjects never.

#### EXERCISE XXXIV.

After he had spent some (*of his*) time | to con-  
Poichè — <sup>4</sup> pónere<sup>5</sup> alquánto<sup>1 2</sup> — <sup>3</sup> tempo<sup>3</sup> | <sup>in<sup>6</sup></sup> <sup>dovér<sup>7</sup></sup>

sole | her weeping. To him, then residing in  
racconsoláre<sup>10</sup> | <sup>8</sup> piángere<sup>9</sup>. , — <sup>dimoráre</sup>

Ireland, came the desire of hearing. (The) rivers  
Irlánda, venire — vóglia sentire. rívo

of (the) blood extinguished the rising flame. Happy,  
sángue estínguere<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup> nascere<sup>2</sup> fiamma<sup>3</sup>. Felíce,

and fortunate, and enjoying | for ever | the fruit  
fortunáto, <sup>godére<sup>4</sup></sup> | <sup>in<sup>1</sup></sup> <sup>ógni<sup>2</sup></sup> <sup>témpo<sup>3</sup></sup> | — —

of their love. You\* are not the first, nor will you be  
*amóre.* *primo,* —

the last, that is imposed upon. I know not whether  
*último,* *ingannáre.* *sapére* *se*

thou | hast minded | how close we† are kept.  
*t' hái pósto in ménte* | *strétto*<sup>3</sup> — <sup>1</sup> *tenére*<sup>2</sup>.

They having arrived at the city, | went | with  
*Ésso*<sup>2</sup> <sup>1</sup> *perveníre*<sup>6</sup> <sup>3</sup> <sup>4</sup> *città*<sup>5</sup>, | *ne andárono*<sup>13</sup> | <sup>7</sup>

Mr. Torello to his house,‡ where fifty of the  
*Messér*<sup>8</sup> <sup>9</sup> <sup>10</sup> <sup>11</sup> *cása*<sup>12</sup>, *cinquánta*

principal citizens were come to receive them. The  
*maggióre* *cittadino* *venire* *ricevére*

message which I have given to him | to | deliver  
*commissióne* *dáre* | *di* | *riferíre*

to the king. Thou knowest what is the offence,  
*re.* *sapére* *ingiúria,*

which thou hast given me. Master, I have seen  
*fáre* *Maéstro,* *vedére*

a thing which troubles me. One who had  
*cósa* *dispiacére.*

the one, and the other hand cut off. Each one§ of  
*úno,* *áltro* *man* *mozzáre.*

them had her right breast cut off, | in order to |  
<sup>1</sup> — *dirítto*<sup>3</sup> *mammélla*<sup>4</sup> *tagliáre*<sup>2</sup>, | *per* |

| carry | | the shield | | in | battles. They|| are  
*portare* | | *lo scúdo* | | *álla* | *battágliá.*

handsomer than the painted angels, which you have  
*bélló* *dipínto*<sup>2</sup> *ágnoli*<sup>1</sup>,

often-times shown me. Thou¶ has been with that  
*píu vólte mostráre* *co-*

lady, whom thou hast deceived.  
*léi,* *ingannáre.*

I have caused the greater part of my possessions to-  
 — *fáre* <sup>2</sup> *maggiór*<sup>3</sup> *párte*<sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup> *possessióne*<sup>7</sup> *ven-*

\* You, feminine gender.

‡ House, in the plural.

|| They, feminine.

† We, feminine.

§ Each one, in the feminine.

¶ Thou, feminine.

be-sold. They were glad that they had — (of having)  
*dere*<sup>1</sup>. — *Rimanére contento* — — —

successfully — (with success) known how to mock the  
 — *succésso, sapére* — — *scherníre*

avarice of Calandrino. | No sooner | had she entered (into)  
*avarízia* . | *Nè prima* · | — — *entráre*<sup>4</sup> <sup>1</sup>

the room, than the (beating of the arteries — the) pulse  
<sup>2</sup> *cámera*<sup>3</sup>, *che* *battiménto* — — *pólso*

returned to the youth; and having left it — (she hav-  
*ritornáre* *gióvane*; — — —

ing departed), it [the pulse] left him also — (it ceased).  
*partíre*, — — — — — *cessáre*.

Is not this the land, which I first | trod with  
*terrén*, *príá* | *toc-*

my feet | ? Ciacco replied: "Thou knowest very  
*cáre* | ? <sup>2</sup> *Rispóndere*<sup>1</sup>: " — *sapére* —

well, that I shall come." Who quickly opened  
*béne*, *veníre*." *prestaménte apríre*

the door. The Devil said once to St. Macarius:  
*pórta*. *Diavólo díre úna vólta* *San Macárió*:

"If thou art always watching — (watchest), I never  
 " — — — *végliare*,

sleep; if thou | usest all thy efforts | in thy works  
*dorníre*; | *ti* *offatíchi* | — — —

— (working), I never rest — (have never rest)."  
*operáre*, — — *non mái ripóso*."

Did not thy master say, that we should carry  
*padróne díre*, *portáre*

| home | these things? Caring (himself) neither  
 | *a' cása* | *cósa*? *Curáre*

| for | the palaces, nor | for | the ox, nor | for | the  
 | *di* | *palágio*, | *di* | *búe*, | *di* |

horse, nor | for | the ass, nor | for | the money,\* nor  
*cavállo*, | *di* | *ásino*, | *di* | *denáro*,

| for | any other thing, which he had seen.  
 | *di* | *cósa*, — <sup>2</sup> *vedére*<sup>1</sup>.

\* Money, in the plural.

## CHAPTER IX.

## EXPLETIVES.

[Although many of the following words have been already mentioned in treating of the different Parts of Speech, which they respectively belong to, it has, nevertheless, not been thought altogether useless to present them here once more united in a single chapter.]

## BÉLLO :

IL *vostro vestito è BÉLL' e fatto.* Your suit of clothes is finished.  
(Fir.)

per *BÉLLA paura gittò le bandiere del comúne.* (Cron. Mor.) through fear he threw down the standards of the commonwealth.

per *BÉLLE scritte di lor máno s' obbligárono l' úno all' áltero.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 9.) they were bound to each other by *fine* obligations written with their own hands.

## BÉNE, BEN, BÉ' :

*Gli domandái, se gli bastáva l' ánimo di cacciárló vía; ed egli rispose: "Sì BÉNE."* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) I asked him, if he had courage to send him away; and he answered: "Yes, indeed."

*egli è quà un malvágio uómo, che m' ha tagliáto la bórsa con BEN cénto fiorini d' óro.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 1.) here is a wicked man, who has cut my purse with *full* one hundred florins of gold.

"*BÉ'*," *rispos' io, "Messére, parlerém pói; — Non fáte quì per or quésto fracásso."* (Bern. Rim.) "well, Sir," answered I, "we will speak afterwards; do not make now such a noise here."

## CI :

*Sémpre che tu CI viverái.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 4.) As long as thou livest.

*la dóнна e Pírro dicevno: "Nói CI seggiámo."* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 9.) the lady and Pyrrhus said: "We will sit down."

## CON :

*Stássi CON méco.* (Petr.) He is with me.

*spéro d' avére assái buón témpo CON téco.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 10.) I hope I shall have a fine time with thee.

## ÉCCO :

*Ed écco Piétro chiamò all' úscio.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.) And lo Peter called at the door.

*Écco, Giannótto, a te piáce ch' ío divénga Cristiáno.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) here, John, thou wishest that I should become a Christian.

## ÉGLI :

*Égli è úna compassióne a vederlo.* (Mach. Com.) It excites pity to see him.

*non ti fa mestiéri il dirlo, il viso túo favélla ÉGLI.* (Sen.) it is not necessary to tell it, thy face manifests it.

## ÉLLA :

*Élla non andrà così.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 5.) It shall not go on so.

*se non ch' élla ha in ciò volúto mostráre, ch' élla è gentile.* (Bocc. Corb, 79.) except that she wished to show by this, that she is courteous.

## ÉSSO :

*Andiámo a Róma con éssó lúi.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) Let us go to Rome with him.

*Ésso*, as an expletive, is *invariable*, and may be used equally well before a *masculine* and a *feminine* pronoun, both *singular* and *plural*; as, *con éssó méco*, 'with me'; *con éssó téco*, 'with thee'; *con éssó lúi*, 'with him'; *con éssó léi*, 'with her,' or 'with you'; *con éssó nói*, 'with us'; *con éssó vói*, 'with you'; *con éssó lóro*, 'with them,' or 'with you':

*fátti álla finéstra, e chiámala, e di' che vénga a desináre con éssó nói.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 8.) go to the window, and call her, and tell her to come and dine with us.

## GIÀ :

*Già Dío non vógliá.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 5.) May God forbid.

*non crédo ío già che ne avéte a mále.* (Varch.) I do not think you take it ill.

## ÍO :

*Che farébbe égli s' ío moríssi, ío ?* (Mach. Com.) What would he do if I should die ?



*comechè ógni áltro uómo móltto di lui si lódi, io méne póssó póco lodáre, ío.* (Bocc. g. 10. n. 3.)      although every other person praises him much, I can praise him but little.

## MÁI :

*Una pártte del móndo è, che si giáce — MÁI sémpre in ghiáccio.* (Petr. c. 5.)      There is a part of the world, which lies always frozen.

*“cóme,” disse Feróndo, “dúnque sómo ío mórtto?” — Díse il Mónaco: “MÁI sí.”* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 8.)      “how,” said Ferondo, “am I dead, then?” — The Monk replied: “Yes indeed.”

## MI :

*Io MI sómo un póvero pellegríno.* (Bocc. Filoc. 1. 5.)      I am a poor pilgrim.

*io MI crédo che le suóre sien tútte a dormíre.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.)      I believe that the nuns are all asleep.

## MÍCA :

*Son novéllte e vére, non son MÍCA fávole.* (Fir. Trin.)      These are true news, they are not fables.

*non MÍCA idióta nè materiále; ma scienziáto, e di acúto ingégno.* (Casa. Gal.)      not an idiot nor a vulgar man; but learned, and of an acute mind.

## NE :

*Chetaménte n' andò per la cámera insíno álla finéstra.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 7.)      He went tranquilly through the room to the window.

*andíanne là, e laverémlo spaciatiaménte.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 5.)      let us go there, and we will wash it immediately.

## NON :

*Témo che vói NON mi abbandoniáte.* (Bocc.)      I fear you will abandon me.

*la qual modéstia dúbíto che NON gli sía dannósa.* (Tolom. lett.)      which modesty, I doubt, may be hurtful to him.

## ÓRA :

*Deh! or t' avéssero éssi affogáto.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 9.) Ah! would that they had drowned thee.

*ÓRA che vorrà dir quésto?* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 8.) now what does this mean?

## PÓI :

*Non è PÓI véro quánto mi dicéste.* (Bocc.) What you told me is not true.

*Io non mi sóno PÓI risolúto di partír di Róma.* (Car. lett.) I have not come to the resolution of leaving Rome.

## PÚNTO :

*Senza sbigottír PÚNTO.* (Bocc.) Without being frightened *at all*.

*Tedáldo non è PÚNTO mórtó.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.) Tedaldo is not *at all* dead.

## PÚRE :

*La cosa andò PUR cosí.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) The affair went off so.

*fa PÚRE che tu mi móstri quáli ti piáce.* (Bocc. g. 5. n. 10.) do but show me him whom thou likest.

## SI :

*Del palággio s' uscì, e fuggíssi a casa.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 8.) He went out of the palace, and fled to his house.

## SÌ :

*Sì è tánta la benignità, e la misericórdia di Dio.* (Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.) So great is the goodness and the mercy of God.

## TI :

*Io non so se tu t' hái pósto in ménte.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 1.) I know not, whether thou hast minded.

## TU :

*Tu dí' t'ue paróle, TU.* (Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.) Thou mayest say what thou pleasest.

## TÚTTO :

*La dónna, udéndo costú par- The woman, hearing this man  
láre il quále élla credéva speak whom she thought  
mútolo, TÚTTA stordì. (Bocc. dumb, was quite amazed.  
g. 3. n. 1.)*

## ÚNO :

*Vuói tu quell' úno ? (Bocc.) Dost-thou want that one ?*

## VI :

*Vói non sapéte ciò che vói vi You do not know what you  
díte. (Bocc. g. 6. n. 6.) say.*

## VÍA :

*"Va vía," rispóse ; "e ciò che tu "Go away," answered he ; "and  
vuói, cónta." (Dant. Inf. 32.) relate what thou pleasest."*

## CHAPTER X.

## OF THE ELLIPSIS.

ELLIPSIS is a figure in grammar, which consists in the *omission* of *one* or *more words* in order to add conciseness and elegance to the phrase, without affecting its clearness. This figure is very frequent in Italian, and offers one of the principal difficulties in the grammatical analysis of the Classics. We will here give some examples in which the *ellipsis* is employed, *supplying the words which are omitted*, that the learner may familiarize himself with similar locutions.

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Substantive :

*Rúppe [la náve] in máre. He made shipwreck.  
(Crusca.)*

*mi scusái [dèlla cólpa] di ciò. I exculpated myself from that  
(Class.) fault.*

- Alessandro muóre* [per amóre] *di quèlla védova.* (Bocc.) Alexander dies for that widow.
- conoscéndo che quívi non éra* [luógo] *da piángere . . . .* (Bocc.) knowing that there was no place to weep . . . .
- bástami* [la disgrázia] *di éssere státo scherníto úna vólta.* (Bocc.) it is enough to have been insulted once.
- io ci tornerò, e daróttene tante* [bússe], *ch' io ti farò trísto per tútto il témpo, che tu ci viverái.* (Bocc. g. 4. n. 2.) I will return, and give thee so many blows, that I will make thee sorry as long as thou livest.
- niúno mále si féce nèlla cadúta, quantúnque alquánto cadésse da álto* [luógo]. (Bocc. g. 2. n. 5.) he did not hurt himself in falling, although he fell from a high place.

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Adjective :

- E sèmpre pói per* [buóno] *da mólto l' ébbe, e per amíco.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 2.) And considered him always afterwards as a very good man, and as a friend.
- fu* [ábile] *da tánto, e tánto sèppe fáre, ch' égli pacificò il figliuólo col pádre.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 3.) he was so able, and knew how to do so much, that he reconciled the son with the father.
- non suspicò, che ciò Guccio Baléna gli avésse fáto, perciocchè nol conoscéva* [capáce] *da tánto.* (Bocc. g. 6. n. 10.) he did not suspect that Guccio Balena had done this to him, because he did not think him capable of so much.
- il re gli chiamò, e quèi, quándo il vídero, ténnersi* [im-móbili]. (Nov. Ant.) the king called them, and they, when they saw him, stopped.

## ELLIPSIS OF Relative Pronouns :

- Esaminiámo se dèlle cose* [che si sóno] *détte ne ha fáto alcúna.* (Mach. Princ.) Let us examine if he has done any of the things which have been said.
- la dóнна gli féce apprestáre pánni* [i quáli érano] *státi del maríto.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) the woman caused clothes to be prepared for him, which had been her husband's.

*riscontróllo quívi Pettilio Cerialé* [il quále éra] *fuggíto dalle guárdie di Vitéllio.* there met him Petilius Cerialis, who had escaped from the guards of Vitellius.  
(Dav. Stor.)

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Infinitive OF Verbs:

*Andáte per* [préndere] *éssi.* Go after them.  
(Bocc.)  
*què il sóle non vi può* [penetráre]. (Class.) here the sun cannot penetrate.  
*io éra un asináccio che non potéva* [sostenére] *la víta.* I was a great ass that could not endure life.  
(Firenz.)

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Verb IN THE Indicative Mood:

*Téssa, ódi tu quél ch' io* [ódo]? Tessa, do you hear what I hear?  
(Bocc. g. 7. n. 1.)  
*quésti è il capitáno, gli áltri* [sóno] *da nùlla.* (Dav. Stor.) this is the captain, the others are of no account.  
*éra parénte strétto di Vespasiáno, e [éra] soldáto di cón- to.* (Dav. Stor.) he was a near relation of Vespasian, and a good soldier.

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Verb IN THE Conjunctive Mood:

*Quí ha quéstá céna, e non sarébbe chi* [potésse] *mangiárla.* (Bocc. g. 2. n. 2.) Here is this supper, and there is no one to eat it.  
*avrèi gridáto, se non [fósse státo] che égli mi chiése mercè per Dio, e per vói.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 3.) I would have cried out, had it not been that he besought mercy both in the name of God and in your name.  
*ah! ah! se non [fósse] ch' io ho reverénza a vói, pádre, io diréi púre il bell' onóre ch' éi mi fa.* (Mach. Com.) ah! ah! were it not for the respect that I bear to you, father, I would tell the great honor he does me.

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Gerund:

[Esséndo] *duránte la guérra.* [Being] during the war.  
(Bocc.)

- [avéndo] *vedúto il luógo solitário.* (Bocc.) having seen the solitary place.
- [esséndo] *giúnto il famigliáre a Génova, e [avéndo] dáte le lèttère, e [avéndo] fátta l' ambasciáta . . . . .* (Bocc.) the domestic having arrived at Genoa, and having consigned the letter and delivered the message . . . . .

## ELLIPSIS OF THE Participle :

- Se éssi mi cacciásser gli ócchi a che saré' ío [ridóttö] ?* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.) If they should tear out my eyes, to what should I be reduced?
- se non fósse [státo] il Gran Préte, a cui mal prénda.* (Dant. Inf. 27.) if it had not been for the High Priest, whom curses light on.
- se non fósse [státo] ch' égli éra giovane, égli avrébbe avúto mólto a sostenére.* (Bocc. g. 8. n. 7.) had he not been a young man, he would have had a great deal to suffer.

## ELLIPSIS OF Adverbs :

- O'ra [così] fóssero éssi pur giú dispósti a veníre, che veraménte potrémmo díre la fortúna éssere favoreggiánte.* (Bocc. Intr.) Would that they were disposed to come, that we might truly say that fortune is favorable.
- al móndo non fur mái persóne [talménte] rátte, — A far lor prò . . . — Com' ío dópo cotái parole fátte.* (Dant. Inf. 2.) never among men did any with such speed haste to their profit . . . as I when these words were spoken.

## ELLIPSIS OF Prepositions :

- In casa [di] quésti usurái.* (Bocc.) In the house of these usurers.
- servíva [a] cérti pescatóri.* (Bocc. g. 9. n. 1.) she served certain fishermen.
- usáva mólto [in] la chiésa.* (Bocc. g. 3. n. 4.) he frequented much the church.
- sedétte re [per] ánni quíndici.* (Crusca.) he reigned for fifteen years.

*cenerémo* [con] *un póco di* we will sup upon a little salt  
*cárne saláta.* (Bocc. g. 7. meat.  
 n. 1.)

ELLIPSIS OF Conjunctions :

*Io sóno la mísera* [e] *sventu-* I am the miserable and un-  
*ráta Zinévra.* (Bocc. g. 2. . fortunate Ginevra.  
 n. 9.)

*real nátura,* [e] *angélico intel-* a royal nature, and an angelic  
*létto,*— [e] *Chiar' álma,* [e] mind, and "clear spirit," and  
*próna vísta,* [e] *ócchio cer-* a quick sight, and piercing  
*viéro.* (Petr. s. 201.) eyes.

REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENT MODES  
 OF ADDRESS IN ITALIAN.

THE Italians have *three different modes* of addressing a person ; — viz. the *second person singular*, TU, 'thou'; and its *inflexion*, TI, 'to thee,' 'thee':—the *second person plural*, VOI, 'you'; and its *inflexion*, VI, 'to you,' 'you': — and the *third person singular, feminine*, E'LLA, and its *inflexions*, LE, LA; representing the title VOSTRA SIGNORÍA (generally contracted into VOSSIGNORÍA, and often written V. S.), 'your worship,' 'your lordship,' 'your ladyship'; whether the person addressed be a man or a woman.

The *second person singular* is used in *addressing* a person of *inferior condition*; as by a master *speaking* to a *servant*, by a parent *addressing* a *child*. Likewise *husbands* and *wives*, *brothers* and *sisters*, and any two *intimate friends* adopt it in *speaking* to *each other*. It is also used in *poetry*, and in *addressing* the *Divinity*.

The *second person plural* is used in *addressing* a person of *equal rank* with the speaker, but not par-

ticularly intimate with him. Also by children *addressing* their *parents*, by ladies *speaking* to *gentlemen*. It is likewise used in *addressing artisans, tradesmen, dealers, &c.*

The *third person singular, feminine*, is used in *addressing a superior*, or one towards whom the speaker wishes to exhibit *special civility and respect*; as by a servant to his *master*, by a tradesman to a *gentleman, &c.* *Ladies, and persons respectable for their age or office*, are addressed in this mode.

It is to be observed, that when the *second person plural, VÓI*, and its *inflexion, VI*, are used, the *verb* is put in the *plural*; but all the other words, such as *adjectives, participles, &c.*, agreeing with the *subject*, remain in the *singular*, masculine or feminine, according to the *gender* of the person addressed; as,

*vói, Signóre, SARÉTE rispettáto,* you, Sir, will be respected;

*vói, Signóra, SIÉTE sávia,* you, Madam, are wise.

When the *third person singular, feminine, E'LLA*, and its *inflexions, LE, LA*; or the title *VOSSIGNORÍA*, are employed, the *verb* is put in the *singular*; and the words agreeing with them take the *feminine gender*, whether the person addressed be *masculine* or *feminine*; as,

*éLLA, or V. S. SARÀ rispettáta,* { you [Sir], or your lordship will be respected;  
you [Madam], or your ladyship will be respected:

*éLLA or V. S. È sávia,* { you [Sir] are, or your lordship is wise;  
you [Madam] are, or your ladyship is wise.

Where *two or more individuals* are addressed in the third person, the *third person plural, feminine, E'LLENO*,



and its *inflection*, LÓRO; or the titles VÓSTRE or LE VÓSTRE SIGNORÍE, LE SIGNORÍE LÓRO, LOR SIGNÓRI, are used; the *verb* being put in the *plural*, and the words agreeing with them, in the *plural feminine*; as,

ÉLLENO, OR LE VÓSTRE SIGNORÍE SARÁNNO RISPETTÁTE, } you [gentlemen], or your lordships will be respected;  
 } you [ladies], or your ladyships will be respected:

ÉLLENO, OR LE SIGNORÍE LÓRO SÓNO SÁVIE, } you [gentlemen], or your lordships are wise;  
 } you [ladies], or your ladyships are wise.

Some Italian Grammarians assert, on the authority of *Bembo*, *Bentivoglio*, *Ganganelli*, and other modern writers, that this *agreement* in *gender* of *adjectives* and *participles*, with the word *Vossignoría* or the pronoun *élla*, when used in addressing a man, ought to take place only, when the verb *éssere*, 'to be,' stands *between* them; as,

ÉLLA, OR V. S. È MÓLTO DÓTTA, you [Sir] are, or your lordship is very learned:

but if *any other verb* stands *between* the word *Vossignoría* or the pronoun *élla* and the *adjective* or *participle*, these are made to *agree* with the *person signified* by those; as,

V. S., OR ÉLLA PAR MÓLTO PENSIERÓSO, you [Sir] seem, or your lordship seems very thoughtful.

If the verb happens to be the auxiliary *éssere*, and the *participle* of another verb, then this *participle* agrees in *gender* with the word *V. S.* or the pronoun *élla*, and the following *adjective* or *participle* is made to *agree* with the *person signified* by them; as,

ÉLLA SI È MOSTRÁTA, SIGNÓRE, non méno sávio, che benígno, you have shown yourself, Sir, both wise and kind.

Adjectives of *nations* agree always with the *person signified* by the pronoun *élla* or the word *V. S.*; as,

ÉLLA SÉNZA DÚBBIO È ROMÁNO, you, Sir, without doubt are a Roman;

LE SIGNORÍE LÓRO SARÁNNO CÉRTO ITALIÁNI, you, gentlemen, are certainly Italians.

Besides the abovementioned modes of address, the Italians often use the demonstrative pronouns *quello*, *quella*, and the words *gióvane*, *uómo*, *dónna*, in speaking to a person whose name is unknown to them; and say *quél gióvane*, 'young man'; *quell' uómo*, 'good man'; &c.; as,

*avvertisci, QUÉL GIÓVANE*, take care, young man, for thou  
*che tu t'ingánni,* deceivest thyself;

*QUELL' UÓM DABBÉNE, che* what is the matter, good man?  
*cósa è státa?*

*vóí síete mólto altiéra, QUÉL-* you are very proud, my good  
*LA DÓNNA,* woman:

but this way of addressing people, is only *used* by superiors *towards* their *inferiors*.

The following are the **TITLES** used by the Italians in addressing the different qualities of persons: viz. in *speaking* to a GENTLEMAN, *Signóre*, 'Sir'; *Vossignoría* (written, *V. S.*), 'your worship,' 'your lordship':—to a PERSON OF RANK, OR TO A NOBLEMAN, *Illustríssimo* (*Illmō*), 'most illustrious Sir'; *Vossignoría Illustríssima* (*V. S. Illmā*), 'Your most illustrious lordship'; *Eccellénza*, 'Excellency'; *Vóstra Eccellénza* (*V. E.*), 'Your Excellency':—to a PRINCE OF THE BLOOD, *Altézza*, 'Highness'; *Vóstra Altézza*, 'Your Highness':—to a KING, *Sire*, 'Sire'; *Maestà*, 'Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà* (*V. M.*), 'Your Majesty':—to an EMPEROR, *Sire*, 'Sire'; *Maestà*, 'Majesty'; *Maestà Imperiále*, 'Imperial Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà Imperiále* (*V. M. I.*) 'Your Imperial Majesty'; *Vóstra Maestà Reále e Imperiále* (*V. M. R. I.*), 'Your Royal and Imperial Majesty':—to a MONK, *Pádre*, 'Father'; *Vóstra Paternità* (*V. Ptà*), 'Your Paternity':—to a PRIEST, *Reveréndo*, 'Reverend'; *Vóstra Reverénza* (*V. R.*), 'Your Rever-

ence' : — to a BISHOP, *Monsignóre*, 'Right Honorable';  
*Eccellenza Reverendissima*, 'Most Reverend Excellency';  
*Vóstra Eccellenza Reverendissima* (*V. E. Remã*),  
 'Your most Reverend Excellency' : — to a CARDINAL,  
*Eminénza*, 'Eminence'; *Vóstra Eminénza* (*V. Emzã*),  
 'Your Eminence' : — to the POPE, *Santità*, 'Holiness';  
*Sãnto Pãdre*, 'Holy Father'; *Vóstra Santità* (*V. Stã*),  
 'Your Holiness'; *Vóstra Beatitúdiñe* (*V. Bãdñe*),  
 'Your Blessedness.'

[For Illustrations of the above Remarks on the Different Modes of Address in Italian, see the Author's *CONVERSAZIO'NE ITALIA'NA*, where they have been fully exemplified.]



## PART IV.

# ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY.



## CHAPTER I.

### OF ACCENTS.

THE *accent*, in Orthography, is a *small sign* placed upon the *vowels* of words to determine their *pronunciation*.

There are *two* accents in Italian, the *grave* and the *acute*.

The *grave* accent is an *oblique line* drawn from the *left to the right* ( ` ); and the *acute*, an *oblique line* drawn from the *right to the left* ( ´ ).

These accents are generally put on all words in which *a letter* or *syllable* has been *suppressed*; as in *natio* from *nativo*, 'native'; in which *v* is suppressed; *virtù* from *virtute*, *virtude*, or *virtue*, 'virtue'; in which *te*, *de*, *e*, are suppressed; &c.

And on those words in which the *sameness of spelling* might produce a *confusion of signification*; as in *però*, 'but'; *balia*, 'power'; &c. to distinguish them from *pero*, 'pear-tree'; *balia*, 'nurse'; &c.

---

The *grave* accent is put

On all *contracted nouns* of more than one syllable;  
as,

<i>carità</i>	[ <i>caritate</i> , or <i>caritadè</i> ],	charity;
<i>mercè</i>	[ <i>mercede</i> ],	mercy:

On the *names* of the *days* of the *week* ending in *i* ; as,

*Lunedì*, Monday ; *Venerdì*, Friday :

On the *compounds* of *che* ; as,

*perchè*, because ; *benchè*, although :

On the *compounds* of *tre* ; as,

*ventitrè*, twenty-three ; *centotrè*, one hundred  
[and three :

On the *first* and *third* persons *singular* of the *future* of all verbs ; as,

<i>amerò</i> ,	I will	{	love ;	<i>amerà</i> ,	he will	{	love ;
<i>temerò</i> ,			fear ;	<i>temerà</i> ,			fear ;
<i>sentirò</i> ,			hear ;	<i>sentirà</i> ,			hear :

On the *third* person *singular* of the *perfect* of all those verbs in which the *first* person of the *same tense* terminates with *two vowels* ; as,

[ <i>cantá</i> ,	I	{	sang ;	<i>cantò</i> ,	he	{	sang ;
[ <i>credé</i> ,			believed ;	<i>credè</i> ,			believed ;
[ <i>dormí</i> ,			slept ;	<i>dormì</i> ,			slept :

On the words

<i>metà</i> ,	half ;	<i>cremisì</i> ,	crimson ;	
<i>baccalà</i> ,	cod-fish ;	<i>sofà</i> ,	sofa ;	
<i>caffè</i> ,	coffee ;	<i>taffetà</i> ,	taffety ;	
<i>tanè</i> ,	tawny ;	<i>aloe</i> ,	aloes ;	
<i>falò</i> ,	bonfire ;	<i>alcali</i> ,	alkali ;	
<i>oibò</i> ,	fy ;	<i>colì</i> ,	} there ;	
<i>orsù</i> ,	come ;	<i>colà</i> ,		
<i>così</i> ,	so, or thus ;	<i>costì</i> ,		
<i>testè</i> ,	just now ;	<i>costà</i> ,	} ho there !	
<i>aimè</i> !	} alas !	<i>olà</i> !		} take care !
<i>oimè</i> !		<i>ohè</i> !		

On the words

<i>ciò</i> ,	this, or that ;	<i>già</i> ,	already ;
<i>giù</i> ,	below ;	<i>quà</i> ,	} here ;
<i>più</i> ,	more ;	<i>quí</i> ,	
<i>può</i> ,	may, or can ;		

which are written with a grave accent in order to show that the *two vowels* are to be pronounced both in *one syllable*:

And on the words

<i>dì,</i>	(noun)	day;
<i>dà,</i>	} (verb)	{ gives ;
<i>è,</i>		
<i>là,</i>	} (adverb)	there ;
<i>lì,</i>		
<i>sì,</i>	(affirmative particle, or adverb)	yes, or so ;
<i>nè,</i>	(negative particle, or conjunction)	nor, or neither ;
<i>sè,</i>	(personal pronoun)	one's self ;
<i>tè,</i>	(noun)	tea ;
<i>chè,</i>	(conjunction)	for, or because ;

in which the grave accent is used as a *mark of distinction* between them, and the words

<i>dì,</i>	} (preposition)	{ of ;
<i>dà,</i>		
<i>e,</i>	(conjunction)	and ;
<i>la,</i>	} (article, or conjunctive pronoun)	{ the, or her ;
<i>li,</i>		
<i>si,</i>	(conjunctive pronoun)	one's self ;
<i>ne,</i>	(relative particle)	of it, or of them ;
<i>se,</i>	(conjunction)	if ;
<i>te,</i>	(personal pronoun)	thee, or to thee ;
<i>che,</i>	(relative pronoun)	who, which, or that.

The *acute* accent is put

On the *i* of the terminations *ia, io*, of nouns, when the *two vowels* are pronounced in *two distinct syllables* ; as,

*magía,* magic ; *desío,* desire :

On words in which the *stress* of the voice, by a poetical license, is *transferred* from one syllable to another ; as,

*simíle* [*for símile*], similar ; *oceáno* [*for oceáno*], ocean :

And, sometimes, on the words

<i>áncora,</i>	anchor ;	<i>néttare,</i>	nectar ;
<i>fólgore,</i>	thunderbolt ;	<i>ténere,</i>	tender :
<i>séguilo,</i>	suite ;		

to distinguish them from the words

<i>ancora,</i>	[ancóra],	yet, also, or again ;
<i>folgore,</i>	[folgóre],	splendor ;
<i>nettare,</i>	[nettáre],	to clean ;
<i>tenere,</i>	[tenére],	to hold ;
<i>seguito,</i>	[seguíto],	followed.

These are all the cases in which the accents are used, except that, in *some books* which teach the principles of the language, the *acute* accent is *employed* to *facilitate* the *pronunciation* to learners.

## CHAPTER II.

### OF THE APOSTROPHE.

THE *apostrophe* is a small sign, like a comma ('), inserted between two words to mark the *elision of a vowel*.

The apostrophe is generally used at the *end* of those *words* that *terminate* with a *vowel*, followed by a *word* that *begins* with the *same vowel* ; as,

[buónA avventúra]	buon' avventúra,	good fortune ;
[gránde edifizio]	grand' edifizio,	great edifice :

And at the end of words that terminate with a vowel followed by a word that begins with any other vowel, *whenever* it is *necessary*, to *render* the *pronunciation* more *agreeable* ; as,

[quésto vómo]	quest' vómo,	this man ;
[quéllo álbero]	quell' álbero,	that tree.

The Italians write with an *apostrophe*

The articles *lo, la, 'the,'* making an elision of the vowels *o, a,* before words *beginning* with a *vowel* ; as,

l' Amico,	the friend ;	l' innocénza,	the innocence.
-----------	--------------	---------------	----------------

These articles are also written sometimes *without* an *apostrophe*; as,  
*lo Amóre,* the love; *la Energía,* the energy.

But when *lo* is followed by an *o*, and *la* is followed by an *a*, they are *always* written with an *apostrophe*; as,

*l' onóre,* the honor; *l' ánima,* the soul:

---

The article *gli*, 'the,' when it is *followed* by an *i*; as,  
*gl' ingégni,* the geniuses; *gl' ídoli,* the idols:

The article *le*, 'the,' when the following word *begins* with *e*; as,

*l' Eresíe,* the heresies; *l' Eménde,* the emendations.

Sometimes they write also with an *apostrophe* the article *il*, 'the'; after a word *ending* with a *vowel*, and make an *elision* of the vowel *i*; as,

*tutto 'l mólndo,* all the world; *sópra 'l pétto,* upon the breast:

---

The words *mi*, 'me'; *ti*, 'thee'; *ci*, 'us,' or 'here'; *vi*, 'you,' or 'there'; *si*, 'one's self'; *ne*, 'of it,' or 'of them'; 'hence,' or 'thence'; *se*, 'if'; *di*, 'of'; when they come *before* a *vowel*; as,

<i>m' ingánno,</i>	I deceive myself;
<i>t' áma,</i>	he loves thee;
<i>c' inténde,</i>	he understands us; &c.

And the words *i', é', dé', á', dá', có', né', pé', bé', sé', dí', fé', vé', pó', mé', mó', vó', té',* &c., abbreviated from *io*, 'I'; *éi*, 'he,' or 'they'; *déi*, 'of the'; *ái*, 'to the'; *dái*, 'from or by the'; *cói*, 'with the'; *néi*, 'in the'; *péi*, 'for or by the'; *béi*, or *béne*, 'handsome,' or 'well'; *séi*, 'thou art'; *díci*, 'say thou'; *féce*, 'he made'; *védi*, 'see thou'; *póco*, 'little'; *mé-glio*, 'better'; *módo*, 'mode' or 'manner'; *vóglío*, 'I wish'; *tiéni*, 'hold thou'; &c.

---



The apostrophe ought *never* to be used when the elision of the vowel might produce, in nouns or adjectives, a *confusion* of *gender*, of *number*, or of *relation* among themselves :

Thus the *feminine* of all the adjectives of the *common gender*, like *innocente*, ‘innocent’; *errante*, ‘wandering’; &c. preceded by the article *la*, ‘the,’ are written without elision, *la innocente*, ‘the innocent woman’; *la errante*, ‘the wandering woman’; to distinguish them from the *masculine*, *l’ innocente* [lo innocente], ‘the innocent man’; *l’ errante* [lo errante], ‘the wandering man’ :

Those nouns which in the *plural* do not change their termination, as, *effigie*, ‘image’; *éstasi*, ‘ecstasy’; preceded by the article *le*, ‘the,’ are written without elision, *le effigie*, ‘the images’; *le éstasi*, ‘the ecstasies’; to distinguish them from the *singular*, *l’ effigie* [la effigie], ‘the image’; *l’ éstasi* [la éstasi], ‘the ecstasy’ :

And the preposition *da*, ‘from or by,’ expressing the *relation of derivation*, followed by a noun beginning with a vowel, as *da amóre*, ‘from or by love’; is written without elision, to distinguish it from the *relation of possession*, *d’ amóre* [di amóre], ‘of love.’

*Nor* is the apostrophe to be used when the elision of the vowels would *change the sound* of the consonants; as in *gli*, ‘the,’ followed by the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, where the elision of the *i* would render *hard* the *liquid* sound of the *gl*; as in

<i>gl’ avári,</i>	} for {	<i>gli avári,</i>	the misers ;
<i>gl’ edítli,</i>		<i>gli edítli,</i>	the edicts ;
<i>gl’ ócchi,</i>		<i>gli ócchi,</i>	the eyes ;
<i>gl’ uccélli,</i>		<i>gli uccélli,</i>	the birds.

For the *same* reason, *ci*, ‘us,’ or ‘here’; and words ending in *ce*, *ci*; *ge*, *gi*, are *never* written with an *apostrophe* before the vowels *a*, *o*, *u*; since the elision of *e*, *i*, would give to the consonants a *hard* sound; as in

<i>c' áma,</i> <i>fac' ardénte,</i> <i>dolc' accénti,</i> <i>piagg' apríche,</i> <i>pogg' améni,</i>	} for	<i>ci áma,</i> <i>fáce ardénte,</i> <i>dólci accénti,</i> <i>piágge apríche,</i> <i>póggi améni,</i>	he loves us ; burning light ; sweet accents ; sunny places ; pleasant hills.
--	-------	--	--

Finally, words that *end* with *two vowels*, as *cámio*, 'exchange'; *nébbia*, 'fog'; though followed by another vowel, do *not receive* an apostrophe ;

## EXCEPT

A few verbs, ending in *io*, as *vóglío*, *dóglío*, which followed by *io*, 'I,' are written

*vogl' ío,* I wish ;      *mi dogl' ío,* I grieve.

Likewise words that are *marked* with a *grave accent*, as *felicità*, 'happiness'; *gioventù*, 'youth'; &c. do *not receive* an apostrophe ;

## EXCEPT

*Perchè*, *benchè*, and all the other compounds of *che*; as, *perch' égli disse*, because he said; *bench' élla fósse*, although she was.

## CHAPTER III.

## REDUPLICATION OF CONSONANTS.

The Italians *write* all words *as they pronounce* them ; and in those words in which a consonant is pronounced with double force, they *double* the *consonant* in writing ; as,

*óbeligo,* obligation ;      *immáginé,* image ;  
*faccénda,* business ;      *legíttimo,* lawful.

Consonants are generally doubled

In words compounded of one of the particles *a, o, i* or *in, sì, se, nè, co* or *con, so, su, da, ra, fra*, and of any other word *beginning* with a *consonant* ; as,

[A PÉNA]	APPÉna,	hardly ;
[O VÉRO]	OVVÉro,	or else ;
[I or IN RIGÁRE]	IRRIGÁre,	to water ;
[SÌ CÓME]	SICCÓme,	as ;
[SE BÉNE,]	SEBBÉne,	although ;
[NÈ MÉNO,]	NEMMÉno,	nor yet ;
[CO or CON MUÓ- verè]	COMMUÓvere,	to move ;
[SO LEVÁRE]	SOLLEVÁre,	to raise ;
[SU CÉDERE]	SUCCÉdere,	to succeed ;
[DA BÉNE]	DABBÉne,	honest ;
[RA CÓNTO]	RACCÓnto,	relation ;
[FRA MÉSSO]	FRAMMÉsso,	put between :

In words compounded of a *verb* ending with a *vowel* bearing the *accent* upon it, and of a *conjunctive* pronoun ; as,

[HA LO]	HÁLLO,	he has it ;
[DIRÒ VI]	DIRÓVVI,	I will tell you ;

## EXCEPT

When the *verb* is followed by the pronoun *gli*, when the *g* is never doubled:

In all words compounded of an *adverb*, a *preposition*, or a *conjunction*, ending with a *vowel*, and of any other word *beginning* with a *consonant* ; as,

[ÓLTRE CIÒ]	OLTRECCIÒ,	besides that ;
[LÀ GIÙ]	LÀGGIÙ,	there below ;
[GIÀ MÁI]	GIAMMÁI,	never ;
[SÓPRA NÓME]	SOPRANNÓme,	surname ;
[E PÚRE]	EPPÚre,	and yet.

## CHAPTER IV.

## INCREASE OF WORDS.

THE *increase of words* is the *addition* of a *vowel* or a *consonant*, either at the *beginning* or at the *end* of a word.

When the words *in*, 'in'; *con*, 'with'; *non*, 'no,' or 'not'; *per*, 'for,' 'by,' or 'through'; are followed by a word beginning with an *s* followed by another consonant, as, *stráda*, *spavénto*, *scrive*, *schérzo*; to avoid the harshness produced by the meeting of these consonants, the *second word* commonly takes an *i* before it; as,

IN <i>istráda</i> ,	} instead of	{	<i>in stráda</i> ,	in the street;
CON <i>ispavénto</i> ,			<i>con spavénto</i> ,	with fright;
NON <i>iscrive</i> ,			<i>non scrive</i> ,	does not write;
PER <i>ischérzo</i> ,			<i>per schérzo</i> ,	in jest.

In *poetry*, however, this rule is *not so strictly observed* as in *prose*; since the *increase* (adding a *syllable* to the word), would be often incompatible with the measure of the verse.

The preposition *a*, 'to,' and the conjunctions *e*, 'and'; *o*, 'or'; when followed by a word beginning with a *vowel*, sometimes take a *d* after them, to prevent the *hiatus*; as,

AD <i>úno ad úno</i> ,	one after another;
AMÓRE ED ÓDIO,	love and hatred;
OD IN CIÉLO OD IN TÉRRÁ,	either in heaven or on earth.

And the prepositions *su*, *insù*, 'upon'; followed by another *u*, take an *r* after them; as,

SUR UN MÓNTE,	upon a hill;
INSÚR UN PÁLCO,	upon a stage.

CHAPTER V.

DIMINUTION OF WORDS.

THE *diminution of words* is the *suppression* or *retrenchment* of a *letter* or a *syllable*, either at the *end* or in the *middle* of a word.

The Italians retrench the *last vowel* of words *ending* in *e, o*, preceded by one of the consonants *l, m, n, r*, forming with them a *syllable* by themselves; as in *sá-LE*, 'salt'; *uó-MO*, 'man'; *má-NO*, 'hand'; *cuó-RE*, 'heart'; and followed by a word beginning with a *consonant*; as,

SAL comúne,	common salt;
UÓM di córte,	courtier;
MAN di dóнна,	lady's hand;
CUÓR dolénte,	grieving heart.

But if *le, lo; ne, no; re, ro*, do not form a *syllable* by themselves, but in concurrence with any other consonant, as in *Sófo-CLE*, 'Sophocles'; *Án-GLO*, 'Englishman'; *ví-GNE*, 'vineyards'; *pé-GNO*, 'pledge'; *á-CRE*, 'sour'; *pí-GRO*, 'lazy'; the words are *never retrenched*.

When *e* is preceded by *rr*, as in *condúr-RE*, 'to conduct'; and *o* is preceded by *ll* or *nn*; as in *fanciúL-LO*, 'youth'; *hán-NO*, 'they have'; they retrench the *whole syllable*; as,

CONDÚR séco,	to conduct with one's self;
FANCIÚL vezzóso,	handsome youth;
L' HÁN rubáto,	they have robbed him.

The *last vowel* of the words *úno*, 'a or an'; *béne*, 'well'; *buóno*, 'good'; and the *last syllable* of the words *bélló*, 'handsome'; *quéllo*, 'that'; *gránde*, 'great';

when they are *followed* by a word *beginning* with a *consonant*, are *always retrenched* ; as,

UN Fióre,	a flower ;
BEN Ti stu,	thou deservest it ;
BUÓN vino,	good wine ;
BEL Práto,	beautiful meadow ;
QUÉL Líbro,	that book ;
GRAN Mercáto,	great market ;
GRAN Ciltà,	great city.

The *last vowel* of the word *Signóre*, ‘ Master ’ ; and the *last syllable* of the words *Fráte*, ‘ Brother [Friar] ’ ; *Sánto*, ‘ Saint ’ ; when they are *used as titles* ; is also *retrenched before a consonant* ; as,

SIGNÓR Cárlo,	Master Charles ;
FRA Giovánni,	Brother John ;
SAN Páolo,	Saint Paul.

---

Words ending in *a* are *never retrenched* ;

## EXCEPT

*Suóra*, ‘ Sister ’ ; which, when *used as a title*, loses the *a* ; as,

SUÓR María,	Sister Mary ;
-------------	---------------

and *óra*, ‘ now,’ with its compounds *allóra*, *ancóra*, *talóra*, &c. which, *before a consonant*, may be *retrenched* ; as,

OR dí,	now say ;
ALLÓR vídi,	then I saw ;
ANCÓR piánge,	he weeps still ;
TALÓR véggia,	sometimes he is awake.

---

Words ending in *i* are *never retrenched* ;

## EXCEPT

*Fuóri*, ‘ out ’ ; and the *second person* of the *imperative* of verbs ending in *nere*, *nire* ; as *tiéni*, ‘ hold thou ’ ; *viéni*, ‘ come thou ’ ; from *tenére*, ‘ to hold ’ ; *veníre*, ‘ to come ’ ; which *before a consonant* lose their *i* ; as,

FUÓR di città,	out of town ;
TIÉN <i>quést</i> o,	hold this ;
VIÉN <i>prést</i> o,	come quick.

Words ending in *u*, and words accented on the last syllable, are never retrenched.

Words ending with *two vowels* are never retrenched ;

EXCEPT

When the two vowels are preceded by *n*, as in *António*, 'Anthony'; *testimónio*, 'testimony'; in which case they may be retrenched; as,

ANTON-Mária,	Anthony-Maria ;
TESTIMÓN <i>verá</i> ce,	true testimony.

Words retrenched in the singular, are never retrenched in the plural ;

EXCEPT

*Gránde*, 'great'; which in its plural *grándi*, also, loses the last syllable; as,

GRAN <i>perí</i> coli,	great dangers ;
GRAN <i>ricch</i> ézzze,	great riches ;

and such words as *cavalière*, 'cavalier'; *demónio*, 'demon'; &c. which, in poetry, may lose the last vowel or vowels, even in their plurals; as,

<i>le dón</i> ne, <i>i</i> CAVALIÉR,	the ladies, the cavaliers ;
<i>i</i> DEMÓN <i>dú</i> ri,	the cruel demons.

Words, which would be retrenched before a word beginning with a consonant, are always written with an apostrophe before words beginning with a vowel; as,

<i>bell'</i> <i>aspét</i> to,	handsome appearance ;
<i>quell'</i> <i>ár</i> co,	that bow ;
<i>grand'</i> <i>uó</i> mo,	great man ;
<i>Frat'</i> <i>Albér</i> to,	Brother Albert ;
<i>Sant'</i> <i>André</i> a,	Saint Andrew ;

## EXCEPT

*Uno*, 'a or an,' and its compounds; *quale*, 'which'; *buono*, 'good'; *bene*, 'well'; *Signóre*, 'Master'; *Suóra*, 'Sister'; and the infinitive, and forms of verbs ending in *l, m, n, r*, which do not receive an apostrophe; as,

<i>un amico</i> ,	a friend;
<i>alcún odóre</i> ,	no smell;
<i>quál ardíre</i> ,	what daring;
<i>buón ómo</i> ,	good man;
<i>ben incíso</i> ,	well engraved;
<i>Signór Onófrío</i> ,	Master Onofrio;
<i>Suór Angélica</i> ,	Sister Angelica;
<i>andár a spáso</i> ,	to go and take a walk;
<i>abbíam amáto</i> ,	we have loved;
<i>andrán esénti</i> ,	they will be exempted;
<i>sarébbér ársi</i> ,	they would be burnt.

Words are *never retrenched*, when they are followed by a *z*, or an *s* followed by another consonant; or when they are at the end of a sentence;

## EXCEPT

In *poetry* where words are sometimes retrenched, even before a *z*, or an *s* followed by another consonant, on account of the measure of the verse.

Some words, when they undergo some alteration, *lose a vowel* in the *middle*, particularly if the *tonic accent* of the word, by such alteration, is *transferred* to the *following syllable*; as,

<i>buóno</i> ,	good;	<i>boníssimo</i> ,	very good;
<i>túno</i> ,	thunder;	<i>tonáre</i> ,	to thunder;
<i>suóno</i> ,	I play;	<i>soniámo</i> ,	we play.

Some *compound* words *lose a letter*, or a *syllable* in their composition; as,

[ <i>iéri séra</i> ]	<i>ierséra</i> ,	last evening;
----------------------	------------------	---------------



[sótro térra]	sottérra,	under ground ;
[dománi mattína]	domattína,	to-morrow morning ;
[cénto cinquánta]	cencinquánta,	one hundred and fifty.

*Infinitives*, and those forms of verbs that end in *le, ne, mo, no*, when joined to a conjunctive pronoun, drop their final vowel ; as,

[amáre lo]	amárlo,	to love him ;
[duóle ti]	duólti,	it grieves thee ;
[viéne séne]	viénsene,	he comes thence ;
[andiámo vi]	andiámvi,	let us go there ;
[aiutárono ci]	aiutáronci,	they assisted us.

The first and third persons singular, and the third person plural, of the imperfect of the indicative of all the verbs, which in the infinitive terminate in *ere, ire*, generally drop the *v* ; as,

[ío } teméva,]	ío, } teméa,	I } feared ;
[égli } teméva,]	égli, } teméa,	he } feared ;
[églino temévano,]	églino, temévano,	they feared ;
[ío } sentíva,]	ío, } sentía,	I } heard ;
[égli } sentíva,]	égli, } sentía,	he } heard ;
[églino sentívano,]	églino, sentívano,	they heard.

The words *caváli, capélli, coltélli, fratélli, ruscélli, quélli, bélli, délli, álli, dálli, nélli, pélli, cólli, súlli, trálli*, and *quáli, máli, táli, figliuóli*, may be contracted into *cavái, capéi, coltéi, fratéi, ruscéi, quéi, béi, déi, ái, daí, néi, péi, cói, súi, trái, quái, mái, tái, figliuói* ; which, when they are followed by a consonant, it is more elegant to abbreviate, and write with an apostrophe ; as,

<i>cavá' leggiéri</i> ,	light horses ;	<i>ruscé' ridénti</i> ,	smiling brooks ;
<i>capé' bíanchi</i> ,	white hair ;	<i>qué' signóri</i> ,	those gentlemen ;
<i>colté' pungénti</i> ,	sharp knives ;	<i>bé' costúmi</i> ,	good manners ;
<i>fraté' carnáli</i> ,	own brothers ;	<i>dé' nemíci</i> ,	of the enemies ;

*á' parénti*, to the parents ;      *trá' bóschi*, amongst the woods ;  
*dá' ládri*, by the robbers ;      *quá' dolóri*, what pains ;  
*né'bisógni*, in the necessities ;      *má' pensíeri*, malicious thoughts ;  
*pé' cámpi*, through the fields ;      *tá' discórsi*, such discourses ;  
*cb' dénti*, with the teeth ;      *figliuó' misér-* very miserable sons.  
*stú' mónti*, upon the mountains ;      [*rimi*,

The word *églino*, 'they' ; often loses its last syllable and makes *égli* ; and *égli*, 'he,' or 'they,' may be contracted into *éi*, and written *é*, 'he,' or 'they.'

This is all that needs to be said on the diminution or retrenchment of words ; except that the rule respecting the retrenchment of *e*, *o*, when preceded by *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, does not hold in certain instances, where such retrenchment would produce a harsh sound. Thus the words, *cóme*, 'how' ; *nóme*, 'name' ; *ánimo*, 'courage' ; *chiáro*, 'clear' ; *ráro*, 'rare' ; *néro*, 'black' ; *dúro*, 'hard' ; *oscúro*, 'obscure' ; &c., are never written *com*, *nom*, *ánim*, *chiár*, *ner*, *rar*, *dur*, *oscúr*, &c.

THE END.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

---

PREFACE to the former Edition - - - - -	vii
“ to the present Edition - - - - -	xi
A LIST OF WORKS examined with Reference to the Com- pilation of this Grammar - - - - -	xvii
A TABLE of the Abbreviations of the Names of Authors and of the Works quoted in this Grammar - - - - -	xxiv

### ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

INTRODUCTION - - - - -	1-10
ITALIAN ALPHABET - - - - -	11, 12
PART I.—ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION - - - - -	13-24
CHAPTER I.— <i>Sounds of the Vowels</i> - - - - -	13
“ II.— <i>Pronunciation of the Consonants</i> - - - - -	14
“ III.— <i>Of J and H</i> - - - - -	16
“ IV.— <i>Double Consonants</i> - - - - -	17
“ V.— <i>Of Syllables</i> - - - - -	19
“ VI.— <i>Diphthongs and Triphthongs</i> - - - - -	20
“ VII.— <i>General Rules on the Italian Pronunciation</i> - - - - -	21
EXERCISE on the Pronunciation - - - - -	23
PART II.—ITALIAN ANALOGY - - - - -	25-388
PARTS OF SPEECH - - - - -	25
CHAPTER I.— <i>Articles</i> - - - - -	25
Union of the Prepositions with the Articles - - - - -	28
EXERCISE I. - - - - -	34
CHAPTER II.— <i>Substantive Nouns</i> - - - - -	36
Gender - - - - -	36
Number, or Formation of the Plural - - - - -	48
Variation of Nouns - - - - -	56
EXERCISE II. - - - - -	60

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<b>CHAPTER III. — <i>Adjective Nouns. — Comparatives and Superlatives</i></b>	62
Gender	62
Formation of the Plural	62
Agreement of Adjectives	63
<i>Comparatives</i>	65
EXERCISE III.	71
<i>Superlatives</i>	72
EXERCISE IV.	78
<b>CHAPTER IV. — <i>Augmentatives and Diminutives</i></b>	80
<i>Augmentatives</i>	80
EXERCISE V.	83
<i>Diminutives</i>	84
EXERCISE VI.	89
<b>CHAPTER V. — <i>Numerals</i></b>	90
Cardinal Numbers	90
Ordinal “	94
Collective, Distributive, and Proportional Numbers	96
EXERCISE VII.	98
<b>CHAPTER VI. — <i>Substantive Pronouns</i></b>	100
<i>Personal Pronouns</i>	100
Variation of Personal Pronouns	101
EXERCISE VIII.	107
<i>Conjunctive Pronouns</i>	109
Union of the Pronouns <i>mi, ti, gli, ne</i> or <i>ci, vi, si</i> , with the Pronouns <i>lo, la, gli, li, le, ne</i>	114
EXERCISE IX.	118
<i>Relative Pronouns</i>	119
EXERCISE X.	125
<i>Interrogative Pronouns</i>	127
EXERCISE XI.	129
<b>CHAPTER VII. — <i>Adjective Pronouns</i></b>	131
<i>Possessive Pronouns</i>	131
EXERCISE XII.	134
<i>Demonstrative Pronouns</i>	137
EXERCISE XIII.	143
<i>Indefinite Pronouns</i>	145
EXERCISE XIV.	156
<b>CHAPTER VIII. — <i>Of the Particles Ne, Ci, Vi</i></b>	158
EXERCISE XV.	162
<b>CHAPTER IX. — <i>Verbs</i></b>	164
<i>Variation of Verbs</i>	164

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<i>Auxiliary Verbs</i> . . . . .	165
The Verb <i>Avère</i> , affirmatively . . . . .	165
“ “ negatively . . . . .	169
“ “ interrogatively . . . . .	171
“ “ interrogative-negatively . . . . .	172
<i>Èssere</i> . . . . .	173
<i>Regular Verbs</i> . . . . .	177
<b>Active Verbs — FIRST CONJUGATION</b> . . . . .	177
<i>Amàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>àre</i> . . . . .	177
<i>Cercàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>càre</i> . . . . .	181
<i>Pregàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>gàre</i> . . . . .	182
<i>Baciàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>ciàre</i> . . . . .	183
<i>Fregiàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>giàre</i> . . . . .	185
<i>Noiàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>iàre</i> . . . . .	186
<i>Inviàre</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>viàre</i> . . . . .	187
<b>SECOND CONJUGATION</b> . . . . .	187
<i>Temère</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in the <i>infinitive</i> in <i>ère</i> ( <i>long</i> ); and of those which in the <i>perfect</i> end in <i>éi</i> and <i>étti</i> . . . . .	187
<i>Tèssere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in the <i>infinitive</i> in <i>ère</i> ( <i>short</i> ); and of those which in the <i>perfect</i> end in <i>éi</i> only . . . . .	191
<i>Tacère</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>cère</i> . . . . .	193
<i>Èmpiere</i> , paradigm of the Verbs ending in <i>iere</i> . . . . .	194
<b>THIRD CONJUGATION</b> . . . . .	195
<i>Sentìre</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end in <i>o</i> only . . . . .	195
<i>Èsibìre</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end in <i>isco</i> only . . . . .	198
<i>Abborrìre</i> , paradigm of those Verbs of the third conjugation which, in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end both in <i>o</i> and <i>isco</i> . . . . .	201
<i>Cucìre</i> , paradigms of the Verbs ending in <i>cìre</i> . . . . .	204
Remarks on the foregoing Verbs . . . . .	205
<b>EXERCISE XVI.</b> . . . . .	209
<b>Passive Verbs</b> . . . . .	212
<i>Èssere Amàto</i> , paradigm of the <i>passive verbs</i> . . . . .	212
<b>Neuter Verbs</b> . . . . .	216
<i>Partìre</i> , paradigm of the <i>neuter verbs</i> . . . . .	216
<b>Pronominal Verbs</b> . . . . .	220
<i>Pentìrsi</i> , paradigm of the <i>pronominal verbs</i> . . . . .	220
<b>Unipersonal Verbs</b> . . . . .	224
<i>Pióverè</i> , paradigm of the <i>unipersonal verbs</i> . . . . .	224
<i>Èssere</i> , unipersonally used . . . . .	227
<b>EXERCISE XVII.</b> . . . . .	232

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

<i>Order, quantity, quality, affirmation, negation, doubt, comparison, interrogation</i>	351
<i>Choice, demonstration</i>	352
Compound Adverbs	356
<i>Adjectives commonly used as Adverbs</i>	357
Adverbial Phrases in common use	359
EXERCISE XXIII.	361
CHAPTER XIV. — <i>Prepositions</i>	363
Prepositions in common use	363
EXERCISE XXIV.	373
CHAPTER XV. — <i>Conjunctions</i>	376
Conjunctions in common use	376
EXERCISE XXV.	382
CHAPTER XVI. — <i>Interjections</i>	384
Interjections in common use	384
EXERCISE XXVI.	387
PART III. — ITALIAN SYNTAX	389-553
CHAPTER I. — <i>Order and Position of Words</i>	389
Simple Construction	389
Inverse “	393
EXERCISE XXVII.	395
CHAPTER II. — <i>Concordance or Agreement of Words</i>	397
Concordance of Articles	397
“ of Adjectives	397
“ of Numerals	403
“ of Pronouns	403
“ of Verbs	405
“ of Participles	411
EXERCISE XXVIII.	413
CHAPTER III. — <i>Regimen or Government of Words</i>	415
Regimen of Substantives	415
“ of Adjectives	418
“ of Verbs	421
“ of Prepositions	432
“ of Conjunctions	433
EXERCISE XXIX.	436
CHAPTER IV. — <i>Use of Articles</i>	440
EXERCISE XXX.	468
CHAPTER V. — <i>Position of Adjectives</i>	472
EXERCISE XXXI.	480
CHAPTER VI. — <i>Use and Position of certain Pronouns</i>	483

## TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Personal Pronouns	483
Conjunctive “	486
Possessive “	495
Indefinite “	499
EXERCISE XXXII.	502
<b>CHAPTER VII. — Verbs</b>	<b>506</b>
Position of Verbs	506
Use of the Imperfect and First and Second Perfect	509
Use of Certain Tenses of the Indicative for some other Tenses of the same Mood; and of the Infinitive for certain Tenses of the Indicative, and for the Conjunctive and Imperative Moods	512
Of the Tenses of the Dependent Verbs in a Compound Sentence	517
Of the Manner of Expressing the English Present-Participle in Italian	519
Of the way of Rendering into Italian the English particle <i>To</i> , before the Infinitive of Verbs	522
EXERCISE XXXIII.	525
<b>CHAPTER VIII. — Participles. — Use and Position of certain Adverbs</b>	<b>529</b>
Agreement of Participles	529
Use and Position of certain Adverbs	535
EXERCISE XXXIV.	538
<b>CHAPTER IX. — Expletives</b>	<b>541</b>
<b>CHAPTER X. — Of the Ellipsis</b>	<b>545</b>
<b>REMARKS ON THE DIFFERENT MODES OF ADDRESS IN ITALIAN</b>	<b>549</b>
<b>PART IV. — ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY</b>	<b>554–568</b>
<b>CHAPTER I. — Of Accents</b>	<b>554</b>
“ II. — Of the Apostrophe	557
“ III. — Reduplication of Consonants	560
“ IV. — Increase of Words	562
“ V. — Diminution of Words	563

## CORRIGENDA.

Page, 4	line, 44	For,	Read,
		a <i>subject</i> and a <i>quality</i> , to which it affirms that the <i>subject</i> is, or is not attributed,	a <i>subject</i> , and a <i>quality</i> of which it affirms that it <i>is</i> , or <i>is not</i> , attributed to the <i>subject</i> .
23	15	<i>giocondo</i> ,	<i>giocóndo</i> .
24	14	<i>magnámino</i> ,	<i>magnánimo</i> .
26	12	nouns begins,	noun begins.
33	8	MERCA'IANTE,	MERCATA'NTE.
35	22	<i>piángere</i> ,	<i>piangere</i> .
36	13	<i>Eráto</i> ,	<i>E'ralo</i> .
"	25	<i>Lápis</i> ,	<i>Lápis</i> .
43	41	<i>delle cose</i> ,	<i>che gli ho dato</i> .
44	13	<i>eclési</i> ,	<i>ecclissi</i> .
64	14	Dav. Tac. am.	Dav. Tac. ann.
65	6	Add. Cavalc.	Cavalc.
69	1	<i>Ió</i> ,	<i>Io</i> .
87	17	UMIDÍZZO,	UMIDU'ZZO.
89	4	BACICCUHIA'I,	BACIUCCHIA'I.
"	26	<i>Nascémmo</i> ,	<i>Nascémmo</i> .
155	34	<i>Quánto cose</i> .	<i>Quante cose</i> .
161	4	Pass. tr. Hu. c. 4.	Pass. 276.
173	17	<i>essere státa</i> ,	<i>essere státa</i> .
179	20	that thou lovest,	that thou love.
"	21	that he loves,	that he love.
193	24	<i>i</i> ,	<i>in</i> .
258	25	as in the case,	as is the case.
287	18	<i>confitto</i> .	<i>confitto</i> .
296	6	'I kindle,'	'I kindled.'
299	6	<i>M mise</i> .	<i>Mi mise</i> .
"	40	Arr. Vang.	Ann. Vang.
300	14	<i>Jerusalém</i> ,	<i>Jerusalem</i> .
348	23	<i>fónda</i> ,	<i>frónda</i> .
369	10	Petr. Fr. Am.	Petr. Tr. Am.
"	37	Bocc. Floc.	Bocc. Filoc.
370	30	Mach. Corn.	Mach. Com.
382	1	<i>rinnovélli</i> ,	<i>rinnovélli</i> .
394	5	<i>Ephigenia</i> ,	<i>Iphigenia</i> .
"	19	PRE'SEMI ALLÓRA,	PRE'SEMI ALLÓR.
"	27	<i>Ephigenia</i> ,	<i>Iphigenia</i> .
395	20	<i>El'vidio</i> ,	<i>Elvidio</i> .
406	26	FIGLIERA'MO,	FIGLIERE'MO.
419	5	<i>dédite</i> ,	<i>dédite</i> .
455	28	Gian. Stor. Giv. Nap.	Gian. Stor. Civ. Nap.
458	30	<i>avvicchia</i> ,	<i>avvicchia</i> .
463	8	FIGLIUÓLI,	FIGLUÓLI.
468	5	FRUMANTO,	FRUME'NTO.
477	39	Lipari,	Lipari.
479	36	Tris. Elog. Galil.	Fris. Elog. Galil.
491	26	I see you,	I see thee.
495	5	<i>disposto</i> ,	<i>disposto</i> .
500	2	<i>dispési</i> ,	<i>dispéri</i> .
501	8	woman,	woman.
"	30	even,	ever.

*In a few copies only :*

137	13	these,	those.
"	14	these near you,	those near you.
138	30	STAMA'TTINA,	STAMATTINA.
143	19	CÓSTUI,	COSTU I.
"	24	EXERCISES,	EXERCISE XIII.

### ADDENDA.

409	35	add	(Bocc. g. 3. n. 7.)
446	26	add	(Bocc. g. 1. n. 1.)
479	42	add	(Dant. Inf. 2.)
485	32	add	(Bocc. g. 5. n. 3.)
486	10	add	(Bocc. g. 7. n. 4.)
516	41	add	(Bocc.)













THIS BOOK IS DUE ON THE LAST DATE  
STAMPED BELOW

AN INITIAL FINE OF 25 CENTS

WILL BE ASSESSED FOR FAILURE TO RETURN  
THIS BOOK ON THE DATE DUE. THE PENALTY  
WILL INCREASE TO 50 CENTS ON THE FOURTH  
DAY AND TO \$1.00 ON THE SEVENTH DAY  
OVERDUE.

FEB 3 1947

JUL 1 1947

21 Feb 1948

22 Apr '53 VH

18 Jun '53 LOT

JUN 11 1953 LU

SANTA BARBARA  
INTERLIBRARY LOAN

ONE MONTH / TER RECEIPT

1-25-0

SEP 28 1970

11-7-70

U. C. BERKELEY LIBRARIES



C046323063

24 9:15

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

